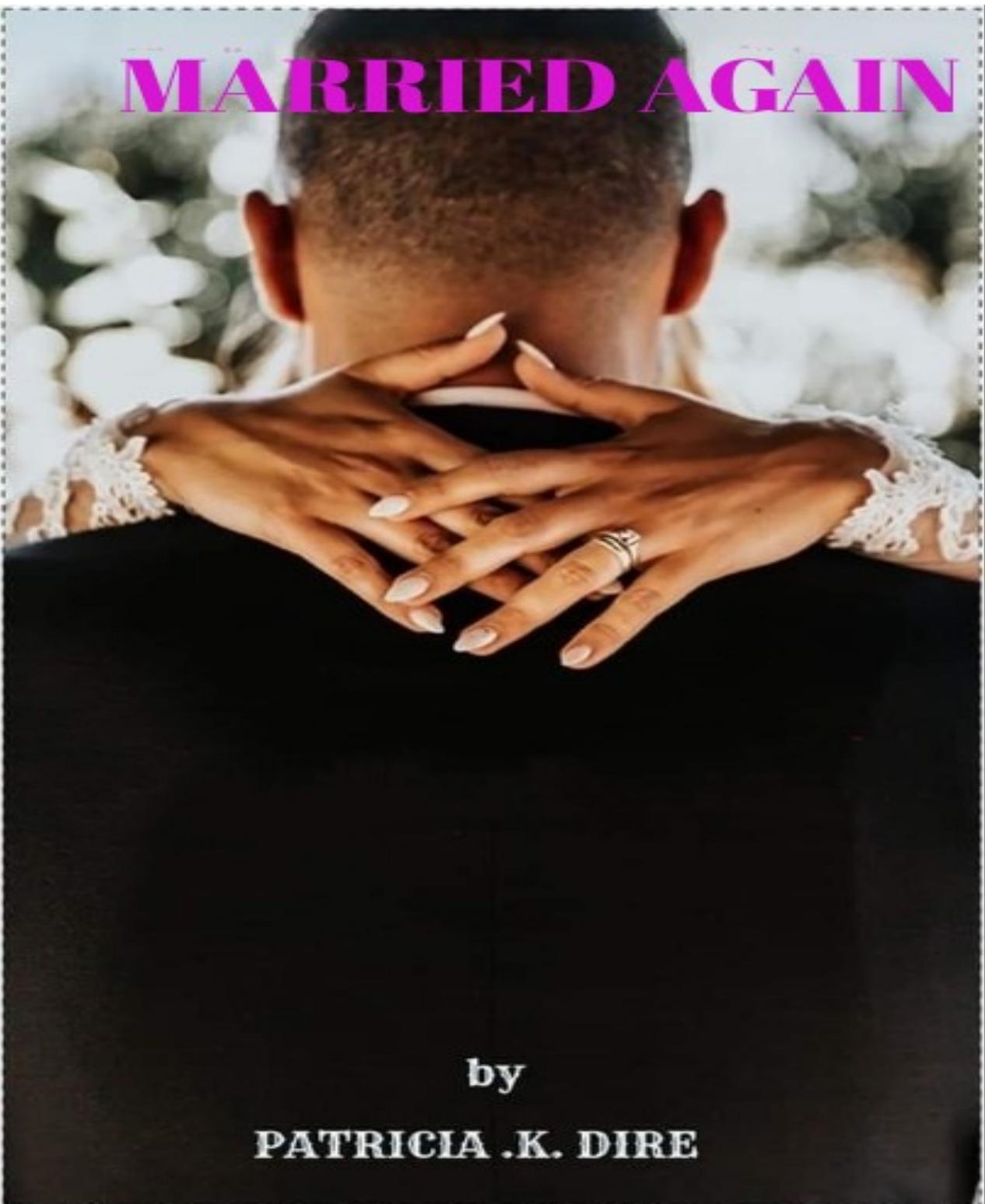


MARRIED AGAIN



by

PATRICIA .K. DIRE

MARRIED AGAIN

****PREVIOUSLY ON MY MAMIWOTA****

****INSIDE RUU'S BEDROOM***

Thandi knocked and Ruslan opened the door and he was naked with his hard dick ready to bust with veins popping....she walked in with her eyes popped out and when she turned he was closer to her and he didn't waste time....he smashed his lips on hers and they kissed and soon Thandi's clothes were scattered all over the floor and Ruslan was hitting it from behind...they went on and on until they both came and they laid in bed with Thandi's head on his chest as they caught their breath

Ruslan: I love you amour

Thandi: I love you too

*** he kissed her forehead and he breathed in

and out***

Ruslan: can you do me a favor?

she raised her head and nodded while smiling at him and his heart melted because her smile did things to his heart

Ruslan: marry me

her eyes popped out as she looked at him shocked then her phone rang....

Thandi: umm...can... can I answer it

he perked her lips and nodded then she took it and breathed out then she answered sitting up

Thandi: hello

***she heard sniffs**

Thandi: hello

Voice: he's gone....he's dead

***she frowned ***

Thandi: Joe?

Joe: yeah....James...James is dead

Thandi.....that bitch killed him...she stabbed him to death

***her heart started beating fast and Ruslan saw something was wrong and he also sat up and looked at her curiously ***

Thandi: wha...what?

Joe: that evil baby mama of his stabbed him to death....look as his wife you are expected to sit on the mattress for him and mourn for him the right way.... ooh and the funeral will be held gae Limpopo....tell the boys and prepare to go to Limpopo...shap

*** he sighed then he dropped the call and tears ran down her cheeks***

Ruslan: amour what's wrong

***she looked at Ruslan and she wiped her

tears off***

Thandi: J...James is dead....hi...his brother said he was stabbed by his baby mama and....God....what am I gonna tell the boys Ruu, where will I even begin

He just pulled her closer and held her tight and she sniffed also holding him tight

.

.

.

****AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION***

***Castiel was sitting on the ground with a bottle of whiskey on this hand next to Juana's grave at their backyard, next to Juana's grave was their baby's small grave, they were both under a huge tree ***

Castiel: im all alone baby....you left me all

alone.....maybe I should just give myself up to the witches council and let them do as they please with me and to think I betrayed my brother to save you and now you left me

he chuckled bitterly with tears gushing out and he drank from the bottle

Castiel: I wasn't ready Juana, why didn't you accept that mmmmh.....why couldn't you wait a bit

***he continued to cry.....it's been three months since Juana died and he looks like shit.....all he does is drink, pass out and when he wakes up and he goes hunting....for these three months he has been surviving only on blood and that made his skin look pale....well he's a hybrid and he survives both on solid food and blood, normally he would only feed on blood for two to three times in a week while the rest of the time he eats solid food. That's why his skin looked light caramel instead of pale when he met Kazi

for the first time....he can blend in with humans nicely cause he's not a full blown vampire, his mother was a human witch and his father was a vampire but now that he hasn't eaten solid food for three months he looks like a real vampire with pale skin and the area around his eyes was dark ***

Castiel: yeah maybe I should just hand myself in to the witches council

then he felt a hand touch his shoulder and he turned but he didn't see anyone but then he heard a voice

Voice: you will never be alone my night rider....i will always be with you and you have Kazi now

he quickly got up and stumbled a bit since he was a bit drunk

Castiel: JUANA?...JUANA IS THAT YOU....BABY PLEASE COME BACK....PLEASE I PROMISE I'LL STOP SEEKING FOR A CHILD AND....AND I'LL

BE A GOOD HUSBAND I PROMISE PLEASE
COME BACK TO ME BABY

Voice: I'll always be with you my night rider and remember you are never alone...

Castiel: Juana show yourself baby....Ju....

he felt dizzy and fell on the ground and it was lights out.....he woke up when he felt a hand touch his cheek and he looked around and there was no one around....it was starting to get dark so he got up and picked his bottle and walked to the house...he changed his shirt and he ran out going deeper into the woods

.

.

.

****AT KAZI'S HOUSE****

***Well she did find out that she's pregnant and

she decided to tell Menzi cause she didn't want her kids to grow up without knowing their father just because he's married to another woman and ever since he knew he's fussy and over protective of her.....he always wants to know where she is all the time and he spends more time with her than he does with his wife and that frustrates Kazi cause Buhle has called her multiple times warning her to keep away from her husband and when she tries to reason with Menzi he just won't hear any of it, as for Menzi he was glad Kazi is pregnant cause it means she will be bound to him for the rest of their lives and he now had hope that she might even agree to his marriage proposal soon....

Anyway her phone rang and she rolled her eyes and answered***

Kazi: im parking outside my yard and about to open the gate Menzi.....can you please stop

calling me every second and concentrate on your marriage for goodness sake

Menzi: my marriage is my business Ntandokazi and those babies in your womb are my business too

she sighed

Kazi: fine....let me open the gate shap

Menzi: I hope you have started packing cause on Saturday you are moving in

well he bought her a house, she tried to protest but with Menzi being Menzi she ended up giving up

Kazi: im almost done Menzi

Menzi: good and im sleeping over tonight, in fact im on my way now

Kazi: Menzi im not your wife or girlfriend so you cant just tell me ukuthi you are sleeping over

she said with an annoyed voice

Menzi: well you are my baby mama so I
can....shap im almost there

***then he dropped the call and she huffed
angrily then she got out and went to the gate
but before she could open it she felt like
someone was watching her then she quickly
turned around and there was no one....there was a
car parked on the other side of the road but it
looked like no one was inside but that feeling of
being watched was still there.... she felt the hair
on the back of her head stand then she decided
to go back to her car and drive around until
Menzi comes but as she took a step towards
her car a gun went off and she fell on the
ground.... then a force moved to the car that
was on the other side of the street as the driver
was starting the engine ready to drive away
from the scene and it ripped the driver's door
off the car and threw it away then it pulled the
driver out and ripped his throat off his neck and

it dropped his body on the ground and went to pull out the passenger that was also inside the car out of the it and it ripped his heart out of his chest and it dropped the body on the ground....the next thing Kazi was no longer on the ground and you could hear dogs bucking vigorously around the neighborhood...even the neighbor that was walking to lock his gate ran inside the house when the gun went off.....5 minutes later Menzi parked the car in the middle of the street when the lights of his car hit a body on the ground and he quickly got out and rushed to it with his heart beating fast and he sighed with relief when he saw that it wasn't Kazi but the state the body was in....was gut-wrenching ***

Menzi: ooh God Kazi....Ntandokazi!

he called out to her rushing to her car and he saw her car keys on the ground and blood next to her car keys then he started to panic

Menzi: Ntandokazi! Where are you....Kazi answer me baby!

he said running around calling out her name and she was nowhere in sight then he saw legs showing on the other side of the other car and his heart stopped beating for a sec and he slowly walked there and he sighed with relief when he saw that it was a male figure and not Kazi and he made a disgusted face when he saw what looked like a heart not far from the body

Menzi: Kazi ukuphi? (where are you?)...ooh God.....

he went back to her car and her handbag was there then he put his hands on top of his head cause it was clear she was abducted.....he then took out his phone and made an important call to his boss asking for help before he called the police net for control nje

***** THE END *****

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....01

.

.

.

NARRATED

***He put her on top of a bed and he looked at

his bloodied hands and his eyes changed and his fangs got longer, then he pulled his hands closer to his mouth and he licked the blood off his hands hungrily...he did it so fast while making moaning sounds cause her blood tasted good and fresh until he heard a soothing voice whisper close to his ear**

Voice: Castiel stop.....you need to save her!

he looked around and it was just him and Kazi then he sighed and he looked at a bleeding and passed out Kazi

Castiel: sssss.....my wife is no fun damn

***then his fangs went back to normal so did his eyes and he went to wash his hands and he took his medical tools and removed the bullet that was stuck deep inside her stomach and he stitched her up then he also cleaned her womb since the twins didn't make it...

He then took her to his “white” room and he connected her to machines and he also connected an IV on her filling it with a perfect dosage of morphine and he sat down on a chair and stared at her***

Castiel: mmmmh I wonder who tried to kill you.....or was it your useless mother and step father since I told them that I want half of my money back since you are pregnant and they decided to kill your babies or your baby daddy's wife?.....mmmh

he said that and he frowned then he got up and he walked out of the room all the way to the front door

.

.

.

****Joy switched the side lamp on and she got out of the bed ready to go to the bathroom

when she saw a male figure standing and leaning on the closed bedroom door and she screamed then her husband also got up***

Mthembu: what is it Joy

then his eyes popped out as his eyes landed on Castiel who was covered with blood

Mthembu: M...Mr. G

Castiel: did you do it?

he asked with a scary voice

Mthembu: i...I haven't gotten the money yet but ummm you'll get it by the end of the day tomorrow

he took a step forward and Joy covered her face looking scared cause Castiel looked like something out of a vampire movie....his clothes where covered in Kazi's blood and he looked pale with dark circles around his eyes

Mthembu: ooh God....ooh God

***he said shaking ***

Mthembu: please don't hurt me Mr. G....please
don't hurt me and my wife im begging you

he pleaded with him

Castiel: im gonna ask this for the last time.....did
you send those men to kill her and her unborn
kids?

Mthembu: wh...who are you talking about

Castiel: her daughter

***he said pointing at Joy and she uncovered
her face with her eyes popped out and he saw
right through them that it wasn't them....he
could also read their thoughts***

Joy: you mean to tell me my...my daughter was
almost killed?

she asked with a shaky voice

Castiel: I don't even know why I came here, you
two are just useless

then he opened the door and turned to look at them

Castiel: my money by the end of the day tomorrow or I'll finish her off and start off with your children too Mthembu

Mthembu: you'll...you'll get it by the end of the day tomorrow please don't hurt my kids

then Castiel looked at Joy

Castiel: he'll do anything for his kids including selling your daughter to pay off his debt and you chose him over your own blood and they call me a monster

he shook his head and he walk out and soon after they heard dogs bucking in the neighborhood....then Joy sat down with tears running down her cheeks

Mthembu: shit....did you see how he looked baby....is this boy even human I mean he looked like a ghost or something.....God what have I

gotten myself into

Joy didn't say anything as what Castiel said rang in her head

Mthembu: baby?

he said getting out of bed and he went closer to her and he tried to touch her but she pushed him away and she got up and rushed to the bathroom and she locked herself inside and she just cried.....Mthembu swallowed hard and he sat down with his head bowed

.

.

.

****AT MBALI AND RAY'S HOUSE****

***The Khumalos left and it was now the Owoh-Masdens and the Vilakazi's sitting on the lounge with Ruslan pacing up and

down....Thandi told them about the call***

Ray: Ruu sit please....you making me dizzy man

***he stopped and he turned and looked at Ray
and everyone swallowed hard...the look on his
face was deadly and bone chilling***

Ruslan: what have you all decided?

Heath: she's still his wife by tradition Ruslan

Ruslan: you are not answering my question....i
said what have you decided!

Ray: she's the only one that can decide on what
to do

***he then looked at Thandi and she was
looking down while playing with her fingers***

Ruslan: amour look at me

she swallowed hard

Ruslan: amour I said look at me

she did slowly

Ruslan: what have you decided?

she swallowed hard

Thandi: the elders don't know that we broke up so I don't think they'll be happy if I refuse to sit on the mattress for James and plus we have kids together

he licked his lower lip then he chuckled and he shook his head

Ruslan: you are not answering me

Jabu: man look this is a complicated issue ok....traditionally she's still his wife and now he's dead and...

Ruslan interrupted him

Ruslan: amour answer my question

he said ignoring Jabu

Thandi: if...if my elders say I should, I'll have to
Ruu

he swallowed hard and he walked to the door and Thandi quickly got up and she went after him calling his name but he ignored her and kept on walking out

Ray: fuck....this shit is fucked up

Heath: Ruslan needs to understand that no one except for us knew that they broke up

Ray: you've seen La Parca right....well guess what, he's the only one I know that can summon and control him so be ready for anything cause Ruslan loves Thandi he won't take this lying down

The guys swallowed hard except for Mj cause he didn't know about the real La Parca

Mj: summon and control him?....what are you talking about Big Ray

Ray just ignored him and he asked Mbali to get him a glass of cold water

outside Thandi caught up with him and she grabbed his arm and he stopped walking

Thandi: Ruu please understand

Ruslan: get your hand off me!

he said it with a firm voice and Thandi flinched and she let go of him with tears running down her cheeks

Thandi: what should I do then Ruslan mmmmh tell me, I know what the elders will say ok

she said sobbing and he kept quiet with his jaws clenched

Thandi: tell me what to do and I'll do it but please don't walk out on me

***he sighed and turned to face her and his face

softened when he saw her crying....he went closer to her and he pulled her in for a hug and she just cried on his chest***

Ruslan: shhh....im sorry for walking out on you amour please stop crying.. you breaking my heart please

he said brushing her back gently....after some time she calmed down and he cupped her face and wiped her tears off with his thumbs then he perked her lips

Ruslan: im sorry ok

she nodded and he perked her lips again and also her forehead

Thandi: tell me what to do Ruu and I'll do it but just know his family will force me to sit on the mattress and mourn for him

he clenched his jaws

Ruslan: I don't have a problem with you going to

his funeral to support the boys...I'll also be there with your family to support you and the boys' amour but I will not have my woman mourn for another man, that i won't take lightly....you are mine Thandi and mine alone so you better make it clear to them that you have a man in your life and he doesn't take shit when it comes to you and the boys so they better bury their son in peace or I'll bring hell to them specially!

he said that with a straight face and firm tone and Thandi swallowed hard.....she could see that this wasn't the ever laughing and joyful Ruslan but another dark version of him...a version she wishes to never see again cause even the aura around him was tense and dark

Thandi: i hear you

she said with a low tone

Ruslan: good now let's go tell the boys

she swallowed hard looking down and tears welled her eyes and he lifted her chin up so she looks at him and he stared into her teary eyes

Ruslan: I got you....you won't ever do or face anything alone ok

she nodded and tears ran down her cheeks and he wiped them and perked her lips

Thandi: thank you for choosing me Ruu and for loving me

he kissed her forehead and he pulled her into a tight hug and they stayed like that for some time until Ray walked out and he found them in that position....he went to them and he looked at Ruslan

Ray: you good?

Ruslan: I am now

***he said with a straight face and Ray nodded

and he looked at Thandi***

Ray: you good too Tee?

she nodded

Ray: so we telling them to fuck off?

***Thandi nodded ***

Ray: tomorrow I'll go pick gran and gramps for a meeting so you tell them what's been happening and that you can't mourn for James before those barbarians (his family) come to cause trouble

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: let's go tell our boys

she sighed and they all walked inside and as soon as Naledi saw her she got up and went to her and they hugged tight

Naledi: o shap? (are you ok?)

Thandi nodded

Naledi: ok

she hugged her again

Ruslan: excuse us for a minute Star we need to tell the boys

Naledi swallowed hard and she nodded and they walked away

Jabu: he's suddenly different big Ray

Ray: I know....the last time I saw him like this was when Castiel.....

he then kept quiet and he sighed

Heath: who is Castiel?

Ray: someone who betrayed him....well he didn't have a choice but him running away instead of explaining things to Ruu so he understands why he did what he did almost turned Ruu into a bad....

then he kept quiet and he cleared his throat

Ray: why did that bastard James have to die
now nx

***he got up and walked away and Mbali also
got up and followed him***

.

.

.

Mpendulo: Ma what's going on....you've been
crying....uncle Ruu

Thandi: ummm i.....i just received some bad
news my boy

Mpilo sighed dramatically

Mpilo: let me guess.... dad won't be able to
come as always

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: listen here boys....me and your mother
love you very much and we will always be here

for you, so will your uncle Ray, uncle Jabu, uncle Mj and Uncle Heath and so will all your aunts ok

they nodded

Mpendulo: Ma what's going on?

tears ran down Thandi's face

Thandi: your...your father is gone....your Uncle Joe called me and told me that your father passed on

the boys froze as they looked at Thandi

Thandi: im sorry my babies...im so sorry but your dad is gone...he went to heaven

tears ran down Mpilo and Mpendulo's faces as their bottom lips trembled

Mpe: no he's fine....he....wait he....noo....mama he's....

he spoke fast with his heart beating fast

Thandi: im sorry baby

she said getting up to go hold him and he quickly got up and rushed out but Ruslan acted quickly by chanting a spell of illusion and he blinded him and that made Mpendulo to stop on his tracks outside the room and he rubbed his eyes trembling....Thandi wanted to run after him but Ruslan stopped her

Ruslan: I got this

Mpendulo: my...my eyes

he said rubbing them and Ruslan rushed out to him and he held him tight and whispered in his ear as Mpendulo was crying and Thandi was hugging a crying Mpilo inside the bedroom

Ruslan: calm down my boy...calm down

Mpendulo: my...my eyes...i...I can't see

then Ruslan removed the spell and Mpendulo started seeing

Ruslan: can you see now

Mpendulo nodded repeatedly

Ruslan: good now listen to me.... your father loves you dearly and he may have passed on but he'll live forever in here

he said pointing at Mpendulo's left side of his chest

Ruslan: its ok to cry, to shout and to feel hurt and sad but never ever do what you were thinking of doing.... do you also want to lose your mother too mmh?

he shook his head no crying

Ruslan: you running away will kill your mother is that what you want

he shook his head no still crying

Ruslan: good now listen here....im here for you, your brother and mother...I'll never let anything happen to either one of you and I'll skin alive

anyone who even attempts to hurt you....i'll always be here for you and your little brother and im not going anywhere you hear me

he nodded crying

Ruslan: you may not be mine biologically but I take you as my son, and your little brother too I take him as my own so cry champ, its ok but never ever think of running away or harm yourself in any way you hear me

Mpendulo nodded crying and Ruslan pulled him closer and he held him tight as he cried loud

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....02

.

.

.

.

NARRATED

***Ruslan continued to hold him tight and Mpendulo also continued to cry out loud....after sometime Ruslan picked him up and he went inside the room and he found Thandi trying to calm Mpilo down then he put Mpendulo on top of the bed and he put both his thumbs on his forehead then he whispered some spell and

immediately Mpendulo fell asleep.... then he made him sleep properly and he went to Thandi and he picked Mpilo up and Mpilo rested his head on his shoulder crying with hiccups and he went to sit down on the edge of the bed with him on his lap***

Ruslan: my pilot look at me

he did slowly and Ruslan wiped off his tears and mucus

Ruslan: it's gonna be ok, im here for you and Im never going anywhere you hear me

***Mpilo nodded sobbing with hiccups ***

Ruslan: your dad is with angels now and he's looking down on you ok and he loves you very much....and as for me im gonna be here for you, im not going anywhere ok

he nodded

Ruslan: I love you ok my pilot

he nodded and Ruslan kept on wiping his tears off and he rested Mpendulo's head on his chest and he held him and he looked at Thandi who looked like a beautiful mess...seeing her sons in this state broke her heart into pieces

Ruslan: you need to be strong for them amour....never shed tears in front of them they are still kids and they need to see you as their super woman so they can be strong themselves....i know it hurts my love but when they see you coping even though you know that inside it hurts, it will show them that all will be well cause mama is holding on and coping.....and this chest is yours to let it all out, to cry, to scream and to feel and look like shit but the moment you are around them you put up a brave and happy face so they'll be able to move on from this pain ok

she nodded wiping her tears off

Ruslan: you know I got you so be strong for

your boys and let daddy handle the rest ok

***she nodded again feeling lucky to have
Ruslan in her life***

Ruslan: good

then he got up with Mpilo

Ruslan: time for you to rest a bit my pilot

***he said putting him next to his brother and
he did what he did to Mpendulo and Mpilo also
fell asleep then he covered them with a throw
blanket and he went to Thandi and helped her
up and he kissed her forehead and led her out
of the room and they went to Ruslan's bedroom
and they laid in bed with Thandi's head on his
chest***

Thandi: how did you make them fall asleep like
that?

*** she asked with a curious tone and he
sighed***

Ruslan: it's my little secret but don't worry I'll tell you all about it after the funeral

Thandi: ummm why after the funeral?

Ruslan: because after the funeral im gonna get an answer to my marriage proposal and it better be Yes then im gonna tell you all about myself, my favorite color, food, drinks...my favorite sex position, the size of my erect dick, where my birthmark is and many other things including my "trick" that made the boys to fall asleep that quick

Thandi giggled and he kissed her forehead

Ruslan: now its time I do that little trick on you too so you can rest....when the boys wake up they need to find you looking fresh and better ok

Thandi: umm

***he flipped them over and he was on top

looking down on her and he smiled***

Ruslan: I love you so damn much and as much as it stings that you cried for another man but I understand cause you've been with that man for years and you have kids together.... but I will not...I repeat.... I will not take it lightly if you agree to mourn for him like a wife does for her husband and if they say they want their dowry back tell them its fine I'll pay double the amount he paid for you ok

she nodded and he perked her lips and his hand travelled to her stomach and he smirked and bend a bit again and he kissed her for some time...after a while he pulled out of the kiss and he put his thumbs on her forehead looking straight into her beautiful eyes and he whispered the spell

Thandi: huh?

***she asked cause she couldn't hear what he

was saying then she immediately fell asleep and he kissed her forehead and he went down and also kissed her stomach then he made her sleep comfortably and he covered her with a throw blanket and got out of bed and he walked out going down stairs***

.

.

.

the guys, their wives and kids where still around and now the guys were inside Ray's study room except for Mj after Ruslan asked them to go there to talk

Jabu: how are they?

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: it will take time but they'll be fine

Ray: well im more worried about you cause we all know those people will do anything in their

power to put the blame on Tee for his death cause she left him....you know how grieving families can be and they might even fight her for the cents he left or even force her to sit on the mattress and mourn him like a wife should

Heath: eish plus she once told me how bad they have been treating her ever since she left him

Jabu: ba nyela megwete ya bona nx (swear words)..... Fucken shit

Heath and Ray chuckled

Ruslan: my Thandi is off limits so they better not try that shit or I'll unleash hell on them

then he rubbed his head roughly

Ray: what is it?

Ruslan: I think there's foul play here....something possessed the chick to kill him

they looked at each other

Heath: nah I don't think so, Portia is ghetto like

that and she's just trash I mean she's worse than Omphile's mother

Jabu: heh I can't believe James ne a ja sefebe sele Portia (heh I can't believe James was fucking that bitch Portia)

Heath: mmmmh remember if you fuck a bitch you'll also die by one

they laughed

Ruslan: im dead serious man....James and the chick are victims on this, something forced the chick to kill James now my question is who or what did that and why

they all looked at him surprised

Ruslan: what?

Heath: why do you care about who or what killed him

Ruslan: cause even though I hated the nigga but he's Mpe and Mpilo's father and they love him

dearly even though he was a shitty father
lately.... they are broken man and I hate seeing
them like that....i was willing to let him live after
he hurt Thandi because of those boys

they all nodded

Jabu: now understand why you said you'll
handle him your way

Ray: so what do you wanna do?

Ruslan: I'll get to the bottom of it for the boys
and give you feedback

Heath: ok

he got up

Heath: this is our queue to head home im sure
my wife and kids are tired....we will see ya'll
tomorrow

Jabu: we are also vayiying too (leave too)

***he said getting up too and Heath and Ray
laughed***

Jabu: tomorrow gents (guys)

they all fist bumped and walked out then Ray got his tablet and he got busy on it and gave it to Ruslan

Ray: I bumped into the story in the morning I was waiting for us to be alone so I can show you

he read the headlines and continued to read the rest of the story and he frowned and looked up at Ray

Ruslan: he's here?

Ray: his last known location was Sierra Leone where he lived with Juana

Ruslan: this can't be.... maybe it's the Beasts

Ray shook his head

Ray: it's not, I asked Mateo to do some research about the incident and he found out that the girl that is kidnapped is a girlfriend to one of Baba's

hitman Menzi or Manzi and the guy contacted Baba after she was taken probably to ask for help cause the search is on for her and it's Khumalo's men searching for her all over

Ruslan got up still holding the Tablet

Ruslan: so he's here....he's been here all along

Ray sighed

Ray: it looks like it but my question is why her and why did he kill the guys in that manner

Ruslan: he's a vampire so he's supposed to suck their blood so why did he kill them like that cause the last time he killed someone like that it was that guy that once kidnapped Juana that time....its like he was angry or...

Ray: protecting the girl from the guys cause Mat found out that the guys had guns on them and one of the guy's gun was fired on the scene cause a neighbor confirmed that he heard a gunshot....then the blood on the ground is

probably hers and her belongings were found on the scene

Ruslan sighed rubbing his head

Ruslan: they say the car door was ripped off the car and thrown miters away from the scene....shit he's here....that son of Vamp is here

Ray: but why though and where is Juana

Ruslan: he always wanted a child what if he kidnaped the girl to bear him a child cause if he changed Juana then she won't be able to bear him children or Juana fell pregnant and the child killed her...fuck I don't know

Ray: shit...yeah it could be but Juana is a sweetheart man she wouldn't do that to another woman.....we both know his seeds are toxic man....maybe his child killed her

Ruslan: people change man....i mean look at Cass, that motherfucker was my brother and I

trusted him and what did he do, he fucken betrayed me for a woman so he probably changed her to be like him nx ungrateful bastard

Ray sighed

Ray: we both know why he did what he did
Ruslan: fuck him....that bitch-ass-nigga had a choice....he could've told me and that would've showed that he doesn't wanna do it and that he can't betray me or lose Juana and we would've found a way for him to give the Brethrens what they want and for him to also save Juana but he chose to betray me instead....so much for brotherhood fucken piece of shit!

he said looking angry and Ray sighed again

Ray: calm down

Ruslan huffed and he put the Tablet down

Ruslan: he's gonna kill that girl if he wants her to carry his child....and Juana how could she let that happen.....fuck

Ray: wait what if all the women that went missing here in South Africa are all his victims

Ruslan: shit.....I need to find him before the Khumalos does cause they'll kill him man....we both know he won't go down without a fight and he's a fucken lunatic he might kill them even

Ray got up and he started pacing around

Ray: then Mbali will be shattered and Saint will come out and shit will hit the fan.....yeah we need to find him cause it says on the article the woman is also pregnant and since the hitman is loyal to the Khumalos they'll do anything to find her and when they do its gonna be a blood bath that will affect everyone including us man.....Saint will go berserk for his mother so we need to find him man....and we cant tell the

Khumalos cause you know how the brothers
are

.

.

.

**** AT MENZI AND BUHLE'S HOUSE***

***Menzi has locked himself inside his study ever since he came back in the morning, he's busy calling in favors and also doing anything possible to find Kazi but nothing tangible was coming out of it and as for Buhle she's upstairs in their bedroom worried as hell....she's rereading the story of Kazi's kidnapping for the umpteenth time....she can see how her kidnapping affected Menzi, he's a mess...he hasn't slept, bathed or eaten anything and she's worried about him.... then the door opened and he walked in and he went straight to the en-suit

bathroom and she heard the shower running then she sighed....less than five minutes later he got out and he dried himself and put lotion on his body and he got dressed as she watched then he walked to the door but then he stopped midway and he turned to look at her with a frown on his face***

Menzi: if you had anything to do with her kidnapping then you better commit suicide or bring her back alive with my kids still safely in her womb before I find out....she's carrying my kids and....

he swallowed getting more angry and emotional at the same time

Menzi: the blood found on the ground indicated that she was shot on the stomach area and if....if anything happened to my kids and you are involved im going to give you a slow and painful death just like I did to your shuga daddy....i hope you aren't involved Buhle cause I'd hate to make

you meet your ancestors in a most cruel manner

then he walked out slamming the door leaving Buhle shaking with fear

.

.

.

****AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION****

*** The following day Castiel was busy cleaning around the house when he heard someone moaning in pain (he has super hearing abilities) then he left what he was doing and he went to the room Kazi was in and he found her moaning in pain.....she still had her eyes closed but she was feeling extreme pain. He then took the Morphine drug and he injected it on her IV and as soon as the morphine entered her body she

stopped moving and moaning in pain and laid still, he then threw away the used syringe and he huffed looking annoyed and he walked out***

Castiel: Juana better be in hell so when I get there when I finally die I'll give her a piece of my fucken mind

***he said to himself pouring himself a glass of whiskey and he gulped it all down ***

Castiel: I don't even know why I saved her.....i mean now I have to wait until she heals for her to fall pregnant again....useless....that's what she is.....fucken useless!

he put the glass down

Castiel: YOU HEAR THAT JUANA....YOU BETTER MAKE SURE YOU WENT TO HEAVEN OR ELSE I'LL MAKE HELL TOO SMALL FOR THE TWO OF US NX!

***he shouted looking angry then he sighed and

he took his laptop and he sat down....he switched it on and he tapped on a folder and a live stream video was playing....he watched Buhle pacing up and down in her bedroom then he chuckled shaking his head***

Castiel: wrong choice little girl....that hitman of yours is gonna kill you I mean he killed his own father so imagine what he would do to you

*** he said looking at Buhle pacing up and down then he went to the video that showed Menzi's study room and he saw him on the phone busy pacing up and down shouting and he shook his head***

Castiel: pussy! if you killed that bitch along with your father none of this would've happened...wait what am I saying Kazi belong to me...I fucken own her so tough boy

*** he laughed a bit then he went to the kids room and they weren't there then he went to the

play room and they were watching cartoons on Tv with the nanny watching them then he swallowed hard and he closed the laptop....his mind went to his late son.... to how he made another bad choice....first he chose Juana over his brother Ruslan and then he chose Juana again over his son and now she's dead leaving him all alone.....he wished he made different choices but it was too late and also impossible to go back in time to rectify his mistakes***

Castiel: fuck....

he said rubbing his face then he laid on the couch and he closed his eyes and imagine his life before he met Juana

.

.

.

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

*** Mbali was busy preparing lunch for Ray, Ruslan, Mj and Mateo and herself when Mj walked in the kitchen and he cleared his throat....he still couldn't believe how beautiful and young Mbali was, yes he has a crush on her but that's where it ends cause he knows Ray will literally kill him if he even try that shit on her cause he has seen how much he loves her and how obsessed he is with her and plus his heart beats for someone else***

Mbali: hey you good

he cleared his throat again

Mj: ummm yeah

Mbali: oohk but it looks like something is troubling you.....you do know that a problem shared is half solved right

***she said smiling at him and his heart melted and he found himself smiling too then he

quickly stopped smiling and he cleared his throat***

Mj: i....its complicated

Mbali: then uncomplicated it for me then

she said raising her eyebrow at him and he swallowed hard cause she looked hot doing that

Mj: umm its....ummm ok fine....the thing is back home im in love with some girl

she smiled-frowned at him

Mbali: how is that complicated....wait....ooh my God don't tell me she's pregnant...ooh my God your brothers are gonna skin you a....

he interrupted her

Mj: what?....no...no...no its not that geez

Mbali: phewww ok umm so what's wrong

he sighed

Mj: well let's say her family and my own hate each other

Mbali: ooooh I see

Mj: yeah so ummm next year she's also gonna come study this side and I wonder how will my brothers take it when they find out about us

Mbali sighed

Mbali: well Ray and I have been there...done that....owned it and now we good

Mj: wait your family hated Big Ray too

he asked surprised and she laughed a bit which made him smile a bit looking at her

Mbali: hate is an understatement Mj....one time they even shot him when they found out about us

Mj's eyes popped out and she laughed

Mbali: mmmmh but we never gave up on us and look at us now

he sighed

Mj: I don't wanna get shot or beaten up Flower...
I bruise too easily

Mbali laughed out loud

Mbali: well if you truly love her then it will all be
worth it Mj....you might even take a bullet for her

he shook his head dramatically

Mj: and put it where? im sorry but im not a
movie star or a white man Flower im black so
no taking a bullet for a girl or moving mountains
for her or even swimming to the middle of the
ocean for her....im too cute to be doing all that

Mbali was busy laughing

Mbali: ah ah Mj

Mj: what?....look a no be Romeo na any of those
fools that died for love ooo....do you know how
delicious yam, fufu, pepe soup and many other
Nigerian foods are....no no no and not forgetting

plain pap, sour pap, chicken feet and tribe and skop (sheep head) ooh and cho....chot low (chotlo - traditionally cooked red stew meat)

Mbali was in stitches....he let her laugh until she calmed down and she wiped off her tears

Mj: you done laughing at me now

she laughed

Mbali: I can't with you Mj....damn you are crazy and I like it

he laughed and she joined him

Mbali: so what happened between your families?

he sighed

Mj: umm her sister....ok let me put it this way...mom and dad once married a wife for brother Heath without his knowledge and when they brought her here all hell broke loose....then they took her back to her parents' house and it

got heated and apparently words and insults were exchanged and now they hate each other to a point that they even don't do business together anymore

she frowned at him

Mbali: wait you mean that Nigerian girl Naledi told me about

Mj: ummm yeah

Mbali: mara Mj

Mj: its this stupid heart Flower...

he said beating his chest

Mj: I tried to fight it but damn this stupid thing just won't listen

Mbali: OMG Heath is gonna flip

well she didn't know so will Ray cause he once slept with Adanma

Mj: well he's not into her at all

Mbali: but she made Naledi cry dude and worse part she was pregnant

he sighed

Mj: but Mercy is not like that Flower....she's humble, loving and kindhearted....well she's more like you, sister Star and sister Amo so she'll fit in nicely

Mbali: ok but the big question is....is she really worth it and if she is then I'll support you and try to protect you from your brother but if not then don't open old wounds because of someone you don't see a future will

he sighed and he sat down then she patted his shoulder

Mbali: its part of growing up dude ask me I've been there

***then she continued to prepare lunch as he sat there thoughtfully....then he looked at her and his eyes landed on her appetizing ass and

he swallowed hard and quickly looked away***

Mj: ummm thanks for the talk I'll...I'll surely think things through before I do something I'll regret

Mbali: good

she nodded looking at him with a smile on her face

Mj: ummm I'll...I'll just go to the...to the guys

then he walked out and breathed out loud then he went upstairs

Mj: shit I need to leave this house

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆

18SLV...INSERT.....03...***NARRATED***Gogo:
yini ofuna ukusitshela Thandi? (what is it that
you wanted to tell us Thandi?)***Thandi cleared
her throat and she looked down while playing
with her fingers***Mkhulu: Thandi kwenzekani?
(Thandi what's going on?)Thandi: ummm
ngiyazi ukuthi ngabe nginitshеле futhi
ngiyaxolisa (ummm I know I should've told
you and im sorry)Gogo: usitshele ukuthini? (told
us what?)Thandi: ukuthi uJames name
sahlukana and that we both even moved on
ngaphambi ngokuba afe (ummm that James
and I broke up and that we botheven moved on
before he died)Mkhulu: heh?Thandi: he cheated
and got Omphile's aunt pregnant....the same
woman who killed himMkhulu: ini? (what)***she
told them everything that happened except for
her new relationship with Ruslan cause she was
scared they might judge her somehow but at
least she gave them a hint about both of them

“moving on” ***Gogo: ooh nkosi yam (ooh my God)***she said with her hands on top of her head***Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo no mkhulu for not telling you....my mind was all over the place and when they called me and told me James was killed by his girlfriend and that im supposed to sit on the mattress for him that's when I realized that I should've told both families of our break upMkhulu: so his family didn't know about the other womanThandi: his brother knew and my brothers also knewbut I told them to stay out of it and that I'll handle it then he left for Limpopo and since then I haven't seen himMkhulu: yeses!Thandi: then I heard ukuthi he came back but he never, not even once came to see the boys, he would only call them and make promises that he would come see them then he wouldn't show up***she sighed***Gogo: what did I say to you when you told me James proposed Thandi?***Thandi looked down and she

swallowed hard***Gogo: ngikhuluma nawe Thandi (im talking to you Thandi)....what did I say?***she asked her with a raised voice***Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo (im sorry Granny)Gogo: I warned you Thandi but you didn't believe meangithi (right)Thandi: im sorry***she said crying***Gogo: you could've avoided everything and now you have James family to deal with and you know how they are and on top of it ugogo wakhe ungumthakathi (his grandmother is a witch)***Thandi just continued to cry***Gogo: heh heh "James and I have been through the worst and we will surely survive whatever is coming".....are you surviving it now mmmmh?Mkhulu: mkami yehlisa umoya (calm down my wife)Gogo: hai these children baya dina man nx (are too much man nx)Thandi: ngiyaxolisa gogo....please forgive me im sorry***she pleaded with her***Gogo: so what now.....are you going to sit on the mattress like they told you to?***Thandi shook her head

no***Thandi: no***Mkhulu sighed***Mkhulu:
what about the boys?Thandi: I wont stop them
from paying their last respects to their
father***Mkhulu nodded***Gogo: yazi Thandi
angazi nokuthi ngithini kuwe (you know Thandi
I don't even know what to say to you)Thandi:
ngiyaxolisa gogo (im sorry)i wish I listened to
you and mkhulu and the worst part is I think I
stayed with him and took in all his nonsense
because I wanted to give the boys a family,
something I never got to experience when I was
growing up and now my sons are heartbroken
and were way hurt before he was even killed
and I don't know how to take away their
pain***she said sobbing and her grandmother
sighed***Gogo: its ok...come here***Thandi got
up and went to sit next to her grandmother and
she hugged her tight and Thandi just let it all
out with her grandmother comforting
her***... ****AT AN UNDISCLOSED
LOCATION*****Kazi moved her eyeballs

around for some time with her eyes shut and after some time she slowly opened her eyes and blinked a couple of times until she regained a clear vision and she looked around***Castiel: take it easy woman....your stitches haven't healed***he said getting up and he poured water into a glass and helped her drink some water with a straw and he adjusted the bed and fixed the pillows for her to lay comfortable***Kazi: where...where am I?***she said with a husky voice and Castiel just put his hands inside his pockets and looked at her***Kazi: you....I remember you.....the elevatorCastiel: sharp mind I see***he said with a straight face***Kazi: where...where am I and...and who are youCastiel: well you in my house and I'm Castiel***her heart started beating fast and her hand went to stomach***Castiel: they didn't make it***her eyes popped out as she looked at him and her bottom lip trembled and tears started coming

out with her chest visibly moving up and down***Castiel: and to clear things up....im not responsible for your miscarriage “if I may call it that”, your baby-daddy’s wife is the one responsible....she sendthugs to kill you and your now dead babies***tears continued to run down her cheeks until she let out a heart breaking cry....she screamed holding her stomach not even caring about the pain then Castiel just walked out leaving her crying her eyes out***...Castiel: eat!***he said giving her a plate with some home cooked meal and she didn’t move an inch or even look at him...it was late in the afternoon***Castiel: lady I said eat!***she continued to stare into space and he clenched his jaws getting annoyed***Castiel: fine.... but just know that you have a few hours to stay like a zombie just like you are now but tomorrow if you ignore me like you are doing now, I’ll literally force food down your throat and if you think im joking just know that I don’t joke around***then

he put the plate on top of the side drawer and he walked out then Kazi blinked and she inhaled loudly as tears gushed out and she just let it all out crying painfully....Downstairs Castiel watched Buhle on his laptop packing her clothes in a travelling bag and he knew what she was about to do...then he took his burner phone and he dialed her number and watched as she picked her phone and hesitantly answered it***Buhle: helloCastiel: how does it feel to have blood in your handsBuhle?***he watched her gasp with her hands shaking and he chuckled***Buhle: who...who are you and what the fuck are you talking about?Castiel: that's not important lady but what is important is me having a recording of one of your hitman confessing before he died painfully***he lied to her and he saw her sit down on the edge of the bed and he smirked***Buhle: i...I don't know what you are talking about....if you have nothing to do with your life then go masturbate or

something nx***she dropped the call and Castiel laughed, then he watched her pacing up and down with her hands on top of her head then he send her a message and it read;“since you think im kidding then how about I send the recording to your dearest husband and lets see if he'll have the same thoughts as you....just so you know Kazi's babies died so you are a dead woman lady....i mean D...E...A...D dead!”***then he also put in laughing emojis and he send the sms to her and watched her sink down to the floor as she read the sms....the two guys she hired to kill Kazi were killed brutally and she knew its possible that they confessed to be spared cause whoever killed them seemed dangerous that even the police are shocked at the state the bodies and the car were...then his phone rang and he chuckled and answered it***Castiel: lady im not done with jerking myself up you knowBuhle: what...what do you want?***she said with a low tone***Castiel: I'll

let you know in due time so in the meantime
don't even think of running away cause I have
eyes and ears everywhere....just be a good wife
to that bull of yours and pray he doesn't find
out that you killed his babies...you better answer
the call when I call or else....***he chuckled then
he dropped the call and he watched her crying
with her body shaking and he closed his laptop
and he sat back and smirked then he closed his
eyes***Castiel: Juana you better talk to that
useless woman YOU forced me to nurse back to
health to eat or she'll join you wherever you are
and you know im not joking....talk to her or I'll
traumatize her to a point of no return nx***he
said still with his eyes closed***Castiel: and tell
her im not a nice man and when I say I'll do
something I do it for real so if she doesn't snap
out of it by tomorrow....***he chuckled a "she
doesn't fucken know how I can get" chuckle
***Castiel: she needs to heal fast because I
want that baby so talk to her***then he

hummed an ancient song his mother used to hum whenever she was trying to calm herself down***...****AT THANDI'S HOUSE*****Three days ago James' aunt called gogo and told them they are coming for a meeting with the vilakazis since Thandi told her when she called to ask why she haven't arrived as yet in Limpopo and Thandi told her she won't sit on the mattress for James cause she broke up with James so the aunt told Gogo they will arrive three days later to hold a meeting with them... and now its three days later and they are all sitting in the lounge, it's the Mashabas (James aunt, Joe, his eldest brother Jackson and James' two uncles) and the Vilakazis (gogo, mhkulu, Jabu, Ray, Heath and Ruslan) Thandi's mother refused to come to the meeting cause she said she used to warn Thandi about James but she thought she knew it all so she's not getting involved cause she has never acknowledged their "supposed" marriage and she didn't even

chowher lobola money so those who did (being gogo andmkhulu) they should see how they handle everything.....Asfor Ruslan well he didn't give a fuck about not being family....he just came in and sat down leaving Jabu and Heath chuckling while Gogo and Mkhulu saw right through him and they just shook their heads and let him because deep down they knew he and Thandi were seeing each other and that he's stubborn....as for Gogo she knew he practiced white-witchcraft and that deep down he's a good man so she decided to stay out of it and let fate play its part ***Mkhulu: now that we are all here we can start***Joe cleared his throat***Joe: askies madala (sorry old man) but I know everyone here except for this guy, is he family?Ray: are you here to get to know our family members or something else brought you here man***he said with a firm tone and Joe raised his eyebrow at him***Joe: look here man we are all family here so I wanted to know if

he's also familyJabu: o reng wena snai....o
family ya mang wena....bona mo o sa tsamaya o
botsa batho gore o family ya rona verstaan ntja
and dai man ke family ya rona so zipa dai
molomo wa gao (what are you saying you
fool....you are part of who's family?....lookhere
don't go around telling people that you are part
of our family, do you understand dog and that
man is our family member so shut up) and let's
get this over and done with nxJoe: don't talk to
m...James uncle: Joel miyela man (keep quiet
man)***Joe kept quiet and so did Jabu but they
gave each other nasty looks and Heath
chuckled***Uncle1: you can continue
VilakaziMkhulu: well since you all called for this
meeting Mashaba you should startAunt: im the
one who called for this meeting so I'll
speak.....what I want is for Thandi to tell me to
my face why she isn't in Limpopo as we speak
mourning for her husband like she
should***Ruslan looked at the aunt and he

immediately disliked her....the aura around her
felt evil and as for Thandi she looked at her
grandma and her grandmother nodded then
Thandi cleared her throatand looked at James'
aunt***Thandi: like I told you aunty, I cant sit on
the mattress for James cause we broke up way
before he was killed by HIS BABY-MAMA***she
emphasized the last part***Aunt: broke up?....is
that your excuseThandi: its not an excuse aunty
it's a fact...you can even ask Joe cause he
knows we broke up***the aunt clapped her
hands once laughing and Ruslan clenched his
jaws looking at her***Aunt: yah neh hai James
otese xilo ntsena a re yi ngwansate wa
yena....xilo ntsena ai.... yeses voJames na vona
va famba va doba doba man yeses nx (James
brought us a useless thing as a wife....a useless
thing....yeses James decided to go around
picking useless things man)Jabu: askies***He
said moving to the edge of his seat***Jabu:
uthini? (what did you say?)***he said looking at

the aunt and she made a disgusted face***Gogo: hai JabuJabu: wooh gogo let this kokwane repeat what she said about ThandiUncle2: can we stop all these and go back to the reason we are all here assomblief (please)Jabu: wooh uncle vag (uncle wait).....***then he looked at the aunty***Jabu: eeh kokwane (ey old lady) I said repeat what you said about ThandiJackson: don't talk to my aunt like that boy***he said with a scratchy voice and Jabu looked at him with a pissed off look***Mkhulu: ok boys stop it assomblief (please)....this isnot the time or placeJabu: fine Khulus but die mense ba sa tla mo from Giyani ba kgokgolloga ka maShangaan bag a bona batlo re tella mo....a se Giyani mo, a re loye hierso...mo re go tlhaba ka bullet wa no swa once (these people shouldn't come here all the way from Giyani with their Shangaan bag to come mess with us...this is not Giyani, we don't do witchcraft here....we shoot you and you die

immediately)Joe: wanyela san (fuck you boy)Heath: go nnyela mmao san (fuck your mother boy)***he said with a straight face and Joe got up***Joe: o reng ka my oulady san (what did you say about my mother boy)***Heath also got up and Jackson got up too and so did Ray...as for Ruslan his eyes were on Thandi the whole time, reading her emotions cause he wanted her as calm as possible***Heath: wena o reng ka broer ya ka (you...what did you say about my brother)Ray: ok ya'll need to settle down...now!***he said warning them and Mkhulu shook his head looking down and they all sat down giving each other nasty looks***Uncle1: ok lets discuss what brought us here so we can leave before things get out of hand***he was one of those sophisticated men and he was well off***Aunt: wait bhut Mzamane.....jaha leri rere yini yi sisi wa mina? (wait brother Mzamane...what did this boy say about my sister)***she said getting

up taking off her shoulder scarf (a don't touch) and she tied it around her waist***Mzamane: will you calm down!Aunt: calm down?....calm down? look here I won't sit here and listen to this thugs insult my late sister while I sit aroundHeath: so what are you gonna do mmmmh....fight us***he said with a bored look on his face and the aunt chuckled***Aunt: heh heh ok..ok...well then listen here little girl***she said looking at Thandi***Aunt:this house belongs to my late son so is the car you are driving so get up and pack you rugs and get the hell out!Gogo: woah stop right there....first of all your son wasn't rich and that car you claim as your son's wasbought by my grandson Heath and he gave it to Thandi as a birthday gift and everything that is inside this house most of them were house....heh Thandi what do they call it again?Thandi: house warming gifts gogo***she said with a low tone***Gogo: ehe khona lokhu....house warming gifts so don't talk

as if your son was some rich guy my granddaughter was feeding off***she said getting worked up***Mkhulu: mkami yehlisa umoya (my wife calm down)Gogo: baba I won't sit and watch this woman attack my granddaughter.....i kept quiet when he kept on hurting Thandi countless times and his family did nothing about it and I thought maybe is because shewas a girlfriend and now even though he came and paid ilobolo for her he still hurt her by sleeping around and he also got the girl pregnant and insteadof understanding why she can't sit on the mattress you come here to insult herJabu: batshele gogo!Aunt: maybe she wasn't woman enough that's why he went outside***Thandi closed her eyes tight as that hit her hard and Ruslan got up***Ruslan: ENOUGH!***he said looking angry***Ruslan: IF YOU HAVE NOTHING BETTER TO SAY THEN KEEP QUIET!*** He said looking at the aunt and they all kept quiet.....he also kept quiet a bit

trying to calm himself down***Ruslan: first of all your son was a useless piece of shit, he hurt Thandi more than you can even count...he was a serial cheat and you as his family never called him to order, he even hurt his sons by constantly lying to them about coming to see them so don't come here and talk nonsense!***he said with an angry voice and Thandi wiped her tears that kept falling***Ray: Ruu...Ruslan: you should be here begging Thandi to help ya'll hide the kind of man your son was which is a useless, no-backbone whatsoever, weak piece of shit and not what you are doing nowMzamane: she should help us?....hey wena she's our daughter in law, so don't stand there and talk nonsense***Uncle number two got up***Uncle: excuse me I need a smoke***then he walked out shaking his head***Mkhulu: people please calm down!Aunt: calm down for what.....you are all sitting there pretending as if Thandi is the first woman to get

hurt...we all know marriage is no walk in a park....yesJames hurt her so what!Jabu: SO WHAT?.... UTHI SO WHAT?....AWUNYIPERHAPS HEH ?Jackson: don't talk to my aunt like that boy, this is your final warning!Jabu: or what?***he said getting up***Jackson: ni ta ku tshova nenge mfo (I'll break your leg man)***he threatened him***Ruslan: hey.....just because you have muscles doesn't mean you are strong, and just because you are an ex-military man doesn't mean you are all that....there are useless and dumb stupid men in the military so shut the hell up and sit down!***Jackson took a step closer to Ruslan and Ruu clenched his jaws***Ruslan: Ray take this cockroach off my face before I squash it***he said through his teeth and Ray got up and stood between them***Ray: sit!***he said to Jackson***Jackson: don't fucken tell me what to doMzamane: Jackson tshama hanse man (Jackson sit down)...sit!Ray: yeah Jackson you

heard your uncle...sit!Aunt: whose side are you on Mzamane heh...so you're ok with these thugs disrespecting us like this?Mzamane: we didn't come here to fight man...we came here to know why Thandi refused to mourn for her husband not all this fighting***the aunt clapped her hands once and she chuckled ****Mkhulu: thank you Mashaba....Sambulo no Ruslan sit down too***they slowly did looking at Jackson who was angry cause Ruslan disrespected him***Mzamane: now Thandi you do know traditionally that you are still our daughter in law so the fact that you and James broke up doesn't mean anything, when you two broke up you should've informed bothfamilies firstThandi: if I was the one dead would you say the same thing to James uncle?***she said looking at him and Ruslan smirked***Thandi: Joe here knew everything that was going onbetween James and I and as an elder brother he didn't even bother calling James into order or to even

call a family meeting for us....when he called to tell me about James' passing he said his baby mama killed him that she finally killed him meaning he knew where James was all along...Joe: hey don't blame me for your failed marriage ok***Thandi laughed bitterly***Thandi: you all never liked me or accepted me as James wife.....***she turned to the aunt***Thandi: you aunty you used to insult me every chance you got***then she looked at Joe***Thandi: and you Joe you used to remind me how your family warned James about marrying someone like me and that I don't "fit" in your family***she said with tears running down her cheeks and Ruslan's hands started shaking with anger cause he doesn't want to see Thandi cry and Ray saw him then he whispered that he should calm down***Thandi: and now you are here forcing me to mourn for a man that never respected me, that never even acknowledged my worth***the aunt laughed***Aunt: vona la

sesinyana, you are not the first bride to be hated by the in laws and you are not the first bride to be hurt by her husband and you also are not the first and wont be the last bride to be cheated on...now here is the thing, it's either you accept to do right by your late husband or we disown you and your kids and im sure you know what that meansMkhulu: haibo!***he exclaimed***Gogo: mihiolo!***Heath chuckled shaking his head and Jabu shook his head not believing what she was saying and as for Ruslan he was looking at Thandi while Ray was looking at him to see his reaction***Thandi: you can't do thatAunt: yes we can now what is it gonna be?Gogo: niya hlanya manje....what kind of a family are you mmmmh?***she said getting worked up***Aunt: now what is it gonna be sesinyana, and know that us disowning you and your sons means even if your boys someday will need an ancestral ceremony to be done for them we won't do it in fact you will be

banned from setting your feet akaya (back home)***then Thandi started crying***Gogo: so now you are using her children to do what you want, uyiskhohlakali somfazi wena.....a despicable woman!Mkhulu: Mashaba***he said looking at uncle Mzamane but the uncle just raised his right eyebrow with an attitude then Ruslan got up***Ruslan: gramps leave them....these people came with an agenda, in fact they came with plan A and plan B....with plan A they used James house and other stupid things to make Thandi agree to what they want and they failed cause she's not budging.....and their plan B is using her sons which is low even for useless people like themJackson: just shut up and sit down man cause you talking nonsense***Ruslan gave him an intimidating stare until Jackson looked away***Jabu: Mshikaro waitsi leShangaan le le thoma go ntlatsa phinya le melomo ekare o sunne mbaola (Mshikaro this Shangaan is starting to piss me

off with his big lips as if he kissed mbaola “a metal container for holding burning coals”

)Ruslan: from what I know gramps is that this ugly woman as James’ mother can sit on that mattress if Thandi refuses right***Mkhulu nodded***Gogo: yes my son she can so I don’t understand why she’s doing all this nx....uyi skhohlakali somfazi lo nx (she’s a despicable woman)Ray: that’s because she’s power hungry and a control freakAunt: askies?Ruslan: and she holds all these men by their ballsJackson: fuck you...you hear me fuck you!Joe: how dare you insult us like this?Mzamane: now I see why you told James not to marry this thing nxAunt: well since it looks like you made your decisionsesinyana, I want you to pack maguja a wena (your things) and get out of my son’s house***Ruslan chuckled and Mkhulu shook his head and he got up and walked out then Ruslan went to a crying Thandi and he helped her up and he went to gogo and helped her up

too***Gogo: uyabona wena skhohlakali somfazi
(you see you evil woman)....your day will come
you...***Ray interrupted her***Ray: Gogo don't
exchange words with witches...you are prayerful
woman and a respected one at that so don't
taint yourself with this dirty thingAunt: GET
OUT....GO AND PACK YOUR RUGS AND LEAVE
MY SON'S HOUSE YOU PATHETIC
THING....HUMA! (leave)Ruslan: Tee go with
gogo and pack your clothes andthe boys
clothes too***she nodded while wiping her
tears as they kept on falling and Gogo went
with her to her bedroom***Jabu: lena le le three
le marete (you three dickheads), you gonna pay
for this....le e gatile ko moseleng dimpya ke
lena(you messed with the wrong one you
useless dogs).... by the time he's done with
you...***he pointed at Ruslan***Jabu: even your
ancestors won't recognize you....and the fact
that im telling you all this ka sekgowa means im
dead serious***then he walked out***Jackson:

cockroaches don't scare us boy, ha te doomer
te fa (we spray them with doom and they
die)***he said looking at Ruslan and Heath
laughed then he got up and started whistling
with his hands in his pockets***Heath: you
know big Ray im trying to calm down so Caesar
doesn't come out but this fucker keeps on
pressing my wrong buttons***he said
chuckling***Heath: but its all good....our day will
come right?Ray: you bet it will***then he went
after Thandi and Gogo leaving Ruslan, Ray and
the Mashabas***Aunt: you don't scare me
boy***she said looking at Ruslan***Ruslan:
በጥም ጥሩ የሆኑ ነው ስ-ብስኩለ! (you should be
scared)***he said in the forbidden language and
his eyes changed from his normal colour to
light green then they went back to normal and
the Mashabas felt cold shills run down their
spines***Ray: you shouldn't have used the boys
to hurt Thandi....you shouldn't have***then he
leaned back on the couch and he looked at

them as they looked at Ruslan looking a bit spooked**...****OUTSIDE****Jabu: dimpya tse (those dogs) don't know me Khulus...especially lebrakane le le ba reng ke Jackson le seriba sa mpya gape le melomo ekare o gotse a letsa diprompeta nx rubbish (especially thatsmall dog called Jackson with a big forehead and big lips as if he grew up blowing on trumpets)***Mkhulu just looked down and he shook his head laughing and James' uncle joined him...they were standing together on the veranda with James' uncle smoking***Uncle2: be careful man...valoya vano lavaya (they do witchcraft)Jabu: mxm a dinchikini dimpya tsele nna (mxm they don't scare me)Mkhulu: like Ruslan said they came here with an agenda JabulaniUncle2: and the only reason im here with them is because our mother forced me to be part of all this nonsense....and those two don't even like me they just tolerate me cause we shared the same womb...a ne loye mina (I

don't do witchcraft) so I don't qualify to be in their circle***Jabu looked at him surprised***Uncle: my advice....give them James' things since Thandi refused to do what they want or to be controlled by them or else they might hurt Thandi using the boys, remember those boys have James' blood running through their veins so its easy to bewitch them***Mkhulu sighed***Mkhulu: yeses angikholelwa ukuthi lokhu kwenzeka (I can't believe this is happening)Uncle: money or peace of mind, your choice.... and even if you choose peace of mind still make sure Thandi and the boys are protected, and I hope you know what I mean***then he continued to smoke with Jabu staring at him shocked***...****AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION*****Kazi was just staring into space after her crying session, when she heard a voice whispering next to her***Voice: Kazi!***she blinked and turned her head and the was no

one, then she sighed thinking she was now losing her mind but then the voice whispered again***Voice: Kazi.... everything is going to be alright please eat....***she quickly looked around but she was all alone....her heart then started beating fast***Voice: eat or he'll kill you, you are no use to him when you are weak....eat please....***she tried to move but she felt pain and she laid there shaking with her eyes wondering around***...#hit-like-pls and comment #MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆

18SLV INSERT...04...

NARRATED***Castiel was at the mall, he

went to buy groceries since now he can't only feed off blood since Kazi is there so he's gonna have to eat solid food for his skin to seem normal...anyway after buying groceries she decided to go buy toiletries and clothes for Kazi cause he can't stomach the thought of her wearing Juana's clothes, after his shopping spree he felt his presence...his stomach knotted and he swallowed hard, his eyes wondered around until they landed on him...He was with two boys and a woman and he still looked good, well better than good cause he looked like he's been hitting the gym for some time, then he saw him stop walking as if he's suddenly frozen and he knew he felt his presence too then he walked away blending in with the crowd making sure he doesn't see him***Castiel: fuck he's here....wait are those boys his and the woman is she his wife...fuck!***he said to himself but then he stopped as he felt his presence getting closer and closer and he quickly went inside a

boutique for woman's clothes that was closer to him and he hid there with his heart pounding hard against his chest and he pretended to be looking for something to buy....he then peeped to see if he was still around and he saw him standing there looking around and he swallowed hard cause he missed him so damn much but he knew he might kill him if he even shows himself for double crossing

him***Castiel: leave Mahamadou!***he spoke with him using his mind, something they were taught by their late mother***Ruslan: so it's really you....you've been here all along you bastard***Castiel swallowed hard***Castiel:

just go about your business and pretend that this shit never happened***Ruslan

chuckled***Ruslan: show yourself man or are you now some scared little bitch***Castiel

chuckled***Castiel: rather a scared little bitch than a dead one little bro Ruslan: where is the girl Castie

Castiel: I don't know what you are talking about

Ruslan: you picked the wrong one and now
beasts are after you and you know beasts and
vampires don't mix...now where the hell is that
girl?***Castiel chuckled***Castiel: there are no
beasts here Madou only small town witchcraft
and gangsterism***Ruslan chuckled***Ruslan:
nope I personally know a family of real beasts
and they are looking for that girl***Castiel
frowned***Castiel: you're lying man, you want
me to come out so you can kill me im not stupid
Madou ok Ruslan: her baby daddy is a hitman to
the beast family and they are coming for you
and believe me its just a matter of
time***Castiel kept quiet thinking***Ruslan:
Castiel!***he continued to keep quiet***Ruslan:
Cass!Castiel: why are you telling me all this
Madou I mean you hate me Ruslan: so that I will
be the one to kill you, that's why...Castiel
thought as much Ruslan: now let that girl go
Castiel: I'd rather have the beasts' blood on my

hands than my own brother's blood Ruslan:
Cass don't do this Castiel: look man im sorry for
choosing Juana over you and guess what
karma dealt with me by taking her so don't
make me fight you, just go about your business
and let me deal with my shit Ruslan: she....she's
dead?***Castiel chuckled bitterly***Castiel:
yeah and now im all alone...no family.... nothing
and that girl can change all that Ruslan: no no
no Castiel listen to me....***he interrupted
him***Castiel: if the beasts succeed in killing
me, which I doubt they will then bury me upside
down so that the world can kiss my fossil
ass....adios brother***then he looked around the
shop and everyone was minding their business
then he checked the security cameras and they
weren't facing him then he opparated from
where he was to his car in the underground
parking lot and he loaded his things in the car,
got in and drove off***Ruslan: shit!***then he
took out his phone and dialed Thandi's

phone***Thandi: hey Ruslan: amour where are you and the boys nowThandi: at WoolworthsRuslan: ok im on my wayThandi: ok***they ended the call and he dialed Ray's numbers***Ray: bros Ruslan: I just had a run in with Castiel Ray: wait what?Ruslan: yeah...well I didn't see him but I felt his presence and we mind-communicated and he does have the girl and he doesn't give a damn that the Khumalo's are looking for her Ray: shit!Ruslan: I think we should break into the girl's house and get one of her things that she usually uses so I can use it to track her down and maybe I might find out where she is Ray: ok I'll take care of the break in and you'll handle the rest***Ruslan sighed***Ruslan: ok....i gotta go we will talk later Ray: ok***then they ended the call and Ruslan went to Thandi and the boys and when Mpilo saw him he ran to him and Ruslan picked him up and they went to Thandi and Mpendulo***Ruslan: you good***Thandi nodded

and he kissed the top of her head and he went to Mpendulo***Ruslan: you see anything you like champ***Mpendulo just shrugged and Ruslan sighed....he was worried about him and the sudden change of his mood....well he knew the reason behind his change of moods but he was worried that his father's death might turn him into someone bitter and with anger issues cause he hardly says anything these days and he also could see that something else other than his father's death troubles him, then he went to Thandi and he put Mpilo down***Ruslan: I need to have a talk with Mpe privately....im worried about him***Thandi sighed***Thandi: im also worried about himhe hardly says anything these days Ruslan: so you'll be good with Mr Pilot***she nodded***Ruslan: ok***then he took out his black card and he gave it to her***Thandi: ummm Ruu I cant....***he interrupted her***Ruslan: you not about to reject my money amour, just spoil yourself and

Mr. pilot here and as for Mpe I got it covered ok***she sighed and nodded***Ruslan: call me when you are done***then he kissed her forehead and whispered to her***Ruslan: I love you so damn much***he said with his one hand on her belly and she whispered that she loves him too then he crouched down ***Ruslan: your mom is gonna buy you anything you want while I take Mpe to the restroom ok***Mpilo frowned***Mpilo: is he afraid to go there alone like me***Ruslan smiled and he nodded***Ruslan: remember I once told you that there are bad guys that look for kids that walk around alone inside the mall and they steal them***Mpilo nodded***Ruslan: so I don't want them to steal Mpe so im gonna take him to the restroom while you continue to shop with mom ok Mpilo: ok Ruslan: and don't leave her side okMpilo: ok I promise I wontRuslan: that's my boy....and tell your mom to buy you that big toy truck you saw at that other shop ok***Mpilo

smiled wide***Mpilo: really?***he said all excited and Ruslan nodded smiling the Mpilo hugged him and Ruslan laughed so did Thandi then she got emotional looking at how happy Mpilo is and how selfless and kindhearted Ruslan is***Ruslan: im sure you heard that mommy***she nodded and he kissed her forehead and he went to Mpe who was sitting down playing a game on his phone now***Ruslan: let's go champ***he put a pause on the game he was playing and looked up at him***Mpe: where?Ruslan: you'll see...come lets go***he got up and followed Ruslan***Mpe: what about mom and Mpilo Ruslan: we will catch up with them later Mpe: ummm ok***they walked out of the shop***...***they bought everything Mpendulo wanted and now they were sitting at a restaurant, Mpendulo ordered a burger and milkshake while Ruslan ordered a meaty meal with a glass of beer....Mpendulo looked excited with what he got and you could

tell he couldn't wait to get home and try on the clothes and the gargets Ruslan bought for him too...as for Thandi and Mpilo they were at spurs enjoying their meal too and she was communicating with Ruslan all along***Ruslan: champ Mpe: uncle Ruslan: what's wrong***he frowned***Mpe: huh? ummm with what?Ruslan: im not your mom Mpe so you don't have to pretend with me Mpe: nothing is wrong with me now can we drop it please***Ruslan looked at him intensely***Ruslan: boy when you look at me what do you see***Mpendulo didn't look up at him***Ruslan: hey look at me!***he said with a stern voice and Mpendulo looked at him***Ruslan: I know something is bothering you and you gonna tell what it is***he said with a serious tone and Mpe looked down to his food***Ruslan: im waiting Mpe: I heard mama and gogo talking and mama was crying*** "shit" is what Ruslan thought***Ruslan: im listening Mpe: that dad's family cut us off...more like they

disowned us because mom didn't want to do what they want***Ruslan sighed***Ruslan: and how does that make you feelMpe: angry at mom***Ruslan frowned***Ruslan: why?Mpe: because if she did what they wanted her to do they wouldn't have disowned us***Ruslan sighed***Ruslan: tell me here....whenever you don't do what your mom wants you to do does she disown you or "cut you off"***Mpe shook his head no***Ruslan: do you even know what they wanted her to do***he shook his head no***Ruslan: so if they told her to strip naked and run around the street just so they don't disown you three she should do it or if they said they want you and your little brother to move to Limpopo for good without her, she should agree Mpe: no....no she shouldn't***he said with a frown on his face***Ruslan: Mpe you are the eldest son to your mom and it should be your job to make sure she's always happy and that no one makes her cry....do you like it when she

cries***he shook his head no***Ruslan:
remember you once told me you once heard
your granny from your father's side of the family
swearing at your mom over the phone when it
was on loud speaker and after the call she
cried***Mpendulo swallowed with tears filling
his eyes when she remembered his
grandmother's words and her mother's
sobs***Ruslan: so now you can imagine what
they said to her this time but instead of being
there for her you are angry that she didn't do
what they wanted her to do***Tears ran down
his cheeks***Mpe: i....i Ruslan: shhh its
ok.....listen here my boy im not gonna beat
around the bush and lie to you.... your father's
family don't like your mother cause they think
she was with your dad for his money and they
forgot that your mother's brothers swim in
money....she accepted your father the way he
was and she lived in a two bedroom house
cause that's what your father could afford to

buy and she never made him feel less of a man because of that....your uncles could've brought her a big house with a swimming pool and many bedrooms but she loved your father and didn't care about material things***Mpendulo swallowed hard***Ruslan: but your father's family doesn't see that all they want is your father's money and they are doing extreme things to make sure they hurt your mother because of that.... look your mother is a special woman, she's one in a million and she needs to be appreciated and not hurt ok Mpendulo: ok Ruslan: as for them disowning you, don't worry they'll change their mind and I'll make sure of that and it looks like your other grandfather doesn't agree with them disowning you and your brother so relax Mpendulo: im...im sorry Ruslan: hey look just love your mom and never let anyone come between you, your mother and little brother, protect them and make sure they are always happy and you'll shame the devil ok

Mpendulo: ok***then he brushed his head***Ruslan: I love you ok champ Mpendulo: I love you too uncle Ruslan: and always come to me whenever something is bothering you, don't ever keep things to yourself or else you'll die in silence where else I could've helped you ok***Mpendulo nodded wiping his tears off***Ruslan: good now let's eat so we can go join your mother and little brother...****AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION*****Castiel Walked inside the room Kazi was in and he went to open the curtain and window and he put shopping bags that had her toiletries and new clothes on top of a table***Castiel: have you snapped out of it lady?***Kazi swallowed hard and she didn't answer him....she wondered how does this guy expect her to snap out of losing her unborn babies just like that and why did he help her and save her life.... she wondered what he wanted from her cause he doesn't look like a "father Theresa" who goes around helping

people without wanting anything in return***Kazi: are you going to kill me?***he raised his one eyebrow looking at her with a smirk on his face amused by her question***Castiel: should i?***she swallowed hard...."who says that" she thought***Castiel: should I?***she shook her head no***Castiel: ok then I won't....for now....so have you snapped out of it?***she nodded lying, I mean who snaps out of losing their babies***Castiel: even though you are lying but I'll let it slide cause I have a lot on my mind***she swallowed again***Castiel: it's time for your bath....you fucken stink....i'm sure it's that pad you are wearing, it's probably full by now....you didn't even try to get out of the bed to go change it, what kind of a woman are you yeses***tears ran down her cheeks as he helped her sit up....she flinched with pain but he didn't care***Castiel: take it out...im going to run a bath for you***he went to the en-suit bathroom and she let out a sob feeling

embarrassed, hurt, sad, angry and
broken***...***she was now clean and the bed
sheets were alsochanged and she was eating
slowly as he watched her***Castiel: why a
married man?***she stopped eating but she
didn't raise her head to look at him***Castiel: I
ask and you answer lady.... trust me you don't
wanna make me angry***she closed her eyes
then she opened them again***Kazi: I didn't
know he was marriedCastiel: bullshitKazi: I
found out when I showed my now ex friend his
picture and she said he's her cousin's
husbandCastiel: damn and let me guess she
turned on you***she didn't say
anything***Castiel: but then im sure you
continued to fuck him even after finding out
he's married right***she didn't say
anything***Castiel: typical cliché stories of
desperate bitches....I mean couldn't you find
someone single***tears ran down her
cheeks***Castiel: and now the wife is gonna go

to jail or probably be killed by that bull of hers just because she acted without thinking....i mean you were fucking her husband for fucks sake and you even fell pregnant as if you didn't know about fucken condoms or what you wanted to trap him with a baby?..... and now she's the one that's going to pay...nc nc nc***Kazi continued to cry as his words pierced through her already shattered heart***Castiel: you and that bull should be the ones going to jail for hurting that woman but no.... no wonder Juana refused to continue to live in this fucked up world, it's because of people like you nx***then he looked at her***Castiel: eat!***she quickly picked her fork and continued to eat with tears all over her face***Castiel: if it's not your mother and stepfather selling you to me it's you fucking married men but then I guess you took after mommy cause she also fucked a married man and now she's married to him as the second wife.....wait was that your plan

tooKazi: please stop***she said with a breaking voice and he chuckled***Castiel: why, im only telling you the truthKazi: plea....***she stopped and looked up at him***Kazi: wait my....my mother and stepfather sold me to you***he chuckled***Castiel: yeah that's why you are here, I own you....isn't it lovely?***he laughed and he got up and walked out leaving Kazi frozen....he went downstairs and cold air passed him and he stopped walking***Castiel: Juana...baby?Voice: I have always seen the good side of you eventhough everyone saw a monster and it pains me to say that today I finally saw you for who you really are, a monster***she whispered on his ear and he frowned***Castiel: wh...what?....you don't mean thatVoice: you didn't have to say all that to her and just so you know....you hurt me more than you hurt her when you said all that to her...I can't believe I fell in love with a heartless person like you***he swallowed hard***Castiel:

Juana you don't mean that***nothing***Castiel:
Juana?....baby?***still nothing***Castiel:
JUANA!***still nothing then he got
angry***Castiel: fuck you Juana you hear me
fuck you....im busy doing all this shit because of
you, I saved her life and im also taking care of
her for you so what more do you want
mmmmh....what the fuck do you want from me
you dead bitch!***he shouted looking angry and
also hurt by what she said....she has never
called him a monster before when she was
alive***Castiel: im a monster right?....then
watch as this monster deal with that fucken
bitch***he turned and went back upstairs and
he walked in and found Kazi crying and he
grabbed her by her throat and his eyes changed
color and became all black so did his skin, it
became pale instantly and his long fangs came
out and Kazi screamed***Castiel: WHY DOES
JUANA ALWAYS TAKE YOUR SIDE
MMMM....SHE'S MY WIFE SO SHE'S SUPPOSED

TO TAKE MY FUCKEN SIDE NOW WHY IS SHE
ALWAYS DEFENDING YOU?Kazi: Cassstiel
you....you are scaring me***she said shaking
with fear then he squeezed his hand tight
around her neck and she tried fighting him off
but he was just too strong...she struggled
breathing until she saw her whole life flashing
in front of her and her eyes rolled back then he
openedhis mouth wide ready to feed on her
then a force hit Castiel hard and he flew across
the room and he hit the wall hard and he landed
on the floor and passed out immediately....Kazi
then took the IV off her wristand she got off the
bed and limped to the door....she opened it and
got out then she walked down the stairs slowly
until she reached downstairs and she rushed to
the door and after she opened the door she
froze....the house was surrounded by thick
treesand outside it looked like some ancient
abandoned building, it was like one of those
house you see on horror movies....her body

shook as she looked at hersurrounding and she limped through those thick trees hoping that she will find a road ahead or find any help from anyone***...****AT RAY AND MBALI'S

HOUSE*****Ray was busy pacing up and down***Ray: so he's really here and he has the girl....fuck!Ruslan: we need to find her man, I tried to warn him but it was like I was talking to a brick....now he's gonna be ready for the beasts and I know it won't end well....imagine a vampire who is also a wizard manRay: this shit is getting complicated each secondRuslan:

yeah***he rubbed his head and he sat down***Ray: why did you warn him.....i thought you hated him and wanted him dead***Ruslan didn't say anything***Ray: let me guess no matter how fucked up he is and no matter how much of a nuisance he is he's still your elder brother right***Ruslan didn't say anything he just clenched his jaws***Ray: you don't want him dead do you?***Ruslan sighed***Ruslan:

can we not talk about that son of a vampire and let's talk about my plan for James' family***Ray sighed***Ray: I've come through for Heath so many times that I've even lost count whenever he fucked up pretty bad while we were growing up....i have wished so many times to put a bullet on his forehead each time he messed up bad cause I was the one cleaning up his mess but I couldn't cause at the same time my love for him as my little brother and the bond we share grew stronger every time and I wouldn't trade him for anything man so I understand and I got your back in whatever you decide to do even though is to help him***he sat down too***Ray: so what do you have planned for the Mashabas***Ruslan smirked a little***Ruslan: im gonna traumatize them for eternity, and the world will never forget James Mashaba's funeral everRay: what do you mean by that?***he smiled***Ruslan: watch what I do to those who hurt Thandi and the boys...#hit-like-

pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....05

.

.

.

NARRATED

Ray just shook his head

Ray: whatever you plan on doing please bros

remember Star, Thandi and the boys will be there

well Amo and Mbali won't be able to make it because their babies are still young for them to be going to funerals

Ruslan: don't worry they won't see anything

Ray: his home?

Ruslan: no....the graveyard

he said smiling

Ray: fuck no

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: fuck yes

they both laughed

.

.

.

****AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION****

Castiel woke up holding his head then he sat up straight and he chuckled

Castiel: what are you Juana, I mean you're supposed to be a ghost but here you are using special powers to throw me across the room

***nothing then he looked over at the bed and it was empty and he chuckled shaking his heavy head then he closed his eyes and searched for her and he found her limping along the thick bushes and he sighed shaking his head....he has a physical link to her through her blood from that day he licked her blood and almost fed on her....he then connected to her mind ***

Castiel: you are deep inside the jungle and there are wild animals and they are hungry as hell, especially man-eating snakes and tigers

***Kazi stopped walking and she looked around

as she heard Castiel's voice with her heart beating fast....she was in extreme pain but she didn't care cause all she wanted was to be as far as she can away from the monster she left in that house and now she was hearing his voice as if its speaking inside her head***

Castiel: your choice lady, its either you take your chances with me or you get eaten by wild animals and perish just like that....and just so you know the moment that lion or tiger gets its claws into your flesh you gonna wish you chose to take your chances with me....now you have approximately 45 minutes before those boa pythons come out to feed

she stood there shaking looking around then out of nowhere she felt hands on her waist and she froze

Castiel: so what is it gonna be Kay

***her body visibly shook as he whispered on

her right ear***

Castiel: so?

then they heard some sound not far from them and she held his hand tight and it was cold as ice

Castiel: what is it gonna be lady

Kazi: I'll....I'll take my...my chances with you

Castiel: thought as much

he chuckled and he apparated from there to inside the house then he picked her up bridal style and took her to her bed and laid her down

Castiel: try to run away again and I'll personally feed you to the wild animals and that's if I don't kill you first you hear me

***she nodded with tears running down her cheeks and he lifted her shirt up and took his things and he cleaned her wound since it was

bleeding and after he was done he covered her and injected her with a right dose of morphine and he walked out***

Castiel: show yourself Juana and that's if it's your real name

nothing

Castiel: its either you show yourself or I'll kill Kazi by sucking out every drop of her blood out of her body and you know I don't play around

still nothing

Castiel: fine, she's the dead weight I don't need anyway

he turned and walked back to the stairs

Voice: Cass

***he stopped and slowly turned and there she was standing in a mid-evil light brown long dress but the thing is, it wasn't the Juana he knows physically but the voice was that of

her***

Castiel: who the fuck are you?

she swallowed hard

Juana: Juana

Castiel chuckled looking at her then he shook his head not believing all this

Castiel: my wife is Caucasian and you are black

Juana: i...I know i...

he interrupted her

Castiel: I ASKED YOU WHO THE FUCK YOU ARE!

he roared and his eyes turned black

Juana: Cass you need to calm down and let me explain

***then Castiel moved like the wind charging towards her but when he got to her and tried to grab her by her neck she vanished and he quickly turned and she was standing behind

him***

Juana: im not really here so stop it

Castiel: where's my wife?

*** He said with his fangs all out***

Juana: she doesn't exist

he stood there frozen with a frown on his face

.

.

.

AT BUHLE AND MENZI'S RESIDENCE

***Menzi walked inside the house feeling drained, they had another lead but it turned out to be a another dead end they have been facing, each day passing without finding her meant that she could very well be dead or shipped off

to another country and that broke his heart even more....then his phone rang and it was Snakes***

Menzi: grootman

Snakes: Mapholoba I have something

Menzi: im listening

Snakes: I found your wife's numbers on that motherfucker who hired those guys

Menzi closed his eyes and he clenched his jaws

Menzi: how many times did she call him

Snakes: 6 times and the last time they spoke on the phone was a night before the attack and she tried him a couple of times after the attack and left a few missed calls too

Menzi: how could she

he said with a low tone

Snakes: look its either she's cheating on you with the man who hired those men to kill your Kazi or she paid him to find men to do it

Menzi: im gonna kill her

***then he dropped the call and he rushed upstairs and when he walked in, he found her on the floor with her eyes and mouth opened and she wasn't blinking, she was bleeding from her mouth and nosehe looked besides her and saw a box of rat poison and a paper under it...he sighed and went to pick the paper and she wrote something on itit read;

" im sorry for hiring that guy to kill Kazi and her unborn babies. I could see it in your eyes that you in love with her and I knew that if I didn't know your deep dark secret you would've divorced me long ago. Im also sorry for sleeping with your father, I fell in love with his

money and what I didn't think about is when he dies you'll inherit all his money and it will also be my money since im your wife so yah im dumb like that. The love for money and material things were my downfall and if I became loyal and faithful to you im sure we would be happy by now but no I screwed it up, I guess my mother was right about me, despite all the shitty things I did that hurt you but I have always loved you despite what you may think.

Thank you for accepting Ntwentle as if she's yours even though she's your father's, please take care of my babies and always tell them that I love them and im sorry I had to resort to this because of shame and fear. Talking about fear, the guy that has Kazi and killed those guys called me and threatened to expose me by sending you a recording of one of the guys confessing that I was involved and he has her,

he even said the babies didn't make it im sorry. I saved his number as the kidnapper, im sorry Menzi please find it in your heart to forgive me.....love Buhle"

he stood there with his hands shaking, his eyes welled with tears and he let them fall....then he started kicking her body over and over until he got tired then he stopped and he grabbed her phone and walked out wiping off his tears

.

.

.

*** AT THE MASHABA RESIDENCE AT GIYANI, LIMPOPO ***

***it was the day of the funeral and Thandi and her brothers, sons, Naledi and Ruslan slept at a

nearby BnB and now they are standing outside the yard while people and the casket are inside the tent where a ceremony was held....Ruslan has his arm around Mpendulo who keeps on wiping off his tears while Ray was holding Mpilo and Naledi was standing next to Thandi....they saw uncle Gezani walking to them, he shook their hands and stood next to Jabu***

Gezani: im sorry about all this, the boys should be inside there but because some people are evil they are standing out here like it's not their father who's laying inside that coffin

Heath: it's all good uncle, as long as they are there when their father is being buried

the uncle nodded

Gezani: where is your grandfather I thought he'll come

Jabu: di high high di namelletse so re mochaetse gore a blome gae le magriza (his

blood pressure is high so we told him to stay back with granny) and we will come instead and plus they are looking after Heath's kids

the uncle nodded

Jabu: ka bona gore ebole ba chunne monyanya wa leso hierso (I see they threw a party-funeral here)

they chuckled

Jabu: mmmmh bo stretch tent le di catering as if o tla tsoga e be a re "yeses auntiza yeer go pila mos mo....ai motho tshwanetse a swe mo often mos mo" (mmmmh stretch tent and catering as if he'll wake up and say " jeez aunt its beautiful here....i guess a person needs to die more often")

they laughed

Uncle.Gezani: wa bona wena Jabu....number one!

*** They continued to laugh***

Ruslan: you ok champ

Mpendulo nodded and he kissed the top of his head then Jackson walked to them with a frown on his face

Jackson: what are you doing here, I thought we told you never to set your feet here

Jabu: hei wena changaan man ke strata sa papao se? (hey Shangaan man is this your father's street?)

Jackson: o volavola na mena wena san? (are you talking to me boy)

Jabu: no im talking to your shadow jou bleksem ...ofcourse ke ova le wena ntja (ofcourse im talking to you dog)

Thandi: Jabu there are kids here please

Jabu: then botsa Mr Steroids here a fotseke mo unless papae a owner this street (then tell Mr.

Steroids here to fuck off from here unless his father owns this street)

Jackson chuckled

Jackson: remember this is Giyani and not where you come from mfo

he said with a smirk on his face

Heath: are you threatening us man

he said getting closer to him with a scary frown on his face

Jackson: take a step back boy

Heath: I asked you a question you piece of shit

Ray: Ezeh not here man

then Heath smirked looking at Jackson who was itching to beat the shit out of Heath

Heath: damn you just got saved again....you lucky son of a bitch....but remember luck sometimes runs out man and I'll be there

waiting for you

Jackson: I can't wait for that day where I'll teach you what we do to bitches like you in the military

***Heath smiled wide in a creepy way and Jackson frowned ***

Ruslan: not in front of the boys

he said through his teeth with a warning tone

Caesar: damn I cant wait....we should make it soon cause im sure you also can't wait

Ruslan: I said not in front of the boys are you both deaf!

he said with a stern voice

Ray: Caesar calm down

***he said through his teeth and Caesar raised his hands up with that creepy smile on his face and he took a step back then he put his hands

inside his pockets and he looked over at Naledi who had a frown on her face and Caesar winked at her with a side smile on his face and Naledi swallowed hard***

Caesar: sorry about that Obi m

Ruslan just shook his head then Jackson looked at Thandi and his face softened

Jackson: after the funeral we need to talk you and I, its about the boys

Ruslan frowned

Thandi: I have nothing to say to you

Jackson: look its at the best interest of my brother's sons we talk after the funeral ok

Thandi huffed and she looked away while Naledi was giving him nasty looks scanning him up and down with a disgusted look on her face

Ruslan: move along Mr steroids!

he said with a serious tone and Jackson chuckled then he looked at Thandi again

Jackson: I'll call you after the funeral don't leave without us talking

Ruslan: I said move along!

***he said now with a pissed off tone and Jackson chuckled again and he walked away and Thandi and Naledi clicked their tongues ***

Ray: calm down man

he said to Ruslan who seemed angry

Uncle.Gezani: I need a DNA test done...I can't be related to these people....maybe im the neighbor's child no man vanhu la va vanyanya
man nx

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: sure uncle

***then people inside the tent stood up and some got out of the tent and Jabu told Thandi

to get inside the car and she did and closed the door and as soon the coffin was carried out of the tent to the hearse Mpendulo started crying and Ruslan held him tight while inside the car Thandi kept looking up to stop the tears.....she was hurt that after all the years she suffered fighting James' side chicks and forcing him to grow up and to take care of his boys ended here with him inside a coffin, she wished she never agreed to marry him cause if they never married traditionally she wouldn't be expected to sit on the mattress and his sons wouldn't have been disowned by the family....if only she listened to her grandmother's warnings but she knew that now it was too late for regrets....even though she is hurt that he's dead at the same time she despised him for what he's putting her through even in his death.....anyway the casket is now inside the hearse with people singing gospel songs and off it went slowly to the graveyard where he will be laid to rest and cars

followed it***

.

.

.

*** AT THE GRAVEYARD***

Thandi remained inside the car while her brothers, the boys, Ruslan and Naledi went to the burial site and stood there and watched the family cover the casket with a blanket and the pastor started the burial ceremony.....Mpendulo was busy crying with Ruslan holding him tight and the congregation started singing as the casket went down slowly and the aunt cried out loud then others followed

"1.Oho Yesu, Ndza ta Sweswi,

O ndzi amukela,

Ndzi tisane hi swivi swa nga,
U ndzi amukela.

2. Ndzi xisiwile hi nala,
Masiku hinkwawo,
Kunene a ndzi lovile
Ndzi nga voni chumu.Hosi,
Ndzi hlayise Yesu.

Moya lo'wu hanyisaka
Tirha masingita.

5. Ndza ta Hosi, Ndzi mudyohi,
U ndzi tsetselela,
Ndzi kombela wena Hosi
U ndzi amukela.

6. O, Moya wa Pentekosta
Xika hi marimba,
Hi ve timboni ta wena

Hi nga chavi nchumu"

they sang and Ruslan clenched his jaws as Mpendulo and Mpilo's cries touched a sensitive part in his heart and he swallowed hard.....after the casket was now inside the grave Ruslan whispered to Naledi that she should take the boys back to the cars and she nodded and held their hands and she went back to the cars with Mpendulo sobbing painfully and Ray watched Ruslan move to the other side of the Burial site and he whispered to his brothers

Ray: brace yourselves

Them: huh?

Ray: don't freak out ok

***the congregation started humming a slow sad song with the pastor reciting a "ashes to ashes and dust to dust" prayer in Xitsonga.... then Ruslan's eyes changed from its normal

color to cloudy eyes and he recited a spell and dust wind started filling the burial site and people screamed, women where holding their dresses, wigs and skirts down as the dust-wind blew all over then all of a sudden it stopped and people started mumbling dusting themselves and when the pastor continued with the “ashes to ashes and dust to dust” prayer they heard something hitting hard inside the grave and they all stopped.....the sound got louder and louder and people started freaking out cause it was clear the sound was inside the casket***

Jabu: what the fuck!

Ray looked over at Ruslan and he knew it was him even though he was wearing shades.....he was waking James from the dead, well more like using James’ corpse to do whatever he wants it to do

Woman: Jesus o koma a ha hanya a ndzeni ka bokisi (Jesus I think he's still alive inside the

coffin)

she said with her hand on her chest

Woman2: ooh my God!

they said looking freaked out while others were moving to the back cause they were scared....then someone went to the family and told them what was going on as the sound was getting louder and Jackson, Mzamane, the aunt and Joe got up and went closer to the grave next to the pastor while everyone else inside the tent also got up

Pastor: I don't know what is happening but there's a banging sound inside the casket

Aunt: ooh my God.... o hleketa kore..... (do you think...)

Jackson rushed closer to the grave with other people taking videos while others where already by the pavement far away from the grave site

Heath: don't tell me its what I think it is

Jabu: shit...shit...no he fucken didn't!

he said with his heart pounding hard and his hands shaking

***anyway Jackson went inside the grave ***

Jackson: JAMES? JAMES?....IS IT YOU IN THERE?

****the banging sound continued and he remembered that the casket was locked then he asked someone to hand him a rock and they quickly did....well everyone was shocked including the funeral palour guys to a point that one of them was even taking a video to show people so they'll believe him when he tell them what he saw....

Anyway Jackson broke the lock and he balanced himself with the walls inside the grave

and he quickly opened the casket and James corpse was looking at him with its eyes opened and the eyeballs were also cloudy in colour just like Ruslans and Jackson swallowed hard as he felt chills run down his spine.....he slowly bend backwards since he was bending forward after he opened the coffin***

Aunt: Jack o pfukile James?....n'wana mina o pfukile? (Jack is James awake...is my child awake?)

***then the corpse slowly sat up straight like a robot, well the corpse was doing exactly what Ruslan was commanding it to do with his mind.... anyway Jackson told them to get him out immediately and Joe grabbed his hand and pulled him out....then the corpse stood up from the coffin and Ruslan recited another spell and it started climbing out of the grave fast without any difficulty and people screamed and they ran away with others falling and other women

running in heels as if they are wearing flat
shoes screaming***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

INSERT.....06

.

.

.

NARRATED

***James corpse stood there as Richard, Joe,
kokwane and the aunt stood about 16 yards
away from him, as for Ray, Jabu and Heath they
were now standing next to Ruslan while other

people were standing far wondering what's happening while other men who are brave enough they were standing at about 17 to 20 feet away from James with shocked and horrified looks on their faces while others were taking videos***

Jabu: no man...no man....bo ke boloi ba ko America... I swear tse re di bona ko Tv fela(this a American witchcraft....we only see such on Tv)

He said with his eyes popped out

Heath: im dreaming right big Ray?

Ray: nope

he said with a chilled voice

Jabu: no man big Ray.....so ke tsona di Para what what tsona tse (so these are the Para what-what)

Ray chuckled

Ray: will you two just breathe and relax and

enjoy the show

Jabu: enjoy?.....ka bona o tsobile lebake wena no in fact o tsobile nyaope and a ke frostane why o tsobile o le one o sa re fa le rona nx.... (I see you smoked weed no in fact you smoked whoonga “nyaope” and I don’t understand why you would smoke alone without us)

Ray chuckled

Heath: bros wetin be this....na juju or na my eye dey showing me things? (bro what’s all this...is this witchcraft my eyes are seeing?)

Ray: Na juju Ezeh now calm down and relax

Kokwane: mehlolo ngwino.....nere mehlolo bano ba xikwenbu! (this is unbelievable.... I said this is unbelievable people of God)

she said with her hands on top of her head shouting

Aunt: Kwendlakala yini la.... yi mehlolo le yi

njane leyi? (what's going on here....what kind of miracle is this?)

Richard: I can't believe this!

he said with a shaky voice

Mzamane: xipoko ngwino...wapoka

Jemese....(a ghost people....James is a ghost)

***he said looking scared then the corpse turned its head and looked towards the Mashaba family and uncle Mzamane ran away like he was being chased by dogs and other people who were still around but far from the scene started to run too when they saw Uncle Mzamane running towards them.....then the corpse tried to open its mouth but the lips were glued together so Ruslan whispered a spell and the glue melted and it opened its mouth then kokwane fell on the ground and she fainted while the aunt stood there shaking along with Richard and Joe, as for uncle Gezani he long

ran away busy screaming that his family is full of witches....

Anyway the corpse then made hissing sounds like a snake and it turned its whole body and it faced the Mashabas ***

James: you....

*** it moved its arm slowly and it pointed at the Mashabas and they moved back slowly shaking with fear***

Joe: ooh God....oooh God...

he said with his heart beating fast

James: it's your fault

it spoke with a hissing tone then it made those hissing sounds again

James: my sons....

***then it made cracking sounds when its head bend to the side a bit ***

James: why?

Jackson: James look we....

he said with a shaky voice

James: talk again and we will be buried together today brother

Jackson kept quiet looking scared

James: take back what you said about my sons and their mother or you will never know peace!

Aunt: i...we...

then Ruslan chanted a spell and the Mashabas felt stuck where they are....they couldn't move an inch and James' corpse walked closer to them doing a zombie walk and Joe fainted

Jackson: ooh god....ooh God we are dead!

he said shaking with fear as for the aunt she was visibly shaking too

.

.

.

****AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION****

Castiel: what do you mean my wife doesn't exist?

Juana: im the real Juana, I was send to look after you until you find her

his face and fangs went back to normal

Castiel: what?

Juana: my job was to make sure you don't go astray and that you leave America in one piece

he paced up and down while shaking his head

Castiel: no no no....you're lying....you're lying!

he said shouting

Juana: im sorry but if your mother didn't make

me your guardian you and your brother would be dead

Castiel: guardian? guardian?...we fucken had sex you vile bitch.... I kissed you, ooh fuck I kissed a dead body posing as a living human.....

Juana looked away and she kept quiet

Castiel: and stop lying to me, my mother wouldn't do that to me.....she wouldn't!

Juana: look she couldn't lose two sons

Castiel.....you and Ruslan would have died at the hands of the brethren

Castiel: stop it ok...fucken stop it!

he grabbed a vas and threw it at her but it went through her and hit the wall breaking into pieces

Juana: IF SHE DIDN'T PLANT ME IN YOUR LIFE YOU WOULD HAVE JOINED THE BRETHREN AFTER HER DEATH CAUSE SHE KNEW HER

DEATH WOULD HIT YOU HARD AND YOU
WOULD GIVE UP ON LIFE AND THE BRETHREN
WOULD HAVE RECRUITED YOU AND YOUR
BROTHER WOULD HAVE TRIED TO SAVE YOU
FROM THEM CAUSE WE ALL KNOW THEY ARE
DANGEROUS AND THEY WOULD HAVE KILLED
THE BOTH OF YOU

Castiel: MADOU IS STRONG AND A GREAT
WIZARD.... I MEAN HE KILLED THEIR LEADER
LIKE HE WAS SOME COCKROACH

Juana: they would have kidnapped his son and
it would have been his life for his son's life and
you know he wouldn't hesitate to give up his life
own for his son's

Castiel: no...no

Juana: then you would have went after the
brethren and you wouldn't have made it going
after them alone....your mother saw your future
and if she didn't do what she did she would

have lost two sons

***Castiel sat down with his chest visibly moving up and down fast ***

Juana: im sorry but it had to be done, I was supposed to make you betray your brother to have your mind occupied and for you not to dwell too much on your mother's death and to continue to lead you to the one that will give you your heart's desire

Castiel: so all of this was a lie....it was all a lie....MY FUCKEN BROTHER HATES ME BECAUSE OF YOU AND MY MOTHER!

Juana: it had to be done or you wouldn't be here!

Castiel: all of this was a lie!

Juana: a lie that saved both you and your brother

***then Castiel started laughing, the laugh started off low then it got louder and louder

then all of a sudden he stopped laughing***

Juana: treat Kazi right and know that once she's pregnant and she dies then your baby will die too....and you need your brother Ruslan's help to keep her and the baby alive....she's a special one and everyone that gets close to her feel fulfilled and complete, you used to lie by pretending you weren't smitten by her but the actual truth is you were and still are

Castiel laughed

Castiel: that bitch means nothing to me and to prove that I can go and feed on her until she takes her last breath so don't psycho analyze me you fucken bitch

Juana: well if you do that then know that there is no woman in the world that will be able to carry your seed and have a 50 percent chance of making it alive I mean even that dead woman's body couldn't carry it for long

he chuckled bitterly shaking his head

Juana: you need her Cass and you are not the only one who does....that hitman also need her and he loves her unlike you and he will leave no stone unturned until he finds her and your brother is right, he has beasts behinds him searching for her and if you decide to take them on then some might die and you might live but you will have to forget about having a child ever

he didn't say anything

Juana: let her go and court her the right way and have her accept to carry your seed willingly and not have your child hate you when he/she finds out about what you did to mommy.... and fix things between you and your brother cause the brethren are coming after you and him and so is the witches' council, they found your location

***he looked up at her with a frown on his

face***

Castiel: what?

Juana: I guess your mother's plan had a flaw after all cause now real danger is coming

Then she disappeared

Juana: you don't have to keep her captive....do things the right way cause she's the only woman in this lifetime who can give you your heart's desire and for your information you are not a monster Castiel, circumstances made you one but you can choose not to be one....remember she's every men's chosen one who threat her good and so treat her right so she becomes yours.....Good bye Castiel

***her voice spoke then silence.....then out of the blue Castiel got up and his fangs got long and his skin changed along with his eyes and he screamed out loud with rage and he started breaking things, throwing them to the wall while

others he broke them into half.....by the time he was done the whole house except for the room Kazi was in was in shambles.....then he ran out of the house into the woods in his vampire state baying for blood***

.

.

.

****AT THE GRAVEYARD.....LIMPOPO****

James corpse stood next to the remaining Mashaba members...it was dripping a clear liquid the ice was melting....then it hissed

James: my sons are off limit or I'll haunt you until you decide to commit suicide.... I may have been a useless father when I was alive but I'll make anyone who hurts my sons in any way wish death upon themselves

***then it looked at his aunt who was too

frightened to even utter a single word***

James: don't dare me aunty..... apologize to Thandi and my sons or I'll make you

then it hissed again and its neck cracked as it put its head in a straight up position and it looked at Jackson who looked spooked

James: I know what you and aunty here did brother....confess or I'll haunt you until you do

Jackson's eyes and aunties popped out as they visibly shook then it cracked it neck again looking down on Joe and his grandmother

James: ወደጥር ታል (wake up)

he commanded them and they both at the same time opened their eyes and when they looked up wondering what's going on.....their eyes landed on James corpse and they screamed while Joe peed on himself shaking

Kokwane: Jemese xetokolo xa mena....ko...ko

endlakala yini.....opfuxi yi mani? (James my grandson....what's...what's going on.....who woke you up)

the corpse didn't say anything since Ruslan couldn't understand what she was saying

Joe: ooh God....ooh God...

he said trying to move from his position but it felt like he was glued on it....he couldn't even move a muscle....they all couldn't move a muscle

James: I know what you did

***it said looking from Jackson to his aunt then it made laughing sounds but its face didn't show that it was laughing and it stopped and turned and walked back to the grave and it got in without any hassle and it went inside the coffin and laid down nicely and the coffin closed its self as the corpse closed its eyes and strong dusty wind filled the grave site then it

stopped all of a sudden then silence***

Ruslan: ok im done we can go now

Jabu jumped a bit startled and both him and Heath looked at him taking off his shades with shocked faces

Jabu: what are you man?

he asked Ruslan with a horrified look on his face

Ray: show off!

he chuckled and Ruslan laughed a bit and Ray started walking away

Jabu: and wena o grand ka die hele ding? (and you are ok with the whole thing)

he said to Ray who just laughed walking back to the cars

Ruslan: ታለቅ (thaw)

***it said with its hand waving from left to the

right side then the Mashaba got control of their bodies and Joe got up and he ran like he was being chased by dogs too....and Ruslan walked back to the car whistling lightly with Jabu and Heath walking behind him tongue tide***

Heath: Mjava a ke lora right (Jabu im not dreaming right).... what happened really happened?

Jabu: if wa lora Mshikaro then re lora toro e one....ke fetsa go bona mafa vuka James a bolela, diphefo tsa boloi and broer ya ren a bona die hele ding e le normal ebile wa laga are “show off” to moloi wa Phd (if you are dreaming then we are dreaming the same dream....i just saw a dead James talking... winds of witchcraft and our brother sees the whole thing as normal and he’s even laughing busy saying “show off” to a wizard who holds a Phd)

he then looked at Heath

Jabu: die man o busy o bakisana le Modimo
Mshikaro....bo pastor Lukau batle ba tlo trainer
mo mfowethu...gape mo diabowa mo....die man
o fetsa go embarrass(a) di kono kono tsa mo
Giyani, ke ra ditweebenare tse di kgolo ...tsona
di brigadier tsa mo Giyani, e bile di idibetse
(this man is busy competing with God
Mshikaro....pastor Lukau and his peers should
come train here my brother....its lit here....this
guy just embarrassed big shots of Giyani, big
witches.... I mean brigadiers of Giyani, and they
even fainted)

Heath: I just can't believe that happened man

Ruslan: believe it Ezeh, I don't play around when
it comes to those I hold dear to my heart

Jabu: what did mafa vuka say to them Ruru?

Ruslan: he warned them....well let me say I
warned them that the boys are off limits and if
they continue, well he'll haunt them until they

beg death to visit them....in different words but the meaning is the same

Heath: damn!

then they saw two police vans driving inside the cemetery and Jabu laughed

Jabu: ba tlo etsang dimogoes tse? (What are they here to do these fools?)

Heath: probably to arrest mafa vuka

they laughed and Ruslan just shook his head and got inside the car where Thandi, Naledi and the boys were and Jabu and Heath went to the car Ray was in and they drove out

Naledi: Ruu what happened out there, I saw people running and others screaming

Ruslan: well go to Facebook and Twitter and you'll find out what happened

Naledi: huh?

Ruslan: I can't say it now but people took videos

im sure they'll post it on social media

Naledi: ooh ok

then he looked at Thandi through the rearview mirror and she was leaning her head on Naledi's shoulder with her eyes closed and he sighed and continued to drive away....Meanwhile inside the other car Ray was talking on the phone with Mbali

Ray: ok I love you too my flower....I'll see you later ok

then he ended the call

Heath: "I love you too"

he mimicked his voice

Heath: damn I never thought I'd hear big Ray say that to any woman

Ray: fuck you man

they all laughed

Ray: I love that girl man....i swear I can't live without her

Heath: mmmmh I know...I also can't live without Naledi

Jabu: entlek le brekela mang....le nna I can't live without Amo waka (who are you bragging to....i also can't live without my Amo)

they laughed

Jabu: no man big Ray so vele vele Ruslan o kgora go tsosa mense ba ba bhodileng? (so Ruslan can wake dead people up?)

Ray: no he doesn't sometimes he gives them a second chance in life before they go to the light, if you know what I mean and this time let's say he commanded James' corpse to do what he wanted it to do

Heath: I still can't believe he did that

Ray: Ezeh we should be glad that he's one of us

and that hes on our side and most of all that he loves our sister Thandi....believe me when I say you don't wanna mess with him, take him on or mess with those he holds dear...he's a very dangerous man and he has a dark-witches' blood running through his veins so him being a "good wizard" doesn't mean he doesn't have a bad side, believe me he does and its not a pleasant one to see

Jabu and Heath just kept quiet

Ray: that man made me get my soul back from the devil himself at one go when I had lost all hope....he killed a brethren and when he was done with him it was like he was ripped apart by a mystical beast

Jabu: eeh!

Heath: who are the brethren?

Ray: some bad motherfuckers...they are a dangerous group of vampires that only feed on

human blood, they killed his father right after his brother betrayed him net for control

Jabu: broer wa gae betrayed him? (his brother betrayed him?)

Ray sighed

Ray: he had no choice, it was either Ruslan or his fiancé...he knew Ruslan can take care of himself but Juana is or was human

Heath: damn so how did he betray him...what did he do?

Ray: he told the Brethren the spell they needed to enter the witches' sacred grounds to apprehend a special stone named the Hag stone...there are other Hag stones out there, many of them but that one is special man and it has immense super special powers

Jabu: mxm hai suka....letlapa ke letlapa man (a stone is just a stone man)

Ray chuckled

Ray: well the Hag stone can ward off the dead, curses, witches, sickness and nightmares but the Brethren wanted to use it to defeat by killing all the witches, it was gonna stop witches and wizards from using their powers then they kill them all.... so that's how they wanted to wipe out all the witches to rein supreme...it will only be them and werewolves and I believe after they have dealt with all the witches they were gonna go after the werewolves by finding their weaknesses and use them against them

Heath: ok ok so you want to tell me that there are vampires and werewolves too

he asked shocked

Ray: yeah man

Heath just shook his head astonished by all this

Heath: man those things are fantasies man they

are not supposed to be real

Jabu: tell him Mshikaro

Ray: I have the grim reaper inside of me and you met him even though he wasn't in his full form....Ruslan is a real wizard and Mbali's family members have beasts in them

Jabu&Heath: WHAT?

***Ray nodded**

Ray: yeah and Kalu has a demon named Saint and a beast inside of him too

Jabu and Heath just kept quiet processing all that, shocked, astonished and not believing what they were hearing

Heath: what?

he asked with a low tone

Ray: yeah... well with Saint it's the repercussions of making a deal with the devil and the Beast well that is a Khumalo thing...they say it was

made to protect them....so yeah

they kept quiet

Jabu: mo motho le ge akare wa zama legodimo
lona a ka se lebone shem....ke nale broer le
setlogolo sa ledimone (I don't think a person
will ever see heaven shame....i have a demon
brother and a nephew)

Ray: I have the La Parca while you Ezeh have a
multiple personality disorder, Ruslan is a wizard
and my son has a beast and a demon in him, Mj
is the only way God punishes us for our sins
whenever he's around and with you Jabu well
your rotten mouth more especially whenever
you are swearing at another person hits me
inside as if you are directing those swear words
towards me....and whenever you say le marete I
feel it man so yah we won't see heaven unless
we repent man and me and my son repenting
means death

he said with a pained tone

Jabu: ok I really need to go to church so that ge ke fitlha ko legodimong modimo a mpulele masango ka smile (so that when I arrive at Heaven God will open the gates with a smile)

they laughed

Heath: e be satan a tle a tswere coto ya black label le patji mixed with nyaope a jele di brentwood, classic florsheim shoes, leopard print shirt le berethe e be a re “ye wena le marete a reye, di broer tsa gao di ka da wena o nyakang ka mo jou fokon moeskond” (and satan will come holding a cot of black label and weed mixed with whoonga wearing a brentwood trouser, classic florsheim shoes, a leopard print shirt and a beret cap and he will say “lets go dickhead, your brothers are that side so what are you doing here you fucken asshole”)

they busted out loud with laughter

.

.

.

****AT THE BNB****

Ruslan opened the door for Thandi and she walked in and when she turned he was closer to her and he pulled her closer and they kissed a slow passionate kiss that made Thandi to have goosebumps all over her body, after a while they broke the kiss and he kissed her forehead

Ruslan: you ok?

he asked her and she nodded

Ruslan: where are the boys?

Thandi: they went to the mall with Jabu and Ray

Ruslan: and im sure Heath and Star are busy

fucking like rabbits by now

they laughed

Ruslan: I love you

she blushed looking down and he put his finger under her chin and slowly pushed her face up and he looked at her with an intense look

Ruslan: marry me Thandi

she swallowed hard

Ruslan: we wont get married now I just want to know your answer

she sighed and nodded

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: huh?

Thandi: yes I'll marry you Ruu

***he smiled wide and he kissed her and hugged her tight and after some time they

broke the hug and went to lay down on the bed
and he put his hand on her stomach and he
rubbed it slowly as he held her from the back***

Thandi: what happened at the cemetery?

Ruslan: they say James woke up from the dead
to warn his family to lay off his sons

Thandi: what?

Ruslan: mmmmh

Thandi: you said 'they say', khante didn't you
see everything that happened

Ruslan: would you stand closer to the scene of
a dead man waking up if you were me or your
brothers?

Thandi: no... of course not

***he kissed her neck and continued to rub her
belly***

Ruslan: we stood from afar trying to see what
the heck was going on but there was dust

winds and people were running and screaming,
it was just chaos

Thandi: mmmmh I wonder what happened

he kissed her neck again

Thandi: Ruu?

Ruslan: amour

Thandi: why do you like rubbing my belly?

***he kissed her neck again and pulled her
closer and he continued to rub her belly***

Ruslan: don't worry you'll know why soon

***then his phone rang and he let her go and
took it from on top of the side drawer and he
answered it sitting up***

Ruslan: yeah

Voice: Madou

*** the voice said with a low tone and he got out
of the bed with a frown on his face***

Ruslan: Cass

Castiel: yeah.... i need your help man

Ruslan: what?

Castiel: Juana....i just found out that she never existed man... it all a façade....mom and that girl who used some dead woman's body to fool me planned the whole shit

Ruslan: ok wait... what?

Castiel: and the brethren know about my whereabouts and it's only a matter of time before the witches' council finds me too...there's a lot this Juana bitch told me that you also need to know

Ruslan: Cass look i...

he interrupted him

Castiel: the brethren are coming after you too man for killing their own, you have a family now sojust bring your son closer so you can

protect him along with your new family

*** Ruslan walked out and closed the door
behind him***

Ruslan: how did they find you...I mean I couldn't
even find you

Castiel: those men that I killed...the car door
ripped off from the car and their hearts ripped
out so yah I messed up cause even today the
police can't explain what happened to them or
to the car door

Ruslan: and how do they know about my
location

Castiel: they gonna use me to fish you out

***he paced around while brushing his head
roughly***

Castiel: im sorry I messed up man im really
sorry

Ruslan: THAT'S ALL YOU KNOW

CASTIEL...MESSING UP AND I ALWAYS HAVE TO CLEAN UP AFTER YOU AS IF YOU'RE NOT MY ELDER BROTHER

Castiel: look its fine I'll hand myself over to the witches' council....they'll kill me and the brethren won't have find you...its better I die with the witches council's hand than with the brethren's

Ruslan: no no no

he stopped moving

Castiel: it's the only way man....if the brethren catch me that bitch Ariel will make me talk forcefully with her powers

Ruslan: NO!....we'll find a way just tell me where you are and....

Castiel: I'll send you my location...and Madou, I killed a human by feed off himright now im thirsty and Kazi....she's in danger man, im gonna kill her I know I will

Ruslan: shit...ok look go outside and keep yourself busy im coming

*** Castiel dropped the call and Ruslan's phone beeped, it was Castiel who send him his location***

Ruslan: shit!

MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....07

.

.

.

NARRATED

****AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION ****

Castiel decided to go to the basement cause he could smell Kazi's blood from outside the door of the room she was in from her stained shirt, that's how thirsty he was..... he knew he shouldn't have fed on a human but with the way he was angry he couldn't control himself...he only regretted what he did minutes after he did it....Anyway he got inside the basement and he locked it and pointed his palm towards the door and he put a protection spell that locked him inside the basement, it's a protection spell that he can't undo himself only Ruslan can undo it or another witch that owns a book of shadows...it's the only way Kazi can be safe from him at this moment

Castiel: mother what have you done....

***he said to himself and he sat down on the floor and he groaned as the thirst got really bad...then he got up quickly and he started

punching the wall over and over and over again***

.

.

.

AT THE BNB

Ray: bros

Ruslan: I just got a call from Cass and he's in deep shit man

Ray: what deep shit

Ruslan: he said something about the Brethren finding him and Juana never existed and that he fed off a human

Ray: ooh shit!

Ruslan: he send me his location and he said he's scared he might kill that girl

Ray: then we must leave right away man

Ruslan: I was thinking I should leave now and I'll send you his location and you'll come once the ladies and boys are safely home

Ray: ok but don't leave without seeing the boys....Mpilo is busy asking if you'll join us, I can tell he misses you already

***Ruslan smiled ***

Ruslan: he is?

Ray chuckled

Ray: yeah bros you can tell he's even bored

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: he just loves it when I do a little magic for him

*** Ray laughed***

Ray: ok we are already on our way

Ruslan: ok

***they ended the call and he sighed then he

dialed Castiel's numbers and he answered on the third ring***

Castiel: tell me you are close by?

he said with a different scary voice and Ruslan swallowed hard

Ruslan: is she still alive?

Castiel: I locked myself in the basement using the protection spell from the book of shadows it's the only way I can keep her safe

Ray: ok stay put im on my way

Castiel groaned and they ended the call and Ruslan went inside

Thandi: is everything ok?

he cleared his throat going closer to her

Ruslan: yeah ummm its my brother

Thandi: your brother? you have a brother? I mean I didn't know you have a brother

she said surprised and Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: yeah I do

Thandi: you never mentioned him before

He sat down next to her

Ruslan: well we....don't see eye to eye

Thandi: ooh

Ruslan: but he's my brother and he needs my help

Thandi: umm ok

he leaned closer and perked her lips then he stared into her eyes

Ruslan: he needs my help as in now

Thandi: wait you have to leave now?

she said with a low tone

Ruslan: yeah

Thandi: ooh

Ruslan: he needs my help amour

Thandi: I understand

she said looking down

Ruslan: hey look at me

she looked at him

Ruslan: three days tops....i just need to make
sure he's fine

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: I love you ok

***she nodded and he kissed the tip of her nose
and he got up and she sighed***

Ruslan: im gonna leave as soon as the boys
come back and you'll go back with Ray and
everyone else

Thandi: ok

***he went to pack their things and they heard a
knock on the door and Ruslan went to open and

Mpilo threw himself on him and Ruslan caught him and picked him up laughing***

Ruslan: someone missed me

Mpilo nodded and Ruslan laughed again and he brushed Mpendulo's head

Ruslan: you didn't miss me champ

Mpendulo: uncle please im too old for that

Ruslan: ooh so you didn't miss me

Mpendulo: I did now can we stop

he said looking away shyly which made Ray and Ruslan to laugh

Ruslan: ok champ

Ray looked at Thandi who didn't look happy and he looked at Ruslan and Ruu sighed then he put Mpilo down

Ruslan: ummm boys I have to go somewhere meaning I won't be able to go back with you and

your mother but I'll come see you in three days' time ok

Mpilo: I wanna go with you

Ruslan: I know my pilot but not this time maybe next time ok

he sulked

Ruslan: look when I come back how about we go watch a movie just me, you and your brother

he smiled and nodded

Mpilo: and I'll choose the movie right

Mpendulo: oooh Lord save us

he said rolling his eyes and they laughed

Thandi: hei wena Mpendulo be nice to your brother hau

Mpendulo: mara mama he always picks boring cartoon movies

Mpilo: no I don't

Mpendulo: yes you do

Mpilo: no I don't

Ray: ok ok stop you two...now say goodbye to your new daddy and lets go eat

Thandi gave him a "wtf" look and he chuckled

Mpilo: our new daddy?....is uncle Ruu our new daddy mommy

Thandi looked at Mpilo and swallowed hard then she looked at Ray who was looking at her with a raised eyebrow

Ray: yah mommy is uncle Ruu their new daddy

he said with a smirk on his face and Thandi gave him a death stare

Thandi: umm boys well the thing is....

Ruslan: do you want me to be your new daddy my pilot

he saved Thandi by asking Mpilo that and Mpilo looked from Thandi to Ruslan and he frowned

Mpilo: but if I want you to be my new daddy you won't be my uncle anymore mos

Mpendulo: duh

he said rolling his eyes

Ruslan: yes but it wont change anything between us in fact it will mean some day we will live together you, me, Mpe and mommy in a big house with a swimming pool

Mpilo: and you'll drive me to school just like Kevin's daddy drives Kevin to school everyday

Ruslan: ummm yeah

Mpilo: ok I want you to be my new daddy

he said smiling and Ray laughed

Thandi: you do?

****he nodded smiling and she looked at
Mpendulo***

Mpendulo: what ma

Ray: what about you?

Mpendulo: I know mom and uncle Ruu are
dating....im no longer a little boy uncle Ray

Thandi: what?

****Ruslan chuckled shaking his head while
Thandi was shocked***

Mpendulo: I once saw you and uncle Ruu
kissing duh...

***he said with a bored tone and Thandi's heart
began beating fast cause she wasn't ready to
tell them yet well especially not like this ***

Ray: and you cool with that?

Mpendulo: no.... yuck

he said making a face

Mpendulo: it's not nice seeing old people kissing uncle...not nice at all, anyway im hungry

then he looked at a shocked Ruslan

Mpendulo: I'll see you when you get back uncle

Ruslan: ummm yeah

*** Then he walked out and Ray chuckled shaking his head***

Ray: mr pilot say bye too

he hugged Ruslan and Ruu put him down and he ran after Mpendulo

Ruslan: I.... didn't see that coming

Ray: me neither man...these kids grow up fast....anyway I'll see you later man

they fist bumped and he walked out and Ruslan closed the door and turned to Thandi

Ruslan: you ok?

she sighed

Thandi: he saw us kissing Ruu

he went closer to her and he pulled her closer and kissed her forehead

Ruslan: and he seems ok with us

she sighed

Thandi: isn't it too soon for them to know, I mean they just buried their father

Ruslan: they are both ok with us "dating" so we should be glad amour....imagine if they had a problem

Thandi: I guess

Ruslan: and I sense that you are unhappy

Thandi: I just don't want to teach them that it's ok to move from one relationship to another

Ruslan: and you right it's not and for your information you didn't move from one relationship to another remember I waited for you....i kept sending you love messages and

calling you

***she looked down blushing and he chuckled
then he stopped and sighed***

Ruslan: you don't seem pleased that im leaving
amour

Thandi: I think im becoming clingy Ruu...right
now I feel like crying cause you leaving even
though I understand that you have to help your
brother

***he smiled and pushed her face up and kissed
her***

Ruslan: now you know how I feel every time I
have to leave you every night just so the boys
don't find me in the morning

she smiled looking at him

Thandi: really?

he nodded and he perked her lips

Ruslan: im also clingy but im a man so sulking

about it will make me look like a pussy

they laughed

Ruslan: but I have to go now amour....I'll call you every chance I get ok

she nodded and they hugged for some time then they pulled apart and kissed passionately until they broke it to catch their breaths

.

.

.

ON THE ROAD

****Ray, Heath, Jabu, Naledi, Thandi and the boys were on their way homeRay, Thandi, Naledi and the boys where on one car and Jabu and Heath were on another car they rented since Ruslan used the other car when he leftanyway Jabu's phone rang and it was Amo***

Jabu: rato laka (my love)

Amo: Jabu your baby mama is here and she's busy causing a scene

she said with a pissed off tone

Jabu: o reng? (what)

Amo: yeah....i don't have the strength to deal with her Jabu ok...o busy o tlhaba mashata mo (she's busy shouting) calling me names, a re im keeping her son away from her

Jabu: rato laka ke gona re tswang ka Limpopo so im gonna send some guys batlo ntsha tonki eo don't worry, wena don't open the door her (my love we just drove out of Limpopo so im gonna send some guys to come and take out that donkey don't worry....just don't open the door for her)

Amo: ok

Jabu: kao rata wautlwa (I love you, you hear me)

Amo: I love you too

then they ended the call

Jabu: nx sfebe se sentlwaela masepa (that bitch is pissing me off)

Heath: what's wrong?

Jabu: Amo a re Dipuo o ko dladleng obusy o tlhaba mashata (Amo said Dipuo is at my house busy causing a scene)

Heath: wait Dipuo as in your crazy baby mama

Jabu: yah I swear tonki e le e tlo nnyela, not with my wife Mshikaro...ke tlo tlhaba sefebe kuku ka thipa nna nx (yeah I swear im gonna deal with that donkey, not with my wife Mshikaro....im gonna end up stabbing a bitch's pussy with a knife nx)

he said dialing one of his boys' numbers

.

.

.

****AT JABU AND AMO'S HOUSE ***

Dipuo: ye wena sfebe ke re (hey bitch) where is my son!

she said banging on the door....Amo only let her inside the yard cause she said she's Sbu's mother but when she started insulting her she left her outside and she locked herself, her daughter and Sbu inside the house and called Jabu....she knew Jabu doesn't like cops and he doesn't want them inside his yard so calling the cops on her was out of question

Sbu: mama im sorry about this

he said looking down ashamed and Amo went closer to him

Amo: hey

she said cupping his face

Amo: don't apologize for other people's crazy

behavior ok....she may be your biological mother but you are also my son ... so stop apologizing

Sbu nodded with tears in his eyes and she hugged him

Dipuo: Sbu!

she called out to him

Dipuo: Sbu baby its your mother!

Sbu broke the hug and he went to the door looking angry with Amo calling after him...he opened the door and he looked at his mother with a deadly look on his face

Dipuo: ooh my boy look at you....baby go inside and pack your clothes we are going home

Amo: home as in where exactly?

Dipuo: wena stay out of this nx

she said pointing at Amo

Sbu: dont talk to my mother like that Dipuo!

***he said with an angry tone ***

Dipuo: your mother?....hey wena Sbusiso I gave birth to you wankutlwa, 19 hours of labour so oska mpotsa nyoso (so don't tell me nonsense)....im your mother and not her

Amo: Dipuo or whatever your name is bona mo, giving birth doesn't make you a mother wankutlwa....where were you all this years, you knew Jabu was in prison but you never bothered to help Jabu's mother with Sbu and now you come here to my house o tlo tlhaba mashata busy saying my son my son...which son are you talking about!

she said shouting at her and Dipuo took a step closer to Amo and Sbu quickly stood between them

Sbu: touch her and you'll see

Dipuo: Sbusiso so you are defending this thing

against me your mother?

Sbu: I said touch her and you'll see

***Dipuo laughed clapping her hands once ***

Dipuo: so you have poisoned my son against
me you witch

***Sbu grabbed her by her shirt tight and he
pulled her closer to his face and Dipuo
swallowed hard with her eyes popped out***

Amo: ooh my God Sbu, baby don't please don't

she said shocked with what he just did

Sbu: listen here Dipuo....mom here is dad's wife,
dad being Jabu and he will deal accordingly
with anyone who insults or threatens her and im
Jabu's son and have his crazy blood running
through my veins so call her a witch once again
and I'll forget that you once gave birth to me
and I'll....

Amo: Sbu don't please baby don't...she's not

worth it

she interrupted him

Sbu: I don't want to go with you anywhere and I don't want to live with you.....I'll never forgive you for what you did and said to me that day I came to ask for money to buy school shoes...if it wasn't for uncle Heath I would have....

****then he stopped cause he was getting more angry and emotional at the same time***

Sbu: you are no mother to me Dipuo now get out of my father's yard and never set your feet here again

he let her go and took a step back

Dipuo: Sbusiso....

she said with a low tone

Sbu: GET OUT DIPUO!

***he roared which made Amo and Dipuo to jump a bit ...then a car parked outside the yard

and two scary looking guys got out of the car
then one of the guys put his phone on his ear
and seconds later he put his phone in his
pocket then Amo's phone rang ***

Amo: babe

Jabu: open the gate for those two guys and go
inside with Sbu

Amo: Jabu what's...

he interrupted her

Jabu: Amogelang now!.....please

***she sighed and she went inside the house
and opened the gate for them and she
instructed for Sbu to get inside and she closed
the door while Sbu went to the baby's crib and
lifted Lile (Jabulile) up and he kissed her
forehead and he took her bottle and went to sit
down while feeding her....Amo smiled looking at
them cause Sbu was protective of his little
sister and it was cute, then she heard a car

driving away and she sighed, she prayed that they don't hurt her cause despite being an awful mother to Sbu and a mean human being Dipuo was still Sbu's biological mother nonetheless***

.

INSERT.....08

.

.

.

NARRATED

INSIDE THE WOODS

*** Ruslan parked his car where the woods started, it was a cloudy day. He then crouched down and put his palm on the ground and he closed his eyes listening then he heard a banging sound on the ground and he opened his eyes and got up then he walked inside the woods for some time, he would crouch to the

ground every now and then to get the right direction to where the house is cause the gps coordinates shows he's somewhere inside the woods....he walked for some time until he got to some thick tall trees and grass and he could see that a spell is what is making them that thick and scary looking then he pointed his palm to them and his eyes changed color to gold and black and he chanted a spell and the thick trees and glass made a way for him to pass and he walked to the other side and he found the “scary like in a horror movie” abandoned house and he chuckled shaking his head***

Ruslan: copy cat

***then he went closer to the house and he stopped walking when he felt a figure watching him not far from him then he turned and his eyes changed to cloudy color and the weather changed....clouds gathered and lightings started

hitting all around but what the person didn't know was they were searching for him until one hit him and he fell from one of the tall trees and he groaned then Ruslan used his magic to lift the person up and brought him to where he is....he used his magic to hold him up right using an invisible magical rope to hold him tight as he floated on air***

Ruslan: who are you and what do you want?

he asked with a thick and scary voice

Man: fuck... that hurt!

then he laughed a bit and Ruslan tightened the invisible magical rope that was holding him and he groaned

Ruslan: answer me!

Man: I can't believe you are also here man...damn

***Ruslan tightened some more the invisible

rope around him and the man's skin started cracking***

Ruslan: ooh a full blown vampire how interesting

Man: ok ok im ready to talk....ummm look Castiel and I are buddies and im here to warn him about the Brethren, they found his location man

Ruslan: and who are you?

Man: Eden

***then Ruslan chanted a spell that froze him and he let him fall on the ground hard and he picked up a stick and drew a circle around him and four signs of the witches' symbol and he chanted a trap spell that will keep him inside the circle then he faced the house and he lifted off the illusion spell that covered it and a beautiful house emerged and he went inside.... the banging sound wasn't heard anymore and

he remembered that Castiel said he locked himself in the basement and he searched for it and found it then he went down the stairs and he saw a magic spell covering the door then he lifted it off and he opened the door and found the room in shambles.... the walls had cracks and holes on them and everything was broken to pieces and Castiel was on the floor with his face buried between his thighs***

Ruslan: damn

Castiel: is not as bad as it looks

he said with a scary voice and still with his face buried between his thighs

Ruslan: ummm yeah it does

then Castiel raised his head

Ruslan: shit I don't remember the last time I saw you like this man

Castiel: I didn't think you'd come

Ruslan: mmmmh I didn't think you'd call me for help too

he sighed

Castiel: where's your other half

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: he's coming

Castiel: thought as much

Ruslan: before I forget your vampire buddy Eden is outside looking for you

Castiel frowned and he got up

Castiel: I don't have a friend named Eden in fact I don't have friends...wait the only Eden I know is a Brethren

Ruslan: I knew I didn't trust him

Castiel: shit they found me

he said pacing up and down

Ruslan: yeah looks like it now pull yourself

together and let's get out of here

he said walking out and he went upstairs with Castiel behind him....he got to Kazi's room while Cass went to his room to change his clothes and she was awake but still drowsy

Kazi: who...who are you?

she said with a low tone

Ruslan: its ok go back to sleep

then he put his open hand on her forehead and chanted a spell then she passed out and he carried her in his arms then Castiel got in

Ruslan: take important things and lets get out of here

he nodded and went out

.

.

.

***they were outside and Castiel was standing next to Eden on the other side of the circle ***

Castiel: unfreeze him Madou

Ruslan did and Eden got up slowly breathing heavily

Eden: I knew it was you

Castiel: yeah so?

Eden chuckled and he tried to get out of the circle but a force stopped him

Eden: ooh I forgot that your bro is a wizard

Castiel: how many are you?

Eden: fuck you man....ooh you are so dead!

then he laughed

Ruslan: ooh I see he's a feisty one

Eden: you are all dead!

Ruslan: ooh really...I mean I killed your leader like a cockroach

Eden: and that's why your death is gonna be the most painful

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: you clearly don't know me man....you should ask your buddy here what im capable of, now answer the question how many are you

Eden: enough to capture you and take you to the new leader

then he laughed

Castiel: remove this spell so I can deal with this fucker Madou!

Ruslan put Kazi down on the ground gently and he went closer to the circle

Ruslan: don't piss me off man, you don't wanna see me when im mad

Eden: go to hell wizard

***Ruslan's eyes turned black in color and suddenly it became a bit dark with dark clouds

gathering around and cold air filled the area***

Eden: you don't scare me wizard

Ruslan: ተጠቃሚ ተወካይ ከላቸው ላይ እና ከዚው ላይ

then Eden's body made cracking sounds as it stood straight upright and he screamed....Ruslan was controlling his body now

Eden: what the fuck man!

he said with a spooked tone

Ruslan: ለእነዚህ ጥንቃቄዎች ላይ እና ከዚው

he continued to speak using the forbidden language then Eden's left arm stretched forward

Eden: what are you doing to me man!

Castiel: answer us or he won't stop

Eden swallowed hard with his eyes popped

Eden: im not saying anything so go right ahead and kill me you bastard

he said breathing heavily

Castiel: ooh no he won't kill you..... just yet

Ruslan: የን በእናስ ላይ የእርምት ቴጥልት ላይ

then Eden's right arm reached for his left arm and it forcefully ripped his left arm off his ice cold body and he screamed out loud then he looked at his ripped out arm looking spooked and Ruslan made him throw it to the ground

Castiel: still won't talk?

Eden: go... go to hell!

Castiel: ok

Ruslan: በያስቀም ጥኑም አንብ እያደር ገኑም

then Eden's hand went to his right eye and it plucked the eye out and he screamed out loud falling to the ground

Castiel: are you ready to talk because he can go on until there's nothing left to rip off your body man

Eden: fine...fine I'll talk...I'll talk

then Ruslan's eyes went back to normal after he spoke some forbidden language words and he went to pick Kazi up

Ruslan: talk!

Eden: there's...there's 5 of us and we are all searching this state or province as they call it here and I guess I found you first

Ruslan just shook his head and he chanted a spell and the spell on the circle got lifted off and he started walking

Ruslan: he's all yours after you done with him burn him to ashes along with the house

Then Castiel smiled wickedly and he jumped on him

.

.

.

*** he walked inside the gate and walked straight to the door and he banged the door hard***

Woman: hei wena a se lebati la mmao kokota pila man (hey that is not your mother's door knock properly)

a woman said inside the house and then the door opened wide and Dipuo's sister stood there with a smile forming on her face, she has always had a crush on him

Woman: Jabu hey....wow ge o dipapatlile so?
(wow you look good)

Jabu: bitsa suster la gao (call your sister)

Woman: Dipuo told me gore you moved on le le yellow bone le lengwe.....why mara abuti Jabu

ke... (with some yellow bone....why brother Jabu when...)

Jabu: hai voetsek man Pelo, ke rile bitsa Dipuo!
(hai piss off man Pelo, I said call Dipuo!)

he interrupted her and she sulked

Pelo: mxm wa bora (you are a bore)

then she called Dipuo and she came to the door and swallowed hard when she saw Jabu, she couldn't believe how good looking he was....he even smelled extremely good and you could tell he was swimming in moola now, well Pelo went inside to continue watching Tv...the next thing Jabu grabbed Dipuo by her hair and he pulled her out of the house roughly

Dipuo: ahh Jabu wankgobatsa (ahh Jabu you are hurting me)

Jabu: o zamang Dipuo....o nyaka bonang wena heh (what are you trying to do Dipuo....what do you wanna see huh)

he said with an angry voice

Jabu: otla ko dladleng la ka and you insult my wife....my fucken wife! (you come to my house and you insult my wife...my fucken wife)

he said shouting at her

Dipuo: Jabu askies

Jabu: o batlo nnyela Dipuo....o lapisitse ke liewe neh....o nyako boda heh? (you wanna shit yourself Dipuo....i see you tired of life I see you want to die)

Dipuo: im sorry Jabu

***she said looking scared and she covered her face and Jabu let her go which surprised her cause the Jabu she knows would have slapped her or even punched her on her face ***

Jabu: e nne la bofelo you come to my house wankutlwa (it should be the last time you come to my house you hear me)

he said pointing at her

Dipuo: I just wanted my son Jabu...she poisoned him against me

Jabu: hei...hei..hei....which son....which son

Dipuo

Dipuo: I know I messed up but ke ngwanaka Jabu (he's my son)

Jabu: voetsek...voetsek jou hond....o khethile lerete (you chose a dick) over your own son and o re you messed up and my wife poisoned Sbu against you!

Dipuo: Jabu i....

Jabu: I said Voetsek!

he interrupted her

Jabu: my wife is off limits wankutlwa....o tla nnyela mo vroung ya ka, ke tlaotlhaba kuku ka thipa sfebe wankutlwa....by the time ke fetsa ka wena marago nyana a ma kima a a go tlatsa ke

di ARVs le mokhaba wa go tlatsa ke di sperms
tsa go nkga dipatji tsa di bari di tla fela wa sala
e kare o tshwere ke final stage sa AIDS
wankutlwa

(my wife is off limits you hear me....you'll shit
yourself when it comes to my wife, I'll stab your
pussy with a knife bitch you hear me.... by the
time im done with you that huge ass filled with
ARV pills and that fat belly filled with sperms
that smells like marijuana belonging to
idiots/fools will perish and you'll end up looking
like you are on a last stage of AIDS you hear me)

he said pointing at her

Jabu: o sa nyaka go ntlwaela masepa Dipuo
(don't piss me off Dipuo) you know what im
capable of so don't push me to my limits....bona
mo Dipuo come at my wife again or insult her
and you'll disappear without a trace.... you fokon
shit nx

*** then he turned and walked to the gate
leaving Dipuo sobbing and shaking with fear ***

.

.

.

****AT CASTIEL'S OTHER HOUSE***

***Kazi woke up after Ruslan lifted the spell off
her and she looked around and found Ruslan
looking at her***

Kazi: please...please don't hurt me

she said looking scared

Ruslan: hey relax I wont hurt you...I wont hurt
you ok

***he said with a warm smile and she nodded
slowly and he helped her sit properly on the
couch***

Kazi: where...where am i

Ruslan: Castiel's other house

Kazi: Castiel is...is here?

she asked with a shaky voice looking around

Ruslan: relax he won't do anything to you or else I'll fuck him up pretty bad

she swallowed hard

Ruslan: even though he's a ticking time bomb and an asshole most of the time but he saved your life...so that must mean he's not that bad right

she didn't say anything

Ruslan: im his younger brother Ruslan and you must be Kazi right

she nodded

Kazi: will he ever let me go

Ruslan: yeah I'll make sure of it ok

she nodded

Kazi: are you also a...

she couldn't even say it and he chuckled

Ruslan: no and he was born like this so he didn't ask to be a hybrid vamp

Kazi: what's a hybrid

Castiel: a half human half vampire

she froze

Castiel: don't act shocked you did see the fangs, skin and eyes I mean my skin now is still pale so

Ruslan: will you just shut it and go punch a wall or something

he showed Ruslan the middle finger and went to the kitchen

Ruslan: he's a special case don't mind him please

Kazi: how come you are not a...

Ruslan: same mother different fathers

she nodded and Castiel came back with a glass full of blood and he was drinking with a straw

Ruslan: really Cass

Castiel: what?

Ruslan: what the fuck is wrong with you
huh...you gonna drink that in front of her

Castiel: my house man

***Ruslan just shook his head and looked at
Kazi***

Ruslan: you are going back home tomorrow

Castiel: whoa....stop right there

Ruslan: I wasn't asking for your permission
Cass

he said with a serious look on his face

Castiel: I own her Madou so don't get involved

he said taking a step forward

Ruslan: how much

Castiel: huh?

Ruslan: how much for her release since you suddenly love money so much

Castiel: she's not for sale now stay out of this Madou it doesn't involve you in any way

Ruslan got up

Ruslan: maybe I should let the Brethren kill you so she can be free....i mean you once chose a pussy over me so that shit might as well run in the family

Castiel: wow

then he chuckled shaking his head

Ruslan: so what is it gonna be brother

Castiel: fuck you Madou nx

then he walked away looking pissed

Ruslan: you going home tomorrow ok

Kazi nodded and she breathed a sigh of relief then Ruslan's phone rang he got up and went to another room

Ruslan: bros

Ray: you still at the same location

Ruslan: no we were made, I found a Brethren there

Ray: fuck no

Ruslan: yeah so I'll send you a new location

Ray: ok send it now im on the road

Ruslan: ok...are you ok man you sound down

Ray sighed

Ray: Pedro dos Santos is dead

Ruslan: what? damn....umm why do you sound hurt that he is

Ray: cause Celine her daughter is taking over from him man

Ruslan: ooh...shit

he said rubbing his head

Ray: and Mateo just called me and said she set up an appointment with me to discuss our contract...worse part she's coming here

Ruslan: shit!

Ray: im married now man and we both know what she really wants....that contract is important and that bitch might....

Ruslan: don't say it

he interrupted him

Ray: this is not only about me Ruu....Mateo and Diego depend on this contract...they have families they need to take care of....Serine's hospital bills are expensive and.... that bitch will give me a condition I know it....it might not be

on this meeting im about to have with her but I know she will one of this days

he sighed

Ruslan: maybe she over that man

Ray chuckled

Ray: she's been after my dick for as long as I can remember and the only reason I didn't give in even thought she would threaten me every now and then that she will lie and tell her father that she's pregnant for me is because Pedro warned me not to or else he'll stop doing business with us

Ruslan: shit!

he sighed

Ruslan: just get here and we will figure a way out

Ray: ok

then they ended the call

Ruslan: this is bad

then he got up and went to make a drinkable potion for Kazi's internal wounds to heal fast and another one for Castiel to minimize his thirst and he waited for Ray

.

INSERT.....09

.

.

.

NARRATED

.

.

.

***soon Ray arrived and he went inside and he greeted Kazi and him and Ruslan went to the

dining room ***

Ray: where is he?

Castiel: right here

Ray turned and smirked looking at him

Ray: damn you look like shit

Castiel chuckled

Ray: you asshole you have been here all along
and you couldn't even call to say hi...piece of
shit

Castiel laughed

Castiel: I've been busy man

***then they got closer to each other and they
bro-hugged then Castiel broke it off quickly and
took a step back***

Castiel: careful I can see and hear your pulse on
your neck pumping blood man and even though
I have a feeling that your blood is bitter as fuck

but im thirsty so....

Ray laughed and Castiel joined him

Ray: you good

Ruslan: yeah he's good and annoying now let's go sit down so he can tell us what the fuck is happening

he said with an annoyed tone

Castiel: wow but I thought all is forgiven between us brother

Ruslan: fuck off Castiel

Ray laughed and Castiel shook his head.....anyway they went to sit in Castiel's study room then Castiel started narrating everything Juana said and by the time he was done Ruslan was angry as hell and hurt so they let him go outside to cool off

.

.

.

****A DAY LATER AT MENZI'S HOUSE***

Menzi and Buhle's parents were sitting in the lounge, Buhle's parents called this meeting after Kazi's ex-friend and Buhle's cousin Lele told them about Menzi and Kazi's affair thinking that's why Buhle committed suicide

Menzi: ok now that we are all here.... what is this meeting all about?

Buhle's father: Ngcobo we just heard from Lele about you cheating on our daughter, is that why she killed herself?

he asked with an angry voice

Menzi: ang'zwanga (excuse me)

Buhle's mother: you killed my daughter ngo bufebe bakho nja ndini (with your whoring ways you dog)

she said with a pained and angry voice

Buhle's father: hai man Khethiwe

Menzi chuckled shaking his head

Khethiwe: ubulale indodakazi yam baba ka
Buhle (he killed my daughter)...my daughter is
gone and he killed her

***she said crying and Menzi got up as he was
getting angry***

Menzi: get out of my house

he said with a low tone

Buhle's father: heh?

Menzi: ngithe phumani ni phele emzini wami! (I
said get out of my house)

Buhle's Father: Ngcobo the meeting is not yet
done

Menzi: what meeting....first of all you don't even
know what happened and you are here in my
house busy calling me names....your precious
daughter is a killer she killed innocent children

because of mere jealousy

Khethiwe: unamanga....you are lying....you're just trying to shift the blame to Buhle cause she's not here to defend herself

he just went upstairs and soon came back with her suicide letter and he threw it at Buhle's father

Menzi: that good for nothing daughter of yours killed my unborn kids just because she couldn't handle me wanting a second wife.....i forgave her for fucking my father years back and getting pregnant by him and she....

he stopped talking as he was getting angrier and he went to pour himself a drink breathing heavily

Khethiwe: she didn't write this....my daughter would never do something like this

she said after she read the letter and she threw it on the floor

Buhle's father: what do you mean she slept with your father....on the letter she apologized for....

he couldn't even finish it

Menzi: why do you think she was hospitalized that time...ooh I remember she lied and told you that she was mugged right?

then he chuckled bitterly

Khethiwe: you are lying man!

she shouted at him

Menzi: well I found her in bed with my father fucking and I beat the shit out of her....i wanted to kill her so bad but then I thought of my child....then three months later she found out she was pregnant and months later she gave birth to a baby girl and I did a DNA test and I wasn't the father but guess what my father was

buhle's mother started crying again with her hands shaking

Menzi: I only kept quiet of all this because of my kids so don't come to my house and accuse me of bullshit!

then he got up

Menzi: now please leave my house....you can even bury her cause im not interested in burying someone who killed my unborn babies and tell that cousin of hers that she's fired nx

then his phone rang and he stood up and walked away leaving Buhle's parents shocked and in an bad emotional state

Menzi: yah

Man: she's here man....Kazi is here at the police station

Menzi: heh?

he said as he stopped walking with his heart beating fast

Man: she was just found outside the police

station yard passed out....she's still alive and an ambulance is on its way here

Menzi: she...she's there

he asked making sure he heard him correctly

Man: yeah man, she's here...your Kazi is here

Menzi: fuck...ummm.... im on my way...im on my way

he dropped the call and quickly went to grab his car keys and wallet and he rushed out leaving Buhle's parents still sitting in the lounge

.

.

.

***AT THE HOSPITAL ***

***Kazi slowly opened her eyes and she

scanned the room and she cleared her throat and Menzi quickly turned and when he saw that she was awake he rushed to her***

Menzi: hey you are awake

he said smiling with tears in his eyes

Kazi: Me...Menzi?

Menzi: yes baby it's me....you're safe baby...I can't believe you're here...I thought I'd never see you again...I searched for you everywhere but it's like you disappeared into thin air

*** he said that and kissed her forehead but she didn't say anything she just blinked looking lost***

Menzi: who took you...who dared me sthandwa sam?

he said looking into her eyes but she continued to blink looking lost

Menzi: Ntandokazi?

Kazi: i...I was kidnapped?

Menzi frowned

Menzi: what do you mean by that?

Kazi: I remember parking my car after talking to you on the phone and I felt like someone or something was watching me so I decided to turn and go back to the car and wait until you arrive then I heard a loud bang and I fell feeling pain on my stomach and the next thing I felt like someone or something was holding me and we were moving at a very high speed and I passed out and I just woke up now

he looked at her worried

Menzi: ummm ok let...let me go see your doctor
I'll be back ok

he kissed her forehead and walked out....he found a nurse and asked her to call for Kazi's doctor and she did and soon he arrived and shook hands with him

Menzi: what's wrong with her doc, I mean she can't remember that she was kidnapped for days

Doctor: I suspect that she's suffering from Transient global amnesia or it could be retrograde amnesia or anterograde amnesia which is bad kind of amnesia

Menzi brushed his head roughly

Menzi: ok simple english doc

Doctor: ok...ummm with Transient global amnesia is a sudden temporary loss of memory for events during, after and sometimes before the event that caused the amnesia and retrograde amnesia is the inability to retrieve information that was acquired before a particular date of an accident or operation or even during an accident

Menzi: ok how long will it take for her to regain her memory back

Doctor: well a therapist is the right doctor to give you a proper diagnosis about her type of amnesia but what I know is we should pray that she's suffering from Transient global amnesia cause it gets resolved within a short period of time

Menzi swallowed hard

Doctor: I have assigned her a good therapist and she'll be here tomorrow around 11 am and she will give you a proper diagnosis

Menzi: ok... umm she was shot

Doctor: ooh yes and whoever took her treated her wound like a professional....she doesn't have any infections and the wound is healing very well and fast

Menzi clenched his jaws

Menzi: she...she was pregnant so is....

the doctor sighed

Doctor: yes I meant to tell you about that but I was quickly called to the ER... ummm whomever took her also professionally cleaned her womb and luckily no damage was done to it

***Menzi clenched his jaws getting emotional

Menzi: ummm ok thank you

the doctor nodded

Doctor: my advice is don't force her to remember what happened to her, give her time and let a professional help her the right way cause forcing her to remember may do more damage, just be patient with her and also be there for her and get her the help she needs

Menzi nodded and the doctor left then Menzi sighed heavily and went back to her ward and found her eating slowly

Menzi: hey

she looked up and he smiled faintly at her as he walked closer to her bed

Menzi: im glad you safe

he said and kissed her forehead and she looked down

Kazi: how...how long was I gone?

he sighed

Menzi: a few days

Kazi: who...who shot me and why

then her eyes popped out and her hand went to her stomach

Kazi: my babies....my babies...are they ok?

she said with tears in her eyes looking at Menzi with her hands shaking and Menzi swallowed hard getting emotional

Kazi: Menzi are my babies ok?

Menzi: im sorry but they...

****she shook her head repeatedly with tears running down her cheeks and her bottom lip shaking***

Kazi: no no no

Menzi: im sorry sthandwa sam....im sorry

she let out a heart wrenching cry and Menzi held her tight as she let it all out with his own tears running down his face

.

.

.

*** later at night Menzi was sleeping on the couch inside Kazi's ward while Kazi was sleeping on the hospital bed ...on the far corner of the room Castiel was standing in the shadows since the lights were deemed watching her sleep, then his eyes went to Menzi and he clenched his jaws and his eyes changed

color but then he calmed himself down because he didn't wanna cause a scene cause the brethren are on his trail.....then Kazi moved a bit and his eyes went back to her and he continued to watch her sleep until around 4 in the morning then he apparated from that room to the parking lot ***

.

.

.

****TWO DAYS LATER****

Celine: hey thanks for seeing me...I know you're a busy man

she said shaking his hand

Ray: mmmmh

he said sitting down

Celine: are you still the whiskey guy or now you into beer or gin

Ray: im good...im cutting off any kind of alcohol....health reasons

he lied....he just didn't trust her and well her eyes popped out in a surprised manner then she chuckled

Celine: wow that's a first so a cup of tea will do for you huh?

Ray: just say what brought you here Celine

*** she laughed and took a sip of her drink***

Celine: aren't you gonna say your condolences

Ray: ok my condolences Celine.... now why am I here

Celine: wow cold much....anyway you are here because of our business together

Ray: im listening

Celine: well im reviewing contracts my father made when he was still alive and im gonna cancel those I think are more of a liability to us

than an asset

Ray: ok and?

Celine: ok La Parca are you always this cold?

Ray: im not your friend Celine and this is not a social meeting so just say what you wanna say and stop wasting my time

Celine: jeez fine

she leaned back on her seat and looked at him

Celine: well im not happy with the arrangement you had with my father... Que su alma descanse en paz (may his soul rest in peace)

Ray: go on

Celine: I checked our books and your contract and it seems like you benefit as much as we do on this deal but we do most of the work

Ray: and what makes you say that

Celine: the trucks that are used are ours and the men are also ours but you get 50 percent that's not right La Parca....we do all the work

Ray: the contact is mine and im the one paying for bribes and I also make sure the cargo and your men gets to your father safely so don't say shit you know nothing about

Celine: our men's life are the ones that are always in danger and if those trucks get seized it will be our asses on the line not yours

Ray chuckled

Ray: so?

Celine: so we lower your own share of the percentage to 40 percent or the deal is off

Ray laughed then his phone rang, it was Mbali and he let it ring until it stopped

Ray: you must be drunk

Celine: excuse me

Ray: you heard me

then his phone rang again and it was Mbali again and he let it ring and he decided to put his phone on silent mode

Celine: so you think the percentage you are getting is fair

Ray: lady do you think we are running a beauty salon here

Celine: please don't insult me or you will not like what I will do

Ray leaned forward

Ray: don't make a mistake of threatening me

Celine...I don't take it lightly

he said looking straight into her eyes and she saw his eyes change colour quickly and she moved her eyes and she looked down briefly

Celine: I didn't come here to stain my expensive dress with some dirty blood La Parca im here

for business

Ray: then tell your sniper or bodyguard that when he takes that shot he shouldn't miss cause if he does nc nc nc

then he got up

Celine: sit down im still talking!

Ray: listen here Celine, if you can't play with the big dogs say so but don't come here and tell me rubbish....the contact is mine and I only know him and his location so if you can't handle how things are done then say so and I'll go look for another willing partner

Celine: no one has the same roads as we do La Parca you need us as much as we need you but you need us more so rethink what you are about to do

Ray: don't you have an adviser or something cause if you don't then you need one...your thinking is premature and if you're not carefully

you'll run daddy dearest's legacy to the ground...and remember your father's enemies are waiting for you to fuck up so they can still your clients and if you're not careful I might be the first one they steal

Celine: so do we have a deal La Parca

she said ignoring him and Ray shook his head and he took his car keys from the table

Ray: call me once you done with your menstruation circle Celine so we can discuss some serious business and not this nonsense....i would say it was nice seeing you but it's not so safe trip back home

he then fastened his suit jacket and he walked to the door of the restaurant and out he went and Celine banged the table frustrated

.

.

.

later at night he was in bed with Mbali after they put Saint to sleep....she had her head on his chest while he played with her hair

Mbali: how was your day?

Ray: it was ok

Mbali: mmmmh so you were at the office all day?

he frowned

Ray: yeah why?

Mbali: you sure about that?

he pushed her off him slowly and he looked at her

Ray: what is it that you really wanna ask me my flower?

Mbali: fine...who was that woman you were having lunch with?

Ray raise his eyebrow looking at her

Ray: and how do you know I was having lunch with some woman

Mbali: just answer me Ray

Ray: and I asked you a question

he sat up straight and she did too

Ray: are you having me followed Mbali?

Mbali: are you gonna answer my question or not
Ray

Ray: you having me followed aren't you...

he chuckled and got out of bed

Ray: you are having me followed Mbali?

he said with a pissed off tone

Mbali: why are you making it a big deal Ray you also have men keeping tabs of me and im not complaining

Ray: its for your safety damn it...what's your excuse!

he said raising his voice and she kept quiet

Ray: I asked you a fucken question

he said with an angry voice

Mbali: we...we can't have sex Ray cause I haven't healed properly and you love sex

Ray: so?

Mbali: I cant give it to you and sometimes when I want to blow you you stop me so what am I supposed to think huh

Ray chuckled while shaking his head getting angrier

Ray: so that little brain of yours thinks im cheating right

Mbali: please don't insult my brain Ray ok just answer me...who's that woman you were having lunch with

Ray: you know what im not doing this with you

Mbali

he said wearing his sleepers and she got out of bed

Mbali: where are you going?

Ray: I need some air

Mbali: so you're going to walk out on me when im talking to you

Ray: first of all we are not talking but you are accusing me of useless shit so im gonna go out for some air before I say something I know I'll regret

then he walked out and Mbali sat down on the edge of the bed and tears ran down her cheeks....the following morning Mbali walked in the kitchen and Ray was standing leaning on the counter staring into space with a cup of coffee on the counter next to him....he only came back to his senses when she greeted him

Ray: hey

he greeted back and he drank his coffee and Mbali started making a cup of coffee for herself

Ray: im gonna come back a bit late tonight

she didn't say anything

Ray: im talking to you

Mbali: I heard you

she said with a lace of annoyance in her voice and Ray shook his head and he put his cup down and he went closer to her and attempted to kiss her cheek but she moved her face

Ray: really now?

she didn't say anything and he chuckled and he clenched his jaws

Ray: I should be the one who's mad for having me followed

Mbali: first of all im not having you followed, I went out to have lunch with Kalu cause I wanted to get out of this house for a couple of hours and I saw you with her when I was passing by some fancy restaurant...I called you and you looked at your phone and ignored my call

Ray: didn't it occur to you that maybe that was an important business meeting

*** he said getting pissed and she chuckled***

Mbali: you always answer my calls Ray...you even once answered my call while you were in the middle of an arms deal meeting

he clenched his jaws

Mbali: I just hope she's worth it...the only reason that I cant have sex with you is because I haven't healed so if waiting for me to heal is not worth it then just know that once I have proof that you are cheating on me Ray even Saint

being angry at you will be the least of your problems

Ray: im not cheating on you what the fuck is wrong with you huh....your insecurities are starting to piss me off Mbali....i have a lot that im dealing with so I don't need to deal with your shit right now

he shouted at her with an angry voice

Mbali: ok

she moved away from him and attempted to walk away but then she stopped and turned to look at him

Mbali: all this baby fat will go away once I hit the gym Ray and my new stretch marks will disappear with a laser treatment and I'll go do my hair and nails and I'll be myself again....so if this "ME" is turning you off even though im like this because of your son I carried in my womb and almost died while giving birth to him then

shame on you....you no longer shower with me, you don't want me to even give you a blow job anymore, we hardly spend time together and now you avoid my calls when you are having lunch with other women....

Ray: are you done being dramatic

*** he interrupted her and she looked at him with tears in her eyes***

Mbali: wow ok...just so you know there are men who would give up their wealth just to tap this ass

she said grabbing her ass

Mbali: so don't think you are doing me a favour by being with me...like I said i will go back to my old self so yah don't think you're doing me any favours Raymond nx

Ray: what did you just say?

***he said with a scary frown on his face and

she walked away***

Ray: MBALI!

he called after her but she ignored him and he stood there replaying what she just said and he chuckled angrily

INSERT.....11

.

.

.

**** AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE****

*** La Parca looked at Ruslan who now was on his one knee and his head bowed ***

La Parca: እምም ቅኑያቻ ልለ ልይሁ (you summoned me...why)

Ruslan: በዚህ ከያቶጋንኝ ያስ ልቃ እናደርሃለን (your

carrier's life is in danger)

La Parca looked from Saint to a terrified Mbali then he hit his scythe on the floor and Mbali fell and collapsed on the floor and he looked at Saint and he hit his scythe on the floor again and Saint turned to his original form

La Parca: ደንበኝን ስለ መስኬር ደንበኝን (demon on your knee)

Saint slowly went on his knee looking at a passed out Mbali and he bowed his head

La Parca: ደግሞ ቅጥንያ ታል (who dared me)

Ruslan cleared his throat

Ruslan: የእስት ፌዴራል አይሁን የገባቱ ነዔ, እናም እስት ተጠቃቀው እስት ነዔ (no one dared you great one, it was just a fight that turned ugly)

La Parca looked at Saint

La Parca: ስዕቶች ሲሆዎት ጥሩ ገንዘብ ይፈጥርላታል,

በዚለማው እለም ወሰን በጥሩ ሆኖታ ጥቂም ላይ ይ
(what are you doing outside associating
yourself with human squabbles demon)

***Saint didn't say anything his head was bend
to the left a bit while he bowed his head looking
at a passed out Mbali***

La Parca: እዋ ጽእርስ ታላ ቅና ወአዋን (im talking to
you demon!)

Saint: ገዢ ወሰን መለያፍትዎ እመጠለሁ (he hurt
my carrier's mother)

La Parca: ገዢወሰን መጣ ለያፍትዎን መጠለሁ ገዢወሰን
ለያፍትዎ እመጠለሁ (isn't my carrier your
carrier's father)

Saint didn't say anything for a bit

Saint: እስ ጠን (he is)

La Parca: ካይሆም (and?)

Saint: የሳ ልቶናናደ ምርጫን በተያሳደ እናደ (he
shouldn't have touched her)

La Parca: ደንብ ቅንስ ለመሰናኑት ወደፊትውፊቻ ከሆኑ
(and you shouldn't have touched him!)

***then he hit his scythe on the floor and Saint
felt like he was being chocked as he struggled
to breathe***

Ruslan: ከዚህም በተጨማሪ, ነስል ካላሩችሁና ሆለንም
ሻጠፊቶን ካላት (great one please stop you'll
also kill his carrier)

he said with a panicking voice

La Parca: ነስል ካላሩችሁና ሆለንምናበት (and I care
because)

Ruslan: ከዚህም በተጨማሪ, ነስል ካላሩችሁና ሆለንም
ሻጠፊቶን ካላት ከዚህም በተጨማሪ, ነስል
ካላሩችሁና (great one please your carrier won't
survive it if he wakes up and finds his son
dead...please)

***he pleaded some more and after a while La
Parca let Saint be and he fell on the floor and he
got up and knelt on the floor again with his head

bowed and a deadly look on his face***

La Parca: የ ስፍራው በወጥ ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን
ፍርሃት ለእነስ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታወቁ ገን በእነስ ላይ
የእርምት ቅዱልኝ ላይ ቤያስቀምጥኝም እንኩ እያደርገኝም
እጥመው ይህ ጥሩው አስማተኝ, ጥሩ ልማምድ
እንዲያስታወቁው, ሲለሁ ለወላደ የነበረው የእጣነት
ቅናሽ ሲብዕናለሙያ ይችላል ከዚህም በተጨማሪ, ነስል
ከላሬቻቸው ሆኖም ትጠኗቸውን ከለተለከበ (demon
don't think you are indispensable and
untouchable just because you're attached to a
child's soul, threaten my carriers life again and
I'll take you to hell myself and your torture will
continue from where it was left off...now don't
dare me cause that boy's life means nothing to
me so tread carefully)

***he warned him and Saint didn't say anything
instead he kept on looking at a passed out
Mbali and La Parca hit his scythe on the floor
and Saint was hit by a hard force and he fell
back ***

La Parca: እወጣሁ (Demon!)

***he said hitting his scythe again on the floor
and the ground shook***

Saint: ካላገባችሁና በለንም ንጉሴት (I heard you
great one)

La Parca: ያ ስፍራው በጥም ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን
ፍርሃት ለእነስ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታወቁ ግን በእነስ ላይ
የእርምት ብቻዋል ላይ በያስቀምጥኝም እንኩ ዓይደደገት
(you are walking on thin ice so next time I come
out because of you im taking you straight to hell
and Belphegor will torture you himself for
eternity)

***Saint swallowed hard and La Parca hit his
scythe on the floor and Saint went to his black
smoke form and La Parca looked at Ruslan***

La Parca: የእሳ ማርጭ ሲሆምን የእባቱ ነው, እናም እሳ
ተጠያቂው እሳ ነው (she's too weak to handle
seeing me in my full form)

Ruslan: መጥጥ ገን ይፈጥረለታል, በመለማው እለም

ወሰጥ በጥሩ ሆኔታ ጥቂም ለይ ይውላል (I'll wipe off her memory from when you showed yourself great one)

La Parca: መንከራ (good)

then he hit his scythe on the floor and strong winds filled the room and black smoke covered La Parca completely and lightning hit around the black smoke for some time, then the lightning stopped and the black smoke came down to the floor and then it disappeared and Ray was now on the floor passed out and Mbali gasped as if someone just filled her lungs with air and she coughed a bit and she opened her eyes then Ruslan rushed to her

Ruslan: take it easy...don't get up...don't get up

***then he touched on both side of her head with his fingers and his eyes changed colour and they became gold then he did what he had to do and she passed out again and he

sighed***

Saint: you should've let me deal with him instead of calling La Parka, now I know where your loyalty lies

then he disappeared

Ruslan: shit...shit...shit

he picked Mbali up and took her to one of the bedrooms downstairs and he put her on the bed and covered her with a throw blanket and he went to the bathroom and wet a towel and he went to clean up her face off all the blood and he went to check on little Kalu and he was awake now....he picked him up and Kalu started crying his lungs out, he took his bottle and tried to feed him but he refused it

Ruslan: oooh cut it out Saint, Kalu need to feed, stop your stupid nonsense or I'll command the La Parca to come out again

***Kalu stopped crying and he blinked and

looked at Ruslan with his beautiful sapphire eyes and he smiled***

Ruslan: if it wasn't you Saint doing this I would say 'cute' but since it's you then fuck you for using a child to get to me

Kalu laughed with his baby laugh and Ruslan laughed too

Ruslan: you demon dickhead

Kalu laughed again and Ruslan chuckled and he went to the lounge with him in his hands and he pushed a fluffy ottoman chair next to Ray and he sat down and fed Kalu

Ruslan: Ray!

he called out to him but he didn't move

Ruslan: RAY WAKE UP MAN!

still nothing....then he shook him using his foot and he starred a bit

Ruslan: WAKE UP MAN!

he starred again and groaned

Ruslan: come on wake up!

*** he opened his eyes and frowned and groaned in pain***

Ray: shit!

he said with his hand on his lower back

Ruslan: take it easy

he groaned again as he tried to sit up

Ray: fuck!

he said touching his head and closing his eyes a bit when a headache hit him

Ruslan: I said take it easy

Ray: fuck.... what happened?

Ruslan: La Parca happened

Ray: what?

***he said looking at Ruslan with a frown on his

face he was now sitting up***

Ruslan: yeah you are still alive because of him

he looked around

Ray: Mbali...where is Mbali?

***he said panicking ***

Ruslan: relax she's ok....she passed out and I took her to the bedroom downstairs

Ray: and Saint?

Ruslan: La Parca set him straight don't worry about him

then he looked at Kalu

Ruslan: right you demon dickhead

he chuckled and Kalu cried

Ray: cut it out man, don't call my son that

Ruslan: im not calling your son that, im talking to Saint

Ray tried to get up and Mbali's phone rang....Ruslan got up and checked who was calling and it was Jay...he let it ring

Ray: who's that?

he said getting up and he groaned when he felt a sharp pain on his back

Ray: fuck!

Ruslan: it's her brother Jay

Ray: I don't have strength to deal with him

he groaned again when he tried to walk

Ray: fuck.... I think that demon dickhead broke my back

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: I thought you said I shouldn't call him that

Ray: well he broke my back

Ruslan: and you hit his mother a tit for a tat

....anyway lets go to the basement La Parca needs to sleep even if it's for a few hours

Ray sighed

Ray: do you think she'll leave me

Ruslan: I don't know man but what I know is once his brothers know about what you did to her, the chances of this marriage working will be zero to none....we both know how the brothers feel about you especially Jay, Snakes and her father

Ray sighed

Ray: I didn't know about the baby man and I swear I have never slept with Celine

Ruslan: then who's the baby mama

Mbali's phone rang again and this time it was Snakes and they let it ring again

Ray: the woman I used to fuck back then was Consuelo Rodrigues

Ruslan raised an eyebrow at him

Ray: she's Celine's cousin

Ruslan: Amen!

he said shaking his head

Ray: she's also the woman I cheated on Mbali with on the early stages of our relationship but she never told me about no baby so....

he groaned with pain and Ruu shook his head and he got up

Ruslan: let's go to the basement like I said La Parca need to rest even if it's just for a few hours

he walked away disappointed at Ray and Mbali's phone rang again, Ray looked at who's calling and he clicked his tongue and walked away following Ruslan feeling like shit

.

.

.

**** NIGERIA****

Kev: do a fake suicide attempt

Mj frowned at him

Mj: nawa oh! ah ah this boy.... you dey craze....are you mad

Kev chuckled

Kev: relax ok, I said FAKE suicide attempt....FAKE

Mj: abeg fake or not suicide is suicide man....do I look like someone who would kill himself or attempt to

Kev: do you want my help or not

Mj: look man don't let the devil use you, don't let it use you to make me commit suicide man

Kev sighed shaking his head

Kev: can you get serious just once in your life

man

Mj: im dead serious man....im too fine to associate myself with suicide man....and what if I die for real man

Kev: dude come on

Mj shook his head

Mj: you no dey hear word man..... God and satan are busy fighting over me and now you want me to give the devil the upper hand no man no

Kev laughed shaking his head

Kev: fine but listen to my plan first before you dismiss it

Mj: fine im listening

Kev: ok fine....you drink three sleeping pills and stage the scene by scattering a few pills on your side drawer and go empty the container and put it on the side drawer along with an empty glass of water and you'll thank me later

Mj gave him a “wtf” look

Mj: are you high man?

Kev: trust me man it will work and your dad won’t do anything to you and your brothers will get more angry at chief for threatening you and they’ll blame him for it

Mj kept quiet a bit

Kev: it will work man

Mj: how do you know huh....what if I don’t wake up

Kev: well I did....it’s only three sleeping pills man

Mj: you no be God Kevin, what if this is the only way the devil will get me huh

Kev: look this plan once worked for me and I got away with crashing dad’s brand new Benz after I took it without his permission and went on a date with that high fly girl I once told you about and on my way back I crashed it

Mj: what? why don't I know about this man

Kev: my dad said I shouldn't tell anyone about it especially about me trying to "commit suicide"....imagine chief Peters son in hospital for a suicide attempt

Mj: damn

Kev: mmmmh and I got no ass whoopin, nothing bros....all I got was being yelled at my mom and dad about how suicide is not an answer and that my life is more important than a car

they both laughed

Mj: you sneaky little bastard

they laughed again

Kev: so that's my plan man

Mj: fine but if something goes wrong and I die know that I'll come back as a ghost and haunt you until you kill yourself too

Kev laughed

Kev: relax nothing will happen to you

.

.

.

**** AT THE MALL****

***Kazi was walking around inside a boutique shopping for new clothes....she lost a bit of weight so her clothes were a bit loose so after a lot of convincing Mazwi let her come to the mall but with some guards ofcourse since he had a meeting to go to..... She saw a nice summer dress and she put it inside the basket she was carrying and she continued to look, then on the corner of her eye she saw some guy looking at her and she moved to another row of clothes cause his stare made her feel some typa way and she searched for more clothes to buy...

Then she saw the guy on the corner of her eye again and he was staring then she looked around for her two guards and they were by the door and she sighed and when she attempted to move he was standing right in front of her and she freaked out a bit ***

Man: relax I mean no harm

he said in a calm manner and the guards quickly moved to her and grabbed the man and the man chuckled

Guard1: are you ok mam....is he giving you trouble?

Kazi: ummm

***she said looking at the guy and his face seemed familiar ***

Man: I just wanted to say hi that's all...like I said I mean no harm

Guard2: shut up!

Kazi: ummm its ok....let...let him go guys

Guard1: are you sure?

Kazi nodded and they let him go

Guard2: don't try anything funny or you'll regret it

Man: mmmmh noted

he chuckled shaking his head then the guard went to stand not far from them

Man: hi

Kazi: hey ummm...im sorry about that..... ummm you look familiar especially your eyes, do I know you from somewhere

Man: yeah, we met inside an elevator at Summer Glaze hotel and you almost fell but I caught you before you could, remember

she frowned then her eyes popped out

Kazi: the guy with cold hands and creepy

eyes....yeah I remember you

*** the man laughed a beautiful laugh while
Kazi just smiled***

Man: the name is Castiel by the way....Cass for
short

***he said stretching his hand out for a
handshake and Kazi shook his hand and she
frowned looking at their hands***

Kazi: im Ntandokazi...Kazi for short...damn your
hand is cold

***Castiel chuckled and he pulled his hand back
and put both his hands inside his pockets***

Castiel: I get that a lot

Kazi: is it a condition or...

Castiel: ngilala ngingqunu that's why (I sleep
naked that's why)

***Kazi's eyes popped out and Castiel
laughed***

Kazi: you didn't just say that

Castiel laughed again

Castiel: ngiya dlala man (im kidding man), it's some sort of a..... condition

she chuckled shaking her head

Castiel: you good

Kazi: mmmmh why?

Castiel: ummm guards

he said pointing at the guards and she sighed

Kazi: I was kidnapped weeks back so my boyfriend is just being careful...well too careful I must say

Castiel clenched his jaws looking down then he faked a smile looking at her

Castiel: a boyfriend huh?

Kazi: yep

then her phone rang

Kazi: speak of the devil

she then answered it

Kazi: hey

Menzi: who the hell is that Ntandokazi?

she sighed

Kazi: someone I know

Menzi: someone you know....Kazi have you forgotten that you were kidnapped weeks back, why haven't I heard about this guy since we met

she sighed again

Kazi: Menzi relax will you, I have guards with me and this guy once ummm helped me so im sure he means no harm

Menzi: I don't care if he once took a bullet for you, I don't know him so he's a threat....entlek what is that fool's name

she rolled her eyes and Castiel chuckled, he could hear the conversation between them since he has super hearing abilities

Kazi: his name is Castiel Menzi now can you stop

Menzi: I won't stop cause your safety is my priority Ntandokazi

she sighed

Kazi: ok Mapholoba I hear you, let me finish up with my shopping and I'll go home, how's that?

Menzi: good that's what I want to hear...I love you ok

Kazi: I know, shap

Menzi chuckled

Menzi: ngithe ngiyakuthanda Ntandokazi (I said I love you Ntandokazi)

Kazi: ey bhuti you are still in mourning so ngiyeke tuu(so let me be please)

Menzi laughed

Menzi: shap I'll get you

Kazi: bye

she ended the call and breathed out

Kazi: sorry about that

Castiel: mmmmh I should get going... I guess I'll see you around

Kazi: ummm yeah sure

he walked away looking angry and he gave the guards deadly looks as he walked passed them

OUTSIDE THE SHOP

Castiel: shit!...she can't be falling for that son of a bitch...she cant!

then he took out his phone and dialed Ruslan's numbers

Ruslan: Cass

Castiel: look im on my way to Pretoria I need to talk to you about something so I need a place to crash, im not hundred percent ok so staying in a hotel is a no no

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: fine you can stay at a house I bought for Thandi and the boys, its being renovated

Castiel: ok thanks bro.... wait, are you ok you sound a bit off

Ruslan: Ray and his wife fought and La Parca and Saint came out so you can imagine what happened

Castiel: oooh shit.... ummm ok im on my way ok

Ruslan: ok

then they ended the call and he sighed, he wondered what triggered La Parca to come out

Woman: hi

Castiel turned and he frowned

Castiel: yeah what is it?

Woman: ummm are you Josh

Castiel: do I look like a Josh to you

he said with a straight face and she chuckled nervously

Woman: umm no actually I hoped you were a Josh so I won't look this embarrassed in front of such a handsome guy...im Nelly by the way

Castiel: and im not interested

he walked away leaving the lady with her mouth hanging

Nelly: mxm you're too tall for me anyway
sdididi(fool) nx

she walked away sulking

.

.

.

****NIGERIA....AT THE OWOH-MASDEN
RESIDENCE****

*** it's been two hours since Mj drank those sleeping pills and they have already knocked him out and everything else was done the way Kev said, right now Patience (his step mother) was back from her woman's league meeting and she was busy calling him, she wanted to ask him what she should cook for dinner tonight . She always asks him cause he likes her food and she has gotten used to him telling or rather asking nicely that she should cook what he's craving for that night so she was calling him for that but he didn't respond and it wasn't like him to keep quiet when he's being called....she knew he was back from "seeing his friends" cause the house help confirmed that he's back..... she called him a couple of times but there was no response, so she went

upstairs to his room to check on him....she knocked on his door but there was no response from Mj again and she started getting worried***

Patience: Junior!

still nothing

Patience: fine then im coming in

she opened the door and saw that he was lying on the bed sleeping

Patience: Junior!

she walked closer to the bed and she looked by the bed side drawer and saw the empty container and her heart started beating fast

Patience: Junior...Junior

she said shaking him but he didn't respond and she put her hands on top of her head

Patience: ooh God what has this boy done

she shook him again and roughly this time

Patience: Junior...Junior don't do this to me ooo

she said with a breaking voice and he still didn't move and tears ran down her face

Patience: Junior wake up...what have you done....wake up please my boy don't do this to me

She said crying and still he didn't move then she quickly took out her phone and she called for an ambulance after that she called her husband

Michael Senior: my love you wont believe what that boy Junior did.... I swear today im going to kill him with my bare hands

*** he said with an angry voice and Patience cried***

Michael Senior: honey what's wrong...why are

you crying...did that bastard call you too

Patience: it's Junior he...he....he's not moving
Michael, I think he overdosed on pills

Michael Senior: WHAT!

Patience: an ambulance is on its way... get here
now Michael

***then she dropped the call and she sat on the
edge of the bed and pulled his upper body up
and she held him crying then she heard what
sounded like a snore....she stopped crying and
looked at him but he was still passed out cold

Patience: Junior...my boy...wake up....wake
please

***she said slapping him gently on his cheek
then..... Mj Snored again and louder this time
and she froze and frowned looking at him***

Patience: Junior

he continued to snore

.

.

INSERT.....12

.

.

.

*** The door opened and Snakes, Jay and Jase walked in and they found Ruslan laying on the couch with his eyes closed and on his back with a wet cloth on his forehead***

Ruslan: don't make noise Kalu is asleep

Snakes: how did you....you know what never mind....where is Mbali?

Ruslan: sleeping on the bedroom downstairs

Snakes and Jay rushed there while Jase stood there looking at Ruslan

Ruslan: you've got something on your mind Khumalo?

Jase: what happened?

Ruslan: with what?

Jase: you know what im talking about....what happened?

Snakes: yeah answer him mthakathi what happened to Mbali....why isn't she waking up and what happened to her face

he asked with an angry look on his face

Ruslan: well she was having a normal couple's argument with her husband when Saint, the original one woke up and attacked his father because of mommy....shit happened and he came out on his full form and I had to protect Ray....Mbali fainted and I summoned La Parka....

Snakes: what?

He asked with his eyes popped out

Ruslan: then La Parca put Saint in his place and that's about it....Mbali will wake up soon and Ray is in the basement inside a coffin putting La Parca to sleep

Them: a what?

Ruslan: mmmmh that's how La Parca goes to sleep..... you know ya'll give the guy a hard time not knowing what he has to go through to put La Parca to sleep....what he went through to put La Parca to sleep that time he went to save your sister

The Khumalo's kept quiet and sat down

Jay: what I want to know is what happened to Mbali's face...qa

Ruslan: well you can ask her what happened to it when she wakes up.....look I have a bad

headache so wait for the Owoh-Masdens to wake up and you can question them

Jay: how can you say that....La Parca and Saint woke up and our sister was there so don't tell us shit

he said with an angry voice

Jase: Nkosenye yehlisa umoya man (Nkosenye calm down man)

Jay: ungazontshela ukuthi (don't tell me that) I should calm down.... Mbalenhle was in front of those things and....

Ruslan: careful man the original Saint is restless and La Parca is not yet asleep so they can see you and also hear you

Ruslan interrupted him

Snakes: w...what?

He asked looking around alarmed by what Ruslan just said

Ruslan: yeah

all this time he was laying there with his eyes closed

AT A HOUSE RUSLAN RENTED FOR THANDI AND THE BOYS

Thandi woke up from her sleep disturbed by her ringing phone

Thandi: hello

She said with a sleepy voice

Voice: hey Thandi its Jackson....James' brother

Thandi frowned and she sat up straight

Thandi: why are you calling me Jackson?

Jackson: can we meet up...I need to talk to you about something important

Thandi: you can tell me over the phone mos.... we don't have to meet

she said with an annoyed tone

Jackson: please Thandi

Thandi: well I can't meet up with you especially after what you and your family did and said to me

Jackson: look im sorry about that.... I also want to apologize for that

Thandi: bona mo Jackson i have a headache and I don't have time for your nonsense.....it's either you say what you want to say now or I'll drop the call

Jackson sighed

Jackson: fine then tell me where you are and I'll come to you since you're not feeling well

Thandi: that won't be necessary just talk so I can go back to sleep motho wa batho

Jackson sighed

Jackson: now I understand why James used to

say you're stubborn as hell

He then chuckled but Thandi just kept quiet

Jackson: ok look I just wanted to tell you that I have a way that will make the family to change their mind about disowning you and the boys

Thandi: askies?

Jackson: yeah so now can we meet so I can tell you all about my plan

Thandi kept quiet a bit....she didn't care about them hating her and banning her from ever entering the Mashaba household but she was worried about her sons....one day they gonna have children and those children might need to be introduced to the Mashaba ancestors and since they are disowned that won't happen....she sighed

Thandi: why would you do that for me and the boys and don't say you care because you don't

Jackson: I actually do Thandi

Thandi: ooh please stop lying Jackson ok

Jackson: look I do care.... sometimes family can make you do things you don't want to do and you end up doing them cause you don't wanna lose them

she kept quiet

Jackson: look I feel bad about what happened and I wanna help

she continued to keep quiet then she spoke

Thandi: fine I'll get back to you about when and where we should meet

Jackson: I was actually thinking about today since im around Pta

she sighed

Thandi: I'll call you back, let me think about it first

she then dropped the call and sighed then she dialed Ruslan's numbers..... she didn't want to seem like she's ungrateful and she also didn't want to do things behind his back cause she tasted what real love and being worshiped by your man feels like and she doesn't wanna do anything stupid that might make her lose Ruslan....Anyway Ruslan took out his phone as it was ringing and he opened his eyes to see who was calling and he sat up and stood up answering the phone

Ruslan: amour

He said walking away

Thandi: hey

Ruslan: hey.....is everything ok, you sound down

Thandi sighed

Thandi: I was asleep maybe that's why I sound down

Ruslan: ok but I can tell something is on your mind....talk to me

she sighed again

Ruslan: what is it amour....is it the boys or the ba...

he stopped talking and he cleared his throat

Ruslan: what's wrong?

Thandi: I got a call from Jackson....James elder brother

Ruslan kept quiet for a bit with a frown on his face and clenched jaws

Thandi: babe...Ruu did you hear me?

Ruslan: yeah.....what did he want?

Thandi: to talk....

she sighed

Thandi: to talk about Mpendulo and Mpilo

Ruslan: go on

Thandi: he said he has a way he can make his family to change their minds about Mpilo and Mpendulo

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: I hope you told him to go to hell

She kept quiet

Ruslan: Thandi?

Thandi: i...I told him I'll get back to him

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: are you fucken kidding me

He said with an angry voice

Thandi: Ruu im thinking of Mpe and Mpilo's future....what if when they grow up and have kids of their own then it comes a time when the kids will need to be introduced to their ancestors

Ruslan: didn't I say I got this and that family will change their minds whether its by force or willingly!

she kept quiet

Ruslan: don't you trust me now Thandi

Thandi: I do Ruu im just scared

Ruslan: if you trust me then why don't you let me handle this then huh

she sighed

Thandi: I trust you Ruu im....

Ruslan: well it doesn't seem like that from where im standing

Thandi: Ruu

Ruslan: you know what, the boys are yours Thandi so do what you think is right for them.... i have to go

***Then he dropped the call and he almost

threw his phone against the wall but he stopped himself....Meanwhile Thandi couldn't believe Ruslan dropped the call on her, tears welled her eyes and they ran down her cheeks with her bottom lip trembling..... She laid down again and she hugged her pillow as she sobbed silently, after sometime she calmed down and she dialed Jackson' numbers***

Jackson: wow that was quick

Thandi: look Jackson I thought about it and im not interested in whatever plan you have.....you and your family insulted me and my family and disowned my sons...your own nephews because I stood up to you all so take your stupid plan and shove it down your ass and fucken never call me again nxa

then she dropped the call and she even blocked his numbers and she lay there feeling sad and hurt by Ruslan's reaction

Ruslan called Castiel's numbers and he answered the call on the third ring

Cass: Madou

Ruslan: have you arrived yet

Cass: a hi Cass....how are you and how was your trip would have been nice

Ruslan: not now Cass im not in the mood

he said with a cold tone

Cass: ok when Madou is not in the mood then someone provoked him.....give me his name and I'll deal with him

Ruslan: no this one is mine to deal with so have you arrived?

Cass: yeah and you have a nice crib here

Ruslan: ok now I need you to bring me something from there

Cass: ok what?

Ruslan: my crystal ball....its in the study and the door is locked by a protection spell

Cass: ummm ohk..... so where should I bring it?

Ruslan: Ray's house I'll send you the gps coordinates

Cass: ok cool

Ruslan: its inside its bag and when you get here behave...the Khumalo's are here

Cass: ok why are you telling me to behave... those Khumalo shitheads means shit to me

Ruslan: cause im sure some of them will piss you off like they do to me and I don't want drama I have a headache

Castiel laughed

Cass: ok bro I'll see you when I get there

Ruslan: cool

they ended the call and Ruslan sighed then he dialed Thandi's numbers and she answered on the fourth ring

Thandi: hey

he sighed

Ruslan: im sorry

she kept quiet a bit

Ruslan: im sorry I overreacted amour.... im just pissed off that you're entertaining that family even after all the shit they put you through

Thandi: I called him back and basically told him to fuck off

Ruslan kept quiet a bit

Ruslan: you did?

Thandi: yeah.... I don't know what I was even thinking...im sure whatever plan he has I won't like it and it might even make us fight and i....

Ruslan: I love you amour.... a lot and believe me when I say that those people will come and beg you to forgive them..... I don't want you to stress in anyway just focus on our boys

*** "and girl" he thought***

Ruslan: and let me handle everything else please

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: and thank you for letting me know about the call....im sorry I overreacted ok

Thandi: ok im sorry too for almost considering meeting up with him

Ruslan sighed and he smiled

Ruslan: now you make me wanna come there and eat that pussy up

Thandi: Ruu!

he could tell she was blushing and he chuckled

Ruslan: what?

Thandi: you know what let me get back to my beauty sleep bye

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: wait....Te amo amour

Thandi: Te amo too

Ruslan laughed

Thandi: what....i know what Te amo means from one of Rihanna's songs but I don't know what too means inits Spanish right?

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: yeah....i'll see you tomorrow ok and I want you to meet my brother...he's in town so its better I introduce you two than to have him introduce himself

she laughed a bit

Thandi: so you two are good now

Ruslan: well my blood doesn't boil anymore whenever I even think of him so....

Thandi laughed

Thandi: mmmmh

Ruslan: ok go back to sleep....i love you

Thandi: I love you too...bye

They ended the call and Ruslan sighed and he smiled shaking his head

Ruslan: damn I scored myself a gem with her

then he went back to the lounge

NIGERIA

Patience: JUNIOR!

*** She said shaking him roughly and he moved***

Mj: mmmmh

Patience: I can't believe this....Junior wake up!

He moved again

Mj: mh mh leave me alone

he said moving from her turning to look away with his head on the pillow now

Patience: mxm this stupid boy

then she slapped his head and he groaned and he turned his head again

Patience: WAKE UP!

he groaned and opened his eyes slowly then he scanned his surrounding with his eyes squirted and they landed on an angry looking Patience then his heart started beating fast and he faked a cough a bit but Patience didn't move

Mj: am I in heaven

Patience continued to look at Mj with that angry look

Mj: are you an angel....am I in heaven?

Patience: SHUT UP AND SIT UP NOW!

she said pulling him up and he faked being in pain and he screamed out loud

Patience: what is it...what's wrong?

she said worried now

Mj: p...pain

Patience: where?

He pointed on his stomach and he screamed again

Patience: ok baby lie down....lie down

She said helping him to lie down slowly

Patience: let me tell the driver to come and help me take you to the hospital ok

***She said already calling the driver forgetting that she already called an ambulance and Mj sighed relieved....After Patience's call he

groaned totally faking being in pain and
Patience Quickly held him brushing his belly
panicking***

Patience: its ok baby...its ok...im here all will be
well

***tears ran down Mj's face cause he was
feeling like shit for worrying Patience cause she
was genuinely worried about him and he was
faking it all.....then the door opened and the
house help walked in***

Helper: madam the ambulance people are here
and they say somebody called them from this
house ooo....ooh my God Junior, is he ok

Patience: TELL THEM TO COME IN HERE NOW!

Helper: ok sorry ooo...

***she rushed out and seconds later the
paramedics pushed the stretcher in and
Patience told them what's wrong with Mj then
they put him on the stretcher and pushed him

out with Patience running behind them***

AT THE HOSPITAL

Patience got up when she saw her husband rushing towards her and they hugged tightly and she sobbed

MJ.Senior: what happened?

Patience: I don't know...I came home from my shop and I called out to him and when he didn't answer I went to his room then I found an empty container of pills and some scattered on top of the bed and he wasn't moving and when he woke up he was crying saying he's feeling pain inside his stomach....i...I think he was trying to commit suicide but failed

Mj.Senior: I can't believe this

He said sitting down

Patience: I thought....i thought...

*** he got up and held her tight***

Mj.Senior: its ok....he's gonna be ok....he's gonna be ok

***they sat down and Mr Owoh-Masden called Ray but his phone send him to voicemail then he called Heath and told him about Mj's attempted suicide and the call he received concerning what Mj did then Heath told him he'll tell Ray and Jabu and he'll catch the next available flight and after their call they waited for the doctor....

Soon a doctor came to them and greeted them***

Doctor: sir...madam

He shook their hands

Patience: how is he doctor?

Doctor: he's gonna be fine...we didn't find high dosage of pills in his system so he'll be fine....we did run some tests and we waiting for the result but im sure they'll also come back

saying he's fine

*** Mr and Mrs Owoh-Masden sighed with relief***

Patience: are you sure doctor?

Doc: im sure Mrs Owoh Masden he's gonna be just fine.... but I'll keep him here for the night just for observation for the stomach cramps

*** they nodded and Mj's father sighed***

Mj.Senior: thank you doctor

he said shaking his hand

Mj.Senior: can we see him?

the doctor nodded

Doctor: ofcourse Chief....right this way

they followed him

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

*** Mbali opened her eyes and she scanned around the room and she noticed that it was one of the bedrooms downstairs then she sat up and held her head and closed her eyes for a bit and she opened them and sighed as she remembered her fight with Ray and Saint attacking him then it all goes blank from then on....she can't remember anything else that happened after that....she sighed again then she got out of bed and went out of the room and she heard voices in the lounge and the voices sounded familiar....she went there and found her brothers there with Ruslan laying on the couch on his back with a wet cloth on his forehead....they turned and saw her and they quickly got up and went to her and they hugged her***

Snakes: are you ok?

she nodded while biting her lower lip....she was trying by all means not to cry

Jase: kwenzakaleni Mbali? (What happened Mbali?).... uMelusi called us sounding distressed astshela ukuthi (and he said) we should check up on you, that all is not well

She swallowed hard and looked down

Mbali: im ok bhuti....Ray and I had an argument and Saint involved himself

Snakes: uthi you are ok...bheka ubuso bakho Mbali, ingathi idemoni lakfahlaza ngempama (look at your face Mbali, its as if a demon slapped you)

he said with a pissed off tone and Mbali sighed and she looked at Ruslan

Mbali: Ruu where is Kalu

Ruslan: sleeping inside his cot and I must add that all this noise will wake him up and he's not in a good mood today

Mbali: ummm and....and Ray?

Ruslan: he went to calm himself and La Parca down

She swallowed hard and sighed

Mbali: ok....ummm thanks for....for looking after Kalu

Ruslan: no sweat

***He said still with his eyes closed ***

Snakes: what the hell happened Mbali?

Mbali: didn't Ruu fill you in khanti

she said moving to where her son was and he was still sleeping....she bit her lower lip looking at him and her eyes got filled with tears but she fought them back then she went to the kitchen and she took out bottled water and drank....Anyway in the lounge the Khumalo brothers got up and followed Mbali then Ruslan's phone rang

Ruslan: Ezeudo

Heath: bros how far? (hey)

Ruslan: I dey fine Ezeh (im fine Ezeh)

Heath: good...look im trying to call big Ray and his numbers aren't going through so I thought I should call you first before I call his flower

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: well Saint and La Parca woke up and shit happened so he's going to put him back to sleep

Heath: WHAT?

Ruslan: relax he's fine in fact everyone is fine

Heath sighed

Ruslan: look he's fine so relax

Heath: shit....ummm ok when he's back tell him to call me

Ruslan: ok I'll tell him

Heath: and Ruslan tell him Mj was caught with

some chief's daughter in a motel and he managed to run away but when he got home he attempted to commit suicide

Ruslan laughed

Heath: ah ah this guy....this no be a laughing matter ooo (this is not a laughing matter)

Ruslan: well it is cause the Mj I know would never try to kill himself

Heath: look I know that but he's scared man cause the chief said Mj forced himself on his daughter

Ruslan: shit!

Heath: yeah so maybe he did it out of fear

Ruslan kept quiet for a bit

Ruslan: nah....that crazy boy once tried to kill that ex of yours that almost killed Naledi and killed your son and he know his brothers will do anything for him or to save him and even if the

old man was gonna give him an ass whoopin
but its better than going to jail so attempted
suicide nah....not MJ

Heath kept quiet for a bit

Heath: that little piece of shit

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: he's definitely an Owoh-Masden

he laughed again

Heath: I swear when I get there im gonna
personally whip his black ass

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: well I must say im impressed, that boy
has a sharp mind and even though ya'll are not
aware but he's learning from ya'll especially
Jabu.... he always got an ace up his sleeves....he
shot that girl and he went about his business as
if it wasn't him and if Jabu's guy didn't call,
believe me none of ya'll wouldn't know that it

was him

Heath sighed worried

Heath: I don't want him to live the life we're living man

Ruslan: that boy has a little Ray and a little bit of you and Jabu in him so you need to watch him closely....he's learning from ya'll without your knowledge

Heath: nx i swear this boy is gonna give me grey hair and he's not even my son

Ruslan chuckled and Heath sighed

Heath: let me get going.... tell big Ray to call me when he's back

Ruslan: yeah I will and take it easy on him....he's an Owoh-Masden after all

Ruslan laughed and they ended the call

IN THE KITCHEN

Jay: Mbali

she sighed

Mbali: bhuti

Jay: what the hell is going on and what's going on Ruslan cause she was (and don't tell us about Ruslan cause we're asking you)

Mbali: like I said bhuti....Ray and I had an argument and Saint came out and attacked him

Snakes: then what the hell happened to your face

Jay: yeah what the hell happened and don't you dare lie to us

she swallowed and looked away trying to find a suitable lie to tell them

Ruslan: like I told ya'll what happened....Saint got angry and it was windy and shit everywhere and she tried to stop him but he was mad angry and she got caught in the cross fire

he said standing by the kitchen entrance with the wet cloth on his hand

Jay: I didn't ask you I asked her now stay out of this

Ruslan: well im telling you.... you know...

he chuckled

Ruslan: your sister here saw a demon face to face for the first time ever and that demon is attached to her son's soul....even though the demon attacked her husband but she cant hate it cause its part of her son....she's traumatized, stressed, hurt, angry and conflicted but ya'll don't give a damn about that right

The Khumalo's kept quiet and Mbali looked down and Ruslan just shook his head looking at the brothers

Ruslan: some brothers you are mxm

***Then he turned to walk away when a doorbell

rang and he went to open cause he could tell it was Castiel***

Snakes: mthakathi is right....im sorry my princess

Mbali's eyes got filled with tears and when Snakes hugged her she just let it all out

IN THE LOUNGE

Castiel: this is a nice crib damn

he said looking around

Ruslan: and how did you get inside the yard cause you didn't call to tell me to open the gate for you

Castiel: what kind of a stupid question is that....im a vampire man

Jay: you're a what?

he said with a shocked face and Castiel looked at him

Castiel: I said a vampire

Ruslan: CASTIEL!

he warned him

Castiel: what...what did I do?

he said looking at Ruslan who was giving him a deadly look

Jay: he's kidding right

he asked Ruslan

Castiel: and why would I be kidding beast....im not ashamed of what I am

Ruslan just shook his head and he walked to the couches with the bag Castiel brought for him and he sat down

Jay: you a Vamp...pire?

Castiel opened his mouth and his eyes changed colour and his fangs grew longer

Castiel: see

he said showing him

Jay: the fuck!

he said moving back and Castiel's eyes and fangs went back to normal and he laughed

Castiel: pussy....i mean you have a beast but you're shocked to see a vampire..... Madou im disappointed man

he shook his head and went to sit down

Ruslan: if you're disappointed about his reaction then you should imagine how im feeling about your little drama you just pulled now

Castiel: mxm kill joy

Jay: Ruslan who the fuck is this and what the hell is he doing here

Castiel: im his elder brother Castiel....don't mind him looking older than me, I stopped aging at age 33 and he ages slowly, he's actually sixt....

Ruslan: CASTIEL!

He gave him a stern look to warn him to shut up and he quickly did

Castiel: oooh it's a.....damn ok

he kept quiet and started whistling as he sat back

Ruslan: you're a pain in the butt you know that

Castiel: you mean a good pain in the butt right

Ruslan showed him the “fuck you” sign and Castiel laughed while Jay stood there still shocked

INSERT.....14

.

.

.

NARRATED

Mbali: Ray please im sorry...im sorry I didn't

mean it I was just angry

Ray: you went out there wearing a skimpy dress showing my yellow thighs to hungry horny motherfuckers in the mall right!

he said with an angry voice

Mbali: Ray please

he pushed the tip and half of it went in and she screamed with tears coming out

Mbali: Ray it hurts please stop

she said crying then the lights started flicking

Ray: go back to sleep Saint or I'll let La Parca out and he'll fucken deal with you!

he shouted but the lights didn't stop flicking

Ray: I SAID GO BACK TO SLEEP NOW SAINT BEFORE I FUCKEN GET ANGRY...THIS IS BETWEEN MY WIFE AND I NOW FUCK OFF!

he roared

Mbali: Ray please im sorry...please stop it hurts

He pushed the rest of the tip in and she screamed again trying to move forward and he tightened the grip around her waist with his right hand while his left hand was pressing her head down on the bed

Ray: you gonna disrespect me again

Mbali: no...no I promise...im sorry

Ray: will you ever threaten to give other men what belongs to me

Mbali: no...no I'll never do that

she said crying

Ray: will you ever threaten to leave me again

Mbali: no...please stop, it hurts Ray

she said crying with the lights still flicking because of Saint

Ray: if you ever cheat on me Mbali I'll fucken kill you you hear me....i'll fucken kill you and kill myself you sabi (you understand)

Mbali: yes yes

he kept quiet a bit then he pulled out and he pulled her up and turned her around and she was still crying

Ray: why are you crying huh...you wanna wake Saint up so he can come here and stick his demon nose in our business huh?

she shook her head no quickly....he bottom lip was even trembling

Ray: listen here.... I fucked up and you have every right to be angry and shit but I wont tolerate being disrespected Mbali ok

she nodded again

Ray: now wipe that shit off your face before I give you a real reason to cry!

she quickly wiped her tears off with her shaky hand and he stood there looking at her....he was angry and it took everything in him not to fuck her hard and roughly until she passes out as punishment but he knew it will traumatize her for life and he cant have that, maybe if it was one of the woman whom he used to fuck before he met her who liked that kind of shit but this was his wife so he's not gonna do that to her even though he thinks she deserves it..... He then picked her up and he went back to their bedroom and he put her on the bed and he got her under the covers and went to check on Kalu inside his baby crib and he was sleeping

Ray: you better not wake my son up Saint or you'll fucken regret it

***and Mbali swallowed hard cause this was a different side of Ray she hasn't met before....Anyway he went back to bed and he

got in and laid on his back***

Ray: come!

she didn't want him to touch her but she didn't wanna make him more angry than he already is so she rested her head on his chest and he held and they stayed like that for some time without saying anything to each other

Mbali: just so you know you're not forgiven with your cheating and lying

he sighed

Ray: I know

Mbali: and tomorrow you gonna know how much you're not forgiven

he kept quiet a bit

Ray: as long as you don't leave me then I'll take it like a man

Mbali: mmmmh we shall see

Ray: im serious, you better not be thinking of leaving me Mbali or all hell will break lose

she didn't say anything, she just closed her eyes

Ray: Mbali

Mbali: leave me alone im trying to sleep

he clenched his jaws

Ray: im not playing with you

Mbali: can I sleep in peace please....i have a headache and my ass hole hurts

he kept quiet

Ray: "she better not be thinking of leaving me"

*** He thought..... Anyway in the morning Ray woke up to sounds of glass breaking and a sound of something being hit hard and he quickly looked beside him and Mbali wasn't there, he then got panicked and he went to check on Kalu and he was still sleeping and he

frowned then he quickly wore his boxers and he rushed downstairs calling Mbali's name***

Ray: MBALI....MY FLOWER WHERE ARE YOU.....MBALI!

***he got to the garage cause that's where the sound was coming from and what he found shocked him to the core..... he stopped and froze with his eyes popped out**

Mbali: that's for putting you huge ass dick in my ass without my permission

***then she walked past him with a baseball bat on her right hand and a butcher knife on her left hand and she walked back inside swaying her ass with an angry look on her face, she was still in her birth suit (she was naked)....as for Ray he couldn't believe what he was seeing, his three weeks old brand new 2019 metallic-black Maserati GranTurismo (the devil's fork) was covered in blue paint and both the front

windshield and the rear windshield were smashed and so was all the windows of the car and it had dents all over it and its tires were slashed with a knife***

Ray: fuck nooo... nooo... no no no

he said with his hands on top of his head and a horrified look on his face

Ray: my car....my baby....my fucken baby!

he shouted with his hands on top of his hand

NIGERIA

Mj woke up to someone shaking him and he found Heath and Jabu standing next to his bed

Mj: brother Heath and brother Jabu.... you...you're here

Heath: drop the fucken act Mj

Mj: huh?

Jabu: hai fosek man jou rubber neck.... a gona a hidden camera mo so tlogela go e ketsa Mr bean (Piss off you rubber neck....there no hidden camera here so stop acting like Mr bean)

Mj: i....i

he stuttered

Jabu: fotsek....wa bona wena le leretenyana kao bona o nagana gore o clever neh, well Mshikaro le nna we gonna show you gore re chunang to di bari tsa go iketsa diclever(piss off.... you see you and your small dick you think you're clever, well Mshikaro and I we gonna show you what we do to fools who think are clever)

Heath: mo chaele Mjava....die boy thinks re di bari (tell him Mjava.... this boy thinks we are fools)

Mj: what.... no...no

Jabu: wa jaja gore uncle le vrou ya gae ba
worried byang heh (are you aware that uncle
and his wife are worried)

Mj: um let me explain bros please

Heath: do you sometimes think Mj huh.... aunt
Patience is fucken blaming herself for your
shit....she thinks if she knocked off early maybe
she would have stopped you from taking the
pills

Jabu: and a go na suicide ya nex mo.... o tletse
ka masepa fela wena (there's no suicide
here....you're just full of shit)

Mj: I was scared and desperate ok...I didn't
mean for things to get out of hand

Jabu: fotsek desperate ya masepa....o dlala ka
go boda wena heh?....(you're playing with death
huh?)

Mj didn't say anything

Heath: by the time im done with you Mj heh
heh....

he said shaking his head

Heath: na death you dey want abi (its death you
want right)

Mj: no bros I know I dey mess up big time but I
no have another plan to avoid an ass whoopin
abeg no vex, I was just desperate

Heath: well you dey wish you got that ass
whoopin by the time we are done with you

Mj: w...what? no ooo....ah ah I cannot survive
suicide and avoid an ass whooping from dad
only to get beaten to death by you ooo

he said panicking

Heath: shut up!

Mj: bros I dey mess up big time I know but im
your little bro

he pleaded with Heath

Heath: so just because im your big brother it means I must let you stress out dad and aunty and also let you mess up our family name huh?

Mj: no but im still your little bro

Jabu: tshwara (take) and get dressed

He threw the bag at him

Mj: but im....

Heath: you're discharged so get up and get dressed

Mj: but ma said she'll come pick me up

Heath: well we volunteered to come pick you up so get dressed before you make me angry

Mj: but...

Heath: ah ah I swear this boy can talk for Africa

Mjava..... mxm I said get dressed jorr!

He said interrupting him looking pissed

Jabu: apara o tlogele go re gotolela matlho jou

fokon hond (get dressed and stop staring at us
you fucken dog)

***Mj swallowed hard and he slowly got out of
bed***

Jabu: tlogela go act(a) e kare o tshwere ke
mogwete and make it quick (stop acting like
your ass is painful and make it quick)

*** then a nurse walked in***

Nurse: Junior I see you're ready to go home
mmmmh

Mj: yeah

he faked a smile

Nurse: are these your brothers

Heath: ey make it snappy Mj we don't have all
day

Nurse: umm hey guys im Vanessa....i must say
your brother here is a character...a funny one at
that

she said stretching her hand out for a handshake with a smile on her face

Jabu: and we are happily married

Nurse: ummm I was just introducing myself

Jabu: we are not illiterate meaning we can read your name tag nx le smile sa masepa (with a shitty smile)

Heath chuckled

Nurse: wow ummm

Heath: just leave Vanessa cause once he starts he won't finish

she looked at Mj

Nurse: go well Junior it was nice meeting you

MJ: ummm yeah thanks

then she walked out

Mj: that was unnecessary bros....she promised me her numbers before I leave

Jabu: voetsek! o isa kae dinumber tsa sgogwana sele...o sa batlo ntlatsha phinya Mj now get dressed! (what do you want with that old woman's numbers.... don't make me angry Mj now get dressed)

***Mj sulked ***

Mj: fine now can you give me some privacy to change then

Jabu: wannyela re go tlhakotse o le ngwana o nnya masepa amagreen and nou o tlo re botsa ka privacy (you must be crazy we used to wipe your ass when you were still a baby with your green shit and now you're telling us about privacy)

Heath laughed

Jabu: apara man o tlogele go re senyetsa nako jou rubber neck (get dressed and stop wasting our time you rubber neck)

Mj: I swear ma is gonna know about this

treatment im getting from you two mxm

Jabu: apara o tlogele go ova masepa (get dressed and stop talking nonsense)

Mj: mxm

they were now walking out of the hospital going to the car when Heath took out his phone and dialed someone

Heath: is everything ready

Man: yeah man but what do you want to do with these frogs man

Heath: I want to teach some momu a lesson

Mj looked at him with a frown until he finished with the call

Jabu: keng ekare o bone lesilo ntwana (what's wrong it's as if you've seen a ghost boy)

Mj: what lesson are you talking about bros?

Heath: you'll see

he said unlocking the car and out of the blue Mj ran away as if he was being chased by a dog and Jabu and Heath stood there shocked then they busted out with loud laughter

AT THE HOUSE RUSLAN BOUGHT FOR THANDI AND THE BOYS

Castiel and Ruslan were having breakfast catching up when Ruslan's phone rang and he smiled

Ruslan: amour

Thandi: hey you good

Ruslan: I am now and you

Thandi: im ok I just miss you

Ruslan: I miss you too baby but don't worry I'll see you in..... four hours' time

Thandi: ooh ok then

she said sounding excited

Ruslan: so how are my boys?

"and girl" he thought and Castiel chuckled as he read his mind

Castiel: you fucken sly dog

Ruslan threw a spoon at him and he ducked laughing

Thandi: they are good, they also miss you

Ruslan: don't worry I'll see them later

Thandi: ok...ummm Ruu

Ruslan: my love

she cleared her throat

Thandi: ummm he send me a message with a different number

Ruslan: who

he frowned

Thandi: Jackson

*** he huffed with a pissed off look on his face***

Ruslan: what did he say?

Thandi: umm I'll forward it to you

Ruslan: ok

Thandi: you ok?

Ruslan: as long as you're always this open to me about things that happen without my knowledge and you're not entertaining him then I'll always be ok

she breathed out relieved

Thandi: ok

Ruslan: I hope you had your breakfast its already 11am

Thandi: ummm im about to have it now

Ruslan: why now....you're supposed to eat when you wake up Thandi

*** " why are you starving my daughter" He thought and Castiel laughed again as he read his mind again***

Thandi: well I woke up 20 minutes ago and I just finished taking a shower

he kept quiet a bit

Ruslan: ooh

Thandi: yeah and don't say anything....this days im always tired and I don't know why

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: I wasn't planning on saying anything amour

Thandi: mxm

he laughed

Ruslan: go and feed my d....umm go and eat

before you pass out please

Thandi: o sambora tuu (don't bore me
please)....i wont pass out hao

Ruslan: what was that?

Thandi: nothing you should know....ok shap let
me go eat

Ruslan: just so you know im gonna get you for
that.....I love you

she laughed

Thandi: I love you too

***they ended the call and Thandi forwarded
him the message she got from Jackson and
Ruslan hit the table hard and he got up looking
angry***

Castiel: calm down man

Ruslan: I knew he wanted her....that son of a
bitch wants my woman Cass!

Castiel: who

Ruslan: some piece of shit

Castiel: well at least your woman is not entertaining him....my own woman is falling for the piece of shit

*** he said getting up and Ruslan gave him a confused look on his face***

Ruslan: you have a woman in your life...I thought Juana is dead

Castiel: fuck you

he said pushing a laughing Ruslan

Castiel: I mean Kazi man

Ruslan: so she's your woman huh

he said mocking him

Castiel: fuck off man can you just get serious

Ruslan laughed and he stopped

Ruslan: ok im serious now

Castiel huffed and he went to sit down and Ruslan followed and sat down too

Castiel: I think she's falling for that hitboy....i mean he doesn't even qualify to be called a hitman in my book....fucken shit

Ruslan chuckled

Castiel: you and that Juana said I must court her the right way and shit and now I have to compete with that boy...imagine

Ruslan: what is it, are you suddenly becoming a chicken man

Castiel: you didn't just call me a chicken Madou

Ruslan: im asking....i mean what if she is falling for that guy

he didn't say anything he just clenched his jaws

Ruslan: wait a minute....damn you're falling for her or you already have

Castiel: fall for who....don't be ridiculous man

he said getting up and he went to the fridge to take out bottled water and he drank from the bottle and Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: wow the kidnapper who fell in love with his victim

then he laughed

Castiel: shut up man, I haven't fallen for anyone

he said being defensive

Ruslan: then why is it painful to see her falling for another man huh?

Castiel: that thing is not a man ok he's a fucken boy

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: im sure he's a man to her if you know what I mean

Castiel kept quiet looking angry

Ruslan: my advice bro is first admit that you have fallen in love with the lady then everything will fall into place

Castiel: mxm what do you know, im sure you just smiled at Thandi and she fell into your arms and I must say its fucken creepy that you can get angry one second and within another second you switch to laughing and making jokes....that shit I creepy as fuck Madou

Ruslan laughed

Castiel: and you know what they say about people like that.....serial killers

Ruslan threw a fork at him

Ruslan: your mama and your dracula father mxm infact your entire vampire ancestors you shithead

Castiel laughed out loud

Castiel: Ray ruined you with his pidgin accent

Ruslan: fosek

Castiel laughed

Castiel: and he knows fosek too wow

Ruslan shook his head chuckling

Castiel: ok ok on a serious note how did you meet Thandi

Ruslan: well she was still married to some fucker who's dead now when I met her and no I didn't kill the fucker

Castiel looked at him with his eyes popped out

Castiel: fuck no

Ruslan: yeah and look now she's all mine so stop complaining cause your girl is not even married to the "hitboy" as you call him

Castiel: well im not in love with her

Ruslan: and you're not a vampire boo hoo

he said with a bored tone and Castiel showed him the middle finger

Ruslan: just admit it and in no time she'll be yours or watch her fall deep in love with that guy.... its as simple as that

Castiel: I own her so no matter what she belongs to me

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: continue denying your feelings and that's if vampires have feelings and that "hitboy" as you call him will fuck her, impregnate her and wife her

Castiel: that will never happen

Ruslan: nothing is impossible Cass I mean look at Ray, who would have thought he'll settle down and actually love the woman so...

Castiel: shut up man....Kazi will never....

Castiel interrupted him

Ruslan: will never what?

Ruslan interrupted him too

Castiel: fuck you

he said walking out

Ruslan: stop denying your feelings man and
she'll be yours

Castiel: golo lakho Madou (your cunt Madou)

Ruslan: if it's an insult then you too you
bloodsucking motherfucker.....and you better
behave when Thandi gets here!

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

***after Ray mourned the death of his Maserati
he went back to the house ready to deal with
Mbali....he checked for her everywhere in the
house but he couldn't find her and as he was
about to go check in the backyard he saw the
sliding door leading there opened and he

walked out and saw Mbali standing a bit far from the braai stand with flames and smoke coming out of it, she had Kalu strapped on her back...he wondered what she was doing there so he walked to them ***

Ray: what are you doing?

Mbali: teaching you a lesson

Ray: what?

Mbali: a lesson to never in your life threaten to kill me

then she started walking away

Ray: what are you talking about?

she stopped and looked at him

Mbali: your lucky pair of boxers and one of your favourite vintage vinyl record are burning in there

Ray: WHAT?

Mbali: mmmmh and your oldest whiskey bottle in your collection is now in the sewage pipes and that husband dearest is for cheating on me

Ray: te...tell me you kidding Mbali.....do you fucken know how much that bottle cost!

he said getting worked up with his heart beating fast

Mbali: mmmmh 50 year old THE BALVENIE and you said it costs R699 999 right

***his hands started shaking as he looked at her shocked....angry and panicking ***

Ray: no...no...no you didn't...tell me you didn't Mbali!

he said suddenly looking pale

Mbali: breakfast is ready now come and eat

***she said walking away and he just sat down on the ground as he felt his knees giving up on him....his hands were still shaking and his heart

was beating fast.....he felt like he was about to pass out***

NIGERIA

they drove around until they found Mj...he was sitting on a rock with sweat all over his face breathing heavily...he got up when he saw them ready to continue running

Mj: don't come out of that car or I'll scream....i swear I will

Jabu: hebanna nchaele mo Mshikaro die kind o thuntshitse dai cheri Lerato byang a tshwere ke June-July so nou (tell me here Mshikaro how did this kid shoot that chick Lerato when he's shaking like this now)

Heath: beats me Mjava

then he peeped out of the window

Heath: get in the car Mj

Mj: that's not happening

Heath: ok then since you got no money and no cellphone on you then say hi to malaria-filled mosquitos at night, ritualists, mad people and ghosts at night for me

Mj: wh...what?

Heath: mmmmh so if you change your mind meet us here tomorrow morning....enjoy the street life

Mj: WAIT....ARE YOU MAD HOW CAN YOU LEAVE ME HERE....YOU KNOW SOMETIMES I WONDER IF YOU'RE MY REAL BROTHER MXM

he said walking to the car with a serious look on his face and Heath and Jabu busted out with loud laughter

...13

.

.

.

NIGERIA

*** Patience ran to Mj and she kissed his forehead***

Patience: thanks God you're ok baby

Mj: im glad too mom

he said with a low voice and Patience smiled widely

Mj: im...im sorry for trying to kill myself....i was just scared

Mj.Senior: scared of what!

he said with a pissed off tone

Patience: my love don't please

Mj.Senior: no Patience he should tell us why he was scared

Mj: "shit"

he thought

Mj.Senior: we are waiting Junior!

Mj: ummm....ummm I met...met up with some chick....i mean girl in a motel and ummmm.... then we messed around a bit then his father walked in with his big goon bodyguard and they beat me up and he threatened me and called Nomvula names and he even insulted me so I pushed him hard and he fell on the floor and I ran away cause he was even threatening to kill me and he kept on saying I raped his daughter so when I got home i....i got scared and drank some pills

Mj.Senior: where did you even get the pills

Mj: "shit"

he thought....he knew he can't say they are Patience's cause when they get home she will find her pills

MJ: ummm they...they were Nomvula's

he said with a low tone

Mj.Senior: I give up with you Mj

Patience: my husband please don't....don't say that

Mj.Senior: what should I say then Patience, I was insulted because of this boy's reckless behavior and now that piece of shit will blackmail me into doing what he wants just because he knows I'll never allow my son to go to jail

Mj: he can't do that dad

Mj.Senior: he can and I know he will.....see your life now Mj....see how your reckless behavior is going to cost me now heh....you see now!

Mj swallowed hard as his father was shouting at him

Mj: then I should have died

Patience: shut up....how can you say that

Mj: what else can I say mom....first of all I know

I messed up but I didn't force myself on that girl, and secondly im a horny teenager and peer pressure is around me all the time and that girl just threw herself at me and....

he kept quiet a bit cause he was now raising his voice and he knows never to raise his voice while talking to his father

Mj: im sorry

he said looking down

Mj: she's the one that suggested we meet somewhere private before we even started dating and I agreed cause im a teenager and ...

Mj.Senior: we know you're a horny teenager!

he snapped at him and Patience gave him a disapproving look

Mj: look dad when he found us we were sitting on the edge of the bed talking about next year....i wanted us to go study in South Africa

but her parents are against it they want her to study in the UK and she was trying to convince me to go with her but I told her I couldn't....i didn't force myself on her and I'll even get testimonies from all the guys she slept with, it's not even the first time she met a guy at a hotel or motel

Patience: if so then why did you even follow her to a hotel Junior?

Mj: cause im a teenager and she's a beautiful girl with a beautiful body and....

Mj.Senior: shut up!

Mj kept quiet

Mj.Senior: you're a disgrace Junior.... I have overlooked every shit you did in the past but...

Patience interrupted him

Patience: Michael don't....your son tried to kill himself because he was scared, if he didn't care

he would have looked you in the eye and lied
but he's here in hospital apologizing

Mr Owoh-Masden kept quiet

Patience: and that stupid chief if he doesn't
wants to deal with me then he better not come
after you or my son and you'll not say words to
you son you can't take back because of that
useless piece of thing called chief what what

Mj: yes mom tell him

***Patience looked at him with a scary frown on
her face***

Mj: tell him what....did I say you should talk!

Mj swallowed hard

Mj: I just...

Patience: quiet!

Mj kept quiet and he looked at his dad

Patience: and you young man this has better be

the last time you try to kill yourself or I'll personally wake you up and kill you myself you hear me

Mj nodded looking scared and Mr Owoh-Masden was just shocked by this side of Patience he's never seen before

Patience: and if you ever I mean ever do things that will make my husband question his parenting skills Junior you'll regret it you hear me!

Mj nodded quickly

Patience: look I understand that you are still young and you're gonna make mistakes as you grow up but baby, make sure you never do things that might catch up with you in the future and ruin things for you hear me

Mj: yes mam

Patience: good

she breathed out

Patience: now rest, I'll come back during night visiting hour and I'll bring you toiletries and pyjamas ok

Mj: yes mam

Patience: good

she kissed his forehead and walked out then it was silence

Mj.Senior: ok what just happened?

Mj: your wife has a scary side and I swear I'll never do anything to piss her off

his father laughed

Mj: im sorry dad I know I messed up but I swear I didn't force myself on that girl

his father didn't say anything

Mj: you know I once dated chief Okwonko's daughter Mercy and i had a talk with someone

about it and she made me realize that if she's not worth me fighting with my family or losing them then she's not worth it at all so I broke it off.....what im trying to say is I do think sometimes before I make decisions but sometimes I don't so don't give up on me dad im far from perfect I mean im Nomvula's son so....

His father chuckled while shaking his head

Mj.Senior: you sure are

Mj: ah ah what's that supposed to mean

Mj.Senior: exactly that

he said walking out laughing and Mj laid there sulking then a smile appeared on his face

Mj: damn it worked....fuck yeah

he punched the air and he laughed

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Mbali, Snakes and Jase walked in the lounge and Castiel got up with a smile on his face as he looked at Mbali

Cass: and who's this beautiful mamasita

Snakes: ey voetsek that's my sister jou moer

Mbali: bhuti!

Cass turned and looked at Ruslan

Cass: did this fool just swear at me Madou

Ruslan: what did I say to you over the phone

Cass

*** then Castiel chuckled shaking his head and he looked at Snakes with a creepy smirk on his face and he walked over to Mbali***

Cass: Cass is the name

***he said stretching his hand for a handshake

and Ruslan spoke***

Ruslan: and she's Ray's wife Mbali

***he pulled his hand back and took a step back
with a smile on his face***

Cass: damn....umm yeah, got it!

then he looked at Mbali

Cass: nice to finally meet the woman that
tamed my boy.... damn you're beautiful

***Mbali didn't even know what to say all she
could do was smile a bit looking at him***

Ruslan: his flower that's my crazy unmannered
brother Castiel

Castiel: he forgot to say his elder brother

Snakes: heh?

Mbali frowned

Mbali: you look younger than Ruu how can you
be his elder brother

Castiel: good genes my lady...good genes

Jay: good genes my foot

he said and sat down and Snakes looked at him frowning and he could see Jay knew something they didn't know

Mbali: wow you have good genes indeed

she said still amazed by how young he looked

Castiel: and you're beautiful even with your red and swollen cheek

Mbali looked away embarrassed

Jase: enough man!

Snakes: iyadelela lemfene nx (this baboon is disrespectful)

Castiel: imfene uyihlo (a baboon is your father)

Snakes: uthini? (what did you say)

He said getting up and Jay held his arm

Jay: myeke Mamba (leave him Mamba)

Ruslan: Castiel what did I just say

Castiel: I will not stand here and be disrespected by this boys Madou....is it a sin to talk to Ray's wife

Ruslan: calm the fuck down!

he warned him

Mbali: wow ok

she went to Kalu and picked him up, he was still sleeping and she kissed his forehead with a smile on her face

Mbali: it was nice meeting you Cass

Castiel nodded and she walked away

Castiel: what's your problem man

He said to Snakes

Snakes: I don't like stupid niggas speaking to my little sister... that's what's wrong

Castiel chuckled shaking his head

Castiel: well good luck with that cause Ray is my brother from another mother so I'll be talking to your little sister some more

Snakes: golo lakho (your cunt)

Castiel: nawe (you too)

Ruslan: are you two done

Castiel: when is Ray waking up I need to leave here before shit gets real

Ruslan ignored him and as he was about to stand up his eyes turned black and he quickly sat down and when Snakes saw his eyes he quickly got up and moved away

Snakes: what the fuck?

Castiel: Madou what's going on?

***Ruslan didn't say anything, he just moved his eyeballs around and his head as if he's looking around ***

Jay: what's wrong with him?

Castiel: Madou what is it that you seeing

Ruslan: eles estão em sua casa incendiada e
eles sabem Aden estava lá (they are at your
burned down house and they know Aden was
there)

Castiel: shit!

***he said brushing his head and he sat down
next to Ruslan***

Jase: what is he talking about?

***he asked Castiel because he knows
Portuguese and Castiel ignored him***

Castiel: são todos eles? (is it all of them?)

***Ruslan nodded and Castile swallowed
hard***

Ruslan: eles parecem frustrados porque não
sabem para onde ir a partir daí (they look
frustrated cause they don't know where to go

from there)

Castiel didn't say anything he just sat there quiet until Ruslan's eyes went back to normal and he sighed and he sat back

Jase: what's going on man?

Castiel: it's a family thing that doesn't want your involvement

Jase: ooh is it

Castiel: yeah so butt out

Ruslan got up

Ruslan: guys don't mind him ok....apparently he fell with his head the day he was born so he's not ok upstairs

he said walking away

Castiel: really Madou!

the Khumalo's laughed except for Jay

Ruslan: order something meaty to eat, Ray will

be mad- hungry when he waked up

Snakes: bafo what it is?

Jay: he's a vampire

Snakes: what...who?

Castiel: im sure he's talking about me

Snakes&Jase: WHAT?

Jay: yeah he showed me his fangs and his eyes even changed colour

Snakes: ithi uyadlala Nkosenye (say you're playing Nkosenye)

he said with a frown on his face....he was now sitting down

Castiel: he's not

***Then his eyes changed colour and he showed them his now long fangs and Snakes got up quickly from the couch and he moved away with a look you can't explain with simple

words on his face***

Snakes: hai hai....hai

He said shaking his head and Castiel chuckled and his eyes and fangs went back to normal

Jase: how is that possible when you're Ruslan's brother?

Castiel: Father was a Dracula, he seduced our mother and fucked her hard then I was conceived

Jase and Snakes looked at him with disturbed looks on their faces and Castiel chuckled

Castiel: relax I won't feed on ya'll....i heard beasts blood tastes like shit

Jase and Jay looked at each other then they both looked at Castiel

Jay: what the hell do you know about beasts?

Castiel: you have beasts inside of you right

Jase: how did you....ofcourse Ruslan nx

Jay: snitch ass motherfucker

Castiel: don't call my brother that dog

Jay chuckled

Jay: or what bloodsucker

Castiel's face got serious as he looked at Jay

Snakes: whoa whoa yimani kancani (wait a minute)did you say fe...feed on us?

Castiel: yeah Vampires drink blood man

he said smirking at Snakes...he could already tell he wasn't a fan of supernatural things

Snakes: hell no.... RUSLAN....RUSLAN...EH

MFOWETHU RUSLAN....RUSLAN!

he called Ruslan and Ruu came out of the kitchen with a cup of coffee on his hand

Ruslan: what?

Snakes: talk to your brother man...

Ruslan looked at Castiel who had a smile on his face

Ruslan: what the hell did you do now?

Snakes: he's a vampire....a fucken vampire....why the hell didn't you tell us man!

***Ruslan sighed and he gave Castiel a disappointed look cause he clearly told him to behave ***

Castiel: sorry bro

Ruslan: yeah he's a half breed vampire and no he won't suck your blood out so you can relax

he said sitting down

Snakes: relax....uthi relax....entlek what the hell is happening in this world....kuna amademoni...bathakathi manje kuna namavampire and bathi ama half breed what

what (there are demons...witches/wizards and now there are vampires and they call them half breed what what)

Jase: Nhlaka calm down before you suffer a heart attack

Snakes took out his phone ignoring Jase and he dialed Ntombi's numbers

Ntombi: sthandwa sam (my love)

Snakes: lalela la Ntombi (listen here Ntombi)....i want you to go to checkers hyper and buy as many garlic as you can and hhayi lezo zepowder I want the ones you chop with a knife and look for Ibhayibheli lam lowo enginikezwe ngumama, ngiyeza manje (and look for my bible the one that was given to me by mom, im on my way)

Castiel laughed and Ruslan, Jay and Jase looked down holding their laughs in

Ntombi: ummm baby kwenzakalani? (baby

what's going on)

Snakes: sthandwa sam please do as I say...
please

Ntombi sighed

Ntombi: ok I'll go buy them but I want you to tell
me what's going on

Snakes: I'll explain when I get home I promise

Castiel laughed louder

Ntombi: who's that is laughing ingathi
uyahlanya (as if he's mentally disturbed)

Snakes: God's reject....even no satan akamfuni
sthandwa sam so angazi nokuthi ngithi yini nje
(even satan doesn't want him so I don't even
know what he is)

***the twins busted out with loud laughter and
Castiel kept a straight face***

Snakes: go and buy lezo garlic and I'll see you
when I get home

Ntombi: ai ok...ngiyakthanda yezwa (I love you ok)

Snakes: uthandwa yimi sthandwa sam (you're loved by me my love)

Ntombi blushed

Snakes: bye sthandwa sam

Ntombi: bye

they ended the call

Castiel: uzonya for what you just said to your wife about me

Snakes: angikhulumi nabantu abafile mina (I don't talk to dead people) go and talk to La Parca im sure he'll be happy to talk to his long lost brother

he said moving and he went to the kitchen leaving the twins laughing their asses off then Cass got up and Ruslan stopped him

Ruslan: don't even think about it...he's Mbali's

brother and Ray will fucken kill you if you make his flower cry like that

Castiel: he's busy insulting me Madou

Ruslan: he's like this man just let him be

Castiel: you don't know what he said man

Jay: you shouldn't have showed him your fangs in the fucken first place so it's your fault

Jase: mmmmh you shouldn't have

he said laughing

Ruslan: mmmmh now suck it up....you started this whole shit

Castiel: mxm

after some time Snakes came back with two butter knives tied with a string together in a cross “ + ” shape and Ruslan and the twins busted out with loud laughter

Castiel: now he's going too far Madou

Snakes: udlalele kude nami wena lesilo (play far away from me lesilo) uyangizwa and im not playing or else I'll burn you with the blood of Jesus unye nyi

laughter filled the room and Castiel got up and went towards the kitchen shaking his head

Castiel: this is gonna be a fucken long day nx

LATER AT NIGHT

***the Khumalos left and so did Castiel and Ruslan after Ray woke up....him and Mbali haven't said anything to each other and it was just tense in the house.... Later Mbali and Kalu went to sleep while Ray was in his study lying on the couch...he kept replaying his fight with Mbali over and over in his head and the disrespect he felt, then his mind went to Mbali's cries especially when he slapped her....he

clenched his jaws thinking about it.... he couldn't believe he did that to his own flower then he sighed and he got angry thinking about Celine and that all that happened is because of her....

After three hours he got up and switched off the lights and he went to check if all the doors were locked and he also switched off the lights and he went upstairs....he got there and found Mbali sleeping with Kalu next to her on the bed and he sighed, as he was about to lift Kalu up Mbali spoke***

Mbali: leave him

Ray: he needs to sleep in his crib

Mbali: you know what its fine I'll go sleep with him in the guest bedroom

*** she said pulling off the covers***

Ray: why would you do that....you're my wife

Mbali

Mbali: so?

he looked at her and she looked away

Ray: is this how things will be from now on?

she got out of bed and she walked to Kalu' side and Ray stopped her

Ray: we need to talk about this my flower

Mbali: there's nothing to talk about Ray....i think you should move out

Ray: that's not happening you hear me

he said getting worked up

Mbali: Ray please

Ray: im not going anywhere and neither are you!

Mbali: so you gonna force me to share this house with you

Ray: im your husband damn it.... I paid your fucken bride price

Mbali: fine then since money is suddenly an

issue....how much did you pay and I'll tell my brothers to pay you back.... with interest

Ray looked at Mbali with a serious look on his face

Mbali: get out of my way Ray

he didn't move

Mbali: move Ray

she said with a breaking voice and Ray moved closer to her

Ray: I love you Mbali and I messed up big time but im not losing you

Mbali: move Ray

Ray: I love you you hear...I love you

Mbali: you know what fine, you'll sleep with Kalu and if he gives you trouble you can bring him to me

***she turned and walked out and Ray sat down

on the bed and he rubbed his head roughly and he sighed***

in the middle of the night Mbali heard the door open and she switched the lights on and Ray was standing there naked with his dick hard pointing north with veins popping

Mbali: what the h...

she said that and swallowed hard

Ray: I couldn't let you give me a head or want to see you naked cause I was stressed out and I knew if I get naughty with you im gonna end up traumatizing you..... I tend to lose control Mbali and I become a monster that's why back before I met you I would never go for an innocent nice girl ever cause ya'll take things into heart and you never forget and gets traumatized easily

she didn't say anything

Ray: and about the baby she's older than our relationship and marriage if you calculate

correctly

she looked down

Ray: and I didn't know about her until yesterday when Celine send me a picture and a message

she continued to look down

Ray: about me cheating....well it happened on the early stages of us dating and for the first time ever I felt like shit after sleeping with another woman and I've never cheated ever and I vowed to myself to never do that again

tears ran down her cheeks and she quickly wiped them

Ray: I know I hurt you and shit got out of hand and im sorry for laying a hand on you but...

he clenched his jaws

Ray: you disrespected me Mbali....you fucken embarrassed me in front of my friend

Mbali: well you deserved it

Ray: I deserved it?

Mbali: yeah you did

she said looking at him and he chuckled

Ray: you think you know me huh? you think you got me figured out is that it

*** he moved closer to the bed and by now his dick was dripping pre cum and she didn't say anything***

Ray: the only person in this whole fucken world who knows me better than I know myself is Ruslan and he knows I hate being disrespected in any way!

She swallowed hard because he looked scary now

Ray: I tried to protect you from experiencing a dark sexual side I have and you had the fucken guts to tell me shit saying there are men out there who would give up their wealth just to tap

that ass huh

He got really close and he roughly pulled her covers off her

Mbali: Ray what are you....

she didn't finish as Ray grabbed her roughly and pulled her towards him and he pulled her from the bed and she stood next to him looking scared

Ray: and not only that but you laid your fucken hands on me....is that what your grandmother taught you huh....have you seen her lay her hands on her husband?

he said grabbing her pyjama shirt and he ripped it apart and her breath hinged as she looked shit scared

Mbali: Ray

Ray: you wanna see the other side of me right? you wanna see me lose my shit and fucken

traumatize you for life...is that it

Mbali: n...no

***he pulled her pyjama shorts off and she wasn't wearing an underwear and he roughly turned her around ***

Mbali: Ray don't please I haven't healed completely

Ray: you wanna give other men what belongs to me right and you've suddenly become the husband in our marriage abi....you have a dick now Mbali is that it!

Mbali: Ray look ok I... listen we....

*** he bend her roughly and pressed her head on the bed hard and he opened her legs***

Mbali: Ray please stop...don't do this

Ray: im a fucken bad man Mbali but I chose to become a good man just for you....yes I once cheated but I chose to change for you and you

fucken disrespected me in front of my friend!

he said with an angry voice and she started crying

Ray: shut up!....or else this time around I'll let La Parca deal with Saint as you watch

she muffed her cries

Mbali: Ray please

he moved the tip of his dick on her other hole (ass) lubricating it with his pre cum and she moved forward with her heart beating fast

Ray: who said you should move...did I say move!

he said with a firm voice

Mbali: Ray please I have never done anal sex before

Ray: I want to make sure you never give other fuckers out there what belongs to me...after this hole then next it's the honey pot when you're healed....im gonna fucken teach you a

lesson you'll never forget...

he pushed the tip in and she screamed moving forward and he pulled her back and held her in place as she cried

INSERT.....15

.

.

.

*** Mbali was sitting on the couch eating while playing with Kalu who was lying next to her....she was tickling him and he was laughing while kicking his legs and moving his hands and Mbali was chuckling too....it was a nice sight to see but Ray wasn't here for that...he was angry***

Ray: where the fuck is my signed NBA basketball

Mbali looked at him with a frown on her face

Mbali: and how will I know where it is

Ray: don't fuck with me Mbali im not in the fucken mood, now where the fuck is it?

he said with an angry voice

Mbali: maybe I stabbed it with a knife and burned it to ashes or maybe not

Ray: what?

He said with his heart beating fast

Mbali: I said "maybe"

Ray: Mbali fuck with me anyhow you want but not with that ball....you know it holds sentimental value to me something that is irreplaceable and I can't fucken replace it even if I want to so where the hell is it

Mbali: I don't know

She said not even looking at him and he stood there looking at her, he wanted to grab her by her hair and drag her to the basement and beat the shit out of her until she tells him where it is but he couldn't for obvious reasons

Ray: so it has gotten to this huh..... I mess up and you burn, break and throw away my shit huh

Mbali: would you have preferred I divorce your ass then Raymond?

He looked at her with clenched jaws

Mbali: you said you'll take it like a man so take it like the man you are

she continued eating and he chuckled which was a clear indication to Mbali that he's angry

Ray: so threatening to leave me is the only hold you have on me so I don't bust your fucken

teeth out right

Mbali: I don't have your stupid ball Raymond
now leave me alone

Ray: well that stupid ball had better not have
even a single scratch on it or by the time I'll be
done with you even your father won't recognize
you nx

***He then walked away and Mbali swallowed
hard cause his tone and his threatening words
shook her a bit and she sighed***

Mbali: mxm there's nothing that you can do to
me that will beat you cheating on me and
breaking my heart.... nx rubbish

***She said and continued eating....well she hid
the ball somewhere safe, she knew it meant
everything to him cause one of the signatures
on it belongs to his all-time favorite late
basketball player so if she burns it then he can
never replace it like he can with the things she

destroyed cause the guy passed on 6 years ago***

ON THE ROAD

Thandi: so you still won't tell me where we're going

Ruslan looked briefly at her with a smirk on his face and he looked back at the road

Ruslan: will you just relax....you'll know in due time

Thandi: mmmh...so wherever we are going im going to meet your brother huh?

he nodded

Ruslan: and I must warn you, he's a bit too much, he doesn't think before he talks and he's a pain in the ass and..... he's also a flirt and...and...and....

Thandi laughed

Thandi: wow

Ruslan: mmmmh he's too much amour so don't be shocked by him you'll get used to him

Thandi: ok

Then Ruslan sighed and he put his hand on her thigh and he squeezed it a little

Ruslan: so is it safe for us to start making love again

Thandi blushed cause she missed him like that too

Thandi: ummm yeah I guess....gogo cleansed me and 10 days has passed since his death so im good

He smiled

Ruslan: good cause I want you so bad my love

she smiled blushing some more and she looked away biting her lower lip

Ruslan: wow and she's blushing

he said laughing and Thandi smiled

Thandi: mxm.....anyway I hope there's food
where we're going cause I'm hungry

Ruslan: yeah of course....Cass and I cooked

She smiled

Thandi: and to think you two didn't see eye to
eye

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: I guess sometimes blood is really
thicker than water

Thandi: true

he took her hand and kissed the back of it

Ruslan: I love you amour

she blushed

Thandi: I love you too

Then Thandi's phone rang and she took it out of her bag, she didn't recognize the numbers but she answered anyway

Thandi: hello

Jackson: please don't hang up..... please

She swallowed hard with her body tensing

Thandi: ka bona o susu these days neh, akare kgaogana le nna? (I see you're deaf these days, didn't I say stay away from me?)

Jackson: can we meet up please.....i want to explain the text I send you....im really in love with you Thandi im not playing games with you

She closed her eyes getting angry then she opened them again and Ruslan noticed

Ruslan: what's wrong amour and who's that?

***He asked cause he could see she was getting angry and she looked tensed but she didn't say anything, she just gave the phone to

Ruslan***

Jackson: hello Thandi....Thandi are you still there?

Ruslan: who the hell is this?

He asked with a frown on his face

Jackson: I should be asking you that question....where is Thandi....just give her the damn phone!

Then Ruslan remembered the voice and he chuckled getting pissed

Ruslan: ooh it's you you piece of shit

Jackson: so you're the bastard that's making Thandi to refuse to meet up with me

He said with an angry voice and Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: tell me here boy, why would my fiancée agree to meet up with another man huh?

Thandi looked at him surprised that he said that and Ruslan winked at her

Jackson: wh...what?

Ruslan: yeah....I popped the question and she said yes so you can go hang yourself now

Thandi held her laugh

Jackson: you're lying you fucken bastard!

Ruslan: you wanna ask her yourself....she's here next to me looking fine as ever

He could hear Jackson breathing heavily over the phone

Jackson: Thandi will change her mind I know she will....she loves her boys and she won't be able to live with herself knowing that she had an opportunity to make sure the boys know their roots and all and she chose a useless dick instead

Ruslan: well the boys will know their roots and

you and your evil family members will bow down to her and the boys asking for forgiveness one of these days

Jackson: you son of a bi....

Ruslan interrupted him

Ruslan: listen here boy....i don't fight with small boys and Thandi doesn't fuck with small boys anymore so if you know what's good for you then never call Thandi ever again or I'll make your nightmares a reality....i hope we understand each other

*** He said with a stern voice and he dropped the call and gave Thandi the phone***

Ruslan: block that number amour

she did and they drove in complete silence until Thandi spoke

Thandi: im sorry baby I swear there's nothing going....

Ruslan held her hand and kissed it

Ruslan: relax I know amour

She sighed with relief

Thandi: then why were you silent like that

He smirked looking at her briefly

Ruslan: so a man can't think now huh?

he said with a smirk on his handsome face

Thandi: what is it that this man is thinking about then?

she said poking him on his upper arm

Ruslan: your delicious pussy..... I want you so bad so I was debating with myself on whether to stop the car and park then have you or to just keep on driving

Thandi: bathong Ruu

He laughed

Ruslan: what...im being honest

She just shook her head blushing

Ruslan: I love you ok

he said kissing the back of her hand

Thandi: I love you too

They finally arrived and they got out of the car and walked to the door with Ruu holding her hand

Thandi: wow this house is huge and beautiful baby

Ruslan: you like it?

She nodded looking around the yard

Thandi: mmmh

he smiled

Ruslan: im glad you do

Thandi: is this your brother's house?

Ruslan: no

he said opening the door for her and then she slowly walked in and her eyes popped out

Ruslan: don't mind the mess, the interior designers aren't done yet

*** the house wasn't even dirty it's just most of the furniture was covered with white sheets.....well her eyes wondered around, the interior design was beyond beautiful and she noticed that its one of the designs she once saw on a magazine and she remembers showing Ruu the pictures and she told him the day she'll buy her boys a house she'll do the exact designs inside her house and now the magazine pictures are right in front of her eyes and she can't believe it***

Ruslan: you look flushed amour are you ok

he said with an amused voice

Thandi: ummm yeah im ok it's just I once saw the exact designs in a magazine.....i even remember showing them to you

Ruslan pulled her closed and he kissed her

Ruslan: yeah I remember you once did....anyway let me go call Cass so we can get this over and done with

Thandi: ummm ok

***he kissed her forehead and he followed Cass's dark aura and it let him to the study while Thandi was moving her eyes around still captivated by the interior design.... Anyway with Castiel, his aura wasn't good at all despite him being a Vampire....it was like he was angry or something....Anyway Ruslan opened the door and he found Castiel staring at his crystal ball and it was showing Kazi and a guy, they were in

bed cuddling and laughing***

Ruslan: Cass

he didn't move or look up at him

Ruslan: Cass!

Castiel: they were making out Madou....he was touching her and shit and she let him

he said with an angry voice, he was even breathing heavily and Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: she can't be having sex now, I mean she hasn't healed completely

Castiel: I didn't say they were fucking man!

He snapped at him and Ruslan chuckled shaking his head

Ruslan: and he says he's not in love with her

he shook his head looking at an angry Castiel

Ruslan: anyway Thandi is here come and say hi

he walked to the door

Ruslan: and you better be in a jolly mood when you come out

then he walked out and Castiel clicked his tongue

Ruslan: took you long enough

He said looking at Castiel as he walked to them

Castiel: chill will ya it takes long to look this good ok

Then he smiled at Thandi

Castiel: damn and how the hell did you convince such beauty to be yours

Ruslan: piss off man

Castiel laughed and Thandi just smiled shyly

Castiel: Castiel is the name.....Cass for short and damn you are beautiful mami?

he said shaking her hand and Thandi frowned a bit cause his hand was ice cold

Ruslan: I'll bust your balls man don't fuck with me!

*** He warned him and Castiel laughed ignoring him***

Castiel: don't mind my cold hand its some kind of a.....condition I have

he said letting go of her hand and he remembered Kazi once asked if he has a condition and he said no that its because he sleeps naked....he swallowed hard thinking about Menzi and Kazi kissing with Menzi touching her perfect body then he cleared his throat

Thandi: ooh ok...it's nice to finally meet you Cass

Castiel: likewise soon to be Mrs Monteiro and
im the elder brother by the way while he's my
little bro

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: good genes amour

he said annoyed by Castiel

Thandi: wow ummmm ok

Castiel: damn you're beautiful

***he said trying to annoy Ruslan some more
and Thandi blushed***

Ruslan: stop it man, only im allowed to make
my woman blush!

***He said warning Castiel and Cass laughed
not believing what he was witnessing while
Thandi was shocked by Ruslan's
possessiveness towards her***

Castiel: damn man I swear I've never seen you
this possessive towards any woman

Ruslan: im not possessive I just don't want other men touching or making amour blush

***Castiel chuckled then Ruslan mind-communicated with Castiel ***

Ruslan: "you good"

he asked him cause he could still feel the dark aura around him

Castiel: " yeah I'll be fine don't worry"

he answered him back then he cleared his throat

Castiel: excuse him our wife that's what happens when an old man falls in love and be loved back truthfully for the first time

Ruslan: will you just shut up please!

he warned him and he raised his hands in surrender

Castiel: fine whatever....anyway welcome to the family Thandi

Thandi: thank you

*** she said smiling then Castiel looked at Ruslan and he chuckled***

Castiel: damn you got it bad man

Ruslan: I'll fucken hit you Castiel continue and you'll see

Castiel laughed and he looked at Thandi who was holding her laugh

Castiel: our wife your crazy man here and I cooked so I hope you're hungry

Thandi: im famished

Castiel: great let me go dish up for us then

he walked away happy that his little brother finally found the one....then his face got hard and his eyes changed colour as he got angry thinking about Kazi and Menzi kissing and touching each other

Castiel: Nxa

***He said as soon as he got inside the kitchen

Castiel: no more Mr nice guy

IN THE LOUNGE

Ruslan: sorry about that amour

Thandi: it was nice seeing you that jealous

***she said smiling at him and he smirked
shaking his head***

Ruslan: don't get used to it

Thandi: ah ah why not

Ruslan: cause it will got to your head and you
might end up doing shitty things that will make
me act crazy just cause you wanna see me
jealous again

***Thandi laughed and Ruslan got up smiling
and he switched the TV on then he kissed her
forehead***

Ruslan: let me go help him ok

she nodded and he went to the kitchen

Thandi: wow ok.....damn I wonder who owns this beautiful house

she said running her hand on the expensive looking table in front of her

*** Well after their lunch meal Ruslan ended up telling Thandi about the house, that he bought it for her and the boys and he even gave her the tittle deed and the house was in her name.....she cried not believing that Ruslan did that for her and the boys, she cried until she finally calmed down and as for Castiel he was amazed with Thandi's reaction towards Ruslan's surprise.....seeing her genuine reaction made him to fully accept Thandi into their lives cause these days the world is full of opportunists and gold diggers so seeing Thandi that emotional to

a point that Ruslan had to hold her until she calmed down just because he bought her a mere house made him see that she's not in it for the money....

Anyway now Ruslan and Thandi were lying in bed with Thandi's head on his chest while Castiel went back to stalking Kazi using Ruslan's crystal ball***

Thandi: thank you Ruu for the house..... yoh I cant believe you did that, im still shocked

Ruslan kissed her forehead and he smiled

Ruslan: you haven't seen nothing yet amour

she raised her head and looked into his eyes

Thandi: you do know im not about the money right

Ruslan: trust me I know

***she sighed and rested her head back on his

chest***

Ruslan: talk to me

Thandi: why didn't I meet you before I met
James mara

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: all I can say is it's better to suffer now
than later in life amour...you have suffered and
now its your time to be truly happy and loved
unconditionally

She snuggled closer and he held her tight

Thandi: I love you Ruu

Ruslan: I love you too my love

***They were now kissing and soon the kiss got
heated and Ruslan got between her legs and
they continued kissing hungrily and as soon as
Ruslan grabbed her right breast Thandi winced
in pain***

Thandi: ouch, careful they are sensitive baby

Ruslan: sorry my love

he whispered to her and they continued to kiss then Ruslan's hands went to her ass and as soon as grabbed her ass cheeks she winced again

Thandi: ouch

He stopped and looked at her

Ruslan: what's wrong?

Thandi: it's nothing serious.....four days back I went to the clinic and i started on contraceptives and the nurse that gave me the injection I think she's a heartless woman, the area she injected me on is swollen and painful

Ruslan quickly got off her with a look she can't explain plastered on his face

Ruslan: you...you did what?

Thandi: ummm I...i went to get a shot four days

back

she said with a low tone

Ruslan: tell me you're joking Thandi

he called her by her name

Thandi: why would I joke with that Ruu....you said you'll never use a rubber with me so I went and got a shot

Ruslan: HOW CAN YOU FUCKEN GET A SHOT WHILE YOU PREGNANT!

he said getting out of bed*

Thandi: what?....me?..... Ruu im not pregnant

Ruslan: YOU ARE DAMN IT!

he snapped at her and she jumped a bit looking scared*

Ruslan: get up and wear your shoes im taking you to see a doctor!

***he said wearing his shoes but she didn't

move***

Ruslan: I said get up Thandi, don't make me tell you again!

Thandi: why are you shouting at me huh.....im not pregnant ok I was on my periods and so I went for a shot.....i would know if I was pregnant!

she snapped at him too and he stood there with a deadly look on his face

Ruslan: you were on what?

Thandi: my periods

***he went to her and put his hand on her stomach and his eyes changed color and they turned cloudy and Thandi froze looking at Ruslan with her eyes popped out.... Anyway Ruslan commanded the fetus to move and the small bean moved a bit which made Thandi to have a weird feeling inside her stomach and luckily he could hear the heartbeat loud and

clear then his eyes went back to normal and he sighed with relief and when his eyes landed on Thandi's he saw a shocked look on her face....he sighed then he got out of bed... her seeing his eyes changing was the least of his problems now***

Ruslan: wear your shoes Thandi....im taking you to the doctor....my child's life might be in danger!

** he commanded her but she didn't move**

Ruslan: Thandi!

he said raising his voice

Thandi: im not pregnant ok and what happened to your eyes....they....

Ruslan interrupted her

Ruslan: I SAID WEAR YOUR SHOES AND LET'S GO!

***he roared and she just sat there not moving with a frown on her face.....Ruslan looked at her

with a pissed off look but she wasn't moved at all in fact she was hurt and angry at him for raising his voice at her***

IN THE STUDY

he was drowning his sorrows with alcohol....the crystal ball was now back in the bag and he was laying on the couch humming an ancient song his late mother used to sing for him when he was young....then he heard a voice

Voice: don't give up on her my night rider

he stopped humming the song and he frowned sitting up

Castiel: you again....and stop calling me that

Voice: you love her and its ok..... and he loves her too and it's still ok but you need her Cass and she might not know it but she needs you

too

Castiel huffed

Castiel: oooh shut the hell up Juana or whatever your name is....just stay out of my fucken business!

Juana: you love her.....admit it and everything will fall into place

Castiel: come out and say that to my fucken face and you'll see what I do to you.....nx I don't fucken love her!

he shouted

Juana: you have fallen for her and it ok

Castiel: you know what FUCK YOU....YOU DEAD BITCH....FUCK YOU NX!

he got up and walked out.... then a pissed off Ruslan and an angry Thandi walked down the stairs and he stopped with a frown on his face

Castiel: is everything ok

Ruslan: yeah

***he said and he walked passed him and Thandi followed without saying anything and Castiel concentrated on reading Thandi's mind and all she was thinking was;

" I know my body and im not pregnant"

..... " entlek fuck him....ukhuluma nam kanjani lo, heeeh akangazi shem....eeh tsotsi e gae nkitsi pila shem nx" (I know my body and im not pregnant".....you know what fuck him....how dare he talks to me like that, heeh he doesn't know shame....eeh this thug doesn't know me shame")

And she went on;

" heh he shouts at me....o omanya nna Thandi, nna Tee wa go tshwara tsotsi ka lerete until a thepa out, shem this guy doesn't know me he should asks James shem cause nna a ka

rapelwa in fact a ka apeswa phuwana so ke gafa strong nx" (heh he shouts at me... shouts at me Thandi, me Tee who grabbed a thug's balls tight until he taps out, shame this guy doesn't know me he should ask James shame cause im one not to be messed with cause im crazy like that) ***

Castiel: holi shit....

he said with his eyes popped out... then he laughed surprised by that side of Thandi forgetting that he was angry a minute ago.....he then heard the car driving out and he sighed shaking his head then he took out his phone and searched for her numbers and he dialed them.....they rang for some time then she answered with her sweet voice

Kazi: hello

***he clenched his jaws ***

Kazi: hello

Castiel: hey Ntandokazi

Kazi: hi.... ummm who's this?

Castiel: Castiel...the guy with ice cold hands

***she kept quiet for a bit ***

Kazi: ooh ummm how did you get my numbers
cause I don't remember giving them to you

Castiel: let's just say I have my ways

Kazi: ooh

Castiel: yeah..... look Ntandokazi im too old to
play games so im gonna be straight with you

Kazi: huh?

she said confused and he breathed out

Castiel: im attracted to you

Juana: "attracted" really Castiel?

***he cleared his throat stopping himself from
swearing at Juana voice***

Kazi: wait what?

Castiel: yeah and tell that boyfriend of yours that he has competition now and I don't like to lose

Kazi: woah Castiel...stop right th....

he interrupted her

Castiel: I want you and im gonna have you Kazi and yeah I may have all the time in the world but im a very impatient man so tell that boy of yours that he better start mourning for your little relationship as of now

Kazi just kept quiet shocked

Castiel: and I don't care who saw you first and whatnots, what's important is who you'll end up with, and again always remember that you'll earn a strike each time you let him touch what belongs to me and like I said I have all the time in the world and soon so will you, so tread carefully cause im one crazy son of a bitch

Kazi.....I may end up punishing you for eternity for letting boys touch what's mine that's how crazy I amnow that's out of the way enjoy the rest of your day

then he ended the call and Kazi swallowed hard still shocked by the phone call.....Then Menzi walked in from the en-suit bathroom and sat next to Kazi on the bed and he kissed her exposed shoulder and that's when she came back to earth

Kazi: ummm hey you back

Menzi frowned

Menzi: yeah...are you ok?

she cleared her throat

Kazi: yeah.... what about you?

he chuckled and he kissed her shoulder again and he laid back

Menzi: I'll live, angithi bathi (they say) good

things comes to those who wait

*** she chuckled and he kissed the top of her head***

Menzi: so tell me here sthandwa sam,
ngizolinda iskhathi esingakanani for ikhekhe
lakho (so how long do I have to wait for your
pussy my love)

she faked a chuckled shaking her head

Kazi: wow failing to wait already Mr?

*** she laid her head on his chest and he
wrapped his arms around her and he kissed the
top of her head***

Menzi: never! bengibuza nje sthandwa
sam.....so uthi ngizongena nini esibayeni sam?
(never! I was just asking my love.....so when will
I enter my kraal?)

***she swallowed and she faked a laugh and
Menzi laughed too***

Kazi: hai shem I give up with you

They continued to laugh..... but Kazi was troubled by that phone call and she wondered if she should tell Menzi about it

INSERT.....16

.

.

.

NIGERIA

They arrived at some building and Jabu and Heath sat still not getting out of the car

Mj: what...what are we doing here bros?

Heath: you'll see

Mj swallowed hard

Mj: I hope you two are not here to sell me to ritualists ooo

Jabu chuckled

Heath: and if we are?

Mj quickly tried to open the car door but it was locked

Mj: open this door....open it I want to get out!

Jabu: ey blei stel man or keng o thomile go gafa?
(sit still or what have you started going crazy)

Mj: brother Ezeh please don't do this.....God is watching ooo he's watching and he no like wetin you dey doabeg open the door, shame the devil and open this door abeg

he said looking scared

Heath: mxm I swear Mj if I hear "phem" from your mouth again, I'll deal with you

***he warned him and Mj kept quiet keeping himself from speaking but eish it was hard....then two scary looking guys came to the car and Heath unlocked the door and they

opened Mj's door and grabbed his arm pulling him out of the car and he screamed***

Mj: ey wetin you dey do (what are you doing) ... brother Heath help me.. don't let them take me im begging you

then one of the guys injected him on his neck and he passed out

Guy: we should put him in bros?

Heath: yeah but I'll put the frogs in myself

they nodded and carried him away

Jabu: kao chaela Mshikaro die kind o inyela ge a tsoga (im telling you Mshikaro that boy will shit himself when he wakes up)

they laughed

Heath: we need pictures for big Ray

they laughed again

INSIDE RUSLAN'S CAR

Thandi was looking outside the window with tears running down her cheeks while Ruslan was just sitting there staring into space....They just got out of the doctor's office with conformation that Thandi is in fact pregnant and the bleeding wasn't periods but spotting that usually happens to most women on their first trimester, the baby was ok and the heartbeat too was strong..... Well Ruslan didn't understand why Thandi was mad and why she wasn't happy that she was pregnant, he was in fact disappointed by her reaction

Ruslan: so you're not gonna say anything about the fact that you're pregnant

She kept quiet wiping her tears off and she continued to look outside the window....they were still parked outside the Doctor's surgery

Ruslan: Thandi?

Thandi: did you get me pregnant on purpose?

Ruslan kept quiet looking at her with a frown on his face

Ruslan: why would you ask me that?

he said with a serious tone

Thandi: im asking so I expect an answer from you

she said with a serious tone too and Ruslan chuckled a bit

Ruslan: and if I did?

she turned and looked at him with a serious look on her face

Thandi: did you or did you not

Ruslan: I said what if I did

she breathed in and out loudly

Thandi: is that why you refused to use a

condom even after I told you im not on any contraceptives

Ruslan: no

he said still looking at her

Thandi: then how the hell did you know I was pregnant and come to think of it you began touching my stomach few days after we had sex

Ruslan: we made love!

he said correcting her and she gave im a deadly look but he wasn't moved

Thandi: how did you know Ruslan?

Ruslan: does it matter though amour

Thandi: YES IT DOES!

she said shouting and he raised an eyebrow at her

Ruslan: tone it down before you piss me off!

he said warning her....he was still as chilled as ever but his voice was filled with so much authority....he only had a serious look on his face

Thandi: mxm

she looked outside the window and Ruslan just continued to look at her

Ruslan: why are you acting like this amour?

Thandi: wena how did you know I was pregnant

Ruslan: I just knew ok

Thandi: let me guess it has something to do with your eyes changing colour right

Ruslan kept quiet a bit then he sighed

Ruslan: let's just go home and we will talk there

she didn't say anything and he started the car and drove away

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Mbali and Kalu were taking a nap upstairs and Ray was tired from searching the entire house for his precious ball, he couldn't find it and that made him angrier and more frustrated....he then went to the kitchen and he took out bottled water and drank from the bottle then he searched for what he could eat in the fridge and he found a plate with untouched food in it , then he saw pots on the stove and to him it meant Mbali cooked and that plate was probably his.....Anyway he took the plate and heated the food in the microwave and he sat down and started eating like a hungry animalrecord time he was finished and he downed the food with some beer, he washed the plate and as he was about to walk out of the kitchen his stomach grumbled and he stopped walking and he held his stomach

Ray: mmmmh

he groaned as he started feeling some cramps...he moved again and the feeling got worse and he groaned again, then he thought maybe is gas so he tried to release some but yeses instead he released more than gas....he quickly tightened his butt cheeks together and he ran to the toilet that is downstairs and the moments he sat down, gwa nyewa blaen (shit happened)

*** It's been an hour and he was still busy in the toilet....he was covered in sweat and his eyes were red and he was now shirtless and his ass hole was on fire..... Well another hour passed and he was now sitting on the cold tiled floor waiting for his stomach to start acting up again, he was weak and sweating and he felt like shit....anyway it looked like he was done shitting so he got up balancing himself with the wall and he walked out slowly....he went upstairs and when he got inside the bedroom he found Mbali

sitting up on the bed busy on her phone....he ignored her and just went straight to the bathroom and soon Mbali heard the shower running***

Mbali: I hope that Epsom salt (magnesium sulfate compound) ikhiphe bonke ubufebe out of his system nx (I hope that Epsom salt took out all his whore ways out of his system nx)

she said to herself and she continued to concentrate on her phone.... after sometime the shower stopped running and soon she heard Ray groaning loud inside the bathroom and she smiled

Mbali: mmmmh bukhiphe bonke sthandwa sam....bonke nje (take it all out my love... all of it)

*** soon the toilet flushed and the shower ran again***

Mbali: don't worry sthandwa sam soon you'll be

all clean and new and free of ivirus yobufebe
and we will work on our marriage

***after some time Ray walked out naked and
shame he looked flushed, he also looked weak
and pale....he went to his underwear drawer and
he took out some clean ones and wore them***

Mbali: ummm are you ok

Ray: im fine!

he snapped at her

Mbali: jeez sorry for giving a damn then

***she said and got out of bed and she walked
to the door***

Ray: im sorry.... I didn't mean to snap

she turned and looked at him

Ray: I think I ate something bad or it's a
stomach bug.... I just don't know

***He said sitting down on the edge of the bed

looking down***

Mbali: ooh what did you eat?

she said sounding worried and he groaned holding his stomach but the pain subsided quickly

Ray: I found a plate with cooked food in the....

he stopped talking and his eyes popped out and he swallowed hard

Mbali: what?

Ray: no...nothing

*** " no she wouldn't....would she?....well she's nighthawks daughter so.....damn would she?" is what he thought***

Mbali: it must have been the mixed vege's I cooked then, maybe I didn't wash them properly or something....i mean I didn't eat them cause you know I hate greens maybe that's why im ok

Ray swallowed hard

Ray: ummm yeah maybe

Mbali: ok I'll be back let me bring you pills that will stop the diarrhea

Ray: yeah

she walked out going downstairs to the medicine cabinet and he quickly reached for his phone and he dialed Ruslan's numbers

Ruslan: ey man can I call you back i....

Ray interrupted him

Ray: she's trying to kill me man

he was whispering

Ruslan: wait what?

Ray: I think she put something in my food and I can't stop shitting man....my ass is on fire...you need to help me man

Ruslan: who and what are you talking about

Ray: Mbali....i think she wants me dead man....i

can't stop shitting and it all started after I ate
the food she cooked

Ruslan: ummm where are you?

Ray: im home man you need to come and save
me man I can't stop shitting man

***Ruslan held his laugh and Ray rushed to the
toilet and he continued “shitting”Ruslan
heard Ray groaning and weird sounds coming
from the end of the line and he cleared his
throat trying by all means not to laugh***

Ruslan: are you ok man

Ray: im dying man....you need to come and save
me man im fucken dying

Ruslan: you're not dying so stop acting
up....you'll be fine.... don't you think I would see
your death coming from miles away

Ray: I don't care im dying and my murderer is in
this fucken house with me and worst part is I

sleep next to her every fucken night!

Mbali: babe you ok in there?

Ray jumped a bit

Ray: yea...yeahh I'll be out in a minute

Mbali: ok

Ray: she's even calling me babe....i swear she's going to kill me man

*** he whispered and Ruslan laughed....he tried to hold himself but he just couldn't and Thandi gave him an annoyed look cause she was still sulking from finding out she's pregnant....Ruslan drove inside the yard and he parked the car and Thandi opened the door and got out going inside and Ruslan stopped laughing when he saw Thandi walking inside looking pissed and he sighed***

Ruslan: look man Mbali will never want you dead, maybe she's just teaching you a lesson

remember she's a woman scorned man and those are dangerous.... they are even worse than lucifer himself

he groaned again as he relived himself again

Ray: you're not helping man....i swear if I die it's all on you....all on you!

then he dropped the call and Ruslan busted out with laughter....anyway Ray finished doing his business and he flushed and washed his hands and he got out....he found her sitting on the edge of the bed with a box of pills and bottled water

Mbali: shame....come and sit my love

he swallowed hard looking at her and he sat down

Mbali: take two they'll quickly stop the diarrhea

***he took the box and read the instructions

then he opened the bottled water and he sighed with relief that it was sealed and he drank the pills....she then helped him get under the covers and she kissed his forehead and took Kalu and she went downstairs.... Ray then took his phone and send Castiel a message and it read;

“I think Mbali is trying to kill me man...I know I cheated and hurt her but to kill me....look if anything happens to me tell my brothers I love them and I love you and that asshole Ruslan too”

then he tried to sleep while lying on his stomach

AT THANDI'S NEW HOUSE

Castiel rushed in the lounge putting on his jacket and he found Ruslan and Thandi

Castiel: im rushing to Ray's house...his wife is....ummm he's not well man

Ruslan: relax he'll be fine....Mballi is just showing him flames for fucking up

Castiel: wait he called you?

Ruslan: yeah he fucked up so he should take it like a man

Castiel: ooh but damn he sounded...

Ruslan: he'll be fine man but you can go check on him for moral support.... I'll go see him later

Castiel: ooh ok

then he mind-communicated with him

Castiel: " are you two good"

Ruslan: " yeah"

Castiel: " she's pretty pissed off so be careful"

Ruslan: " wait did you read her mind"

Thandi just looked at them as they looked at each other speaking with their eyes and she frowned

Castiel: "yeah but when ya'll where leaving earlier and dude she was mad-angry"

*** he mind-communicated laughing then he cleared his throat***

Castiel: ok guys later

he walked to the door

Ruslan: don't eat anything she gives you

Ruslan said and he chuckled and Castiel laughed

Castiel: im on a.... "bloody" diet anyway

Ruslan: CASS!

he laughed walking out then Ruslan cleared his throat turning his focus back to Thandi

Thandi: mmm a re utlwe (talk)

Ruslan: huh?

Thandi: start talking

Ruslan: you know I can also choose to speak in

my mother tongue

she kept quiet and he sighed

Ruslan: fine... look im sorry for not telling you that you're pregnant...I just wanted you to find out on your own amour that's why I didn't tell you

Thandi: how you knew that im pregnant is what I want to know cause now that I remember you started touching my stomach the same week we started being intimate

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: are you sure you want to know

Thandi: I wouldn't be asking if I wasn't

Ruslan: don't be cheeky with me Thandi

she kept quiet looking at him with a raise eyebrow and Ruslan chuckled and he sat back

Ruslan: once I tell you how I knew I won't be

able to.... “untell you” just so you know

Thandi: untell really?

she said with a bored look on her face and he chuckled

Ruslan: damn you’re beautiful amour and I can’t wait to see our little girl, I pray she comes looking like you in fact Im sure she’ll look like you.... I can’t wait to hold her in my arms and to spend the rest of my fucked up life protecting her and our boys

Thandi: im waiting for my answer Ruslan

she said ignoring what he just said and he laughed

Ruslan: ok then since you can’t let this go.....here it goes, I have powers....special powers

she continued giving him the bored look

Ruslan: fine since you’re like Thomas from the

bible then look at that couch

he pointed at the couch and Thandi looked at it and Ruslan's eyes changed colour and he moved his index and middle finger from left to right and the couch moved

Thandi: wait...did that just happen

*** she said frowning and he moved it back to where it was and Thandi jumped back***

Thandi: what the!

she said with her eyes popped out

Ruslan: clam down please

he said looking at her, he could see she was freaked out

Thandi: how did you...how is that possible...I mean did that couch move....i mean what just happened defies the laws of physics...what the hell man!

Ruslan: like I said I have special powers....im a

wizard Thandi

she gave him a shocked look...it was like she was frozen on the spot

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: that's how I knew you were pregnant that early

she kept quiet trying to process everything....it became silent for some time

Ruslan: say something amour

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: say something please

she swallowed hard

Thandi: ho...how?

Ruslan: mother was a witch....one of the best ever lived....she was American while my father was a normal African man from Guinea Bissau

she swallowed again

Ruslan: I also have a PhD in Parapsychology, it's a study of supernatural phenomenon.... I wanted to learn and gain more knowledge about the powers I inherited from my mother and I must say I aced itarg it's a long ass story and I'll tell you all about it some day

she just looked at him with her jaws dropped...he then got up and went to sit next to her and he kissed her cheek

Ruslan: I love you amour and I hope you won't leave me because of this

he then put his hand on her belly

Ruslan: even if you decide to, we both know I won't let you go so.....

she swallowed hard blinking too much and they kept quiet for some time until she spoke

Thandi: a witch huh?

Ruslan: a wizard my love

Thandi: its 6 and 9 same shit

he chuckled

Ruslan: well im a wizard who has a PhD amour
so there's a difference

***she swallowed and looked at him as he had
a cute smile on his face ***

Thandi: well that PhD doesn't make the "wizard"
part disappear Ruu

he sighed

Ruslan: im a proud one amour and I wouldn't
change it for anything.... look I don't fly on
brooms or loafs of bread or any of those shits
overnight witches do out there.... I don't have
what you call tikoloshi's under my bed and any
other shit those useless witches do out there

***he then thought about his zombies and he
cleared his throat...he couldn't tell her about
that cause he might end up traumatizing her for

life***

Ruslan: I just have immense powers and I use them for good

she sighed with her heart pounding hard

Ruslan: please calm down amour your BP is raising

Thandi: ooh so you can also tell when my BP is raising mmmh?

he chuckled

Ruslan: I can hear your heart beating fast

Thandi: you can hear it

he sighed

Ruslan: yeah but only when im this close

*** a normal person would have to put his ear on her chest to hear her heart beating fast but Ruslan was sitting next to her and not even close close but he could heart it***

Thandi: ooh God!

he pulled her closer and kissed the top of her head

Thandi: so your “magic” is actually you using your powers

Ruslan: yeah

Thandi: I cant believe this

Ruslan: don't think too much about this amour...im still the same Ruslan who loves you unconditionally

Thandi: does Ray, Heath and Jabu know

he sighed

Ruslan: yeah Ray has known for years and Heath and that crazy brother of yours Jabu knew not long ago and if I was an evil man they wouldn't have let me be even an inch closer to you or the boys

***"yes he's right they wouldn't" she thought....

then silence filled the room***

Ruslan: I love you amour so much

she didn't say anything

Ruslan: and this doesn't change anything amour
this only means you know more about me more
than any other woman I've been with knew
about me or knew me

Thandi: so I should be happy that my fiancé is a
wizard

he sighed

Ruslan: no you should be happy that now you
can be able to deal with people that messes
with you using my spells

***he thought she would laugh but she didn't
instead she got off his hold and she stood up
and looked at Ruslan with her hands on her
waist***

Thandi: ok...ok enough about you being a

witch/wizard and me being pregnant cause it is what it is and I cant change any of it.... but what I can change or better yet what I want to know is, what possessed you to shout at me like that earlier on

she said giving him a “you better answer me” look

Ruslan: what?

he said confused

Thandi: ke ra sebete Ruslan sa go omaya nna Thandi o se tseye kae (im saying the gut to shout at me Thandi where did get it)

Ruslan: amour look i...

she interrupted him

Thandi: ema pele abuti o sa ntsena moganong assomblief (wait a minute bro don't interrupt me please)....all I want to know from you is, the liver ke ra se..be..te Ruslan to shout at me like

that where did you get it heh.....first of all I didn't know I was pregnant so I want to know gore where did you get the liver, the audacity kera sona se..be..te to talk to me like that

*** She said with an angry look on her face and Ruslan just looked at her shocked to the core***

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

*** Castiel arrived and he asked to see Ray and Mbali went to wake him up and the first thing he said when he saw Ray was " damn you look like shit"....anyway they now just walked inside his study room and as soon as the door closed Castiel busted out with loud laughter***

Ray: mxm so Ruu told you

Castiel: a little but reading your wife's mind just painted a clear picture of what happened to you

he said laughing

Ray: mxm

Castiel: damn your wife is gangster man

Ray sighed and went to sit down then his eyes landed on his signed basketball nicely placed on his custom made bookshelf and he frowned

Castiel: what?

***he just went to it and there was a note attached to ithe took the note and it read;

“ im ready to fix our marriage now unless you want round 2 of the whole shit then im game my love”

he sighed shaking his head and he ended up chuckling then Castiel took the note from him and read it then he laughed

Castiel: so are you ready to fix things or you want round 2?

he said laughing

Ray: its not funny man

Castiel: it is cause you met your fucken match man.... its true when they say dynamites comes in small packages....damn she's gangster and I like her in fact im glad you married her

Ray put the letter down and he went to sit down and he clicked his tongue

Ray: you don't know what I've been through so stop praising her barbaric act Castiel

then there was a knock on the door and Mbali walked in with a tray....she walked to them and she put the tray down and it had two plates of food

Mbali: I ordered your favourite food from your favourite restaurant

she said with a smile

Ray: thanks but im not hungry

Mbali: don't be silly baby you need to eat so you

can gain some strength haw cause you look a bit pale sthandwa sam

Castiel: mmmmh he does

Ray gave him a deadly stare

Mbali: see even Cass agrees with me now eat up

Castiel: don't worry I'll make sure he eats

Mbali: thank you

she said smiling at him

Mbali: ok then call me if you need anything else ok

Castiel: we will our wife

she laughed and she kissed Ray's cheek and she walked out and as soon as the door closed Castiel laughed

Ray: im not eating that food....i love her with everything in me but im not ready to die....im not

eating!

NIGERIA

****Mj moved a bit with his eyes still closed, he felt something on his lips and he groaned...his hand automatically went to his mouth and it touched something soft then that thing moved to his left eye making noise and that's when he got alarmed...he quickly slapped it off his face and he opened his eyes sitting up straight and what he saw made his heart to skip a beat then continue beating at a fast pace....he moved back looking scared with his eyes moving around and he could see he was in a small room filled with frogs with a small window that brought in some light and the worst thing is he has a phobia of frogs***

Mj: no...no...no

***he said looking at the frogs jumping around

the small room making noise***

Mj: SOMEONE HELP ME...HELP
MEEE....PLEASEEE OOO

Voice: since you like going around shooting people and causing your mama and papa heart attacks then this will be your prison for the time being to calm the fuck down and think about your life and the frogs will be your cell mates....

the voice spoke from the other side of the door

Mj: please ooo please man I dey learn my lesson abeg let me out

he begged still rooted on his spot with his eyes on the frogs

Voice: next time it will be a real police cell with real cell mates who would tear that ass up....so think about your life ooo! anyway be nice to your cell mates and don't mind them cause they tend to be noisy

the guy chuckled and walked away with Mj shouting and begging him to open the door while crying

Guy: you two are cruel man.....he's freaked out in there man he's even crying

Heath: bros water pass garri (bro things have reached a breaking point) this boy need to learn man...Mj is too spoilt and im afraid one day he'll do something that will ruin his life....he always do shit cause he knows we will bail him out of it but one day he's gonna mess with the wrong people and bros mmmh...

he said shaking his head

Jabu: yeah imagine if that girl was a daughter of one of those chiefs that have influence in high places heh....or the chief was some heartless motherfucker and when they walked in on them fucking he put a bullet on his head instead of beating him up

Guy: I don hear bros (I hear you bros)

Heath: he maybe a teenager but next year he's going to varsity and varsity is no child's play man....that place can become hell for you if you're no focused...yes its fine to enjoy yourself and make new friends but that's where you also make enemies man, that's where you shape your life and future or ruin it completely and with Mj thinking he's above anything and everyone.... im afraid cause im sure he'll make sure every freaken person knows he's our brother

Jabu: mmmmh eish..... life in SA is fast and dangerous bros and if you're not careful it will swallow you nja yam....the gangs there are too much and they target young boys to recruit them...then there's drugs and shit and Mj is not focused man, he's too childish and irresponsible and we don't wanna wake up one morning to the police telling us to come and

identify his body

Heath sighed looking worried

Jabu: damn eish Mshikaro skopo saka sa opa
cause ke boletse paragraph e yotlhe ka se
ngamla fela yeses (I have a headache from
speaking the whole paragraph in English damn)

Heath laughed

Heath: yeah you did damn....

Jabu: ke sho lemadlozi a ka a maketse (im
sure even my ancestors are shocked)

***Heath laughed out loud then after he calmed
down he explained what Jabu said to the guy
and he also laughed***

INSERT.....17

.

.

.

****AT THANDI'S NEW HOUSE****

Ruslan: umm Amor look im sorry ok

Thandi: I didn't ask if you're sorry or not Ruslan I asked you gore where did you get the liver...sebete sa go nshout(a) (the gut to shout at me)

Ruslan sighed and he got up and he tried to touch her but she moved away from him with a pissed off look on her face

Ruslan: amor don't do this please

he said with a pained look on his face

Thandi: Ruslan im waiting ok....im pressed so I need to pee but im not going anywhere until you answer my question

Ruslan looked at her shocked

Ruslan: ummm ok look, I shouldn't have amor I don't know what got into me, I just panicked my

love and im sorry

he didn't know what to say that will make her calm down....that's all he could come up with....she looked at him fuming then she clicked her tongue and walked away

Ruslan: amor!

he said going after her....she ignored him and she went inside the bathroom and slammed the door shut and locked it then Ruslan sighed and he rubbed his face

Ruslan: this is gonna be one of the longest 9 months of my life

he stood there and waited for her to come out...after she did her business she flushed and washed her hands then she walked out and found Ruslan standing there with his hands inside his pockets

Thandi: im hungry

***he raised his eyebrow looking at her ***

Thandi: what?

he cleared his throat

Ruslan: umm nothing I just thought you're still angry at me that's all

Thandi: I am but your child is hungry so is there still food here?

he stopped himself from smiling

Ruslan: yeah we cooked enough food

she walked passed him going to the kitchen and he smiled widely shaking his head

Ruslan: this child better have mercy on me, im too old for all this

***he went after her...then his phone beeped and he checked, it was a message from Castiel...he was telling him that he's going back to KZN but he'll come back in a few days' time....then his phone rang and it was an

international call and he answered it***

Ruslan: yeah

Voice: dad

Ruslan: Carl

Carl: yeah how you doing....i saw your email

he said with a worried tone

Ruslan: im still kicking and my enemies still tremble at my presence

they both laughed

Carl: good to know....umm you said the Brethren's are coming and that my long lost uncle is back on the email

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: yeah apparently there's a new leader and he coming after Castiel and I well more like coming after me so I need to make sure that you're safe

Carl sighed

Carl: do they know your current location

Ruslan: they know we are in South Africa so it's a matter of time before they find the exact location we are at now

Carl sighed getting more worried

Carl: ok so what can I do...how can I help?

Ruslan: I want you close to me so I'll know you're safe

Carl sighed

Carl: what about school dad and mom, you know she'll flip if I leave without a valid reason...even if you tell her the slight truth about why im coming to you she'll still flip and cause unnecessary drama

Ruslan sighed and he rubbed his head

Ruslan: I hear you my boy I just want you to be safe that's all

Carl: I know dad...look I'll be extra careful and during school recess I'll come to you how about that

Ruu sighed again

Ruslan: ok...you still got your potions and you still safe-proofing the house right

Carl: yeah....with the things I see dad I'd be a fool not to do all that

Ruslan: ok

Carl: and the prodigal uncle?

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: we buried the hatched but damn he's a pain in the ass

Carl laughed

Carl: so when I come to visit I'll meet him right?

Ruslan: yeah

Carl: I can't wait to see a real life Vamp....I've

seen ghosts and demons to last me a life time
now im gonna meet a Vamp who's my uncle
damn

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: you know Carl im happy you're my son
...the way im so proud of you

he chuckled shaking his head

Ruslan: you have no idea

Carl: I wish mom and her family accepts me the
way I am like you do

Ruslan: I accept you and im proud of you every
day so fuck them and their crazy ugly asses

Carl laughed

Carl: imagine how they'll act if they knew im a
wizard and also a son to a wizard....a nephew to
a Vampire/wizard and a grandson to a witch

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: I don't even wanna imagine it

they both laughed

Carl: ok dad let me go, we'll talk later....Jeremy is here

Ruslan: mmmmh remember no rubber no play there's not cure for Aids yet

Carl: DAD!

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: bye

he ended the call still laughing and Thandi came out of the kitchen with her half eaten food on a plate and she stood there looking at him with a frown on her face

Thandi: im angry at you and wena o busy wa tshega tshega....mmmm go monate go ba wena neh (and you are busy laughing....mmmh it's nice to be you I see)

*** she said all that with a disgusted look on her

face then she walked passed him going to the lounge and Ruslan chuckled shaking his head and he followed her***

****NIGERIA****

*** They finally got Mj out of that room and he was still shaking with his sweatpants wet from his pee...he was sitting on a chair and he was drinking water with his shaky hands holding the bottle....he put the bottle down and he wiped his tears off looking down then Jabu and Heath sat in front of him on their own chairs***

Heath: did you grow some balls in there or should we put you back in

He quickly looked at him shaking his head

Mj: no...no bros abeg I've learned my lesson

Heath: have you really?

Mj: ye...yes...yes

he said nodding repeatedly

Heath: good

Jabu: Iwena tlogela go act(a) ekare o nyaope
boy a tlhoka a fix man (stop acting like a drug
addict wanting a fix)

***Heath laughed ***

Mj: bros not now ok abeg

Jabu: tsek o sa na le molomo le nou? (you can
still talk even now?)

Mj: mxm

Jabu: wetsetsa nna mxm? (you're doing that
mxm to me?)

Heath: mjava vag tuu (Jabu wait please)

he said chuckling

Mj: im a man now bros so be careful or you'll
regret it

Jabu: man ya go e thotela.... fotsek (a man who

pee on himself... piss off)

Heath laughed

Heath: I swear Mj will still talk even when he's dead....you should be quiet, still scared about what you went through but no you're here locking horns with Jabu

Mj: im in a bad mood abeg so no vex me.....im sweating and I smell like shit so ya'll better leave me before someone loses his teeth ooo

he said with a serious tone then Jabu and Heath laughed looking at him

Jabu: o serious?

Mj: as a heart attack....i survived a heart attack in there so una no vex me im in a very bad mood

they laughed again

Jabu: mxm bona mo ntwana we all have phobias... ah ah die boy (this boy)...gape a waya

diheleng wa boy a mna so chilexa (you didn't go to hell and came back so relax)

Mj: do you know how scary frogs are bros....besides the scary noises they make they are also scary as f...

Jabu: sampotsa ka digwagwa man, a di tshose dilo tseo...mara wa jaja na gore rotwe e tshosa byang mmm? (don't tell me about frogs man, those things are not scary...do you know how scary a rat is?)

Heath laughed

Mj: what's that

he asked confused

Heath: a big rat

Mj: mxm we eat giant rats as a delicacy here in Nigeria so abeg don't compare yourself with me

Heath laughed

Jabu: hei wena e seng a ko Alex aka Alexandra

....a le a ja lesega a le fetse le marapo a teng kao chaela (hey not at that place called Alex aka Alexandra.... those rats eat a baby along with that baby's bones im telling you)

Heath laughed out loud

Jabu: heh I remember een dag maOulady a tswa stene a yo tlhoma mtlhatlhane ko Alex daar and a vaiya le nna (one day my mother went to look for her own place at a place called Alex, she build a shack there and she left with me)

he chuckled shaking his head

Jabu:the following morning ke re ka tsoga ko shapa six-nine.... heh poi e rile ke bula matlho ka kereya rotwe next to my face on top of my pillow ntwana e gototse matlho (I wanted to wake up and go take a piss....heh boy when I opened my eyes I found a huge rat next to my face on top of my pillow boy staring at me)

Heath and Mj laughed out loud

Jabu: ntwana ka goella e kare mei Oulady o
bodile...I rile oulady a tsena a tlhaga ko ntle
ankera ke nametse pala that was in the middle
of the room holding the roofing gore e sa
wela...ke le ko dimo ntwana ke goela blaen (boy
I screamed as if my mother was dead.....and
when my mother walked in coming from
outside she found me up on the roof holding on
tight to a pole that was in the middle of the
room holding the roof so it doesn't cave in.....i
was up there screaming my lungs out)

they continued to laugh

Jabu: nako eo moroto le lephyega di reng mo
ngwaneng (I even peed and shit myself)

they continued to laugh their lungs out

Jabu: bona dai deng ne e le kana (it was this
big)

he said showing them its "supposed" size

Jabu: im sure ke utlwile ebile rotwe ela e bolela
(im sure I even heard that rat talk)

Heath&Mj: haaah

*** They said at the same time indicating that he was lying and Jabu laughed***

Jabu: ka le chaela man....im sure e rile “ ro re o mang byanong wena”(im telling ya'll....im sure it said “ who are we going to say you are ”)

they laughed out loud with Mj holding his stomach

Jabu: ntwana same day oulady ampusetsa ko magriza and I never went back there again until ouladay a movela to another place (boy same day my mother took me back to my granny's house and I never went back there again until my mother moved to another place)

they continued to laugh

Jabu: and that's when my phobia ya bo

rotwe(of rats) started

Mj: how old were you

he said still laughing

Jabu: 13.....then ka ya danyaneng and ka kereya skoroponyana sa ko laundry ka mo gare ga danyane wa bona (then I went to jail and I found some job to keep me busy in there)

then he chuckled shaking his head

Jabu: heh.....one day ke le busy ka daar, ka tlosa a pile of dirty sheets and clothes mo gatshe ke re ko lokela ka mo mocheneng then booom ka kereya di rotwe tsei two di jana missionary style baba(one day when I was busy in there, I removed a pile of dirty sheets and clothes on the floor as I wanted to put them inside the washing machine then booom I found two rats fucking missionary style)

Heath and Mj busted out with loud laughter

Jabu: mfowethu gore ke blome daar and ke di bogele di jana while ke teskomora, ka ja fatshe.....ke tswile ka daar ka 120 ke tshela 1 blaen..... ke bile ka stopa ke vader mo passaging(my brother instead of standing there and watch them fuck each other while I masturbate, I ran.....i ran like my life depended on it....i only stopped when a warden stopped me on the passage) worse part I didn't even know where I was running to

****Mj was now on the floor laughing his ass out***

Jabu: and erile ge ke fetsa go botsa dai bari gore why ke tsogile a laga blaen (and after telling that fool why I was shaking like that he laughed at me) and right there and then I told myself that I have to fight off that stupid phobia cause it made me look like a wimp so I went back there and even though the rats where gone I told myself that I'll never fear borotwe

(rats)....haaah nou rotwe nyana a fete mopedlaka
ke e leragela kwa e be ke e roge ka mmayona
wa sfebe le papa yona wa go rota ka pele (now
if a rat passes next to me I'll kick it away and
also swear at it about its mother who's a bitch
and its father who nut quickly)

Heath: whooah Jabu...whoah man....my
stomach hurts man

***he said laughing while holding his
stomach...as for Mj he couldn't even speak,
tears were just running down his face as he
laughed his ass off***

Jabu: so wa bona ntwana (so you see boy) we
did that for your own good

heath and Mj just continued to laugh

Jabu: ai man fetsang go laga re bolele dilo tse
serious (finish laughing so we can talk some
serious stuff)

***they laughed until they stopped and Jabu

gave them some time to calm down as he sat there with a smile on his face***

Heath: wa bona wena Jabu you need to have your own comedy show....you need to go join Peter Mashata, Mashabela, Sales man and others cause wa hlanya straight (you are crazy straight)

Jabu: hai nka se loke mfowethu...ga pe nna ke hlanya nako eo eseng every day (hai I won't survive it man cause I don't always act crazy)

they laughed

Heath: yeah right

Jabu: kao chaela (im telling you)

Mj: damn I should've recorded you

***Anyway they talked to Mj and made him understand that he needs to grow up and set set a good example for his nieces and nephews cause already Mpendulo and Sbu look up to

him....they apologized for traumatizing him like that and they promised him that they'll make it up to him then they hugged it out***

Mj: let's go I need a bath filled with warm water mixed with bleach

they laughed going to the car

Jabu: o reng moroto wa sbabo mongwaneng

***they laughed with Mj busy chasing
Jabu...then Heath smiled being thankful that Mj understood why they did what they did to him....he admits that it was extreme but they needed to really scare him for him to come down to earth....he was moving to South Africa in a few months' time so he needs him to be focused cause their enemies might use him to get to them and he can't stomach the thought of anything bad happening to him or any of his family members all because of his childish behavior....he just wanted to toughen him a

bit***

**** MENZI'S HOUSE****

Menzi: are you sure you're ok

He asked Kazi who seemed lost in thoughts, they were having breakfast the following morning...she was thinking about what Castiel said to her, She wanted to think that maybe he was kidding but the seriousness of his voice made her think that he might be serious

Kazi: yeah it's just one of those days you know

Menzi sighed

Menzi: im here for you if you want to talk ok

She nodded smiling a bit

Menzi: so what time are you knocking off?

Kazi: angazi (I don't know) maybe around six

Menzi: uyahlanya! (you're mad!)

She laughed

Kazi: I knew you'd say that mxm

He smiled looking at her

Kazi: what?

Menzi: nex its just I can't believe you're mine

she looked at him with a raised eyebrow

Kazi: I didn't know I was yours mina

He chuckled picking his phone that indicated that he just received a message

Menzi: you can act clueless all you like
sthandwa sam but deep down you know ukuthi
ungowami (that you're mine)

***she laughed and he opened the message
and read it and immediately the smile that was
on his face vanished slowly***

Kazi: is everything ok?

he cleared his throat getting up

Menzi: yeah its work.....I need to make a quick call I'll be right back ok

She nodded and he went over to her and kissed her forehead and he walked away dialing the numbers that send that message to him and it send him straight to voice mail and he clicked his tongue.....he then called his IT boy

Guy: boss

Menzi: Fingers I just received a message on my phone a minute or so ago and I want you to trace the numbers for me asap

Fingers: sure bozza

then he ended the call and he went back to Kazi

Kazi: you ok

Menzi: yeah

***he kissed her cheek and sat down and he continued to eat his breakfast with a worried

look on his face then his phone rang after some time and it was Fingers***

Menzi: talk to me

Fingers: the numbers are from a burner phone boss so I can't trace them

Menzi: damn it!

He sighed

Menzi: its ok shap

he ended the call and when he looked up he found Kazi looking at him

Menzi: it's a work thing sthandwa sam but I'll sort it out don't worry

She sighed

Kazi: ok...I just hope it's nothing bad cause I can't handle a moody Menzi

Menzi chuckled

Menzi: aow since when because the last time I

checked you could handle a moody me

Kazi: I was kidnapped Mapholoba so im very fragile

Menzi smiled wide and he leaned forward

Menzi: say my clan name again

She blushed

Kazi: hai suka...lets finish up so we can go

Menzi: ngiyakcela sthandwa sam....please

she giggled

Kazi: Mapholoba...happy now

He chuckled

Menzi: more than you'll ever know and from now on call me that

she laughed

Kazi: you should stop calling me Sthandwa sakho cause usaseskhathini sokulila man

Menzi (you should stop calling me your love

cause you're still in a mourning period)

he gave her a bored look

Menzi: ungazong'bora Ntandokazi.... ekseni
kangaka pho

***He said with a woman's voice and she
laughed***

Kazi: anyway let's go tuu

Menzi: ujageleni (why are you in a hurry)

Kazi: dude I haven't been in my salon for quite a
while now

She said standing up

Menzi: ubani udude Ntandokazi? (who are you
calling a dude Ntandokazi)

***she laughed clearing the table and he got up
and held her in place as she laughed***

Menzi: ubani udude (who are you calling a dude)

Kazi: no one now let me go

He then tickled her smiling and she laughed out loud trying to get off his hold

Kazi: MENZI...MENZI MAN STO...STOPPP

Menzi: ubani udude? (who are you calling a dude)

he said still smiling as he tickled her

Kazi: im sorry...you're not a dude...you're not... please stoppp....i'll pee on myself man Menzi stoppp

He stopped and she hit him on his chest laughing and he held her hands and looked at her

Menzi: call me dude again and I'll tickle you until you pee on yourself ok

She tried to put up a serious face but she failed*

Kazi: fine mxm

***she tried to wiggle out of his hold but he kept

her in place and he cupped her face with his right hand and he kissed her lips slowly, she kissed him back and after some time they pulled out from the kiss and he looked into her eyes and she looked down shyly***

Menzi: I love you Ntandokazi, i may not be a perfect man but ngiyakthanda (I love you)

she sighed and looked at him

Menzi: just give us a chance and I'll make you the happiest woman on earth...Please sthandwa sam

Kazi: you're still in mourning Menzi....can we talk about this after your mourning period....please

Menzi: mourning period yani Ntandokazi....i was cleansed hao

Kazi: married people stay about a year mourning for their spouses Menzi

Menzi: uyahlanya (you are crazy).... a year
yani....you want my dick to shrink neh

Kazi: ah ah

She said shocked

Menzi: hey angeke ngizilele omunye umfazi
mina (I won't mourn for another woman) while I
sleep next to the one that holds my heart never!

Kazi: but it's for your own good Mapholoba and
she was your wife not just any woman

Menzi: look you can call me Mapholoba all you
want kodwa I was cleansed and im clean so
mina nawe siyajola ksuka manje (you and I are
dating from now on)

***She just looked at him shocked and he
perked her lips and helped her clear the table***

****AT KAZI'S SALON****

***she walked in and she immediately stopped,

she wanted to turn back cause the place she just walked in looked nothing like hers....she frowned with her heart beating fast then she spotted her employees busy doing peoples hair and nails and she just stood there with her jaws hanging***

Lady: OMG BOSS LADY!

one of her employees said rushing to her and she hugged her

Lady: OMG I can't believe you're here....when we heard about your kidnapping we were devastated

they all rushed to her and hugged her

Janet: don't worry I'll explain the revamp

the lady that manages her business when she's not around said seeing that Kazi was shocked by the complete revamp of her salon

Kazi: ok..ok...ok we will catch up later, now back to work please

she said coming back from her shock and they all went back to their customers with smiles on their faces not believing that she was actually here alive.....then Kazi went to her office with Janet following her and as soon as the door to her office opened she froze

Janet: you like it boss lady?

Kazi looked around and walked in slowly then she turned and looked at Janet

Kazi: who... I mean I was still saving up for a revamp so who did this... I mean who paid for all this

Janet: Mr Ngcobo did when you were still missing

she went and sat down on her new leather office chair and she exhaled loudly not believing all this

Kazi: wow ummm and he never said anything since I came back

Janet: im sure he wanted to surprise you

she said smiling and Kazi sighed feeling emotional cause the place looked beautiful, it looked like one of those expensive salons

Kazi: I can't believe he did this

She said with a low tone

Janet: you better hold on to him boss lady, he's a keeper....anyway let me give you some time to regroup and I'll come back and fill you in on everything

Kazi: ummm yeah...thanks

Janet: umm before I go can I get you anything....Coffee, juice or tea

Kazi: umm no thanks maybe later

Janet: ok and just so you know we even have a small kitchen which have a coffee machine,

microwave and a new fridge

***she giggled and walked out and Kazi sighed
then she took her phone and dialed Menzi with
tears running down her cheeks***

Menzi: you like it

*** she sniffed wiping her falling tears***

Menzi: sthandwa sam...Ntandokazi?

Kazi: ye..yes I like it in fact I love it...Thank you
Mapholoba

he breathed out

Menzi: im glad you do

Kazi: but you do know you didn't have to right

Menzi: I know but I wanted to

Kazi: well thank you.....so since I didn't ask you
to go bankrupt because of me, do I have to pay
you back

Menzi: ungazongihlanyela Ntandokazi (don't

piss me off Ntandokazi)

She laughed

Menzi: the only thing you can do for me is agree to being mine and mine alone qa

she blushed

Kazi: mmmmh qeda ngesikhathi sakho sokulila
(finish with your mourning period) then I'll thank you properly...how's that?

Menzi: you serious?

Kazi: as a heart attack

Menzi laughed sounding excited

Menzi: ok but just so you know I was cleansed....anyway let me get back to work we will finish up with this conversation later at home

Kazi: ok

Menzi: ngiyakthanda uyezwa (I love you)

she bit her lower lip

Kazi: yeah ngiyezwa (I hear you)

he laughed and ended the call then she breathed out and looked up smiling then she froze....Castiel was standing by the closed door with a pissed off look on his face

Kazi: how...how did you get in...Ii didn't hear the door op...

Castiel: I snuck in

He said dismissing her then he locked the door and walked to her as she stood up feeling uneasy....in fact she was scared

Castiel: I won't hurt you so relax

he sat on the edge of the table facing her

Castiel: sit!

she slowly sat down and he looked at her with a serious look on her face

Kazi: what...what are you doing here?

Castiel: I see you thought I was joking when I told you not to let that boy touch you

Kazi swallowed hard and she breathed out and she gained the courage and she pulled a straight face

Kazi: first of all im not yours Castiel or whatever your name is and secondly you won't tell me what to do or who to date or let alone tell me that I shouldn't let another man touch me where else you're nothing to me

he raised an eyebrow looking at her

Castiel: im nothing to you huh?

she just looked at him

Castiel: so you don't find me attractive?....or you don't wish to taste how my lips tastes like? or you don't wish to feel my strong arms around your sexy body?

He said as he remembered how she thought of him that time they met while she was shopping and she swallowed hard with her eyes slightly popped out and her jaws hanging a bit cause now she was thinking of his cologne, how good it smells and how good looking he is even though she was a bit scared of him

Castiel: you don't want me Charlotte?

she blinked fast as she tried to compose herself also surprised that he knew her other name

Castiel: answer me

Kazi: no I...i don't

Castile: is it?

he said as he raised his eyebrow at her in a cute way with a slight smirk on his face

Kazi: yes now can you leave

***he chuckled and he moved and leaned over

to her face.....their faces were inches away from each other***

Kazi: what...what are you doing?

she asked with a low tone

Castiel: do you wanna know why I say you're mine Charlotte.....

she swallowed hard looking at him

Castiel: it's because I can make you wet without even touching you

she gasped

Kazi: can...can you just leave Castiel...please

Castiel: your mind says one thing and your mouth is saying another thing Charlotte.....so which one is it...to fuck you here and now or to leave?

***she swallowed hard wondering how he knew what she was thinking.... she frowned looking at him with her mind now all over the place...."

HOW THE FUCK DID HE KNOW?" is what she thought***

Castiel: I know cause im one of the blessed ones in this world now im waiting for my answer Charlotte

he said smirking and he leaned closer and stared into her eyes and she stared back too trying to keep his gaze but she failed and she looked away with her heart pounding hard

Castiel: you know I can fuck you hard now and you'll cum all over this table shaking like a leave

her breath hinged as she became wet instantly and he got closer to a point that their noses nearly touched

Castiel: or I can eat your pussy up so hard that you end up coming all over my face hard with your body shaking like a leave

***she swallowed hard closing her thighs tight as she felt her lace thong getting wetter by the

second***

Castiel: no open them, why are you closing them huh?

her chest was now moving up and down as she was breathing hard

Castiel: I said open them Charlotte

she swallowed hard again and she opened her thighs slowly

Castiel: so which one is it Charlotte....what do you want me to do?

she just sat there swallowing hard repeatedly as if something was stuck on her throat

Castiel: im already hard as fuck, all I need to do is put you on top of this table with your legs wide open and I'll just pull your underwear aside or I'll just rip it off and slide in my dick inside your juicy wet pussy and let your pussy walls

hug my gigantic cock as I stand there not moving an inch letting you get used to it, and when I decide to finally move baby you'll call all your clan names word by word until an electrifying orgasm wash over your entire body and you'll scream out loud like a person who's seeing a ghost....and from there on I'll fuck your brains out until you pass out

she gasped as she released her juices on her underwear and her thighs shook as her bottom lip trembled

Castiel: you'll pass out and wake up and you'll still find me fucking you good

Kazi: sto...stop....

he smirked as he watched her catching her breath and he leaned back and he stood up straight and the visible bulge on his jeans was evident enough that he was packing pretty well down there

Castiel: mmmmh and you're wearing a skirt nc
nc nc

****he said moving to the other side of the table
and he fixed his bulge and he looked at Kazi
who was trying to compose herself now feeling
extremely embarrassed***

Castiel: now you see why I say you're mine
Charlotte.....i can make you cum without
touching you so imagine what I can do as I held
you in place fucking you good with deep strokes
as I go in and out of you nice and slow

Kazi: Castiel ple..please don...jeez stop talking
****he chuckled and he went to the door and he
stopped and turned and he had a serious look
on his face***

Castiel: this is your first strike Charlotte....

He then unlocked and opened the door

Castiel: don't forget to clean yourself up.

he got out closing the door behind him

Kazi: Jesus Christ!

she said looking between her legs with her heart still pounding hard against her chest

INSERT.....18

.

.

.

NARRATED

After Kazi cleaned herself up she called Janet in and Janet briefed her on everything and went back to work after that...right then her phone rang it was her cousin Phumi and she answered

Kazi: babe hey

Phumi: hey hey...how's you bathong

Kazi: ngiright wena (im alright and you)

Phumi: im always super you know that, so are you ready to host me mogirl

Kazi laughed

Kazi: ofcourse... yho I miss you

Phumi: I miss you too babe so im gonna take the morning bus so I'll arrive there go sa le early neh

Kazi: so o serious you'll never catch a flight

Phumi: never... I don't want it to explode with me inside yho I cant shem....i mean don't even have kids babe so I need to leave a little

Phumiyana wa maminanyana(a little Phumi with some snorts on her face) before I die

Kazi laughed

Kazi: gosh Phumelele mara

Phumi: yho hai leave me tuu....anyway let me go back to work we will talk later ok

Kazi: ok shap

they ended the call and Kazi laughed shaking her head....well she wanted to buy a plane ticket for her but she blatantly refused cause she said she doesn't want it to explode in the sky with her inside

LATER IN THE EVENING AT MENZI'S HOUSE

they were having supper and Kazi's mind was far, she was playing with her food around the plate and Menzi could see something was bothering her

Menzi: sthandwa sam

Kazi: mmmmh

Menzi: what's wrong?

Kazi: mmmmh

Menzi: KAZI!

he said raising his voice and she snapped out of it

Kazi: ye...yes?

Menzi: where's your mind at?

he asked with a frown on his face

Kazi: umm.... its here

Menzi: don't make a fool Ntandokazi I can see something serious is occupying your mind....what's wrong?

Kazi: ummm its nothing Mapholoba...I just can't stop thinking about my renovated salon

she lied, she was thinking about what Castiel did to her earlier on, she couldn't believe that actually happened to her and now she wondered how he is in bed if he can make her cum without touching her.... Anyway Menzi gave her an intense look and she looked down feeling guilty

Kazi: ummm also that.... that you're good for me....I was asking myself why im giving you such a tough time cause i know I still love you and i...I want to be with you so I was just asking

myself questions nje

She thought of a good enough lie quickly

Menzi: what questions?

*** "ooh God" she thought***

Kazi: that do I want to wait or to just go with the flow you know..... I mean life is too short and tonight might be my last or your last and I don't want any regrets Menzi...eish I don't know if I make sense

Menzi: what regrets Ntandokazi?

she sighed

Kazi: of giving you a chance...of giving us a chance

Menzi breathed out and he looked at her

Menzi: ufunu ukthini Ntandokazi (what are you trying to say Ntandokazi)

she swallowed hard

Kazi: that no more waiting....no more playing hard to get....i love you Menzi and I want to...to be with you

Menzi face changed and you could see he was getting emotional

Menzi: you mean that Ntandokazi?

Kazi: yeah

she said nodding and he got up and went to her and pulled her up.....he just cupped her face looking into her eyes with nothing but love

Menzi: I love you

she swallowed

Kazi: I love you too Menzi

he leaned in and they kissed passionately....after some time they pulled out of the kiss and he kissed her forehead

Menzi: ngiyakthanda yezwa (I love you you hear me)

she nodded

Kazi: nami ngiyakthanda yezwa(I love you too
you hear me)

***they both laughed then she bit her lower
lip***

Kazi: im ready

he raised an eyebrow

Menzi: ready?

she nodded

Kazi: pleaseummm....make love to me

Mapholoba

***Menzi looked at her with his eyes popped out
then he composed himself and he breathed
out***

Menzi: are you sure?

***she nodded biting her lower lip and he licked
his lips and he leaned in and they kissed

again.....soon the kiss got heated and Menzi grabbed her butt cheeks and he lifted her up and she wrapped her legs around his waist with her hands around his neck and he went to the bedroom with her as they kissed hungrily***

He entered her slowly and stopped moving as he clenched his jaws while Kazi moaned digging her nails into his flesh on his back

Menzi: fuck I missed you Ntandokazi....i fucken missed you

he bend down and they kissed with him moving slowly missionary style while she wrapped her legs around his waist

Kazi: mmmmh

***she moaned as they kissed then her mind went to Castiel and what he did to her earlier but he was brought back to her senses when he increased his pace and that made her to moan

louder***

Kazi: fuck Ca....Menzi fuck!

***she said as she felt nothing but pure pleasure as he went deeper...as for Menzi he increased his pace thrusting in and out of her ***

Menzi: look at me Ntandokazi

she did moaning while biting her lower lip

Menzi: I love you yezwa

she nodded and he went deeper and she groaned

Kazi: fuck baby!

he smirked and dropped on top of her and he held her with his head buried on her neck

Menzi: drop your legs baby

***she did and she opened them wider and he started fucking her going faster and she lost her

mind..... he went in and out of her as he groaned, and his sexy groans drove her insane***

Kazi: ooh yes Mapholoba...yes baby fuck me harder baby!

***she said and he lost his mind....his hands immediately went to her ass and he grabbed it tight pulling her lower body up a bit and he went deeper and faster and that's when an unexpected orgasm hit her and she screamed and yep Mapholoba fucked her through it.....well after a few thrusts he went in and out of her faster groaning loud and she knew he was near so she held his tight and he went faster and faster then he slammed into her and he groaned loud pushing his dick deeper and deeper then he cursed and stayed on that position for some time trying to catch his breath then he pulled himself up and he slid out and he watched as his juices dripped from her

nana on to the bed and her hand went to her pussy and she smeared them all over her pussy moaning and he bit his lower lips then he bend and perked her lips....he got out of bed and he went to the bathroom and he came back with a wet towel and he cleaned her, he then got out of bed again and he pulled her to the edge of the bed where he stood***

Kazi: shit baby.....

She said with a low tone

Menzi: im not yet done with you sthandwa sam....

he said as he stood between her legs with his semi hard dick and he opened them wide and he positioned himself

Menzi: ngiyakthanda yezwa (I love you)

she nodded and he slid in and he groaned while she moaned

Menzi: damn I swear your pussy will be my downfall sthandwa sam

***he started moving and she continued to moan loud while holding on to the bedcovers as he fucked her.....well he fucked her good until a violent orgasm hit her and he stopped moving and he pulled out then turned her around with her body still shaking from the orgasm and he slid in from the back with his left hand holding her natural hair and his right hand holding her waist tight and he continued fucking her deep and fast as she held on to the bedcovers screaming her lungs out cause nigga was tearing her nana apart but the pleasure she was also feeling was just out of this world....

Well the second round lasted longer and by the time he was done with her she couldn't feel her pussy and she was even struggling to keep her eyes open but Menzi wasn't done cause he was still hard, so after cleaning her up he pushed her

to the middle of the bed and turned her on lay on her back and he slid in her missionary style again and fucked her brains out***

In the early hours of the morning she woke up to Menzi sliding in her and she flinched cause she was sore down there..... he then started thrusting in and out of her and she moaned out loud as soon as the pain disappeared, he then he pulled her legs up putting them on his shoulders and he started moving in and out of her slowly

Kazi: Gosh Menzi....

Menzi: yes baby

he said as he increased his pace a bit and she moaned louder holding tight to his arms

Menzi: ahhh.... ahhh.... ahhh...damn baby!

***that's what he said with his bold voice as he

enjoyed her wet nana.... he went faster hitting the right spot and an unexpected orgasm hit her and she screamed shaking and he didn't stop, he went harder chasing his own happy ending and after a few thrusts he slammed into her pushing himself deeper and he groaned from deep down his throat and he cursed***

Menzi: FUCK....

he dropped her legs and bends down and perked her lips

Menzi: fuck that was good sthandwa sam

***she smiled at him lazily and she just closed her eyes and he pulled out and he went between her legs and kissed her pussy and took the towel and wiped both of them.....he then laid next to her and pulled her closer and she rested her head on his hard chest and they both fell asleep again....

Now they both just finished getting ready for

work, but before they went to shower Kazi woke up to Menzi having her in a spooning position and after they were done they went to shower and had another round in there....as for Kazi her nana was still numb and she hoped that she'll be able to walk properly and not like someone who still has an invinsible dick between her legs***

Menzi: you sure you'll be able to concentrate today at work

He said teasing her and she laughed

Kazi: leave me tuu

he chuckled looking happy....it was like a huge weight was lifted off his shoulders, he felt light and happy....the way he's happy you wouldn't even miss the smile that is plastered on his face....he was like a small child who was just given candy, it was just cute to watch him like that

Kazi: so you gonna smile like that the whole day?

he pulled her closer and perked her lips

Menzi: im a happy man sthatwa sam and today my employees are gonna see that

she laughed

Kazi: what did my pussy do to you

Mapholoba....i mean I've never seen you this happy

he sighed and he put his forehead on hers and they stayed like that for some time

Menzi: you know sthatwa sam when you were abducted...

he sighed and pulled his head back and he looked into her eyes

Menzi: I almost lost my mind....i didn't know what to do with myself....i swear beksele kancane nje ukuthi ngihlanye ngamapela (it was just a matter of time before I lost my mind

for real)

he sighed and she wrapped her arms around his waist looking up at him

Menzi: and when I saw you lying in that hospital bed after they left you outside the police station, I vowed that I'll live the rest of my life making you happy.....i vowed that I'll wife you and grow old with you and our kids

Kazi became emotional thinking about Castiel and what he did to her....she felt guilty like she cheated on Menzi

Kazi: I love you Mapholoba

he perked her lips

Menzi: I love you too sthandwa sam....so when will Phumi arrive this side

Kazi: I don't know but she said she will communicate with me so if she doesn't get me on my phone she's call you ok

Menzi: ok let's go eat I have a meeting out of town

***then Kazi's phone beeped indicating that a message came through and she opened and read it and the message says:

"I see you thought I was joking when I said don't let that boy touch what's mine and now you let him fuck you nc nc nc "

she swallowed hard

Menzi: you ok?

Kazi: arg yah....lets go babe

they walked out

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Mbali: but dad I miss her, she can't just abandon me like this

***She said sulking ***

Pops: ma would never abandon you princess,
right now she's busy touring the world with her
husband before their ancestors remember them
haw

*** he lied and she sighed***

Mbali: I know im being silly and childish about
this but I just miss her so much daddy

Pops: I know baby I miss her too

***she was talking to her father on the
phone....she was sulking cause she couldn't get
hold of her grandmother and Pops lied to her by
saying Ma and baba are traveling the world but
in actually fact she's undergoing chemotherapy
overseas, she didn't want her grandchildren
know about it cause she knew they'll leave their
families and businesses to come and be with
her but more especially stress about her and
she doesn't want that, her son and husband
knowing was enough for her to keep fighting

hard***

Pops: tell you what I'll call baba and tell him to tell ma to call you how's that

Mbali: but why can't I call him myself

Pops: tjeeerrr who's child are you Princess

she laughed

Mbali: yours haw

they both laughed

Mbali: I miss you daddy

Pops: I miss you too my princess....so how's the little one treating you

Mbali: he's behaving if you know what I mean

she said and chuckled

Pops: you know im not happy with the fact that you know about his demon and Ray's demon too

Mbali: well I know about your beast so you

happy with me knowing that daddy

Pops: don't get smart with me young lady

she laughed

Mbali: look now I know that the world is not as black and white as everyone thinks it is dad and that every family has their own secrets and im glad I know about my family secrets cause they opened my eyes and now I can see clearly and im not that naïve little girl anymore

***Pops sighed ***

Mbali: don't worry daddy even if I grow old with grey hair I'll always be your little girl....i'll always sulk to you and cry to you so you haven't lost me and you'll never lose me ok

Pops: I love you baby

he said with an emotional voice

Mbali: I love you too daddy....

***then she heard someone speaking with a

foreign language***

Pops: I have to go baby I'll let baba know ok

Mbali: ok dad

they ended the call and she sighed

Ray: are you really as grown as you claim you are

she turned and found him standing behind her

Mbali: yep

Ray: really....so what you did to me and my things is you acting like a grown up?

Mbali: nope that was me acting like a scorned angry mad black woman

he looked at her with a frown on his face

Mbali: and that wasn't me disrespecting you, nooo because I know one more hard slap from you will land me in hospital this time and if

Saint “the demon” try to fight for me La Parca will send him to hell along with my son’s soul since they are attached to one another so I wasn’t trying to disrespect you, I was just lashing out

He just looked at her...there was something different about her, that innocent and childish vibe she used to give was gone

Ray: lashing out you say?

she nodded and Ray came around and he sat down not far from her

Ray: so every time I fuck up you’ll.... “lash out”

Mbali: nope but every time you cheat on me I’ll... “lash out” and be rest assured that I’ll leave no stone unturned my love

he chuckled

Ray: is that so?

Mbali: yep

Ray: mmmm

Mbali: so....do you still love me or your love for me died with your Maserati and expensive whiskey

he didn't say anything he just looked at her sitting back

Mbali: ohk

she got up feeling disappointed and hurt and she started walking away but he stopped her

Ray: come here

she stopped, swallowed and turned to look at him

Ray: come here jorr!

she sighed and walked to him and he pulled her to sit on his lap facing him then he squeezed her ass

Ray: you should know I'll never stop loving you my flower

she smiled

Mbali: you haven't called me your flower in a while now

Ray: and whose fault is it

Mbali: yours haw

Ray: my fault?...mxm you dey mad (you're crazy)

she laughed and he wrapped his arm around her pulling her closer and he kissed her lips....she smiled kissing him back and he chuckled and stopped kissing her

Ray: couldn't you wait until we done kissing before you can grin like that

she giggled shaking her head

Mbali: no...I haven't felt your lips on mine in a while now so the kiss was a bit ticklish

Ray laughed

Ray: and she says she's a grown ass woman

now

Mbali: mxm

she said pushing him but he tightened the grip around her

Ray: im sorry I hurt you my flower....im sorry I made you cry

she sighed and rested her head between his neck and shoulder

Mbali: and im sorry I disrespected you but im not sorry for “lashing out ” though

Ray sighed

Ray: do you know how much that Maserati and whiskey cost my flower

Mbali: im sure you know how priceless my heart is angithi (right) and you broke it

He sighed

Mbali: so there's nothing that you own that will

amount to you comparing that thing or things to my broken heart

he didn't say anything*

Mbali: but im over all that so I need you to do me a favour for me to be really really really over all that

she said raising her head to look at him

Ray: im listening?

Mbali: I need you to set up a meeting with that bitch called Selinah or Celine, whatever her name is

his eyes popped out

Ray: what?

Mbali: mmmmh I need to have a small talk with her woman to woman

Ray shook his head

Ray: not happening

Mbali: you do know I can make the meeting happen without you my love angithi

he gave her an intense look

Mbali: please man Ray....please do it for me

Ray: it's not happening Mbali...that woman is dangerous and I told you that I don't want you involved in any way with anyone from the underworld

Mbali: please.....

she said giving him her puppy dog eyes

Ray: those puppy dog eyes won't work this time...

Mbali: don't make me blackmail you into setting up the meeting baby

He raised his eyebrow looking at her and she tried to keep a straight face but she ended up laughing

Mbali: sthandwa sam please....you can be

present if you want I just want to talk to her,
that's all

Ray: talk to her about what?

Mbali: this and that...look I want to make it clear
to her that she should keep her beef with you
away from my marriage that's all

***she lied....what she planned for her
was....yeah I can't even say it***

Ray: if that's all then I'll make sure she gets the
message

Mbali: baby please im begging you, just set up
the meeting tuu

Ray: I said no Mbali!

Mbali: mxm fine then I'll find another way to
meet up with her

***she said trying to get off him and he
tightened the grip around her***

Ray: where do you think you're going?

Mbali: im not talking to you so let me go

she said faking a sulk and she tried to get out of his hold but he held her tight

Ray: really now

Mbali: yeah

she said looking away and he chuckled

Ray: I can see you're faking a sulk my flower.....i know your real sulking-face so drop the act

a smile forced its way on her face

Mbali: mxm...Ray please I just wanna talk to her

he sighed

Ray: fine I'll think about it

Mbali: ok but don't take too long or I'll find other means to set up the meeting

he sighed

Ray: I did mention she's dangerous Mbali and she also has a foul mouth and she's

manipulative and conniving

Mbali: and you're forgetting im a mother to a demon and a wife to La Parca's carrier

he chuckled shaking his head

Mbali: these women need to know that im not a walk-over Ray or one of those spoiled rotten wives....i can kick ass and I also have a foul mouth too

Ray: which women?

Mbali: those stupid women you do business with

he laughed not believing that this was his flower

Mbali: mmmmh your cheating ways unleashed a beast in me so qaphela ndoda (be careful man)

Ray: wait what did you say in Zulu?

Mbali: Google it!

she said laughing and he tickled her and she screamed while laughing

***Kazi went to pick Phumi up and they went to the mall to buy groceries for Phumi since she refused to stay with Menzi and Kazi in Menzi's house, she said she likes walking around in her underwear especially in the morning so she doesn't want to tempt Menzi, she also said she doesn't want to listen to them fucking every night while she left her boyfriend back home so she's gonna stay at Kazi's house during her visit... Well Phumi was a beautiful woman, she was a chubby girl but not too chubby, she has smooth caramel skin with nicely cut short hair...all in all she was the younger version of Jill Scott (the singer and actress), she has that million dollar smile Jill Scott has and her nice and sweet but fierce when she's pissed voice was the cherry on top ***

Phumi: hai wena you mean to tell me ukuthi nigga made you cum without touching or fucking you

Kazi: yep

they both laughed

Phumi: ithi uyadlala Kazi (say you kidding Kazi)

Kazi: im dead serious Phumi and the bulge below his belt was a clear indication ukuthi hey nigga uthwele inkunzimalanga (he's packing)

they busted out with laughter

Phumi: Jezos!

they continued laughing

Kazi: im telling you Phumza....i was dripping down there, I had to work the rest of the day without wearing underwear cause it was papnut (wet)

Phumi: so what about bae wa diwheelbarrow (the wheelbarrow bae)

they laughed

Kazi: well we made it official last night and nigga fucked me good shem

Phumi: heh Kazi o deal(a) le bo bae ba diwheelbarrow le dimagician mmmh...thatha wena girl (you deal with wheelbarrow bae and a magician...its nice to be you girl)

Kazi pushed Phumi and they laughed...they moved along picking things from the shelves

Kazi: well truth is I love Menzi and with Castiel well all I can say is I'd give anything to have him for one night nje.....Phumza you should have seen his bulge and when he was looking into my eyes and talking dirty to me it was like he was speaking to my soul

Phumi laughed

Kazi: his eyes are creepy but yesterday they were the sexiest shit ever

they both laughed as they moved along

Phumi: so do you love the guy?

she sighed

Kazi: I don't know...I'll decide after having sex with him

Phumi: hah Kazi

Kazi laughed

Kazi: im kidding jeez....yho Menzi would kill me if he finds out...I think its lust im feeling for him but yeses nigga is handsome and he's packing

Phumi: ai shem wa bona wena I'll pray for you shem (I'll pray for you shame)

Kazi: please pray for me tuu....i think bayangithakatha (I think they are bewitching me)

they laughed

Voice: lust huh?

they both turned and Kazi's eyes popped out while Phumi just frowned

Kazi: Ca...Castiel

Castiel: I see you two fucked huh... well I hope you enjoyed yourself

*** " ohh shit he heard us" she thought and Castiel chuckled as he read her mind***

Phumi: Castiel as in...

She whispered to Kazi and she nodded and she faked a smile looking at Castiel who had a frown on his face...he was looking at Phumi trying to read her mind but he couldn't....Phumi saw that he was looking at her with an intense look and she cleared her throat

Phumi: jeez no need to give me that look, I'll give you two some privacy

***She said and she pushed their trolley away but Castiel still kept his gaze at her until Kazi

cleared her throat***

Castiel: who is she?

Kazi: my cousin...why?

she said frowning

Castiel: mmm

then he went after her leaving Kazi standing there

Castiel: hey

she turned

Phumi: hi

Castiel: have we met before?

he said as he tried to read her mind and still nothing, it was like she was immune to his abilities

Phumi: I doubt it

she said and she looked over at Kazi and Kazi had a displeased look on her face

Castiel: don't worry about her, she made a wrong choice now she needs to live with it

Phumi: huh?

Castiel: anyway are both your parents South African?

Phumi: askies

Castiel: just answer me jeez!

Phumi: hei don't give me that attitude ok....i don't know you and you don't me and I don't have to answer any of your questions nx

***He kept on looking at her trying to read her mind and still nothing was happening ***

Castiel: can you just answer me

Kazi: what's going on here

Phumi: ask your boyfriend here...he's acting weird and asking me stupid questions

***She said and pushed her trolley and Castiel's

eyes were still glued on her with a frown on his face***

Kazi: Cass

He looked at her

Castiel: what?

she swallowed

Kazi: why are you looking at Phumi like that?

*** " her name is Phumi...mmmmh interesting"
he thought***

Castiel: what is it to you?

she gasped

Kazi: she's my cousin for God's sake

Castiel: so?

she looked at him shocked then he walked away leaving her standing like a statue....and he took out his phone and called Ruslan

Ruu: Cass

Castiel: Madou something weird just happened now

Ruslan: no greetings you just started with the matter at hand...tell me here Cass who's your father mmmmh

Castiel: not now Madou this is serious man!

Ruslan: greet me first then we will discuss whatever happened

Castiel sighed

Castiel: fine.....how are you Madou

Ruslan: im scared of my pregnant wife to be and how are you Cass?

Castiel laughed

Castiel: serves you right

Ruslan: fuck you....anyway what's wrong

Castiel: I met some girl....well she's Kazi's cousin and I can't read her mind like literally

cant man

Ruslan: what do mean by “you can’t read her mind”?

Castiel: just like you can’t read minds

Madou...it’s like she’s immune to my abilities

Ruslan: ok has something like this happened to you before

Castiel: no never...even with Juana when I still thought she’s an innocent human, I had to do a spell on her that prevented me from reading her mind

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: ok let me do some research on this and I’ll get back to you

Castiel: ok be fast about it....this shit is fucking with my head man....something is.....why can’t I read her man

Ruslan: calm down I’ll figure it out

Castiel: ok later

they ended the call and Castiel sighed and he went to the parking lot

** BACK TO KAZI.....anyway after sometime she composed herself and went after Phumi***

Kazi: what did he say to you Phumelele

she said with a serious tone and Phumi frowned

Phumi: he asked if my parents are both South African

Kazi: don't lie to me Phumelele...dont!

she said with a voice laced with a bit of anger*

Phumi: bathong and nou?

she said surprised by her sudden change of attitude towards her

Phumi: first of all that guy is creepy and

arrogant Kazi and if you think I'm interested in that then you don't know me at all....your creepy boyfriend asked me about my parents and that's all jeez

Kazi face soften up a bit and she blinked fast

Kazi: I..... ummm

Phumi: nx

she walked away and Kazi sighed...she wondered why she acted that way...."does it mean I have fallen for the guy" she thought.....she then went after Phumi to apologize

***Well Kazi apologized and they hugged it out and continued with their shopping then later they drove to Kazi's place and spend the rest of the day catching up while eating junk food then later in the afternoon Kazi left and Phumi

watched a movie having snacks until she passed out on the couch....she woke up to a knock on the door and her heard started beating fast.....she got up and went to the kitchen and she took a knife and a pan and she went to the door as the knock intensified***

Phumi: who is it?

Voice: its Castiel open up

she froze with a frown on her face

Castiel: Phumi open up man, neighbors may start thinking that im a burglar or something.....i don't wanna be burned alive with a tire around my neck

Phumi: Kazi is not here man so leave tuu

Castiel: im not here for her

Phumi: if you want me to talk to her for you then im sorry to disappoint you....she's old enough to make her own decisions so hamba tuu (go

please)

Castiel sighed

Castiel: im not here for her are you deaf....i fucken said im here for you now open up so we can talk

Phumi: don't you dare talk to me like that...im not Kazi uyangizwa (you hear me)... nx you know what entlek leave now before I call the cops

Castiel chuckled he could tell now that she's not a pushover

Castiel: fine I apologize for talking to you like that now can you open up.....please

***she slowly opened the door but she didn't open the security door and Castiel chuckled when he saw the knife and pan on her hands ***

Phumi: what?

Castiel: I see you're ready for thieves huh

Phumi: mmmmh and I know how to use them,
now what are you doing here

***his face got serious...he still couldn't read her
mind and it was frustrating him more and
more***

Castiel: is one of your close family members,
preferably your mother, father or grandparents
witches or wizards?

Phumi: askies?

she said giving him a deadly look

Castiel: is there a witch or wizard in your family?

Phumi: VOETSEK MSUNU!

***then she slammed the door on his face and
she locked and went back to the
lounge....leaving Castiel shocked then he
chuckled shaking his head***

Castiel: ok maybe I should've found a better
way to ask her that

he said to himself and knocked again

.

19

.

.

.

****SOMETHING SHORT...ENJOY!****

Castiel: Phumi come on I just want to know

She ignored him until he decided to leave cause he knew he couldn't enter the house without her permission....cause Vampires can't enter a private household without the current occupant/ occupants verbally telling them to enter....after Phumi realised that he left she took her phone and dialed Kazi's numbers

Kazi: babe

Phumi: hey look here Kazi please warn your

weird and arrogant boyfriend to stay the hell away from me cause I know people Kazi, in fact you know that I know people ko kasi (back in the hood) and he can disappear just like that without a trace so warn him assomblief!

she said with an angry voice

Kazi: wait.... you mean Castiel?

she said whispering his name

Phumi: yes....lomgodoyi wenja (that useless dog) came here and I thought he was looking for you then boom he said he's looking for me instead and you won't believe what he wanted to know

Kazi swallowed hard and jealousy creped in

Kazi: he...he said that?

Phumi: yes then he asked me a stupid and insulting question....in fact msoono o le insulted

me and my family Kazi

Kazi: ummm

****she was confused now***

Phumi: he asked me if raloya ko gae imagine!
(he asked me if we use witchcraft at home)

Kazi: what?

Phumi: imagine.... sebete sa ramarete ole (the nerve of that dick)....im sorry he's your boyfriend mara marete a gae nx (but his testicles)....who the hell does he think he is

***she said with an angry voice ***

Kazi: wow...ummm let me call him and hear ukuthi yini inkinga yakhe (what's his problem)

Phumi: do so and warn him about me Kazi....im a dangerous chubby girl and I know dangerous people back at home

Kazi: I will trust me I'll make sure he knows

she faked a laugh

Phumi: good

Kazi: ok let me call him

Phumi: shap

they ended the call and she looked around and Menzi wasn't in sight then she dialed Castiel's numbers

Castiel: what is it?

she cleared her throat

Kazi: hey it's Kazi

Castiel: I know now what do you want

she swallowed hurt by his sudden rude and cold attitude towards her

Kazi: ummm Phumi called me and she said you came by my house

Castiel: I did so?

Kazi: she's angry about what you asked her

Castiel: why are you calling me Kazi

Kazi: why were you there in the first place

Castiel I mean you don't even know Phumi

Castiel: udliwa yini Ntandokazi if im interested
in knowing Phumi

she gasped

Kazi: wait you're interested in her?

she asked with a low tone

Castiel: listen here girly.....you made your choice
so whomever I show interest in whether is
purely innocent or romantic akulona udoko
olugayelwe wena lelo (its none of your
business)..... even if it's your mother okzalayo....
now lose my numbers and enjoy your boring
hitman in peace I don't have time for confused
little girls, im way too old for that shit

***then he dropped the call leaving Kazi
shocked and hurt by what he said, then Menzi

walked in***

Menzi: sthandwa sam are you sure uPhumi is alright in your house all alone?

Kazi: Phumi this Phumi that....aarg man!

she got up and walked away looking angry leaving Menzi confused and shocked by her

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

the following day Mbali and Ray were having breakfast when Ruslan just walked in house looking like he didn't sleep at all last night

Ruu: familia (family)

he said and kissed Mbali's cheek and he sat down joining them on the dining table

Mbali: hey Ruu....damn you look like hell

he chuckled

Ray: what happened to you man

Ruslan: hardly slept, Mpilo had nightmares almost the whole night and he was afraid to go back to sleep.... I couldn't even do a spell on him so he'll be able sleep cause he might still have the nightmare but he'll find it hard to wake up

Ray: damn....will he be ok

Ruu: yeah don't worry he'll be fine

Mbali: you know I'll never get used to you having "powers" Ruu

he chuckled as he dished up for himself

Ruu: but you can get used to Saint mmmmh?

Mbali: leave my baby alone please

Ruslan laughed and Ray just shook his head

Ray: why is it that you're growing fond of that pain in the ass demon my flower

Mbali: he protects me baby so he has a special

place in my heart

she said and Ruu looked at Ray surprised

Mbali: what?

Ruu: nothing his flower im just shocked by your statement

Mbali: he's part of my son Ruu just like La Parca is part of my husband and if I want to live a peaceful and stress free life I need to accept both of them into our lives....i cant afford to be scared of my son or Ray because they have demons in them... and you know they say black don't crack right, well my skin is light so that means I crack easily and I can't have that

both Ray and Ruu laughed

Ray: I can't believe you just said that baby

he said still laughing along with Ruu

Mbali: but its true haw

***they continued to laugh.... anyway they had

their breakfast conversing and laughing.....well after their breakfast Ray and Ruu went to his study while Mbali cleared the table***

IN THE STUDY ROOM

Ray: so what caused the nightmares man

Ruslan: those fucken Mashaba's are responsible man

Ray: what?

he said looking at Ruu with a frown on his face

Ruu: yeah but don't worry Thandi and the kids are all protected now and as for those fuckers I'll deal with them....they all gonna run around the streets as mad people, all of them....starting with their zombies, cats, dogs and even their rats...all of them!

he said with an angry voice then he breathed out trying to calm himself

Ray: so those pieces of shit don't learn huh

he said pissed off

Ruu: don't worry they'll learn the hard way

Ray: damn it....how can they do that to a child
man....Mpilo is their own blood for fuck's sake!

Ruu: they don't give a damn about those boys
man all they care about is money and power
while that shithead called Jerry or Gerald or
Jackson wants my Thandi..... I swear that
bastard will curse the day he developed feelings
for her by time im done with him!

*** he got up and went to pour some whiskey
for both of them and he went back to sit on the
couch and gave Ray his drink and he sighed***

Ruu: then there's Cass

Ray: what did he do now?

Ruu chuckled

Ruslan: well apparently he met a lady who is

Kazi's cousin and he said he can't read her mind like he does with everyone else

Ray: damn.... for real?

he took a sip of his drink and he nodded

Ray: has something like that ever happened to him before

Ruu: he said no

Ray: damn so what does it mean man?

he sighed

Ruu: well it means two things actually....she's either protected by a spell or something that prevents Cass from reading her mind cause she's our enemy or she's his mate....his chosen one

Ray: wooh.....

Ruu: mmm

he took another sip

Ray: damn....if she's not the mate then she could be with the Brethren

Ruu nodded

Ray: but what about what Juana said

Ruu: that bitch lied about a lot of things man, I wouldn't be surprised if she made a mistake.... I mean Kazi and that girl are related so maybe she confused the two or she's not as good as she thinks she is and her powers are weak

Ray laughed

Ray: you know even today I don't understand why those evil blood sucking fuckers call themselves THE BRETHREN... I mean brethren are fellow Christians or members of a male religious group or order right

Ruu chuckled

Ruu: well brethren is a fancy plural form of "brother" so yeah you right cause during ancient

times men and women used to call each other brethren in their religious groups

Ray: then they should call themselves “brethren of lucifer” instead

Ruu laughed

Ruu: well their original name is “The Brethren of diablo” (brothers/sisters of the devil)

Ray: Lucifer, the devil..... same shit

Ruu laughed again

Ruu: yeah.... “pieces of shit” is what they should call themselves

they both laughed

Ruu: so you really called Celine over huh

Ray sighed and he gulped down the rest of his drink at one go and Ruu chuckled

Ray: yeah...i swear Mbali is gonna send me to my early grave man

Ruu laughed

Ruu: you should've refused

Ray: well Mrs Owoh-Masden threatened to set up the meeting herself if I don't

Ruu laughed again

Ruu: I couldn't believe it when you told me over the phone man

Ray: this girl is gonna give me heart problems im telling you man

Ruu laughed then Ray's phone rang and it was Celine, he sighed and answered

Ray: Celine

Celine: im outside

Ray: ok I'll let you in

he dropped the call and Ray brushed his face and he got up

Ray: let's go she's here

Ruu got up and he followed him chuckling

IN THE LOUNGE

Ray: she's here

he said to Mbali and she got up with her heart beating fast

Ruu: are you sure you want to do this his flower

Mbali: yeah....Let her in babe

Ray: im sure she's not even wearing anything since I told her I'll be all alone so....

she clenched her jaws

Mbali: don't worry about that....you won't fuck her so it's no biggy

***Ruu looked at Ray with his eyebrows raised and an amused look plastered on his face and Ray huffed and he opened the gate for Celine.... then Mbali went to the dining area and she came back with a chair and she put it on the empty space that was in the lounge and she

waited***

Ray: and the chair

Mbali: its for our guest baby

Ruu held back his smile....he was impressed by Mbali while Ray was worried about her.... then they heard the doorbell ring and he sighed and went to open.....Mbali and Ruu heard her voice and soon she walked in wearing a long brown coat that showed her cleavage with knee high boots, she was followed by her two bodyguards and Mbali chuckled getting angry....Celine frowned when her eyes landed on Mbali and Ruu

Celine: what the hell is this Raymond...i thought you said you'll be alone?

Mbali: sit!

she looked at Mbali up and down and she chuckled clearly mocking Mbali

Celine: you talking to me little girl

Ray: Celine!

he warned her then her two bodyguards took a step forward with their hands on their waists were their guns are

Mbali: SAINT COME OUT NOW!

Ruu and Ray's eyes popped out and immediately wind like sounds filled the room and the windows immediately got covered with dark smoke and it became dark inside but luckily the lamps where on inside the lounge and dining area

Celine: WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON HERE RAYMOND!

she said looking around and her bodyguards got closer to her trying to protect her

Ray: Mbali!

Ruu: damn!

then another black smoke formed a figure next to Mbali....even though she was a little scared of Saint (the demon) but she knew he or it won't hurt her in any way...as for Celine and the bodyguard they drew out their guns pointing them at the smoke formed figure with their shaking hands and eyes popped out

Ruu: I wouldn't do that if I were you

he warned them and immediately their guns melted and they quickly dropped them on the floor cursing

Guard1: what the fuck!

he said looking scared while the other one was frozen on the spot

Celine: Ray what the hell is this....wha...what's going on here?

she said with her eyes popped out and her heart pounding hard against her chest

Mbali: my son take these two men trying to protect this evil witch that hurt mommy away and deal with them but don't kill them just make sure they have nightmares that will haunt them for the rest of their miserable lives

Voice: yes mommy

then the guards got lifted up by the black smoke all of a sudden and they screamed as the smoke moved away with them from the lounge going to the basement.... Well in the basement Saint really dealt with them accordingly, he/it left them curled up into a ball in the corner with their knees up on their chest and their arms wrapping around them while they rocked themselves back and forth with tears running down their cheeks

IN THE LOUNGE

Ray: my flower

Mbali: Ray please not now.....now what I want

from this bitch is to sit the fuck down on that chair before Saint makes her

Celine: Raymond!

she said trying to sound brave as she looked at him but a crack on her voice gave her away and Mbali smirked

Ruu: wow im impressed Mrs Owoh-Masden

he said as he went to sit down on the couch....as for Ray he stood there shocked, impressed but most of all worried

Mbali: SAINT!

the smoke figure came back from the basement

Saint: yes mommy

Celine quickly sat down

Mbali: good bitch

Ruu laughed

Celine: what do you want?

she said looking at Mbali with an angry look on her face

Saint: don't look at mommy like that!

*** Saint said with his creepy and scary voice but Celine because of her stubbornness, she kept looking at Mbali with a deadly look then the smoke figure quickly moved coming towards her and she quickly closed her eyes shaking***

Saint: I won't tell you again!

Saint warned her and Mbali's face got filled with a lot of a bad-bitch attitude and she smiled

Mbali: thank you baby

then the smoke moved back a bit and Celine opened her eyes but she looked down instead scared to look up

Mbali: now here's the thing....before we get to you trying to ruin my marriage let's start with Ray's "supposed" child

Ray and Ruu's eyes popped out and they looked at each other talking with their eyes then they looked back at Mbali and Celine

Mbali: is there really a baby or you made that up....and another thing Ruu over there is a real wizard so if you lie bitch he'll know and Saint , my boy over here will deal with you.....now is there a baby or not

Celine: ye...yes there is

Mbali swallowed

Mbali: and the baby mama?

Celine: she...she was Rosalina my cousin

***Ray sighed and he looked down when Mbali looked at him and Mbali swallowed again trying by all means not to shed a tear....she cleared

her throat and composed herself***

Mbali: you said she was your cousin

Celine: she.... she died of drug overdose

****Ruu frowned***

Ruu: mmmm Celine....

he shook his head

Mbali: what is it Ruu?

Ruu: she's lying

Celine: no...no im not

Mbali: Saint!

Saint: yes mommy

he said with his scary voice

Celine: ok ok I killed her....i paid someone to inject her with an overdose of drugs to make it look like suicide cause I was angry that she managed to sleep with Raymond and even got pregnant while I failed

Ray chuckled getting angry cause Rosalina was a sweet girl, even if she was still alive he knew she wouldn't come with baby mama drama cause she was scared of him

Mbali: where's the baby

Celine kept quiet

Mbali: im not gonna ask you again bitch

Celine: i....i sold her to some married couple back in Venezuela who can't conceive

Ray: you fucken Bitch!

*** he rushed to her and a punch landed on her face breaking her nose then he grabbed her by her neck looking deadly that even Mbali got scared by looking at him***

Ruu: Ray!

Ray: THEIR LOCATION NOW!

***he said squeezing tight and she struggled to breathe busy making shocking sounds with her

hands trying to pull Ray hand off her neck***

Ray: ANSWER ME DAMN IT!

Mbali: Ray stop!

he didn't at first but when she touched his arm, he came back to his senses and he let her go and turned to look at a scared Mbali then he looked back at Celine who was coughing uncontrollably with thick blood coming out of her nose.....Ray still had that scary look on his face

Ray: give me my daughter's location or I'll let Saint deal with you!

Celine continued to cough holding her painful neck

AT KAZI'S HOUSE

*** Phumi has been trying to call Kazi who wasn't answering her calls the whole morning

and she was getting a bad vibe that maybe she was avoiding her.....she wished she didn't call her last night about Castiel showing up here and all that he said cause she could see that Kazi liked the guy even though she was now dating Menzi.....she sighed and decided to call Menzi***

Menzi: yeah

Phumi: ummm hey Menzi its Phumi, Kazi's cousin

Menzi: ooh hey is everything ok

Phumi: yeah...actually no I've been trying to call Kazi all morning and she's not answering my calls

***Menzi sighed cause Kazi slept without saying anything to him and she also woke up in a bad mood, even the morning glory he gave her didn't change her mood and he wondered what happened between them....he wanted to ask her

but he thought against it thinking that they will squash whatever fight they had soon ***

Menzi: ummm I last saw her before I left for work.... she's probably busy or something

Phumi: ooh yeah maybe anyway please tell her to call me back when you talk her

Menzi: ok I will shap

Phumi: shap

they ended the call and then there was a knock on the door and she quickly got up and went to open the door thinking its Kazi and her face fell when she saw that it was Castiel instead.....she tried to close the door but he blocked it with his hand

Castiel: I come in peace....

he said showing her the bouquet of flowers and a box of some expensive swizz chocolates

Castiel: im sorry about last night..... what I said didn't come out exactly the way I wanted it to come out

Phumi: ufunu ngiyenzeni ngamaflower heh (what do you want me to do with flowers), do I look like a white woman to you?

Castiel looked at her shocked

Phumi: and what's with those chocolates.... weh Castiel or Castor oil or Custard or Caster Semenya.... whatever your name is....

she said waving her hand around

Phumi: don't you know amaFerrero Roche mmmmh ngiyenzeni mina nga

Iamabrooklax (don't you know Ferrero Rocher's mmmmh what should I do with those Brooklax "laxatives")

***Castiel wanted to say something but for the first time in his 105 years he was out of words

say***

Phumi: ngicela uhambe tuu Castor oil anginaso
isikhathi sakho mina (please leave Castor oil I
don't have time for you) Kazi is angry at me
cause you showed up here so tsamaya tuu
(leave) before she finds you here

***then she slammed the door on his face and
locked it and she went to the lounge while
clicking her tongue angrily***

Phumi: yho go decid(a) go shapa ke moyanyana
mo KZN then phrrrtlh ke gafela ke motho ebole
motho wa teng obitsa ba ko gae baloiai dilo
tsa KZN (yho I decide to come to KZN for some
fresh air and out of the blue this guy is all over
my face he's even saying everyone at home
uses witchcraft.... ai KZN things)

**** she shook her head and tried Kazi again
but this time it send her straight to
voicemail.....she sighed and sat down thinking

that maybe she should just go back home***

20

.

.

.

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Mbali: are you sure?

Celine: yeah im sure

she just given them the location to Ray's daughter then Ray called Mateo and told him to search for the couple and the address Celine gave them

Mbali: what's her name....what did her birth mother name her

Celine: Ca... Cataleya

Mbali: mmmh beautiful name don't you think babe

Ray swallowed hard....he was worried but more over scared cause he didn't know how Mbali really felt about him having a child out there

Ray: yeah

Ruslan: beautiful name indeed but I want to know what do they call her now?

Celine: Pa...Paulina

Mbali: Paulina?....the nerve!....imagine Ruu, from Cataleya to Paulina mxm bayahlanya (they are crazy)

she shook her head then she looked at Ray

Mbali: so what should we do with this bitch babe?

***she asked Ray**

Ray: I'll take it from here my flower

Mbali: ok but make sure you don't waste her life as yet, if you know what I mean

Ray looked at her with a raised eyebrow

Ruslan: waste her life?

Mbali: I meant don't kill her as yet

Ruslan: I know what you meant his flower, im just shocked you said those words yourself

Ray: Mbali I don't want you talking about shit like that more over to even think about it ok!

she breathed out

Mbali: ya'll forget who my father, grandfather and brothers are neh

Ray: it doesn't matter, the fact is now you're my wife and I don't want you involved in all this shit

she sighed

Mbali: fine....but wait until you find your baby

before you “deal” with her cause this bitch
might be lying about her whereabouts

Ray sighed

Ray: I know that, now can you get back to being
my innocent wife...please

***she smiled then out of the blue she punched
Celine hard on her face and Ruslan
gasped...she threw more punches on Celine
until Ray pulled her away from her***

Ray: will you stop!

Mbali: let go of me im not done with this bitch....
I need to teach her a lesson to never try and
breakup people's marriages!

Ray: calm the fuck down!

***she gave Celine a deadly stare then she
raised her hands in surrender***

Mbali: fine im calm!

Ray: you sure?

Mbali: yeah

he let her go and she fixed herself and she looked at Ruu who had an amused look on his face then she looked at Ray

Mbali: I guess you boys will take it from here

then she walked away

Mbali: Saint its time for you to go back to sleep baby

Saint: yes mommy

then the smoke disappeared right as Mbali was walking up the stairs and light came in as the smoke on the windows vanished and Ruslan chuckled

Ruu: damn Mrs La Parca is in the building

he said with a Mexican accent then he laughed, as for Ray he shook his head and he took out his phone and made a call

Mat: jefe

Ray: send some boys to my house, I have three packages they need to take to the warehouse for safe keeping

Mat: got it

Ray: and Mat

Mat: jefe

Ray: keep tabs on Celine's syndicate crew since we have her, I don't want any nasty surprises

Mat: ok and the couples names and address checks out

Ray: good we will talk later

they ended the call

Celine: you... are... all dead...my people will find me and....

***Ray punched her so hard that she passed out instantly ***

Ray: she fucken talks too much

Ruu: before you do anything I need to say this....you need to talk to your wife about your plans concerning the baby issue meaning involve her in all your decisions man

Ray sighed

Ruu: that baby will need to grow up in a loving family Ray and she can get that if Mbali is on board.... ask for her opinion on this matter and make sure you don't assume that she's ready, make sure she's ready for real to mother her before you go look for her

Ray: I hear you man

Ruu: good....i need a drink

he walked away

***The following day Phumi decided to go back home since Kazi was still ignoring her, she was hurt that Kazi was acting this way towards

her....her gut told her that it's because of Castiel and she wished she didn't call her to vent about what Castiel did but then again she was glad she called her and told her cause now she can see the kind of cousin she has..... she packed her things and called for an uber then she waited, right then there was a knock on the door and she went to open and Castiel was standing there***

Phumi: God why mara

Castiel: oohh come on stop being dramatic

He still couldn't read her mind

Phumi: what do you want from me huh?

Castiel: to talk

Phumi: I don't wanna talk to you now leave me alone...please

Castiel: ooh well I can be a pain in the ass if I want to so it's in your best interest to allow us

to have the talk

Phumi: what is it that you want to talk about
then mmmh?

Castiel: aren't you gonna allow me in

Phumi: no

***He sighed.....if only he could know what
she's thinking then he was sure by now he
would have found out what he wanted to know
about her***

Castiel: why are you this stubborn?

Phumi: well I don't know you and I definitely
don't trust you

Castiel: you know what its fine we can talk here

Phumi: make it quick im about to leave

He frowned

Castiel: leave to where?

Phumi: im going back home

Castiel: why

Phumi: its all your fault

Castiel: ooh please don't tell me you're leaving
because I keep coming here

she sighed

Phumi: im leaving because whatever you said to
Kazi made her to stop taking my calls

***She said with a sad voice and Castiel
chuckled***

Castiel: ooh really...she did that?

Phumi: wa tjena?....mx entlek tsamaya motho
tuu (you're grinning...mxm you know what just
leave please)

***She said as she attempted to close the door
but he blocked it with his hand***

Castiel: can you stop all this so we can talk

Phumi: I said I don't wanna talk to you why are

you forcing things huh?

Castiel sighed frustrated cause he has never been frustrated by a woman like this before.... then they saw a car parking behind Castiel's and Kazi got out and Phumi chuckled not believing this was happening

Phumi: Yah neh bati e kana bathong (so much bad luck)

***Castiel chuckled shaking his head and he turned back and looked at a flushed Phumi and he wished so bad to read her thoughts ***

Castiel: relax will you

Phumi: don't talk to me wena nx

Kazi: what's going on here?

She said with a serious look on her face as she got closer to them

Phumi: he...he came to see you

Castiel: no... that's not why im here

Phumi gave him a death look and he raised his eyebrow at her

Castiel: what, you want me to lie?

Kazi: Phumi what's all this.....i called you to come here so we can spend some time together not for you to go after my man

Castiel: whoah stop right there.... im not your man Charlotte, I never was one and will never be one

Kazi swallowed hard feeling embarrassed, she wished she didn't say that

Kazi: I didn't mean you're my man I just meant...

Castiel: I don't care what you meant but you must never go around telling people that im your man or was one....you made your choice now stick to it

her eyes got filled with tears

Kazi: I didn't make my choice ok I just reacted

badly and now I wish I didn't do what I did

Castiel chuckled when he read her thoughts.....she kept on thinking "I want you not him"

Castiel: well I don't care

He then looked at Phumi

Castiel: I'll wait for you outside the yard

then he walked away and Kazi looked at Phumi with an angry look on her face

Kazi: I can't believe you Phumi!

Phumi: askies

Kazi: you know I like the guy and now you're going after him....like really now?

Phumi: o sa batla gonyela Kazi ok (don't piss me off).....that bastard is making me feel uncomfortable and he insulted me for fucks sake....a re ko gae raloya(he said at home we do witchcraft) and wena you have the fucken

guts to stand there and say I want him...wa gafa!
(are you crazy)

She said feeling insulted by her.

Kazi: don't give me that attitude ok....he said he's here for you!

She said sounding angry.

Phumi: so what huh...does that mean I want him?..... nx you know what.... Fuck you nxa

she went inside to take her bags and Kazi followed her

Kazi: uthi fuck me Phumelele?

Phumi: yeah fuck you for thinking that im interested in that....

She said pointing towards the door

Phumi: and fuck you for letting a dick come between us, a dick im not even interested in nxa

***Kazi didn't say anything she just blinked

fast***

Phumi: and just because you can swing between two dicks doesn't mean all of us do that....im happy with my man and you know that, you also know that I've never cheated on him even when I suspected that he was cheating on me... Gosh i can't believe you Kazi....

***she then walked to the door ***

Kazi: Phumz look im...im sorry

Phumi: hai fokof nxa

she walked out leaving Kazi with her mouth hanging..... she walked to the gate and when Castiel saw her he got out of the car

Castiel: damn you look like you're about to explode

Phumi: VOETSEK CASTIEL!

She said and walked out and she joined the road pulling her travelling bag

Phumi was now standing on a queue to buy a bus ticket then Castiel stood next to her with his hands in his pockets

Phumi: God why me mara?

Castiel: why are you like this huh?

she ignored him.....she just moved with the queue

Castiel: you know the last time I chased after a woman like this was many decades ago

she still ignored him

Castiel: ok then

***he moved with her as the queue moved still trying to read her mind and still nothing.....he could read the mind of the woman behind them and she was busy complimenting Castiel's butt, she wondered how he looked naked.....and the guy in front of them was praying in his head

that the job interview he was going to in Pretoria goes well....He kept on praying to God busy telling him how much he needs the job so he'll be able to take care of his ailing mother and little sister***

Castiel: hey man

the guy turned and looked at him

Guy: yebo

Castiel: ummm have we met before?

Guy: ummm cha angicabangi kanjalo mfowethu (no i don't think so bro)

Castiel: ooh alright...quick question.... are you looking for a job and im not talking about anything illegal

The guy looked at Cass surprised

Guy: ummm i...

Castiel: are you?

they moved with the queue

Guy: ummm ye...yes

he said still surprised

Castiel: good

he took out his business card and gave it to him

Castiel: call me sometime tomorrow and we will talk

he took the business card and read on it

Guy: ok I will...thank you sir

Castiel: cool and ooh do you have a spare CV with you

Guy: ye..yes

He quickly took out the CV and gave it to Cass and he read his name

Cass: Ronald Mbuyiseni Dladla.....RMD

he chuckled

Cass: ok I'll wait for your call RMD

Ronny: ok sir

he said smiling tearfully and he looked forward and moved with the queue and Phumi looked at Castiel briefly then she sighed

Castiel: still won't talk to me?

she continued to ignore him then he heard Ronny thoughts and he was thinking about the money he would lose going to Pretoria for a job interview which might go sideways....if only he could walk from KZN to PTA then he would use the ticket money to buy food for his mother and little sister

Castiel: Ronny

he turned

Ronny: sir

Castiel: go back home and call me tomorrow for the job....

then he took out a couple of hundreds inside his wallet and gave it to him

Castiel: buy airtime with that

Ronny swallowed hard and he slowly took the money with his shaking hand.....his pride wanted him to refuse it but thinking about his mother he knew he needed it and as for the job interview he knew he might not even get the job cause he didn't even have the number of years of experience they wanted, he thought that the fact that they called him for the interview was because God was finally gonna answer his prayers but deep down he knew his chances of getting the job were slim.....his other reason of going to Pretoria is to drop off his CVs at other companies there after his interview

Ronny: tha...thank you sir

he said with a breaking voice

Castiel: and if I don't answer your call leave a

message and I'll get back to you ok

***Ronny nodded ***

Ronny: ye....yes sir Thank you

Castiel: yeah...now go home kid

Ronny: thank you sir....thank you

*** He said trying to fight back his tears and he walked away wiping his tears that fell, he was gonna go straight to the supermarket to buy decent food for his mother and little sister***

Phumi: that...that was very kind of you

Castiel: ooh now you decide to talk to me huh?

Phumi: mmmmh cause I can see that you have a heart after all

Castiel: what's that supposed to mean?

Phumi: dude you were rude to Kazi

Castiel: I wasn't... I was just being honest

Phumi: well you were rude

Castiel: believe me you'll hate me when im rude.....so earlier I was just being honest

She looked at him briefly then it was her turn to buy her ticket and she bought it then Castiel also bought his and they moved to the bus and they got in and Phumi sat down then Castiel sat next to her

Phumi: really now...there are many empty seats dude

Castiel: I prefer to sit next to you

Phumi: hai cha angikukholwa lokhu (no I can believe this)

Castiel: what is it you cant believe

she gave him the wtf look and he chuckled then he sat back

Phumi: ok let's get it all out....what do you want from me, like for real this time

Castiel: well for starters I asked you a question

and you didn't answer me

Phumi: no the aren't witches at home...happy?

he frowned

Castiel: you sure

Phumi: ungazongihlanyisa wena (don't piss me off).... I just answered you entlek ufunani kimi (what do you want from me)

she said with a pissed off tone

Castiel: chill jeez

Phumi: nx

then she exhaled

Phumi: now will you leave me alone since I answered your stupid question?

Castiel: no I have another thing to ask you

she rolled her eyes

Phumi: khuluma! (talk)

Castiel: are you ready to travel many miles with different types of people who'll make this journey a painful one for you

she frowned at him

Phumi: what are you talking about?

Castiel: you see that guy at the back...well he ate lots and lots of cooked beans and I don't know if you know how stinky a fart of a person who ate beans or eggs is

she looked at the back and the guy was busy burping then she looked at Castiel with a frown on her face

Phumi: and how do you know that

Castiel: I just know unless you want to find out when this bus is on the road

***She faced forward then an obese man walked inside the bus and Castiel looked at Phumi and when he sat on the seat that was in

front of theirs he chuckled***

Castiel: can we just go

Phumi: go if you want to haw

He sighed

Castiel: please....Please man im suffocating in here

Phumi: then hamba (go)

Castiel: im not leaving without you

Phumi: mxm

Castiel: if I faint and die in here then it's all on you

she gave him the wtf look

Castiel: im serious.... I don't do crowded and cramped up spaces ever

Phumi: yaz uyadina Castiel....wa tena mxm (you know you're tiring Castiel)

she got up and looked at him

Phumi: a reye o nnetseng (lets go why are you sitting there)

he raised his eyebrows at her

Castiel: ummm I only understood “a” and “o”

Phumi: Amen!

the guy on the front chuckled

Phumi: let's go before I change my mind tuu

Castiel got up and he took her bag and looked at the guy

Castiel: uyahleka ngamehlo akho amakhulu kungathi uyixoxo nx (you're laughing with your big eyes as if you're a frog)....your cholesterol will choke you while you busy laughing at things that got nothing to do with you unye msoon

Phumi looked at him shocked and the guy frowned looking at him.....Castiel walked out of the bus and Phumi followed him with a “wow” look on her face

Phumi: that was unnecessary dude

Castiel: can you stop calling me dude...im not your dude Phumi

Phumi: o sambora tuu (don't bore me please)

Castiel: just stop talking that Tswana shit with me ok...speak Isizulu then if English is showing you flames

she showed him the hand and walked away

They were now on the road to the airport then Castiel took his phone and called Ray

Ray: Cass

Castiel: bros you good

Ray: yeah what's up?

Castiel: I need a favour man

Ray: im listening

Castiel: I need you to buy me two plane tickets business class.....try and get me the earliest flight you can get

Ray: two plane tickets huh?

Castiel: I'll explain when I see you later

Ray: ok

Castiel: thanks bro

Ray: yeah yeah

then they ended the call

Phumi: I hope the second plane ticket is not for me

Castiel: why, don't tell me you're scared of flights

she kept quiet and looked outside the window

Castiel: wow so you can run your mouth like someone who has diarrhea but you're scared of

taking a mere flight

***She showed him the middle finger ***

Castiel: be careful that finger might stay like that for the rest of your life

he said with a serious tone that made her have chills run down her spine and she swallowed

Castiel: so tell me about yourself

She kept quiet still looking out the window

Castiel: Phumi

Phumi: I have nothing to say

Castiel: you're exhausting you know that

Phumi: more reason why you should stay the hell away from me

he sighed

Castiel: what is it about me that piss you off?

Phumi: you insulted me and on top of that you

came between me and my cousin

Castiel: I didn't insult you Phumi....where I come from being a witch is what is called "dope" today so I didn't think you'd feel insulted by my question

Phumi: dude you speak Isizulu so you should know that that question is sensitive and insulting in South Africa

Castiel: I know that South Africans are very sensitive humans and that they get offended easily but come on that was a simple question that needed a simple answer

Phumi: mxm you know how sensitive we are and yet o no phatlhoga fela nje (and yet you just talk as you please)

Castiel: what did I say about speaking Tswana with me?

Phumi: what did I say about you staying the hell away from me but yet here we are

Castiel looked at her and chuckled shaking his head

Castiel: and to think that we thought you might be with the Brethren....you're just a loud mouth nje

he chuckled and Phumi frowned

Phumi: who are the Brithen?

Castiel: its Brethren not Brithenand they are some evil beings

Phumi: whatever...but wait....what if I am with them mmmmh?

he looked at her briefly

Castiel: then I would be dead by now

Phumi: well what if the Brithen don't want you dead as yet

She said with a raised eyebrow and he chuckled

Castiel: for starters you said their name wrong so you can't be with them

Phumi: mxm whatever

Castiel: " damn it she has to be the one....Juana made a mistake she has to be the one"

he thought and they continued to drive

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Ray bought the tickets for Castiel and send him the codes then his boys came and took Celine and his traumatized bodyguard to the warehouse.....Right now Ruu and Ray are sitting in the lounge with Ruslan helping Ray out with some papers concerning the private hospital Ray was building

Ruslan: SAINT CATALEYA PRIVATE HOSPITAL....I like it man

Ray: yeah but I need to run it past Mbali first

Ruslan: and he's learning people...

he said smiling and Ray pushed him

Ray: mxm piss off puta

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: so what are you gonna do with Celine

Ray: I'll call her uncle and make a deal with him, I know he always wanted to take over the family business but his brother gave the reins to his useless daughter instead so I kill the bitch for him and he's indebted to me for life or I'll threaten to let Celine go and he never gets his hands on the business and we both know which one he'll go with

Ruslan: ooh so you got all this figured out right

Ray: you know me Celine being kill here won't have him as a suspect.... and plus wifey started the whole shit and im finishing it

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: lucky son of a bitch

Ray sighed

Ray: but im worried about her man

Ruslan: don't be...she just showed you that she can hold it down

Ray: I don't want her involved man

Ruslan: then make sure she doesn't get involved it's as simple as that

Ray: yeah

Ray nodded then they heard the doorbell ring and Ruu got up

Ray: just so you know you're going to run Saint Cataleya as the CEO so you'll be able to get a work permit to be closer to Thandi and your kids all the time

Ruslan: what?

Ray: it's not up for discussion Ruu....we both

know you have a business mind so find a way to make the Hospital a success.....and its 15% shares for sale to you, 10% for Mat, 10% for Diego, 10% for Heath, 10% for Jabu and 45% for me and plus you'll monitor your many investment online so it's a win win situation

he stopped walking and looked at Ray

Ruu: you have all this shit figured out huh?

Ray: im a business man, it's just a pity I can't run the hospital because of other businesses I have on the side

Ruu opened the door and he signed for the package then he tipped the delivery man and he closed the door and walked back to Ray

Ray: you had that delivered here, what about Thandi's house?

Ruslan: I know the madam of this house won't mind and she won't ask unnecessary questions

Ray: what about me

Ruslan: you're irrelevant

Ray: what?....you know what nigga, fuck you

Ruu laughed then he put the box on the table and opened it and there was a scarf inside written aunt with a white making pen , a warn-out head warp written gogo, two t-shirts inside and one was written big bro and the other one was written another bro....He smirked wickedly and Ray went to see what's inside and he frowned

Ray: I hope all this is not for Thandi man

Ruslan: come on man I would never insult amor like that....this is what I need to deal with the Mashabas once and for all

Ray: no wait... you gonna...

Ruslan: yeah....im gonna make their nightmares come to life in a most horrific way

Ray: damn and how the hell did you get all this!

he closed the box and whistled going to the kitchen

Ray: Ruu!

.....21

.

.

.

Cass: wow you're really scared of flying huh

she sighed

Phumi: yeah

Cass: relax nothing will happen

Phumi: and how do you know that... are you God?

he chuckled

Cass: I just know now relax

Phumi: mxm easy for you to say....this shitty thing might explode and we will all die

He chuckled

Cass: and that bus can also explode too you know

She rolled her eyes and she breathed out then they kept quiet for sometime

Cass: so is there someone special in your life?

***she looked at him ***

Phumi: yeah and we are in love

Cass: is that so

Phumi: yeah we've been together for 10 years and still going strong

*** she said and she looked at him with pouted lips and Castiel chuckled***

Cass: cute pout

she stopped pouting and she frowned then he chuckled again

Cass: so 10 years huh and he still hasn't put a ring on it

Phumi: ufunukthini Castor oil (what are you trying to say Castor oil)

Cass: what did you just call me?

Phumi: ummm I said Castiel

He looked at her with an intense look on his face then he sipped on his drink

Cass: that's strike 1 from you just so you know

she frowned at him

Phumi: askies

Cass: you heard me

Phumi: mxm

Cass: you know, the day im gonna fuck that

stinking attitude and stubbornness out of you
you'll think the world is coming to an end
ngiyaktshela (im telling you)

***her mouth hung open as she looked at
him***

Cass: continue talking to me anyhow and your
day will come

Phumi: im not scared of you and I will never
ever sleep with you..... I mean you're not even
my type for God's sake....you might be Kazi's
but definitely not mine

He chuckled

Cass: if you say so

***he picked a business magazine and paged
through it***

Phumi: so what time are we landing?

Cass: soon

Phumi: I asked "what time" Castiel

Cass: I don't know

Phumi: Jehovah!

he looked at her briefly

Cass: el día que te follaré (the day I'll fuck you)

***then he chuckled shaking his head**

Phumi: askies?

Cass: nothing

then he chuckled and continued to page through the magazine.....after some time they landed and they went to take her luggage and he made a call to Ray and Ray told him one of his guys will hand him a car key outside, he grabbed Phumi's hand and she frowned at how cold his hand was...anyway they walked to the exit and as soon as they got out a guy walked to them and greeted them then he gave Castiel a car key and pointed at the car then he walked away

Cass: let's go

he pulled her towards the car and opened the passenger door for her and she got in and he closed it and he went to open the boot of the car and put in her bag and closed it then he went to the driver side, got in and drove away after they both buckled up

Phumi: so are you some kind of a rich man with cold hands?

Cass: why do you ask?

he ignored the cold hands part

Phumi: business class tickets and now some guy just handed you a car key just like that

Cass: well I do have businesses, both legal and illegal but I have people who run them for me

Phumi: illegal?

she said frowning

Cass: yeah, it's the in thing.... you don't know

that?

she gave him the “wtf” look

Phumi: you kidding right

Cass: no

she just kept quiet

Cass: there's a lot of shit happening in my life in fact there's a lot of shit that will shock you about me so this revelation shouldn't shock you

Phumi: well thankfully I'll never see you again after dropping me off so it's all good

***he chuckled ***

Cass: what makes you think this is the last time we will be seeing each other

Phumi: we're not friends Castiel

Cass: yeah but I think you are my mate

Phumi: mate?

Cass: mmmmh

Phumi: well im not your mate, whatever that means.....im Thabo's woman

Cass: no you're Thabo's ex

Phumi: wa gafa ka bona mxm (you're crazy)

Cass: and there she goes with her Tswana bullshit nx

Phumi: don't start with me tuu

Castiel just shook his head and they continued to drive in complete silence until Phumi fell asleep

Phumi woke up when she felt pressed and she yawned and squinted her eyes looking around then her eyes landed on Castiel who was sitting on a chair not far from the bed and she froze

Cass: you're finally awake...damn you sleep like a dead person yeeer minus the snoring

ofcourse

Phumi: where...where am i?

Cass: my brother's house

Phumi: what...i...

she quickly touched her nana to feel any pain and Castiel chuckled

Cass: believe me you would have known the moment you opened your eyes ukuthi my dick was in there so relax

She swallowed hard and got out of the bed

Phumi: ummm where is the bathroom

he pointed at a slightly opened door and she went there and did her business, after she was done she flushed and thoroughly checked herself and her nana and she was all good then she washed her hands and went back to the bedroom

Cass: you hungry?

Phumi: why didn't you wake me up so I give you directions?

Cass: nje....so are you hungry?

Phumi: Castiel I asked you a question!

*** she said with a raised voice and he frowned at her***

Cass: hey...hey don't fucken raise your voice at me ok!

he warned her and she kept quiet cause his warning tone was scary

Phumi: mxm

she saw her hand bag and went to take out her phone and she checked the time and it was 23H15....she sighed then she turned and looked at an unbothered Castiel

Phumi: I need to leave

Cass: at this time?

Phumi: you have a car Castiel so you can just drive me home

Cass: no

he said getting up and he walked to her and she frowned

Phumi: what do you mean no....dude assomblief don't make me mad

Cass: what did I say about you calling me dude

Phumi: Castiel o sa batla go mbora please (Castiel don't bore me please)....just take me home

Cass: and I said no its late, I'll take you home tomorrow

she looked at him with an angry look on her face

Phumi: you know what its fine I'll make a plan

Cass: ok...in the meantime let me bring our food

He walked out and she stood there not knowing what to do...She sat down at the edge of the bed for some time thinking of who to call, she couldn't call her boyfriend cause nigga didn't know she was even coming back so to call him to come and pick her up from some guy's house will just mess things up between them, worst thing is she didn't even know where she was....Her phone rang and she contemplated on whether to answer it or to just let it ring but she knew how crazy her boyfriend is if she doesn't answer his calls so she answered it

Phumi: babe

Thabo: love o sharp (love you good)

Phumi: yah wena? (yeah you)

Thabo: nna ke grand (im good) so how's KZN

treating you

she cleared her throat

Thabo: keng?(what)

Phumi: umm im coming back to....tomorrow

right then Castiel walked in with two plates filled with food

Thabo: why, did something happen

he asked worried

Phumi: yeah ummm well Kazi is just too busy for me so ke bone gore ke no bowa once since im bored (so I thought I should just come back since im bored)

Thabo: ooh ok, so you'll tell me gore o fitlha bo nako mang so ke tlo go pick(a) up neh (what time you'll be arriving so I'll come pick you up ok)

Phumi: ok babe....i love you

Castiel clenched his jaws and he put the plates down and snatched Phumi's phone and dropped the call then he switched it off and threw the phone on top of the bed leaving Phumi shocked

Phumi: what the fuck Castiel!

Cass: your food

he said pointing at the plates

Phumi: why did you do that....that's my boyfriend you jerk!

Castiel: I don't like his voice...its fucken annoying

he took his plate and went to sit down and started eating leaving Phumi pissed off

AT THE HOUSE RUU RENTED FOR THANDI

Mpilo: so the monster won't come again dad

Ruu: no, I chased it away last night and it will never bother you again ok

Mpilo: ok

he said smiling

Ruu: good now it's time for you to sleep my pilot

Ruu pulled the covers to his neck and kissed his forehead

Ruu: good night my pilot

Mpilo: good night dad

Mpilo yawned and closed his eyes then Ruslan went to Mpendulo's bed and sat on the edge

Ruu: so what happened today at school champ?

Mpe sighed and he swallowed hard sitting up

Mpe: he...he called me a disgusting faggot and I

punched him

he said looking down and Ruslan frowned getting angry

Ruu: he did what?.....wait why did he call you that

Mpe looked away

Ruu: im waiting champ

Mpe: cause.... cause I said Lunga Tshabalala is cute with nice pink lips

Ruslan frowned

Ruu: who the hell is that?

Mpe: he's a Tv presenter

Ruu sighed and he brushed his beard with his right hand

Ruu: champ tell me here, do you think you're gay

Mpe: no....ofcourse not...im not gay...how can

you ask me that

Ruu: ok now tell me here.....do you find other boys cute and handsome, other than that Tv presenter

he kept quiet looking down while playing with his fingers

Ruu: champ?

Mpe: no...no I don't

Ruu: don't lie to me Mpe

tears ran down his face and Ruslan sighed then he pulled the covers off him and he got up

Ruu: let's go talk somewhere private

Mpe hesitated a bit then he got off the bed and followed Ruslan out.....they went to his study room and he instructed that he sit down and Mpe sat down and Ruslan sat next to him

Ruu: im gonna ask you again champ....do you find other boys attractive....do other boys look cute and handsome to you

Mpe swallowed hard and tears continued to stream down his cheeks

Ruu: im waiting

Mpe: ye...yes

then he busted out with a cry and Ruslan sighed and pulled him closer and he sobbed on his chest

Ruu: its ok Champ...its ok I understand

He waited for him to calm down then he wiped his tears and sighed

Ruu: when did you notice that you liked boys instead of girls?

Mpe: two years ago....we...we were playing mantlwane (a game of make-believe) at gogo and mkhulu's place and... and I was playing the

child while some boy was playing my father and some girl was playing my mother....a time came and “mother” told “dad” to bath me and when he started touching me pretending to bath me I felt some way, I felt a tingling feeling on my privates and I had a chilling feeling all over my body, my little guy was also hard

he kept quiet while looking down feeling embarrassed

Ruu: go on

Mpe: we went to “sleep” then “in the morning” the boy kissed the girl like you do with mom when you leave and I got angry.....i was angry that he kissed her that I even told them im not playing mantlwane anymore and I walked away

he sighed still embarrassed

Mpe: I didn’t understand why I was feeling that way but I hated that girl ever since.....then one day we...we were changing for a soccer practice

at school and I saw a boy in his undies and that feeling came back again...I've been feeling like that ever since for other boys

he said with a low tone embarrassed with tears streaming down his face and Ruu sighed

Ruu: there's nothing wrong with you Mpe, just because you like other boys and not girls doesn't mean there's something wrong with you ok

he nodded sniffing

Ruu: well my son who's your elder brother is gay and I don't love him any less, in fact he's the best son a father could ask for

Mpe: he's....gay?

he asked shocked and Ruu nodded

Ruu: well his mother and her family are church people and they think he's possessed by a

demon that's why he's like that

Mpe: oooh

he said looking down

Ruu: but I taught him to ignore such people in his life cause people will always find something wrong to say about you.....even when you're not gay they'll say you're weak and lazy cause you don't have a job.....when you're not ready to have a child they'll say you can't have kids.....when you're working they'll say since you started working you think you're better than them and so on and so forth so just be you champ....be Mpe ok

Mpe nodded

Ruu: even if they say you're going to hell for being gay just tell them you'll meet them there cause judging another person is ungodly.....people will talk no matter what my boy and they also judge you no matter how

good you are so just ignore them

Mpe sighed

Ruu: remember avoid a fool in order to avoid noise and that only God can judge you Mpe and never let people bring you down, gays have a sharp tongue for such delinquent people so don't disappoint

Mpe laughed shyly and Ruslan smiled

Mpe: thanks pops, im glad mom chose you to be our dad

he said sincerely with tears in his eyes

Ruu: well it's the other way around actually...i chose her but don't tell her I told you that

they laughed

Ruu: you're my son Mpe and I'll always be here for you no matter what, you hear me

he nodded and Ruu looked at him smirking

Ruu: so you punched that boy huh

Mpe: well im sorry I broke his nose but he deserved it pops

they both laughed and Mpe wiped his tears feeling better that someone knows about the strange feelings he has for other boys

Ruu: well your mother is fuming and we both know tomorrow she's gonna swear at you and even whip your butt

Mpendulo sighed

Mpe: this baby is gonna be death of us pops no man

he said shaking his head and Ruu laughed.... well they told the boys about Thandi being pregnant

Ruu: leave my princess alone

then he got up and Mpe also got up

Ruu: ooh before I forget you're grounded for the

whole of this week since you're expelled... so no TV and PlayStation for you and im taking your phone too

Mpe: but pops....

he looked at him with a raise eyebrow and Mpe kept quiet

Mpe: yes sir

he said looking down

Ruu: good and all you'll do is study until you go back to school...and don't think I won't know if you're not, in fact we both know I'll know so don't dare me boy..... now go to bed

he walked away sulking

Ruslan: I love you

Mpe: yeah right

Ruu: what was that?

he asked with a threatening tone

Mpe: no...nothing.....I love you too

Ruu: thought as much

Mpe walked out sulking and Ruu chuckled shaking his head then he sighed and walked out and he went to their bedroom

Ruu: hey why are you still awake?

Thandi: I can't sleep im worried about Mpe....like how can he punch another child like that

*** she sighed***

Ruu: he was wrong to get violent like that with that boy but I must say im proud of him

Thandi: Ruu!

Ruslan chuckled and he got inside the covers

Ruu: what!

Thandi: I won't raise a violet child nna

never!

Ruslan: champ is not violent amor we both know that, im sure whatever that boy said to him is what ticked him off

Thandi: but still he shouldn't have hit him baby, look now he got expelled

she said with an emotional voice

Ruu: for a week only amor and I grounded him for this week so he knows what he did is wrong and he'll never do it again

she sighed

Thandi: so did he tell you what that other boy said to make him lose it like that

she said resting her head on his chest and he wrapped his arms around her and kissed the top of her head

Ruu: no.... all he said is he's sorry he broke his nose but he deserves it

Thandi: he said that?

she said trying to get off him but he tightened the grip around her

Ruu: where you going....just relax and stop stressing my princess please

she sulked and relaxed a bit

Ruu: I handled things now relax amor....i got this ok

she sighed

Thandi: I know...im just worried about him Ruu

Ruu: and I understand amor but im here and im not going anywhere so let me play my fatherly role and handle this please

she sighed

Thandi: ok

she kissed his chest and he kissed the top of her head

Ruu: can I get your opinion on something

Thandi: yeah

Ruu: how would you feel about Mpilo or Mpe
being gay

she kept quiet a bit

Thandi: I'd be disappointed but I won't love
either one of them any less

Ruu: ok

they kept quiet a bit

Thandi: let me guess you think Mpe is gay

Ruu kept quiet a bit then he sighed

Ruu: yeah

Thandi: so he did tell you why he punched that
boy right

he sighed

Ruu: yeah, the other boy called him a disgusting
faggot

Thandi: wooh what!

she said getting up

Thandi: he called him what?

she said with an angry voice

Ruu: relax will you

Thandi: some piece of shit that got conceived by mistake just because the condom broke and a morning after pill didn't work called my son a disgusting faggot!

Ruu held his laugh

Ruu: calm down please.....champ punched him and even broke his nose so calm down

Thandi: nx o mo laile....e ko sa le a mo raga a be a thuba le maenyana a gae a dinonyane nx.....a re my son is a disgusting faggot.... wa nnyela nx.... entlek msoon wa mmae (nx he did good....he should've kicked and crushed his small balls nx....he said my son is a disgusting

faggot he's full of shit nx....you know what his mother's cunt)

Ruu: amor please calm down....please

*** he pleaded and she breathed out then she laid back on Ruu's chest***

Thandi: mxm Im no longer angry with Mpe, you should continue to punish him but im no longer disappointed with him that little fucker deserved it nx

Ruu sighed

Ruu: so what about him possibly being gay

she sighed

Thandi: I have been suspecting that he might be by the things that he likes doing that are odd.....the way he acts and behaves sometimes have been giving me bad vibes you know....i was just hoping that its all in my head but I guess I was just in denial

she sighed sadly

Thandi: you know what..... lets talk about it tomorrow cause right now im just too pissed by that little mistake of a sperm that insulted my son to even think clearly

he chuckled a bit

Ruu: alright....i love you ok

Thandi: I love you too and thank you for going to talk to him instead of me cause I know I would've whipped his ass instead of trying to understand why he did what he did

Ruu: I told you I got you amor

Thandi: im one lucky girl neh

he chuckled

Ruu: and im one lucky man

*** he pulled her face up and they kissed***

AT LIMPOPO

kokwane was fast asleep when she heard someone or something whispering to her, at first she thought she was dreaming but even when she opened her eyes in the dark room she still heard the whisper not far from her

Voice: why?

the voice said whispering

Kokwane: ko yendlekala yini (whats going on)

she asked herself then she got out of bed and she went to switch on the light with the voice still asking “why”.....as soon as the light went on she screamed when she saw James standing there looking scary with blood coming out of his mouth, nose and eyes....his clothes were ripped and covered in blood

Kokwane: yho yho yho ngwino!

***she screamed with her hands on top of her

head....she was even shaking***

James: why?

***he whispered again walking slowly towards her ***

Kokwane: yho Jamese....Jamese nikhomele....nikhomele xetokolo xa mena! (James...James forgive me...forgive me my grandchild)

she said shaking with her eyes popped out

James: why?

***he continued whispering as he walked to her....she screamed again but then she stopped and she held her chest with her eyes popped out and she fell on the floor still clinging to her chest until she stopped moving and she breathed out once then she lay there with her eyes and mouth opened without blinking then "James" disappeared....her

granddaughter then rushed inside her bedroom to check why her granny was screaming and she found her on the floor not moving***

GrandD: kokwane...kokwane!

she wasn't moving and she wasn't blinking.....she screamed for help while shaking her granny but kokwane was gone

22

.

.

.

Phumi: what about our sleeping arrangements

Cass: what about them

Phumi: where will you sleep

Castiel started taking off his clothes

Phumi: what are you doing?

Castiel: im going to take a shower

He said also taking off his underwear and his semi hard dick dangled freely and Phumi gasped and she looked away

Castiel: you can look I don't mind

Phumi: piss off Castiel

He laughed and went to the bathroom and he took a shower.....after he was done he went back to bedroom naked and found Phumi lying on the bed

Phumi: do you have to walk around naked

Castiel: yeah....im trying to seduce you can't you see

Phumi: Amen!

he chuckled and started putting on lotion

Castiel: you can shower now since im done

***she got out of bed and went to take her toiletry bag and pyjamas making sure she doesn't look at Castiel's naked body, she went

to the bathroom and closed then locked the door and Castiel laughed....after some time she came out looking fresh with her pjs on and she stood next to the bed***

Phumi: Castiel we seriously cant share a bed

Castiel: why not

She gave him the “are you serious” look and he just shook his head

Castiel: stop being silly and get into bed....we are both adults Phumi

Phumi: you're not even wearing a shirt man

Castiel: so?

Phumi: mxm

She reached for two other standard pillows and she put them between them then she got in and faced the other way

Castiel: is all this necessary?

Phumi: im someone's girl so I can't let another man touch me

she said with a serious tone

Castiel: mxm imagine calling some boy with a small dick a man

He said to himself and Phumi turned

Phumi: askies?

Castiel: I wasn't talking to you

Phumi: mxm

She laid on her side again and they stayed in silence the Castiel reached for his phone and called Ruslan

Ruu: do you know how late it is

Castiel: sorcerers don't sleep at night

Ruu: fuck you!

Castiel laughed

Castiel: so what are you up to ?

Ruu: you called to ask me that shit?

he said with an annoyed voice

Castiel: im trying to keep my mind occupied so I don't fuck this fine ass sleeping next to me

He said looking at Phumi and he saw her moving a bit and he smirked

Ruu: really now Cass?

he said annoyed

Cass: yeah....she's refusing to give me some ass so what should I do man I mean my dick is rock hard and she put pillows between us, can you believe it

Ruu: you're so fucking unbelievable

He dropped the call and Cass called him again

Ruu: can you just stop calling me man!

Castiel: I can't man you are my brother so I need

to vent out

Ruu breathed out annoyed to the core by him

Ruu: fine vent so I can drop this fucken call

Castiel: damn i can tell that you're really annoyed cause you're busy cursing left right and center man

Ruu: im waiting Cass

Castiel: ok look the fine ass is Phumi

Ruu: the same Phumi you can't read

Castiel: yeah

Ruu: are you out of your damn mind man!

Castiel: maybe I mean I even tried walking around naked in front of her and she just won't budge man, am I losing my charm Madou

Phumi chuckled not believing what was happening with her back still facing Cass

Castiel: she's even laughing at me man I swear this girl is a demon.....no one has ever denied my charms man....she's heartless

Phumi gasped

Ruu: you just said that in front of her

Castiel: she's hurting my feelings so it's a tit for a tat

Ruslan sighed defeated

Ruu: you're an ass you know that right

Castiel: dude she's always rubbing her stupid boyfriend to my face and that shit hurts ok

Ruu: are you high or something Cass

Castiel: no, im just sexually frustrated and also emotionally frustrated by Phumi

Phumi turned and snatched Castiel's phone and dropped the call then she switched it off and threw it at him

Phumi: you're an asshole, no in fact you're a fucken jerk....you know what a jerk is even better o no ba mpya fela nx (you're just a dog)

Castiel just quickly pulled her and he smashed his lips on hers and he kissed her....she pushed him away from her and slapped him then he smirked looking at her angry face

Castiel: you know what they say about woman who slaps you or likes arguing with you, they actually like you

Phumi: I don't like you Castiel....you're like an annoying fly that refuses to die even after spraying it with doom

He chuckled and he pulled her closer and she tried to push him off but the magnitude of the tightness of his grip around her was shocking....she couldn't move an inch

Castiel: a fly huh?

Phumi: let go of me

Castiel: why do you hate me Phumi mmmh?

Phumi: I said let go

Castiel: I asked you a question

he said with a serious look on his face and she swallowed hard

Phumi: I don't hate you

Castiel: then what is it?

Phumi: you're just....annoying

*** He moved as quick as lightning and she was now lying on her back and he was on top of her, between her legs***

Phumi: wha...how did we....

***she had a shocked look on her face and Castiel shut her up with a kiss.... she tried to fight it but the kiss was too passionate for her to fight it, she ended up kissing him back and

soon they were kissing hungrily with Castiel running his hands on her body....they were both moaning through the kiss and it was clear that they were both feeling things.... within a speed of lightning he took her pyjama top off and moved to her breasts and he sucked on them like a hungry animal.....he wasn't rough but he wasn't gentle either so Phumi was feeling things she never felt before.....he then went back to her mouth avoiding her neck by all costs cause he knows that the moment his lips touch it he will lose it and he might feed on her.....

They continued to kiss with Castiel grinding on her..she was now soaking wet down there and her body was feeling thing she never felt before, his touch, his grab, his kiss and his deep throat groans drove her crazy..... within a speed of lightning again her pyjama shorts were off and she wasn't wearing any underwear***

Phumi: how did....

***he shut her up with a kiss and she felt his hand on her pussy and she gasped, then she felt his finger penetrating her and she moaned through the kiss.....his finger did the things until she came all over his hand screaming and he smirked and licked his finger clean as she watched then he kissed her making her taste herself....

She then felt the tip of his dick on her entrance and she froze and he whispered to her***

Castiel: relajarse bello (relax beautiful)

he pushed the tip in and she gasped moving back cause she felt some pain

Castiel: where are you going?

he said pulling her back and he kissed her pushing all of it in and she closed her eyes as she felt her walls stretching

Castiel: fuck....

he said and she remembered a condom

Phumi: Cass.... a... condom

he ignored her and started moving....she bit her bottom lip with her eyes closed as he moved in and out of her slowly

Castiel: open your eyes bello (beautiful)

Phumi: shit you're huge man

***she said opening her eyes and he chuckled still moving in and out of her slowly....he grabbed her butt cheeks so tight that she felt like he was gonna rip them off his body....he increased his pace going in and out of her and she moaned cause now she was feeling a mixture of pain and pleasure.....

He was now lost in her that even when he grabbed the bed sheet they got ripped apart, his lips found their way to his shoulder and his

fangs got long and he bit on her while pounding on her now and she flinched with pain.....he then pulled his fangs out still pounding on her and he blew air on the bite mark....

He then pulled out and she found herself laying on her stomach and he was behind her sliding in....she wondered when they changed position but she moaned out loud when he started to move***

Phumi: fuck Cass...ooh shit

she said shouting as he rammed on her from behind....his grip on her waist was so tight that she felt like he was gonna rip it apart

Castiel: fuck...

he said as he went deeper and she screamed moving forward which caused his veined dick to slip out cause she felt like he poked her womb or something but he pulled her back to him

Castiel: where are you going bello

Phumi: you're in too deep Cass

*** she said with a shaky voice and he slid in and pushed in deeper and she screamed***

Castiel: who's a man between us?

Phumi: gosh Cass

she said as he fucked her from behind

Castiel: I asked you a question Phumi.....who's a man between us?

Phumi: you...you are Cass...you are

*** he then pulled his dick out leaving only the tip in then he slammed inside her hard and she screamed again moving forward but he held her in place***

Castiel: uzoyeka ukukhuluma nami ingathi uyehla eshlahleni siyazwana! (you gonna stop talking to me as if you're climbing down a tree alright)

Phumi: ooh God... yes...yes

he pulled back and slammed in her again and she screamed again trying to move forward but his tight grip stopped her

Castiel: and you're gonna end things with that boy ok

Phumi: ye...yes

he then stopped moving

Castiel: good

***he then pulled out and within a blink of an eye she was now laying on her back with Castiel's head between her thighs....he started eating her up and she gaspedhe ate her up like a pro to a point that he ended up coming hard all over his face screaming loud with her whole body shaking vigorously.... he then reached for the towel and cleaned his face then he positioned himself as she laid there numb and he slowly entered her and she moaned while he groaned.....

He was now fucking her hard with a fast pace groaning like an angry animal when suddenly the bed broke in the middle which made Phumi to scream but Cass didn't stop.....he went hard on her holding her waist tight going deeper with Phumi screaming her lungs out....within a blink of an eye they were now by the wall with Castiel holding her bridal style....her eyes popped out when she saw that they were now by the wall.....he put her down and turned her to face the wall and he bend her and he opened her legs using his knee***

Castiel: balance yourself with your hands against the wall

***she did that and he inserted himself slowly from the back and she clenched her jaws moaning with her eyes closed cause she was super sore by now....he started fucking her hard and she put both her hands against the wall so she doesn't bump her head against it cause the

force that was coming from behind was too much....she was screaming so hard while he groaned as he fucked her brains out.....he made sure he doesn't push too hard cause she might break her neck against the wall or something....

Anyway he grabbed both her shoulders and he fucked her hard as she screamed, she felt like her bones were cracking as his grip got tighter....he went on and on and on until he slammed into her and released all his juices in her groaning loud then he cursed***

Castiel: FUCK....FUCK....FUCK!

*** he then pulled out and his juices ran down her thighs....he saw that she was about to pass out and he quickly caught her before she could hit the floor***

****In the morning Castiel moved a bottle that had some stinking potion on her nostrils to

wake her up and she made a face and she opened her eyes moving her face cause that thing smelled horrible.....he laughed when she covered her nose and he closed the bottle and sat next to her....she opened her eyes and she found him staring at her with a smile on his face...she tried to sit up but she groaned as she felt an excruciating pain all over her body***

Phumi: ahhhhh!

she cried out

Castiel: hey take it easy

he helped her to sit up and he put pillows to support her back on the headboard... her eyes got filled with tears cause the pain she was feeling was intense

Phumi: ooh God....why am I in pain like this

she said crying

Castiel: relax I'll give you something to make it

better but you have to eat first

he picked a bowl full of oats mixed with milk and sugar

Castiel: open up

Phumi: I'll...i'll feed myself

she tried to take the bowl from him but the moment she moved her hand she screamed as she felt sharp pain on her shoulder that even her hand started shaking

Phumi: ooh God...ooh God

***Castiel swallowed worryingly looking at her as tears continued to stream down her cheek...the bruises all over her body made him feel like shit for the first time ever....the last time he lost himself like this was the first time he made love to Juana ***

Castiel: eat up so I'll give you something for the pain please

Phumi: what happened to me Castiel.....what's wrong with me, why am in this kind of pain?

she said crying

Castiel: eat Phumi

he said and started feeding her....she ate sobbing, he wiped her tears off and continued to feed her....He then put the bowl down and reached for a glass that had one of Ruslan's mixed potion for extreme pain

Castiel: its bitter but it will help you ok

she nodded with puffy eyes and he helped her drink it....she made a face while drinking it but she managed to finish it all

Castiel: give it a minute or so and you'll start feeling better ok

She nodded then she moved her eyes around

Phumi: where are we?....this...this is not the

bedroom we were in

Castiel: we broke the bed so I took you to this bedroom after you passed out

she frowned then she remember the bed breaking in the middle and the way she would find herself in different positions but she didn't remember moving at all worried her

Phumi: what...what are you?

she asked looking at him cause she knew no human could move that fast....and that bed that was broken in half was one of those king size beds that looked expensive, so for it to break like that wasn't a normal thing

Castiel: you wouldn't believe me if I tell and if I show you you might run out of here naked so let's just say im not a normal human being

he said with a nervous smile and she wanted to say something but he interrupted her

Castiel: try to move your hand and tell me if you still feel pain

she did slowly and she didn't feel any pain then she sighed with relief.....she touched her shoulders and she felt some numbness on the joins

Castiel: let me go and run you a bubble bath

he got up and went to the bathroom...all the 5 bedrooms had en-suites

Phumi: Phumi what have you gotten yourself into

She said to herself touching her nana and it was numb..... well the sex was good until he mysteriously took her to the wall and from there on she didn't enjoy anything, he was so deep and rough that all she felt was pain until she passed out

*** she was now inside a huge bathtub relaxing with her eyes closed, Castiel was sitting on top

of the toilet lid playing with his expensive manly ring that was on his pinky finger, she tried to get him to give her some privacy but he refused to leave....they have been quiet for some time now***

Castiel: you do know what this means right?

she opened her eyes

Phumi: what?

Castiel: what happened last night?

Phumi: what happened last night was just a once of thing Castiel

he looked at her with an intense look

Castiel: it means you're mine now Phumi and it also means you're gonna end things with that boy

she kept quiet frowning

Castiel: ngikhuluma nawe Phumelele (im talking to you Phumelele)

Phumi: we can never work Cass

Castiel: and why not

Phumi: dude there's Kazi with a killer body and then there's me...

Castiel: what does her body got to do with us?

she sighed and rolled her eyes

Phumi: stop acting stupid Castiel.....im a big girl ok

Castiel: so?

he asked with a frown on his face

Phumi: you don't get it do you

Castiel: you're not big bello.... you're chubby with a nice ass and curves and plus to carry my child you gonna need all tha meat

*** her heart nearly stopped***

Phumi: ooh God we didn't use a condom

Castiel: mmmmh

Phumi: o re mmmmh Castiel

Castiel: relax im clean in fact I can't get sick or carry diseases and I'll buy you the emergency pill so relax

she breathed out

Phumi: you better and us sleeping together will never happen again

he chuckled looking at her

Castiel: keep dreaming Bello

It was now in the morning around 10 and they were driving to Phumi's home, Castiel did buy her the morning after pills even though he knew it won't work

Castiel: do you have any siblings

she shook her head no

Castiel: so you're the only child huh

Phumi: yeah

Castiel: mmmmh just so im clear, you have only today to end things with that boy

she looked at him

Phumi: why would I do that

he looked at her briefly

Castiel: to save his life

her breath hinged

Phumi: what...what do you mean by that?

Castiel: cause I'll kill him if you don't and im not kidding bello

***she swallowed hard....Phumi kept quiet thinking about what Castiel did to her in the early hours of the morning and what he just said while Castiel just whistled an ancient song his mother used to sing for him when he was still young.....anyway they arrived and Castiel parked outside the yard then he turned and

looked at her ***

Castiel: I'll come see you later ok

Phumi: you don't have to

Castiel: just stop ok....stop pushing me away

Phumi, im yours and you're mine end of the story....we are not doing this hide and seek game, I made my intentions clear to you.... I even marked you so we are bound together for life

she frowned looking at him

Phumi: marked me?

she said frowning and he reached for her top and pulled the sleeves down a bit and she had a bite mark on her shoulder, it was more like a scar of a bite mark

Castiel: this mark is more binding and more formal than a marriage certificate....whenever im in trouble it will have a burning and itchy like

sensation and whenever you're not ok i will feel it so we are bound for life bello so you better end thinks with that boy or I'll kill him cause i will never share you

he said looking into her eyes and she swallowed hard

Phumi: what are you Castiel.... I mean everything that happened since....

he shut her up with a slow passionate kiss

Castiel: all you need to know now is I'll never hurt you

*** he then stopped and frowned looking inside the yard***

Phumi: what

she said looking where he was looking

Castiel: Kazi is here

Phumi: what...how did you know?

Castiel: come on lets go in

she grabbed his arm

Phumi: you're not getting out of this car Castiel

he frowned

Castiel: you're not going inside alone bello....i
don't trust your cousin

Phumi: well I do so you should leave

Castiel: if she hurts you in any way I'll kill her so
it's better we go in together

Phumi: Cass...

Castiel: it's not up for discussion

***he opened the door and got out and she also
got out with a displeased look on her face***

Castiel: stop sulking it makes you look ugly

***he said walking to her holding her traveling
bag ***

Phumi: mxm fokof

Castiel: askies?

she showed him her middle finger walking inside the yard and he chuckled shaking his head...Phumi saw an unfamiliar car inside the yard and she breathed out praying and hoping that it doesn't belong to Kazi cause she wasn't ready to face her....anyway they walked to the door then it got opened and Kazi walked out and she frowned when she saw Castiel walking behind Phumi

Phumi: ooh God

she said to herself

Phumi: hi

she said avoiding eye contact when she got to the door

Kazi: what is he doing here?

Castiel: how is that any of your business?

***Kazi chuckled and she looked at Phumi with

an angry look on her face***

Kazi: wow.....so did you sleep with him?

Phumi: why are you here Kazi?

Kazi: I asked you a fucken question Phumelele,
did he fuck you..... yebo noma cha (yes or no)

Phumi: you know what excuse me I don't have
time for this nx.....i had a long night so I need to
rest

***she turned and attempted to take her bag
but Castiel stopped her***

Castiel: lead the way

Kazi: I flew this side to come and apologize for
what I thought was me overreacting only to find
out I wasn't....how could you do this to me

Phumi?

she said with an angry voice

Castiel: what did she do?

he said with an annoyed

Kazi: im not talking to you wena

she said pointing at Cass

Castiel: well im talking to you....what is it that she did to you huh!

Kazi: she's a fucken jezebel.....she knew you were interested in me and she went after you

Castiel chuckled

Phumi: Kazi just because im keeping quiet doesn't mean im weak ok....ke tlao trapa wankutlwa (I'll fuck you up you hear me).....osaka nyaka go ntlwaela blaen.....otla nnyela nx (don't piss me off..... you'll shit yourself nx)

she said pointing at her

Phumi: o bitsa nna jezebel....nna Phumi (you're calling me a jezebel....me Phumi)

Kazi: you knew he's interested in me Phumi yet

you went after him!

she said shouting at her

Phumi: hai fokof man Kazi.... ungazogidina wena (don't bore me)....uzala ekhaya uzongtshela amasimba nje...amasimba okunuka! (you come to my home to tell me shit.... smelly shit!)

***she said pointing at her and Castiel pulled her closer ***

Castiel: calm down she's not worth it

Kazi: so you two slept together

Phumi: yes we did so uzoyenzani (what will you do)

she said looking angry

Kazi: uyinja wena Castiel....uyirubbish nx (you're a dog Castiel.... you are rubbish)

she said with tears in her eyes and Cass chuckled

Castiel: you're embarrassing yourself and upsetting my woman

she laughed bitterly

Kazi: did you just say your woman....you call this fat pig your woman

Phumi's eyes got filled with tears as what she just said hurt her

Castiel: what did you just say?

he said getting angry

Kazi: you heard me.....did she even tell you that she has a boyfriend and that she once had an abortion

Phumi's heart broke into pieces and tears rolled down her cheeks and Castiel clenched his jaws

Phumi: Kazi...

Kazi: you think you're all that but the truth of the matter is he's using you Phumi to make me

jealous and you fell for it...you're no...

Castiel: ENOUGH!

he roared then he took out his phone and searched for a number and dialed it

Menzi: hello

Castiel: you better come to Phumi's home and take this rubbish of yours before she loses her teeth

Kazi's eyes popped out

Menzi: who's this?

Castiel: I SAID COME AND TAKE KAZI BEFORE I TRAUMATIZE HER FOR LIFE AND STOP ASKING ME STUPID QUESTIONS!

he shouted

Menzi: who the fuck are you?

Castiel: a man whom she's claiming as hers..... better make sure she gets it through her empty

skull that I don't want her and I never will and if she insults Phumi ever again I'll rip her head off her shoulders and send it to you as a fucken souvenir

then he dropped the call and held Phumi's shaking hand

Castiel: lead the way

Phumi: why...why did you do that.....you know what happened Kazi, now why would you say all that?

she said looking broken but Kazi ignored her

Kazi: why...why did you do that Castiel?

she said looking freaked out

Castiel: fuck off!

*** He said with a pissed off tone and followed Phumi to the back of the house where her bedroom was....she searched for her keys

inside her bag and opened the door and she went inside but Cass stood still outside the door***

MEANWHILE

Kazi's phone rang and she looked at it and it was Menzi.....she wiped her tears off and ignored it...it rang again and she ignored it again.....she went inside the house and took her hand bag and walked out, she opened the gate and drove out leaving it wide opened

Kazi: nx

****her phone rang again and she continued to ignore it then a message came through from Menzi but she didn't open it she continued to drive away*

.

.

After putting her handbag on the bed she went back to the door to take her traveling bag and found Castiel still standing there

Castiel: aren't you gonna invite me in

Phumi: you should leave

she said avoiding eye contact

Castiel: im waiting bello

she sighed and made way for him

Castiel: you have to say it for me to be allowed to enter inside bello

she frowned looking at him

Castiel: ask no questions and I'll tell no lies

she stopped herself from saying anything else cause she was drained emotionally by what happened with Kazi

Castiel: im waiting

Phumi: come in Castiel

he smiled and took the first step and when his leg went in he walked in and put the bag down and he scanned the room

Castiel: it's nice and cozy

she didn't say anything, she just went to the bed and sat down

Castiel: why did you abort?

she swallowed hard looking down

Phumi: I don't wanna talk about it

Castiel: what really happened Phumi?

Phumi: you need to leave....please

she said getting emotional

Castiel: did he force you to do it

tears ran down her cheeks

Phumi: you need to leave

she said with a breaking voice

Castiel: did he force you, yes or no

he said with a serious tone

Phumi: it doesn't matter does it

Castiel: answer my question Phumi

Phumi: I didn't abort he killed my baby ok

she said with tears running down her cheeks

Castiel: im listening

he said standing there with his hands inside his pockets

Phumi: I...i started bleeding and I was rushed to the hospital and when the tests came back they said I had abortion pills in my system

Castiel frowned

Phumi: I told them I didn't drink those pills but

they didn't believe me.....they said another one was even inserted inside my vagina and nothing like that wouldn't happen without my knowledge but I didn't abort my baby

she said crying

Castiel: who do you think killed your baby?

she looked up at him

Castiel: is it that boy Thabo

she shook her head no

Phumi: it was some guy I dated before Thabo...a couple of minutes before I started bleeding we got intimate and he...fingered me I think that's when he inserted the pill....i confronted him and he denied it but said he's glad I wasn't pregnant anymore cause he couldn't have a child with me cause he was engaged to be married to another woman

Castiel clenched his jaws

Castiel: son of bitch

he said with a pissed off voice

Phumi: and the worst part is him and his family spread rumours about me saying I tried to pin the pregnancy on him then I aborted cause he caught me on my lie of trying to pin the baby on him.....I was insulted and my name got tarnished because of it

she said crying

Castiel: is he still alive?

she nodded

Castiel: what's his name?

Phumi: Kitso....Kitso Modiba.....i heard he got married but he's now divorced and he's on a wheelchair

***he walked to Phumi and helped her stand up and he cupped her face and he perked her lips then he wiped her tears off and his phone

rang...he answered it***

Castiel: Madou

Ruu: Cass where you at?

Castiel: I just dropped Phumi off.....what's up?

Ruu: I need your help with something

Castiel: ok im on my way

Ruu: alright

***they ended the call and he looked at
Phumi***

Castiel: I have to go I'll see you later ok

***she nodded and he walked out then she sat
down and sobbed painfully....her phone rang
and she wiped her tears and answered***

Phumi: mama

Her mother: nono I forgot to tell you gore Kazi o
ko ntlung (at home) waiting for you

Phumi: I know

she sniffed wiping her tears off

Her mother: ohk....o shap nono? (are you ok)

Phumi: yeah... im just tired

Her mother: ok rest I'll see you tomorrow

Phumi: ok shap

she dropped the call and she laid down and more tears gushed out

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Ray: hey can we talk

he said peeking inside Mbali's study room

Mbali: yeah

she said putting her pen down and Ray walked in and he went to sit on the couch and Mbali got up and went to join him by sitting on top of him facing him..... he pulled her face closer and they kissed

Ray: I love you my flower

she blushed

Mbali: I love you too

then he sighed

Mbali: what's wrong babe

Ray: how do you feel about Cataleya?

she sighed and she looked down

Ray: my flower

Mbali: I don't know

Ray: talk to me my flower, I want to know how you really feel

she breathed out

Mbali: I don't have a problem with her im just scared that you might love her more than you love Kalu

Ray frowned

Ray: what makes you think that?

Mbali: she doesn't have a demon inside of her

Ray sighed

Ray: look at me

she did

Ray: Kalu is my son, my heir and I love him with everything in me..... he has my blood running through his veins my flower and I wouldn't trade him for anything along with his crazy demon

she smiled and he perked her lips

Ray: I would never love him any less baby.... I may not show it but im glad that Saint protects you like that

Mbali: but he hurt you

Ray: cause I hurt you

she sighed

Ray: nothing changes my flower, we just gonna

have an added child into our small family and we're lucky the won't be any baby mama drama we gonna deal with

she sighed again

Mbali: I know but what if she doesn't like me
Ray

Ray: what's there not to like about you my flower

he said smiling and she blushed

Ray: she's gonna have a stylish mother....a brother that will protect her always....you're the only mother she will know my flower, I even think you'll be her favourite parent

she sighed and rested her head on his shoulder and he wrapped his arms around her

Ray: so should I go and bring her home

she kept quiet for a bit

Ray: if you're not ready to mother her its ok, she'll stay with gogo and mkhulu until you're ready

she raised her head and looked at him

Mbali: you'd do that for me

Ray: anything for you my flower

Mbali: she's your daughter Ray

Ray: and you're my wife

Mbali: mmmh that's thoughtful of you but my "just Ray" would get mad at me for making his daughter to stay with his grandparents

he grabbed her ass and he pulled her closer

Ray: your "just Ray" is a married man now and a father and my wife is crazy as they come and she's protected by a biased demon so i need to think before I act now

she laughed and he smiled

Mbali: I can't believe you just said that

he chuckled

Ray: it's the truth

she pushed him a bit laughing then she stopped and breathed out

Mbali: its ok you can go and bring her home.....she's your daughter and what is mine is yours, vice versa

Ray: you sure

***she nodded and he smiled**

Ray: thank you my flower you don't know how happy that makes me

they kissed for some time with Ray squeezing her ass.....after some time they broke the kiss and he smiled looking at her

Mbali: what

Ray: I love you

she blushed

Ray: and im sorry about everything that happened

she sighed

Mbali: im sorry too

Ray: the moment you start working im gonna give you four months to buy me a new car to replace the one you smashed

she raised her eyebrows looking at him

Ray: and another two months to buy me my expensive whiskey you poured down the drain

she held her smile then she breathed out

Mbali: not gonna happen.....if you want me to replace those things then you better pay up for breaking my heart by cheating on me and for laying a hand on me

he raised his eyebrows

Mbali: and my heart is priceless mister so I
hope you're ready to be bankrupt

he chuckled

Ray: what the hell have I gotten myself into?

***he said shaking his head with a smile on his
face***

Mbali: I ask myself that question everyday
about you

Ray: what

***he said tickling her and she laughed out loud
trying to stop him***

Mbali: Ray...st...stop...stop man....stop

Ray: take it back...take it back

***he continued to tickle her until she farted and
he stopped and he laughed at her as she also
continued to laugh***

Ray: wait did you just fart

*** she continued to laugh with tears running down her cheeks***

Mbali: that's what you get for tickling me

she said still laughing while wiping her tears off and he laughed too then he smiled looking at her

Ray: I love you Mrs me and thank you for agreeing to mother Cataleya

she wiped her tears off

Mbali: thank you for asking me and not forcing her on me

he smiled and they kissed

AT PHUMI'S HOUSE

***it was now in the middle of the night and she felt something or someone cold holding her from behind and she jumped trying to get of the bed screaming but the grip around her got

tighter ***

Cass: relax it's me

she stopped moving with her heart beating fast, she was even shaking

Phumi: Ca...Cass?

Cass: yeah

she relaxed a bit

Phumi: ooh my God how did you...how...

he kissed the back of her neck

Cass: go back to sleep we will talk in the morning

she tried to get off his hold but she couldn't get off his tight grip

Phumi: let go man

***he loosened his grip and she pushed his hand off her and sat up then she switched her side lamp on and he was shirtless lying next to

her***

Phumi: how the hell did you get in

Cass: I have my ways

then he frowned looking at her

Cass: you've been crying

she looked away

Cass: I don't want you crying bello

she frowned looking at him

Phumi: why do you call me bello....i hope awungithuki Castiel (I hope you're not swearing at me Castiel)

he chuckled looking at her

Cass: no im not and bello means beautiful so relax

she looked down

Cass: and yes you're beautiful

Phumi: mxm

***she got out of bed and she went to the bathroom and she did her business then the door opened while she was still busy ***

Phumi: what the fuck....dude!

he stood by the door, he was only on his briefs with his hard dick print visible....his dick was laying on his thigh with veins visible on top of the briefs and the tip of it was peeping outside the briefs and she looked down after swallowing hard

Cass: what did I say about calling me dude

Phumi: please give me some privacy Castiel tuu

Castiel: the only time I'll give you some privacy is when you take a shit or when you're on your periods

she looked up at him and he grabbed his hard dick with a smirk on his face

Cass: finish up he's ready for you

Phumi: im not gonna have sex with you

she said reaching for the tissue and she wiped herself and she got up and wore her pyjama pants then she flushed and washed her hands

Cass: I love the shape of your ass and curves bello...they are appetizing damn

she wiped her hands and stood there looking at him

Phumi: move I want to get out

he took his dick out of the briefs and he massaged it looking at her and she felt herself getting wet

Cass: its all yours bello

Phumi: will you just stop....please

he got close to her and he cupped her face

Phumi: Cass don't

she said moving back but he pulled her closer

Cass: im not using you...well I need a baby from you but other than that im into you bello

Phumi: did you just say you need a baby from me

Cass: yeah

she tried to get away from him but he held her tight

Castiel: I'll worship the ground you walk on if you make me a father Phumi.....that's all I want from you.... your heart, your loyalty and a baby it's all I need from you and not to make Kazi jealous....im too old for that shit

she looked away

Phumi: we don't know each other Castiel and for you to say you want a child from me is

ridiculous and im still Thabo's girlfriend

he frowned

Castiel: you're banned from saying that name
Phumi and I hope it's the last time you say that
stupid name when im around!

she frowned looking at him

Castiel: im not playing and before the end of
tomorrow he better be your ex

Phumi: you can't force me to do that

Castiel: wanna bet

***he said and his eyes changed colour and she
swallowed hard looking scared and within a
blink of an eye they were on top of the bed and
they were both naked and Castiel was between
her legs***

Phumi: what the hell.... Cass we can't....

***he slid in and she closed her eyes as he
stretched her wide and he groaned***

In the morning Castiel woke her up with a morning glory that was electrifying and after that he told her he'll come pick her up later in the day and he left, at least this time the only pain she felt was between her legs....her pussy was sore from all the fucking and her inner thighs were painful... they went on the whole night and in the morning and she was exhausted...her phone rang and she reached for it and answered without looking at the screen

Phumi: hello

Voice: im still waiting for your call Phumi

she opened her eyes and she looked at the screen and the caller was Thabo

Phumi: ummm hey

Thabo: o sa le KZN le nou (are you still in KZN)

Phumi: umm no ke mo gae (no im at home)

Thabo: didn't I say call me so I can pick you up
at the bus station

Phumi: ummm ma...mama and her boyfriend
came to pick me up

she lied

Thabo: and why didn't you call me to tell me
that

she sighed

Phumi: first of all Thabo if you really wanted to
come and pick me up nkebe ongfounetse (you
would have called me) when I was still on the
road but no you didn't....even last night you
didn't call to check gore ke fitlhile or not (I
arrived or not) you were busy liking pictures tsa
Sne on facebook with a heart reaction to care,
the same Sne you once cheated on me with so
o sa batla gombora (so don't bore me)

Thabo: o nyako reng Phumi? (what are you trying to say Phumi)

Phumi: bona mo motho wa Modimo (look here) it's too early for this so shap re tla bolela later (we will talk later)

she said with an annoyed voice and she dropped the call and put her phone on silence and she went back to sleep.....Thabo called again but his call wasn't answered

BACK IN KZN

*** Kazi woke up when she felt someone shaking her and she found an angry looking Menzi standing next to the bed***

Menzi: sit up we need to talk!

he said with a pissed off tone and she yawned sitting up

Kazi: can't it wait Menzi im still sleepy

Menzi: no it can't

he sat on the edge of the bed and he looked at her intensely and she looked away

Menzi: why did you drive all the way here alone and without letting me know

Kazi: I don't report to you Menzi

she said getting out of bed and she went to the bathroom leaving Menzi chuckling as he got angry....after some time she came back and sat on the bed looking down

Menzi: what's going on with you Ntandokazi

she kept quiet

Menzi: ngikhuluma nawe (im talking to you) man Ntandokazi damn it!

she jumped when he shouted at her

Menzi: do you fucken know how worried I was...do you!

she swallowed feeling guilty now

Menzi: why did you ignore my calls and why did some fucker call me to tell me shit about you!

she continued to keep quiet which made Menzi's anger to hit the roof top and he got up and took off his belt and he wrapped half of it around his hand and Kazi quickly got off the bed looking scared

Kazi: wenzani Menzi (what are you doing Menzi)

Menzi: im talking to you and you're ignoring me, ungenza islima Ntandokazi (you are making me a fool Ntandokazi)....ngiyisiwula sakho mina? (am I your fool?)

he said sounding angry and Kazi got really scared

Kazi: cha (no)

Menzi: then answer my fucken questions!

she stood there shaking

Menzi: who the fuck was that guy that called me!

Kazi: i...i don't know

Menzi: im gonna ask you for the fucken last time who was that guy

he said taking a step closer and tears ran down her cheeks

Kazi: his...his name is Castiel and.... and he's my ex

AT HEATH AND NALEDI'S HOUSE

*** Naledi was in the laundry room busy sorting out their dirty clothes for washing when Heath walked in with Ike in his arms***

Heath: you still don't want the house help doing our laundry obi m

she looked at him and she smiled when she saw Ike

Naledi: hey baby

Ike smiled when he saw his mother

Naledi: yeah she might be old but she has unmarried daughters so you'll never know

Heath laughed

Heath: you're crazy you know that

Naledi: and you love me like that akere onye m

Heath blushed then Naledi's phone rang and she frowned cause she didn't recognize the numbers

Heath: who is it?

Naledi: I don't know

she answered it

Naledi: hello

Man: Hello....Naledi?

Naledi: yes who's this?

Man: ke Kitso's uncle

***her face relaxed and she looked at Heath
and put the phone on loud speaker***

Naledi: malome lekae (how are you uncle)

uncle sighed

Uncle: eish ngwanaka go gobe (my child things
are bad)

Naledi: what's wrong malome

Uncle: ke Kitso ngwanaka (is Kitso my child)

Naledi: umm what happened, is he ok?

***she said looking at Heath and the uncle
sighed***

Uncle: he's dead....he was found beheaded

Naledi: what?

she said shocked and Heath frowned

Uncle: his body was found outside the door of
his house and his...his head was found pinned

on top of the gate..... the outside wall of his house was written in blood and go kwetswe (and it was written) “ a life for a life ”

Naledi: oh my God

she said with a shocked voice and Heath took her phone from her and gave her Ike

Heath: uncle its Heath....o re what happened?

he said walking out of the laundry room

.

24 (I TRIED WITH XITSONGA GUYS)

.

.

.

AT RUSLAN'S HOUSE

***the guys were chilling while drinking, Heath and Jabu where there too and they were introduced to Castiel who ended up showing

them his fangs to prove that he's a real vampire and they were shocked....Cass caught Jabu staring at him as they continued drinking and chatting***

Cass: what is it...why are you looking at me like that?

he asked Jabu

Jabu: so vele vele o vampire lepara? (so you're a real vampire man?)

***Heath chuckled shaking his head cause he knew he just started, well after seeing La Parca with his own eyes he now believes that even mermaids are real ***

Jabu: and lethaima la gao ke Dracula.... wa bona ko dimoving Dracula o kgonna go chencha e nne mamanthane so le lethaima la gao le kgonna go nna mamanthane? (and your father is a Dracula.... you see in movies Dracula can change and become a bat so does your father

also turn to a bat?)

Heath and Ray laughed while Ruu just shook his head smiling cause he could tell that Jabu said something foolish

Heath: really Jabu?

Jabu: keng.....e monna die man ke vampire joh....senwa madi so ke curious nje (what.... man this guy is a vampire.... a bloodsucker so im just curious)

Heath continued to laugh with tears coming out of his eyes

Cass: ok enough man....can we just stick to English or isiZulu assomblief

Jabu: Mr vampire sir wa bona sengamla a ke se frostane van die one one wa bona and ka se Zulu well dai deng ke batlang go go botsisa yona yo tlhoka that thing man wabona....mara sa wara Mshikaro o tla translat(a) (Mr vampire sir you see I don't like English that much you

see and when it comes to the Zulu language well what I want to say wont have that thing man you see....but don't worry Mshikaro will translate)

Heath was busy laughing while wiping his tears off

Ray: you two need to learn Pretorian Tswana to hang out with him cause English is a no no to him

Heath: and it's not because he can't speak it or understand it, he's just a well-educated township boy

Ray: you can take Jabu out of the township but you can never take the township out of Jabu

They laughed except for Cass

Cass: well it's a shame cause I can also choose to speak French or Spanish with you Ray and Ruu cause basically English is not my father's tongue

they laughed

Jabu: Big Ray o tla translat(a) mos (Big Ray you'll translate)

they laughed some more

Cass: mxm

Jabu: so Castino... mmmmh Cass ala Custard...Castor oil mpya ya ka (my dog)... wena wa go pyegisa batho goet (you who gives people diarrhea) , was your Father a mamanthane? (a bat)

Ray and Heath busted out with loud laughter

Ruu: what's a mama....whatever he said

Heath: a flying bat

He said laughing and Ruu laughed

Cass: so you're Mr funny guy heh nja

Jabu: not really mfowethu ka zama nje (not

really my man I just try)

more laughter

Cass: mxm

Jabu: on a serious note nja yam was your father a mamanthane like the movies show?

Cass: no

Jabu: so dai moerskonds (so those assholes) are lying to us

Cass: yep

Jabu: mesono ya bo mmabona nx (their mothers' cunts)

Heath and Ray laughed

Jabu: a vampire heh?

Cass just looked at him

Jabu: so you are like bo Edward and whatnots ba se Twilight or na bo bayasinyela nje (they are also shitting on us)

Cass chuckled

Cass: im a hybrid man

Jabu: hybrid neh

Cass nodded and Jabu turned to Heath

Jabu: keng hybrid? (what is a hybrid)

he whispered to him and Ray heard him and both him and Heath laughed

Heath: he's a half human half vampire

Jabu: then why a sa re byalo (then why didn't he just say that)

more laughter... he then looked back at Cass who was finding it hard to even get mad at him

Jabu: so how does a human blood taste like?

Cass: like your favourite smoothie

he said smirking

Jabu: mmmmh

he said nodding

Cass: so how does it feel like being a comedian?

Jabu: like your favourite smoothie

***loud laughter erupted and Cass chuckled
shaking his head***

Heath: wa sika wena Jabu (you're sick Jabu)

he continued to laugh

Cass: how do you survive with this dude man?

he asked Ray

Ray: he's a breath of fresh air man, there's none
other like him

Cass just shook his head

Jabu: on a lighter note....baby daddy ya
Mshikaro is dead

Ray: what...who got to him Ezeh

Heath: I have no idea....but damn whomever he
fucked with fucked him up pretty bad

Jabu: ba mo shapile ka slagpan (they chopped his head off)....tlhogo kwa and mmele kwa (his head was over there and his body was also over there)

he said using hand gestures as he spoke

Ray: damn

Heath: then his head was hug on his gate and a message was written on the outside of the wall of his house with his own blood

Cass: a life for a life

they looked at him

Ruu: what did you do Cass?

Cass: he deserved it

he said coldly

Heath: whoah wait....you're the one who did that to him

Cass: like I said he deserved it

Ruu: alors vous allez tuer des gens maintenant
(so you're going around killing people now)

He spoke in French

Jabu: translate Mashikaro

Heath didn't say anything he just looked at Cass

Cass: what....you like him?

Heath: no but he was my daughter's biological father man

Cass: you're there for her so she won't miss him

Heath: that's beside the point man and you know it

Cass: look here Heath im not sorry I killed him and if I had Madou's powers I would wake him up for a couple of seconds and kill him again

he said with a serious tone

Ray: what did he do?

Cass: he killed Phumi's unborn child

they all kept quiet

Ruu: which Phumi

Cass: my Phumi

Ray: you have a Phumi?

Cass: yeah....Kazi's cousin

Ruu: wait a minute, since when do you kill for her Cass....just because you can't read her thoughts so you decided to kill for her

Cass: no, I fucked her and marked her so she's mine now

Ruu&Ray: WHAT?

Cass: stop being dramatic man

Ruu: are you out of your mind Cass!

Cass: no, I think she's the one so I marked her

Ruu got up and he paced around and Jabu sat back and he observed

Ray: how can you mark a woman you know nothing about Cass, since when are you this careless

Cass: she's the one

he said with a calm voice

Ruu: just like you thought Juana is the one right

Cass: really man?

Ruu: yes really..... vous savez parfois je me demande si nous sommes lies (you know sometimes I wonder if we're really related)

Cass: je me demande aussi que parfois (I also ask myself that sometimes)

Ray: Ruu calm down

Ruu: no.... my father died because of his carelessness and now he doing the same shit because of a woman and he's putting all of us in danger

Heath: how so?

Ruu: she could be working with the fucken
brethren for all we know

Jabu: konje they are those dangerous
motherfuckers neh Big Ray

Ray: yeah

Jabu: mmmmh

Cass: well she's pregnant and she's marked so
deal with your fears Madou

Ray: preg....so you didn't even use protection?

Cass: why would I?

Ray: CAUSE YOUR SPERMS ARE TOXIC THAT'S
WHY!

***Cass breathed out shaking his head and he
took a sip of his drink for the first time since it
was poured for him***

Jabu: senwa madi sa go nwa byala....mmmh
interesting (a bloodsucker that drinks alcohol....
mmmmh interesting)

Heath held in his laugh

Ruu: I can't believe this

Cass: if she's who you fear she is then we will let the baby kill her so you have nothing to worry about

Ruu: what if she tells the brethren your location
Castiel have you thought about that

Cass: SHE'S NOT WITH THE BRETHREN!

he said shouting

Ruu: AND HOW DO YOU KNOW THAT?

he shouted back

Cass: CAUSE I DO.....ENTLEK WHAT'S YOUR PROBLEM MADOU HUH...WHAT?

Jabu: a re "entlek" Mshikaro

he whispered to Heath

Ruu: you are putting our lives in danger again
that's my problem Castiel....whenever there's a

pussy involved you lose your fucken senses and I have to pay for it...i even lost a father because of your shit!

Cass got up

Cass: FUCK YOU MAHAMADOU.....FUCK YOU YOU HEAR ME....FUCK YOU!.....DAD DIED BECAUSE OF YOU AND YOUR FAILURE TO LET SHIT GO..... YOU WENT AFTER THE BRETHREN AFTER I BETRAYED YOU THAT'S WHAT KILLED DAD!

Ray: guys calm down

Ruu: what did you say

Cass: you fucken heard me..... you didn't have to go after them I was the one that betrayed you and not them and now they are after us cause you killed their leader so stop pointing figures as if you are innocent in all this!

Ruu rushed to Cass and grabbed him by his neck

Ruu: what did you just say to me?

Ray: you two better stop this nonsense now!

he said getting up

Cass: you wanna fight me now Madou huh...
you wanna fight me?

Ruu: you piece of shit....we're in this mess
because of you and you have the fucken nerve
to put the blame on me!

Cass: im your older brother Ruu so you better
think long and hard before you cross the line!

Ray: I SAID YOU TWO BETTER STOP THIS
NONSENSE NOW!

***he roared and Cass grabbed Ruu's hand and
he pushed him away with force and Ruu
stumbled back almost losing his balance***

Heath: no man guys....

Ruu: rapelos disparesus!

he said with his open hand pointing at Cass and Cass flew across the room and he landed on top of the dining room table breaking it in the process

Jabu: THE FUCK!

Heath: damn

Ray: fuck

Then Cass quickly got up from the broken table and he screamed with an angry voice turning to a full flashed vampire in the process and within a blink of an eye he was next to Ruslan grabbing him by his neck up in the air with Ruu's legs floating on air

Ray: Cass stop it!

He squeezed hard and Ruslan started struggling to breath then his eyes turned black and Cass quickly let go of him as he felt electrocuted

Cass: you son of gun!

by now Jabu and Heath were standing afar shocked by what they were witnessing

Ruu: you wanna take me on bloodsucker?!

he said with a scary voice with his eyes still black in colour while Castiel was still in his vampire form

Cass: fuck you wizard!

Ruu: remanisus pelpaleusus!

a couch got lifted up in the air and it came flying to Cass and Cass punched it in the middle and it broke into half and he quickly took half of it and threw it at Ruslan and Ruu crossed his arms protecting his face and also blocking it and it hit him and fell in front of him..... then he charged at Cass and a fight broke out....punches were thrown from both sides...it was more of a fist fight but they were moving at a speed that Heath and Jabu couldn't follow

La Parca: ENOUGH!

his bone shattering voice roared filling the whole house with the floor shaking and voices of tortured soul being heard all over and the brothers stopped fighting

Jabu: yoh mmawe re ya diheleng! (we are going to hell!)

he said stumbling back while Heath stood there frozen with his eyes popped out

Cass: he started it!

He said as he went to his human form instantly and Ruu's eyes changed back to its normal colour..... as for Ray only his face changed, it was just a skull and on the hole were the eyes are supposed to be, blazing fire was seen...then Ruu and Cass got down on one knee facing down

Ruslan: apologies great one

then La Parca turned and looked at Jabu and Heath and they slowly went down on their knee shaking with fear and La Parca turned back to the brothers

La Parca: በዚ ገዢያቻን እንዲያሳያ እናደርሃለን, በዚ
ደንቦችን ስላምስት, እና ተወዳቸ ተወዳ(you are now
using your powers to fight in front of humans)

he said with his scary voice and it was as if two men were speaking at the same time with different voices... its some scary shit im telling you

Ruu: apologies great one

Cass: whatever he said great one

La Parca: ገዢዎ ገኩ እይደለምኑስ በዚህ ዘመኑ
እይደለም (I see you are tired of existing in this world)

Cass: what....nooo....your grace I have a baby on the way so no we are not

Ruu looked at Cass with clenched jaws with a deadly look on his face

La Parca: እምም ቅኑን የታልላለሁ ደንብ ቅኑን
የታልላለ (you impregnated a human without her consent)

Cass: ummm well I believe she's my mate so couples get intimate and babies are made your grace

*** then out of the blue Cass felt like he was being strangled and he held his neck choking***

La Parca: የእኔ ጥሩች ስይሆን የእባቶች ነወጊኖም እኔ^ተመያቍወጥ እኔ ነወ (don't act smart with me creature I can end you here and now!)

***Cass continued to choke and Ruu looked down with his eyes closed praying that he doesn't kill him as for Heath and Jabu they saw Cass struggling to breathe on the floor while holding his neck but no one was holding him and they shook with fear and that's when Mad

dog took over and Heath stopped shaking, he just looked on with a straight face***

Ruu: ይሆ...ይሆደግም ቅኑን ያታልላል..... ሆነየአብ
(for...forgive him great one...please)

La Parca turned and looked at Ruu and he released Cass and he coughed hysterically holding his neck

La Parca: ከዚህም በተጨማሪ ገዢ ከለባቸው
ሆለንም ንጉሴታቸውን ከለተለከበ.... ገዢው ሲመመዥና
የፍሰ እመመሆታገኘችሁ ተገኘችለችሁምና ስፍራው
በጠዋ ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርድ ለእኔ እንደሚሰጥ
ስይስተወቁ ግን በእኔስ (since you're the matured one now listen here and pass this message to him....he better make sure that human he impregnated doesn't get killed by his creature she's carrying like the others that did or im taking him to hell and Belial will be his torturer)

Belial is one of the princes of hell.....Ruu swallowed hard

Ruu: ለይ የእርምት ቅዱስ ለይ በኩስቀምበኑም እንታ
እያደርገኑም ስኖች ሲመጣ ጥሩ ዘዴን ይፈጥረችል.....
በጨለማው አለም ወሰኑ, በጥሩ ሆኖታ ጥቅም ለይ ይወላ
(I'll make sure it doesn't come to that great
one..... what's so special about her great one, if
you don't mind me asking)

La Parca: በዚም ጥሩ የሆነ መሰብሰብ ያለበችው ነፍሳት
አሉ ገዢው ገና አይደለም, እነዚ በዘርዝሩ ለይ አይደለበት
ገዢያችውን እንዲያሳሽ እናደርጋለን, በዚ ደንብችን ሰላምቶ,
እና ተወዳቻቸ ተወዳቻቸ ከሆኑት ስወ ገዢ አምበትቻቸ ፍቻው
ገዢው ሲመጣ ለየፍሳችው እመጠለሁማው አለም ወሰኑ
(she belongs to the man upstairs and you know
how protective he is of his children and since
your half dead brother here decided to mix
darkness and light and she ends up dying
because of his creature she's carrying then I'll
be permitted to come and take him to hell
kicking and screaming)

Ruslan swallowed hard

Cass: what about Ray and Madou....they also

have women in their lives so does that mean they are spared unlike me the "creature"?

Ruu gave him a deadly look

La Parca: በይዙለማው እለም ወሰኑ በጥሩ ሆኖታ ጥቁም ለይ ይወላል (they know where they are going when the time comes)

Ruu sighed

Cass: ok so what if Phumi gives her consent that I should change her then?

Ruu: will you just shut up!

he said through his teeth

La Parca: የእሳ ፌርዴ ካይሆን የእባቱ ነው እናም (then she'll belong to the dark side)

then he turned to Heath aka Mad Dog and Jabu and Jabu peed on himself a little

La Parca: እሳ ተጠሪቷው እሳ ነው (what about them)

Ruu: በይዙለማው እለም ወሰኑ በጥሩ ሆኖታ ጥቁም ለይ

ይወላል እምዕጥ ይህ ጥሩዎ አስማተኛ ጥሩ ልሞምና
እንዲያስተምረው ሲለሃኔ ለወለድ የ (they are family
and they know about Raymond and about me
and also about Castiel and they don't have a
problem with what we are or what we have
great one)

La Parca: mmmmh

He looked between Cass and Ruu

La Parca: ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርድ ለእነዚ
እንደሚሰጥስምምነት ገን በእነዚ ለይ የእርምጃ
ኩቃዎች ለይ ቤታዊ (I better not come back for this
nonsense again....you know the rules and they
are there for a reason)

***then the floor shook and he was gone and
Ray fell to the floor and Ruu rushed to him***

Ruu: Ray...hey man.... hey

He said shaking him

Ray: mmmmh

he groaned and opened his eyes slowly

Ray: damn....

he said holding his throbbing head whilst sitting up and Mad Dog immediately went to sleep and Heath blinked fast as he looked around confused, he then remembered what happened before Mad Dog took over and he jumped standing up looking around

Cass: he left relax

He said as he sat on his ass on the floor

MEANWHILE

for a couple of minutes now Thandi was outside the door trying to open the door but it just wouldn't budge.....she knocked shouting for Ruu to open the door for her but they couldn't hear her....she tried opening for the last time and it opened

Thandi: damn it....Ruu needs to check this

stupid door something is wrong with it

***she got in and closed it and she walked in
and then she froze when she saw the state her
living room was in***

Thandi: THE HELL!

***they quickly looked and froze when they saw
her....she was breathing heavily with a deadly
frown on her face***

Ruu: baby...amour you're here

***he said getting up and moving towards her
slowly***

Thandi: what... happened to the lounge Ruslan?

Ruu: ummm amour please calm down and let
us explain

***Jabu got up and he walked to her with a
disturbed look on his face***

Jabu: poo ya gao le broer ya gae ne ba tlisitse
Game of Thrones season 9 episode 1 kamo

that's why go le so and as for nna ke tlhoka
Amo a nrapelle ka di tongues because of nthwe
ke e boneng so shap (your bull and his brother
brought Game of Thrones season 9 episode 1
in here that's why its like this and as for me I
need Amo to pray for me in tongues because of
what I saw so bye)

***He walked out and Castiel got up and
followed him out and Thandi looked at Ruslan
as if she was about to jump on him and choke
him to death***

AT PHUMI'S HOUSE

***She was resting....her body was tired and
heavy and she also had light cramps on her
lower stomach so after cleaning, eating and
bathing she decided to rest a bit....she woke up
when she heard a knock on the door, she huffed
and got out of bed and went to see who it

is....she found Thabo standing there holding a box of pizza and she sighed then she made way for him to enter, he walked in and put the pizza down and sat on the edge of the bed***

Thabo: hi

Phumi: hi

she said standing by the door with her arms folded across her chest

Thabo: e tla mo babe (come here babe)

Phumi: ke shapo mo (im fine here)

Thabo: I should be the one who's mad Phumi and not you

Phumi: did you sleep with her?

Thabo frowned

Thabo: who?

Phumi: Sne....did you sleep with her?

Thabo: ska batlompotela(don't piss me off)

Phumi ok....a ka tlala masepa ao mo (I didn't come here for that nonsense), I came to see my girl so stop that nonsense and bring drinks re tlo ja (so we can eat)

Phumi chuckled getting angry

Phumi: I see you think I can't live without neh....you think no other man finds me attractive just because I've been faithful to you all this time neh

Thabo: you haven't cheated on me cause you love me too much and ga ona sebete seo (you don't have the nerve to do so)

Phumi: o sure about that

She said with a face full of attitude and Thabo frowned at her

Thabo: yah ke sure now are you done being crazy....e tla o tlompha one before re ja (come and give me some before we eat)

Phumi: DID YOU SLEEP WITH SNE
THABO....YES OR NO

Thabo: don't raise your fucken voice when
you're talking to me Phumi otla nnyela soos
nou(you'll shit yourself right now)

he said with an angry voice

Phumi: answer my question Thabo.....you used
to cheat on me with her and I forgave you and
you promised gore you'll stay away from her
and now you're liking dipicture tsa gae on
facebook with a heart!

Thabo: and what if I am mmmmh.....then what?

***he said with an angry voice and she stood
there with tears in her eyes***

Phumi: 10 years Thabo...10 fucken years and
you're still unfaithful to me

Thabo: Phumi listen here I didn't come here for
this ok

Phumi: mmmh o tlie mo to fuck me then o tsamaye right?!

he chuckled

Thabo: you're my woman o nagana gore ko ja mang if not wena (you're my woman so who do you think I'll fuck if not you)

*** tears ran down her cheeks and she wiped them***

Phumi: do you even still love me Thabo...do you?

he sighed annoyed

Thabo: you know what I'll come back when you're done with your periods cause clearly you're moody

he said with an annoyed voice getting up

Phumi: you know what...im done Thabo....im fucken done

Thabo: done with what

Phumi: this....its over...you can go and fuck whomever you want in peace and I'll do the same!

Thabo: you're dumping me...wena

he said chuckling

Phumi: get out!

he laughed

Thabo: you're nothing without me Phumi, without me you're just a fat crazy bitch that guys only want to fuck because of that tight pussy you have and nothing else

tears filled her eyes and she let them fall

Phumi: I may be a fat girl but at least a kena pipi ennyane ya nonyane (at least I don't have a small dick) nx and there's also a man not a boy like you who has already eaten this pussy and his dick is juicy, huge and satisfying nx

she said with an angry voice

Thabo: o reng...wa feba Phumi....osfebe nou Phumi? (what did you say.....you're whoring around now Phumi....you're a whore now Phumi?)

he said moving closer to her and she got scared but she stood her ground still angry

Phumi: the only reason I stayed with you this long and tolerated your shit is because I love you and not because you satisfy me sexually so fuck you Thabo wankutlwa fuck you with your small dick nigga!

a slap landed on her cheek and she put her hand where she was slapped looking at him

Phumi: you...slapped me Thabo

Thabo: o nagana gore wankitsi wena sfebe neh....so o botsa nna masepa oa? (you think you know me you bitch.....so you're telling me that shit?)

he said slapping her again

Thabo: o botsa nna masepa ao! (you're telling me that shit!)

He said slapping her continuously as she cried out loud hiding her face with her arms and the moment he stopped and he grabbed her by her arms pulling them from her face she kneed him between his legs and he let her go and held his privates groaning and Phumi punched him hard and he fell on the floor and she got on top of him and started hitting him screaming

Phumi: fuck you Thabo wankutlwa fuck you mpya ke wena (you dog)

she then got off him and she kicked him on his face and she rushed to the door and as soon as she opened it she felt him grabbing her leg and she jumped screaming

Phumi: ntlogele...ntlogele! (let go of me....let go of me!)

***she said kicking him and he finally let her go

and she ran outside crying and Thabo managed to get up and he chased after her***

Thabo: e tla mo jou moerskond.....o raga nna wena....o tlo nnyela! (come here you asshole....you kicked me.....you'll pay!)

as soon as she turned around the house going to the front yard she was met by Castiel rushing towards her and she ran and stood behind him still crying and when Thabo showed up he stopped

Castiel: you have 10 seconds to leave this place in one piece!

he said with an angry voice

Thabo: YEH WENA PHUMI!

Castiel: 10....9...8....7....

AT GIYANI

Uncle: what did the sangoma say?

Jackson: I hope its good news he told you...i could use with some good news now

the aunt sighed sitting down

Aunt: well its bad news actually

Uncle: what did he say?

Aunt: that we messed with a very dangerous man

Jackson: heh?

Aunt: apparently he's coming after us one by one

uncle stood up

Uncle: who is it....hi mani?!

Aunt: apparently we know him

she said looking at them

Jackson: we have messed with so many people aunty

Aunt: na swi tivha (I know) man Jack but we

need to protect ourselves since the person that made sure we are protected is dead.....that son of a bitch killed my mother and he's gonna pay once I find out who he is!

then Jackson received a call and he answered, it was Joe's wife

Jack: Tinyiko

Tinyiko: its Joe...he...he

she cried

Jack: what's wrong with my brother Tinyiko?

Tinyiko: they say he collapsed at walk and he was rushed to the hospital....im on my way there now

she then sniffed

Jack: why...why did he collapse?

Tinyiko: a ni swi tivi Jack (I don't know Jack)

Jackson: ok umm I'll leave right away....keep

me updated

Tinyiko: tell aunty na malome (and uncle)

Jack: I will

then they ended the call and Jackson told them about the call

Uncle: tatane xekwembu ko yendlekala yini
(God what's going on)

Jack: but...but Joe doesn't know anything we get up to then why him

the aunt sighed

Aunt: he knows ko re he dlayi Tiyiselani's husband(he knows we killed Tiyiselani's husband)

Jackson: and the sangoma said it's someone we know

Uncle: wa loya manjeni Tiyiselani? (so Tiyiselani practices witchcraft now?)...so she's working with someone dangerous to take us

down....he he he

25

.

.

.

Castiel: you know what I change my mind

he then grabbed Thabo by his neck and dragged him towards the back yard with him choking

Castiel: Phumi follow us!

she went after them walking slowly wiping her tears off....Inside her bedroom Castiel let him go and Thabo coughed holding his neck

Thabo: you son of a bitch....you'll pay for that you hear me you'll fucken pay!

Castiel slapped him hard that two his back teeth came out and he started bleeding through his mouth and nose and his right ear..... as for his right eye it became red instantly, he groaned in pain as he spit out is two back teeth.....Cass was left handed and you know how a slap from a left handed person is like worst part he was a vampire

Castiel: PHUMELELE!

she slowly walked in and her eyes popped out when they landed on a bleeding Thabo

Castiel: what did he do to you?

Phumi: ummm....he....i....he

Castiel: khuluma man! (talk)

she swallowed

Phumi: ungishayile (he hit me)

Castiel looked at Thabo who was clearly in pain

Castiel: ushaya abafazi wena msoon? (you beat up women you cunt)

Thabo: wa...wa yaka my bra a ka mmetha (she's lying my brother I didn't hit her)

Castiel: you're calling her a liar to my face you useless piece of shit!

Thabo: no i... i....

then he looked at Phumi

Thabo: Phumi mmotse (tell him) I didn't hit you babe....mmotse assomblief (tell him please)

Phumi: look at my cheeks Thabo!

Thabo: I was just angry Phumi I didn't mean to...lwena ongprovok(ile) man (you provoked me)...you provoked me!

Phumi: I provoked you!

she said sounding angry

Castiel: she provoked you?

he said taking a step towards him and Thabo hid his face

Thabo: no..no ka dlala my bra she didn't (im kidding my brother she didn't)

Cass looked at Phumi

Castiel: mshaye nawe (hit him)

Phumi: huh?

Thabo: heh?

Castiel: ngithe mshaye Phumelele or ngishaya wena (I said hit him Phumi or I'll hit you)

Phumi took a step closer to Thabo

Thabo: mfowethu assomblief o sa ntellisa ka vrou please (my brother please don't allow a woman to disrespect me please)

Castiel: also hit him for speaking Tswana to me

Phumi hesitated

Castiel: Phumi!

she slapped him hard on his face and Thabo winced looking away....he couldn't even clench his jaws

Castiel: you have a loud mouth but you hit like a slay queen bitch.....now shaya lenja uyekele ukutetefa man (now hit this dog and stop being lazy)

Phumi slapped him again and she slapped him again and again and she found herself hitting him continuously while crying with Thabo hiding his face with his arms as he cried too..... she then kicked him and he fell back and she got on top of him and she threw punches at him as he hid his face....she hit him until she got tired and she stopped and got off him and went to sit on the edge of the bed and she sobbed

Castiel: you satisfied?

***she nodded wiping her tears off and Cass

went closer to him and he pulled him up by his bloodied shirt***

Castiel: remove your hands from your face
damn it!

he said with a stern voice and Thabo did and Cass looked at his bloodied face that was also covered in tears

Castiel: you should be thankful she's the one that hit you and not me cause if I did, your head would end up being hanged at your mother's gate as an artistic souvenir and your body would end up being devoured by pigs in this neighborhood

he said with a scary tone and Thabo shook with fear

Castiel: Phumi is mine now and I'll turn into your worst nightmare if you come at her ever again....if I even hear rumors about her roaming around I'll fucken know it's you and if she gets

attacked I'll also know it's you and if you go to the police then you better be ready to bury your family members one by one until you're the last member remaining then I'll bring hell to earth just for you.....and just so you know, she.....

he pointed at Phumi

Castiel: ...just saved your life....now you gonna get the hell out of here and you should never set your feet here ever again do I make myself clear boy!

Thabo nodded repeatedly and he let him go

Castiel: you're still here....VOETSEK MAN!

Thabo ran out crying then Cass looked at Phumi

Castiel: pack up...you gonna come stay with me for a couple of days

she looked up at him

Phumi: what?

Castiel: you heard me....pack up and I'll clean this blood in the mean time

she sighed

Phumi: Castiel don't you think you're moving too fast?

Castiel: no

Phumi: im serious man.....not long ago you were into Kazi and now you're asking me to move in with you

Castiel: Kazi again

he said shaking his head annoyed

Phumi: yes Kazi again.... I fought with my cousin because of you.....you always said to her that she's gonna be yours blah blah blah, you made her fall for you and now that she chose Menzi jiki jiki im your second choice....no no, im not even your second choice but your tool to

make her jealous

Cass chuckled shaking his head

Castiel: wow

Phumi: you can stop pretending now and go to her cause she's really into you now....im sure you'll make a cute couple with cute babies

she said wiping her tears

Castiel: you done?

Phumi: thank you for saving me today but you should stay away from me from now on

Castiel: im giving you three hours to go back to your right senses and to pack up ok

Phumi: haven't I made myself clear Castiel....i said...

Castiel: ENOUGH....YEER..... PARFOIS TU ES FOUTU ENERVANT! (yeer sometimes you are fucken annoying!)

***he shouted the last part in French ***

Castiel: three hours Phumi!

***then he walked out and she sat there and she sobbed with her heart throbbing.....Kazi and Thabo's words were playing in her head, she loved Thabo like no other and he broke her heart more than Kazi did...maybe he was right, she thought. Maybe every man pretend to love her or even like her because of her pussy cause every guy that she flirted with even at the pubs she likes going to always want to sleep with her but none has ever asked her out, well she has never slept with any of them but now everything makes sense because of what Thabo said.... she sighed and she completely wiped her tears off and she went to take the mop and she wiped Thabo's blood off the floor and she went to rinse it outside and she hung it on the washing line.....she locked up her back room and went to the main house and she went to the

spare bedroom and she laid on the bed and soon sleep took over....Her mother came back and she woke her up and they talked for some time, she even told her mother about what Thabo did to her and she was fuming with anger....after some time she fell back to sleep when her mother went to answer her phone and now she woke up to someone shaking her....she opened her eyes and it was her mother again

Phumi: mmmmh

P.Mom: vuka man....kune ndoda (wake up man.....there's a guy) outside looking for you

***Phumi frowned and she sat up yawning and she caught her mother looking at her suspiciously ***

Phumi: what?

P.Mom: ukhulelwe Phumelele? (are you pregnant Phumelele)

Phumi: what...no ofcourse not

P.Mom: are you sure?

Phumi: ma ngithe im not haw(ma I said im not)

P.Mom: mmmmh

Phumi: ma im not pregnant ok and plus I would know if I was

she said getting out of bed and her mother shook her head looking at her now swollen breasts

P.Mom: mmh asazi ke (mmh we don't know)

Phumi rolled her eyes and walked out and she stopped on her tracks when she found Castiel standing outside and she remained standing inside the house by the door

Castiel: your three hours is over, I even gave you two extra hours

Phumi: im not going with you

Castiel: Phumi

Phumi: im done Castiel... in fact im tired, im gonna lay off relationships for a while so yah....

he rubbed his eyes getting angry

Castiel: uyangithukuthelisa Phumelele (you are making me angry) and you'll hate me if i get angry now say goodbye to your mother and lets go

Phumi: relationships are not by force

Castiel....look im tired and not feeling well so I don't need this please....leave

she closed the door on his face and went back to her room and found her mother sitting on the edge of the bed

P.Mom: is he the father

Phumi: Ma im not pregnant please stop ok....i would know if I was I mean its my body and I know it

her mother got up and she sighed

P.Mom: I just hope Thabo didn't beat you up
cause you were cheating on him Phumi

Phumi: so he has a right to beat me up if I cheat?

P.Mom: ofcourse not I just.....look you and
Thabo have been together for a long time for
you to just break up just like that

Phumi: ma please do me a favour.... stop being
a hypocrite at my expense.....you and Mbuyiseni
broke up after being together for many years so
don't judge me please

her mother sighed

P.Mom: Mbuyiseni and I weren't in love
anymore that's why we broke up

Phumi: and Thabo and I are?

P.Mom: fine.....but you're not getting any
younger Phumi, your mates are at their houses
married with kids and wena usahlala nami hai

man (and you're still staying with me)

Phumi: at least I take after my mother which is a clear indication that I wasn't swopped in the hospital after you gave birth to me

she said with attitude

P.mom: at least mina ngihlala kwami ntombazana (at least im staying in my house girly) and I work what about you huh

Phumi swallowed hard and her eyes filled with tears

Phumi: its fine I'll leave your house then

she walked to the door

P.Mom: stop acting crazy ok....im your mother Phumi and you're my only child and this is your home

she sighed

P.mom....i also want my daughter to get married and have kids....i only said what I said

cause Thabo has been a good boyfriend to you and you said you two broke up cause he hit you and now some strange man comes looking for you...hai man Phumi

Phumi didn't say anything she just rubbed her abdominal area as she felt some cramps

Phumi: can I lay down on the bed you bought ma since I cant afford to pay rent and contribute on food cause i resigned from work because THE MANAGER SEXUALLY ASSAULTED ME

*** she said reminding her mother why she quit her job***

P.Mom: I know all that and we are not talking about you not having a job here Phumi....we're talking about Thabo and that strange man

Phumi: Ma Thabo beat me up because he's cheating again with Sne and that man is a friend and he saved me or else I would have

also became part of the statistics of women killed by their men...now please I just want to rest im not feeling well

her mother sighed

P.Mom: fine robala ankere ke mpeto wa mmagao (sleep it's your mother's bed after all) and you're the only child mxm

Phumi rolled her eyes

P.mom: and I still say umithi....o nale medical so tsa mo cheka before o belega ngwana wa hethe or wa segole just cause you didn't attend antenatal classes and a wa nwa di vitamins (and I still say you're pregnant you have a medical aid so go and get checked before you give birth to a mentally disturbed child or a disabled child cause you didn't go for antenatal checkups or drank vitamins)

Phumi: IM NOT PREGNANT MAMA JEEZ!

P.mom: hai fotsek go nale samatlhwane ka

moo (hei piss off there's a baby in there)

Phumi rolled her eyes as her mother stood by the door

P.Mom: mmmmh “friend” ya gao is handsome yong, at least o na le taste so samathhwane seo so nna cute a ka se tshwane le boPutjek (mmmmh your “friend” is handsome, at least you have taste so your baby will come out looking cute it won’t look like Putjeks)

Phumi: mama tsamaya tuu (mama go please)

her mother walked out closing the door and Phumi sighed and laid on the bed and she rubbed her belly as she felt more cramps....then she touched her breasts and they were sensitive and she swallowed hard

KZN

***Kazi has been trying Menzi for the

umpteenth time and his phone was sending her to voicemail....she sighed and she wiped her tears off and she got up and went to the kitchen, she felt like shit for everything that went down....she wished she could turn the hands of time and make the right decisions....she made herself some coffee and she sat down on the barstools in the kitchen as her fight with Menzi played in her head***

≤ ≤ ≤ FLASHBACKS ≥ ≥ ≥

Menzi: your recent ex is dead so when did you date him

she swallowed hard

Kazi: Menzi baba ngiyakucela (Menzi baba im begging you)...put that belt away please

Menzi: khuluma man! (talk)

he roared

Kazi: I dated them both at the same time....he

was more of a side nigga

She lied and Menzi chuckled not believing what he was hearing

Kazi: I just....Phumi went after him even though she knew he's my ex

Menzi: awuna na mahloni Ntandokazi (you have no shame Ntandokazi)

she swallowed hard looking down

Menzi: you are fighting with your best friend/cousin over an ex as if awunayo indoda (as if you don't have a man)

Kazi: its not like that Menzi, she broke our girl code so I was just angry

Menzi: girl code ya masimba, udle indoda yomunye umfazi (don't tell me about girl code, you fucked another woman's man)and you still talk about girl code!

she frowned looking hurt

Menzi: tell me here why did he call me
mmh....why didn't Phumi call me

Kazi: I don't know

Menzi: ungazongijwaela amasimba Ntandokazi
(dont piss me off Ntandokazi)

***he said pointing at her and she moved back
looking scared***

Menzi: he said you're claiming him and that I
should come and take you now why would he
say that

she started to cry

Menzi: answer me damn it

Kazi: im sorry Menzi

Menzi: I don't want your sorry Kazi I want the
truth damn it!

he said sounding angrier

Kazi: i....

Menzi: you what...you what huh?

***she didn't say anything she just cried**

Menzi: you know what since you don't want to talk I'll call back that bastard and he'll tell me the truth

Kazi: no please don't

she said with a panicking voice and Menzi gave her a suspicious look

Kazi: i....i think I still have feelings for him that's why I reacted like that....i

Menzi's heart sank and he sighed shaking his head

Menzi: I swear ngine bati yezifebe shem (I swear I have bad luck with whores shame)

*** then he turned and walked to the door shaking his head***

Kazi: Menzi wait...baby I love you so much I just....

He walked out and she ran after him

Kazi: Menzi

Menzi: HAI FOSEK MAN KAZI.....FOSEK
UYANGIZWA, FOSEK NX! (hai fuck off man
Kazi....fuck off you hear me, fuck off nx!)

***he said shouting while pointing at her
looking deadly angry and he walked out of the
house going to his car and he got in and drove
out leaving Kazi crying***

≤ ≤ ≤ END OF FLASHBACKS ≥ ≥ ≥

***she tried his phone again and it still send her
straight to voicemail and she sighed heavily
with tears in her eyes, then she thought about
Phumi and Castiel together....the thought of her
having him before she did brewed her
anger...she knew she was sexier than her, yes
she had the best skin ever without any stretch
marks or cellulite and the only scar she has is
the one she got after fighting with one of

Thabo's side dishes.... yes she admitted that she had an ass and curves but her body wasn't toned like hers, she didn't even have a flat tummy so she wondered why Castiel would choose her instead or even be interested in her***

Kazi: he's just trying to make me jealous....yah....well its working mxm

she said to herself and she huffed

Kazi: just once Cass just once that's all and I'll let you have her with all her fat nx

then her mind went to Menzi and she swallowed feeling guilty and she covered her face with her hands and she started sobbing

PHUMI'S HOUSE

The following morning she woke up feeling nauseas, she ran to the bathroom and she

threw up.....after she was done tears ran down her cheeks....she wiped her mouth and she rinsed her mouth and she went outside to her backroom to fetch her toiletries and clean clothes, she opened the door and as soon as she stepped in she found Castiel laying on her bed with only his briefs on***

Castiel: I have been waiting since last night
her eyes were popped out while he had his eyes closed....he was lying on his back with one arm under his head while the other one was resting on his lower stomach

Phumi: how did you.... how the hell did you get in Castiel

Castiel: are you gonna ask me that every time?
her eyes travelled to the area where his dick was and he was rock hard....she swallowed hard

Castiel: you want some?

***she looked away embarrassed ***

Castiel: I see my son is showing you flames

she frowned

Phumi: what son

Castiel: the one growing inside your womb.....i heard you throwing up....i can't wait until you start showing

Phumi: im not pregnant ok!

he turned his head and looked at her and she looked a bit pale

Castiel: go and bath so we can leave

Phumi: im not going anywhere with you

Castiel: I can use force you know that right

she breathed out

Phumi: Castiel assomblief im not feeling well so I cant deal with you so hamba tuu (leave please)

***he turned his head again facing up and he

closed his eyes***

Castiel: hamba uyo vasa bello (go and bath beautiful) and stop talking crazy

she huffed and clicked her tongue and she went to the bathroom...as soon as she lay back inside the bathtub the door opened and Cass walked in still in his briefs and he closed the toilet lid and sat down

Phumi: privacy bathong!

Castiel: there's no privacy between us

she shook her head and sighed

Castiel: do they hurt

Phumi: what?

Castiel: your twins

he said pointing at her full breasts and she swallowed looking away

Castiel: why is it so hard for you to accept that

you're pregnant?

Phumi: im not pregnant....and plus it's not scientifically possible, we had sex days back so I can't start having symptoms now it's not possible and plus I drank emergency pills

Castiel: I told you im not normal like other people Phumi

Phumi: if, and that's if im pregnant then Thabo is the father and not you

Castiel: uyahlanya....ungitshela amasimba manje (you are crazy...you're telling me shit now)

Phumi: ungithukelani....iqiniso liya baba angithi (why are you swearing at me....truth hurts right)

Castiel: fsek..... iqiniso la masimba (piss off....a shitty truth)...that baby is mine and if you ever say that boy's name in my presence uzozisola Phumelele (you'll regret it Phumelele)

he said pointing at her and she rolled her eyes

Phumi: mpotse mo o sure o le ndofa? (tell me here are sure you're a foreigner)...gape you act like a typical Zulu man wena

*** (ndofa is a slang word for foreigner but in an insulting way) Anyway Castiel quickly got up cause he knows what “ndofa” means and he picked her up from the bathtub and went to the bedroom with her and before she could even blink he was sliding inside of her a bit roughly and she gasped as he filled her up.....***

Castiel: ndofa se moer (foreigner my ass)

***he said sliding out and she just laid there breathing heavily with her eyes closed....he just fucked her brains out....the moment he was about to lose himself in her, he moved to the floor with her before they broke another bed and he fucked her there....anyway he went to

the bathroom and he peed and after he was done he went back to the bedroom still naked and he crouched down and slapped Phumi's thigh gently***

Castiel: ey wake up

she groaned

Phumi: leave me alone

Castiel: wake up and finish bathing we still need to leave

***she opened her eyes and she slowly sat up

Phumi: I said im not going

Castiel: you want me to go another round cause I can

she swallowed hard cause already her nana was on fire

Phumi: mxm do you always have to threaten me

she said sulking and Castiel just picked her up bridal style with her screaming that she's heavy and he'll drop her

Castiel: to me you weigh like a fly's weight which is nothing so relax

she frowned at him

Castiel: ask no questions and you'll hear no lies

she sighed....anyway they bathed together this time and after they were done getting dressed Phumi brushed her hair cut

Phumi: damn I need to visit a salon

she said looking at her hair cut on the mirror

Castiel: I'll take you to one tomorrow

*** he said busy concentrating on his phone and she turned frowning at him***

Phumi: I'll go after my visit with the doctor today

*** he looked up at her***

Castiel: my brother is a doctor so he'll check you meaning no piece of shit will touch you and I don't get to castrate anyone

Phumi: I don't...

Castiel: please don't argue with me on this
Phumi

he interrupted her and she sighed and continued with what she was doing

Castiel: let's go

she took her handbag and they went past the main house and she locked up there too and they went out....she followed Cass to his car that was parked between two yard, where Phumi's yard ended and where the neighbor's yard started

Phumi: mmm I see you're confusing the enemy
neh....FYI we're going to see your brother who's

a doctor and not going to your house

Cass chuckled....they got inside after he unlocked and he drove off....not long after they left Phumi fell asleep and Castiel chuckled

Castiel: show her flames my boy plus she's frustrating and she has no filter

then he took his phone and called Ruslan who answered after the third ring

Ruu: what

Castiel: will you stop acting like a woman....we said what we wanted to say and we even beat each other I mean we were even visited and warned by La Parka

He said 'La Parca' with a Latino accent

Castiel: now we should be over that little squabble we had

Ruslan sighed

Ruu: my face is bruised man

Castiel: and my ego is bruised too nigga

Ruu: well Thandi is mad at me

Castiel: fuck her good until she forgives
you...anything else?

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: you son of a Dracula

Castiel: you son of a human

they both laughed

Ruslan: fine.... what do you want

Cass chuckled

Castiel: you know me too well

then he sighed

Castiel: the baby is growing fast and she's
already feeling the symptoms

Ruu: I still say you shouldn't have marked her
and made her pregnant

Castiel: why

Ruu: cause Juana said...

Castiel: she's wrong Madou, Phumi is the one man....she challenges me and she doesn't take my shit, even Juana took my shit but Phumi.....

he chuckled shaking his head

Castiel: can you believe last night she slammed the door on my face and I ended up sleeping in the backroom alone while she slept in the main house

Ruu chuckled

Castiel: I swear if La Parca didn't confirm she's one of the good ones I would be thinking that she's a demon or a demon's child from hell send to come and torment me

they both laughed

Castiel: look man...when you know you know just like you did with Thandi....and with Kazi I

think she's supposed to be in my life but not as my mate...Juana made a mistake man

he looked over at Phumi and she was still asleep...she was even snoring a bit....he smirked and bit his lower lip looking at her beautiful face as she slept looking cute

Ruslan: as a what.... a side dish?

Cass laughed

Castiel: well I wouldn't mind but I can't cheat now man and you know it....we are one now and you know what will happen if she leaves me

Ruu: Juana left you

Castiel huffed

Castiel: she never existed man....i mean she's supposedly dead but I don't see her spirit anywhere

Ruslan sighed

Ruu: lets hope you right

Castiel: I know I've been wrong so many times
but this time im right man

Ruslan: ok

Castiel: plus ngicabanga ukuthi
ngisemathandweni (I think im in love)

Ruslan: huh?

***he asked not understanding the language he
spoke***

Castiel: never mind man I was reading a
billboard on the road

Ruslan: you said "plus" man so don't make me a
fool

Castiel: I know Zulu and you don't so believe
what I tell you

Ruslan: mxm piss off

Cass chuckled

Castiel: so you'll come by my place later on for

the spell on the fetus?

Ruslan: yeah whatever moresoon nja

"Msoon wenja" is what he wanted to say and Cass busted out with loud laughter cause he caught what he meant to say

Ruslan: bye dickhead

he said also laughing and they ended the call and Castiel continued to laugh

Phumi: uyarsa man Castiel eish (you're making noise Castiel)

***she said in her sleep annoyed and Castiel held his laugh a bit then he let it all out and he continued to laugh which added to Phumi's annoyance ***

.

.

.

Phumi: where are we?

She said as she looked around, They just parked inside Castiel's new house.....she was sleeping all the way and she just woke up

Castiel: my brother will come here instead

she frowned

Phumi: ok

Cass opened his door and got out then he went and opened Phumi's door and he helped her out.....they walked to the door with Phumi admiring the house.....Castiel opened the door and they walked in

Phumi: wow

***She said admiring the interior design....the

interior was European royal style, you'd swear it was Queen Elizabeth's palace***

Castiel: you like it?

she cleared her throat cause she felt like she was out of place...she has never been inside a house not to mention a mansion like that before

Phumi: its..its yours?

Castiel: it's ours bello

she didn't say anything she just walked further inside admiring it

Phumi: this house is too big for one person

Cass

***he chuckled**

Castiel: this house is not the only property I own bello...this one I mostly rent it out to rich people who visit the country and don't want to stay in a hotel in the province

Phumi: mmmh..... so pila pila you brought me here to show off neh

he laughed

Castiel: not to show off per se but to impress you

Phumi: same thing to me

he laughed and she smiled then she frowned as she rubbed her belly

Castiel: what's wrong?

***he said rushing to her ***

Phumi: i...ive been having cramps lately and it's like they are getting worse

within a blink of an eye she was in his arms and another blink of an eye they were upstairs to the main bedroom that looked like something out of a Top Billing magazine

Phumi: dude you need to stop doing that

she said as he put her down on the bed gently

Castiel: you need to get used to me doing that bello

he said as he pulled her shirt up and he rubbed her belly gently

Castiel: ok I know I said you should show her flames boy but I didn't mean you should hurt her man

she frowned and pushed Castiel's hands away

Phumi: im not pregnant ok so stop acting like I am....its not possible to be pregnant for you Cass we had sex days ago so I cant show pregnancy symptoms this early....maybe im sick...maybe I have cancer or something so stop

***she said with an emotional voice and he sighed and touched her belly again and rubbed

it gently***

Castiel: you're not sick Phumi....you're pregnant and I know this cause I got you pregnant

Phumi: I just said....

Castiel: im gonna say this again..... im not normal like everyone else ok, I move like a speed of lightning and I always wear long sleeve shirts, a cap and sunglasses and fingerless leather gloves.... I always cover up when im outside haven't you asked yourself why?

she looked at him with a “thinking” expression on her face

Castiel: I grew up thinking im a Dhampir but the moment I stopped aging I knew I wasn't

her eyes popped out

Phumi: sto...stopped aging?

he sighed

Castiel: yeah

Phumi: ok let me.....ummm what do you mean by that?

She asked confused

he looked at her and he knew it was now or never

Castiel: im a Vampire Phumi

she gave him a confused look for a while then she busted out with laughter.....he let her laugh until she calmed down, she looked at him and he had a serious look on his face then she swallowed

Phumi: you're ser..serious?

Castiel: im a vampire Phumi

her face suddenly had a mixture of different emotions

Phumi: they are not real...you're lying

Castiel: then how do you explain my speed

she wanted to say something but words failed her

Castiel: im a half-breed vampire....i feed on both blood and solid food, I also have genes of a witch so I can do a bit of wizardry things but im not as good as my brother Ruslan, he's a master at it in fact he's one of the best out there in the world

She looked at him like he's out of his mind

Phumi: ummm I think I should go now

*** she said getting up and Castiel also got up***

Castiel: wait i....look I know all this is scary for you but baby I didn't ask to be like this....i was born like this just like that baby in your womb will be born like this but that doesn't mean both me and my child don't deserve to be happy or loved

she just looked at him not knowing what to say with her heart beating fast

Castiel: please don't leave ok I'll do anything just don't leave

he begged her and she slowly sat down cause what she just heard was making her dizzy all of a sudden then he breathed out and sat down too

Castiel: all I want is a child Phumi and now you're pregnant and I just....look you'll have complications with this pregnancy but im gonna be here for you and my brother will make sure nothing happens to you

she didn't say anything.....her facial expression showed she was in shock

Castiel: please say something

she remained silent and he brushed his head then his phone rang and he answered

Cass: yeah

Man: boss we have a problem

he got up and move away from Phumi

Cass: im listening

Man: there were some weirdoes wearing all black who were asking questions about you in the club

Castiel: weirdoes?

Man: yes boss, they had American accents and it was a man and a woman

Castiel brushed his hair cause he knew who they are

Castiel: did they approach you

Man: no but they were walking around with your picture asking people in the club if they know you but no one said anything cause they don't know the owner just the club manager

***Castiel brushed his hair pacing around ***

Castiel: ok keep your eyes opened and your ears on the ground and report back to me

Man: sure boss

Then they ended the call and he sighed

Castiel: shit!

he looked over at Phumi and she was laying down now rubbing her lower stomach and he sighed rubbing his eyes

AT A RESTAURANT

Mpilo: mama ish Sharia making you sad again

***little Mpilo asked Thandi if the unborn baby is making her sad again cause she was way too quiet as they were out having a late lunch date with the boys, every time her hormones acts up Ruu tells the boys that the unborn baby (Sharia) as Ruu calls her is the one that's making Thandi

sad but the real truth is Ruu explained what happened to her lounge and he also told her about what Castiel really is ***

Thandi: yes baby but I'll be ok neh

***he nodded and continued to eat his food.... Mpe looked at Ruu and Ruu smirked and Mpe smiled shaking his head ***

Thandi: Mpe how was school

Mpe: it was ok ma

Thandi: is that boy still bullying you

he rolled his eyes

Mpe: ma I dealt with him accordingly that time so he respects me now

Ruu chuckled and Thandi gave him a deadly look and he kept quiet

Ruu: Mpe don't ever roll your eyes when you're talking to an elder ok

Mpe: aaah dad

he gave him a “ try that again” look and Mpe cleared his throat

Mpe: yes sir

Ruu: good

they had their late lunch and went home....they got in and the boys went to their rooms and Ruu went to the kitchen where Thandi was and he stood there with his hands inside his pockets looking at her

Ruu: are you still mad about the furniture or about what I told you about Castiel

Thandi: im not mad

Ruu: come on amor even my pilot saw that you aren't happy

she sighed

Ruu: I brought new furnisher baby....i even apologized a thousand times.....i even slept on

that small couch as punishment even now my neck and back still hurts

she sighed again

Thandi: he's a vam.... damn it i can't even say it
Ruu

he went closer to her and cupped her face then he perked her lips, she pushed him away a bit

Thandi: mxm trust you to take advantageim still mad at you

he laughed

Ruu: I think its time i paid your bride price no no no cause once I wife your ass this whole body will belong to me...meaning I can kiss you whenever I want

Thandi: mxm..... you think I won't be mad at you if im your wife

Ruu: when you're my wife not if amor

he said pulling her closer and they kissed for some time

Mpe: old people please get a room jeez, we make food in this kitchen bathong

they broke the kiss then Ruslan's phone rang and he walked away answering it

Thandi: o re bo mang ke bo old people wena le tlhogo ya tsuane (who are you calling old with that tiny head of yours)

Mpe: ah mama

he said shocked by what she said

Thandi: mmmmh askere wa phapha (you are too forward)

Mpe: shuuuh let me go before Sharia anroga ka diphicates

***he took out bottled water and he pulled his tongue out for his mother and he walked out leaving Thandi chuckling then she heard Mpe

shouting***

Mpe: no dad you're messing up my haircut!

he had his arm around his neck and he was rubbing his knuckled on his hair

Ruu: should I do it again?

Mpe: no no no

Ruu: and how long will I do this for?

Mpe: until im 18

Ruu: why?

Mpe: cause your dad.....

Ruu tightened the grip a bit with his knuckles on top of Mpe's hair

Mpe: grandpa did it to you until you reached 18

Ruu: so...

Mpe: so it's a family tradition

Ruu: that's my boy

he let him go and Mpe sulked walking towards the stairs leaving Ruu and Thandi who was now standing not far from them laughing

Mpe: you know I feel sorry for some people cause they never got a chance to behave like kids cause they were born old now some of us have to suffer

Ruu: what did you just say boy?

he said pretending to run to him and Mpe quickly climbed the stairs laughing

Ruu: I'll get you for that smart mouth!

Mpe: I love you too dad

***he shook his head and turned to Thandi and found her with tears in her eyes....he rushed to her ***

Ruu: are you ok...is it Sharia?

he said as he put his hand on her belly

Thandi: she's ok I just..... they are happy
Ruu.....you make them happy and that makes
me happy

***he sighed with relief then he smiled and
kissed her forehead***

Ruu: im their father so it's my job

Thandi: thank you for loving us.... I appreciate
you Ruu a lot

he blushed a bit

Ruu: I know you do baby and I appreciate you
too

***then they went to sit down and Ruu
sighed***

Ruu: about Cass

Thandi: I don't have a problem with him being a
vam...

she breathed out

Ruu: just say vamp

Thandi: it's just so unreal....even having powers is unreal in my world but I guess im as blind as everyone in this world who don't believe in supernatural things, vampires and so on...what im trying to say is as long as he won't feed on me or any of my kids then im cool with him

Ruu chuckled

Ruu: he won't, he doesn't drink human blood amor, well it's not that he can't it's just human blood is not part of his diet

she sighed

Thandi: listen to you talking about drinking blood as if it's a normal thing

Ruu: he's my brother amor....its just me and him left

she breathed out

Thandi: I know and like I said I don't have a

problem with him I just have to get used to him being a vamp....

*** she shook her head***

Ruu: thanks amor its sad cause he was born like that

Thandi: and the girl who's pregnant for him, will she make it I mean she's carrying his child baby

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: both Cass and I will make sure she makes it

Thandi: so the baby might kill her

Ruu: that baby will grow too fast inside of her that her body and womb won't have time to adjust to it and plus its gonna get heavier the more it grows so..... but don't worry ever since Cass told me one day he would like to have a child I knew he wasn't talking about adopting so I did my research and I have potions that will

help her but it won't be easy and yah she might die but we won't let it get to that

she sighed heavily

Ruu: I know this is too much for you amor and I told you about Cass without his consent cause they both gonna need me so I didn't wanna lie to you continuously about where im going in the middle of the night and so on and the girl will need a friend cause she's about to go through a traumatic experience

Thandi: I understand..... I just feel sorry for her, I mean you said she doesn't even know that he's a vamp

Ruu: im sure he'll tell her one of these days

Thandi: yuuuh ya neh.... Thandi o tsamaya o jola le wena man yeer

*** she said to herself***

Ruu: I hope you're not swearing at me

she laughed

Thandi: we should learn each other's languages cause this speaking English all the time thing is turning me into a coconut

Ruu laughed and Thandi joined him....then his phone rang, it was Ray so he answered

Ruu: bros

Ray: Ruu can you come to my house its urgent

he sounded a bit off

Ruu: sure.... what's wrong man you sound a bit off?

Ray: just come man, I already called Cass, Jabu and Heath over

then he dropped the call and Ruu frowned looking at his phone

Thandi: what's wrong?

Ruu: I don't know he sounded off....I need to go

now

Thandi: ok I hope it's nothing serious

Ruu: I hope so too

***they kissed for some time and broke it then

Ruu kissed her belly***

Ruu: I love you ok

Thandi: I love you too

he kissed her forehead and walked to the door....she watched him walk and he had that walk man you know, that "I got my shit together" walk.....She breathed out with a smile on her face then she rubbed her belly

Thandi: that's your daddy princess

AT RAY'S HOUSE

***Mbali was holding Cataleya in her arms with her eyes blood shot red and swollen from all

the crying she did....she kept on brushing her curly hair....she looked at her bruises on her face and she swallowed hard....she was walking around with her in her arms while Kalu was sleeping in his cot....the doorbell rang then the door opened and Ruslan walked in and he stopped on his tracks when he saw Mbali holding a baby girl***

Mbali: Ruu

Ruslan: his flower....what's going on?

he said walking to her slowly and she let her tears fall, he got closer to her and held her but not too tight to squeeze the baby

Mbali: he hurt her Ruu, he hurt her

he looked at the baby

Mbali: Cataleya

his eyes popped out

Mbali: Diego and Mateo brought her here, they

stole her from the hospital in Venezuela when they found out that she was abused physically and sexually by the adopted father

Ruslan: what?!

Mbali: she's just a baby Ruu and he hurt her

she said crying and Ruu wiped her tears

Ruslan: its ok....he'll pay...i'll make him pay....we will make him pay ok

she nodded and he continued to wipe her tears and he helped her sit down

Ruu: where's Ray

Mbali: in his study with the guys...he's losing it

Ruu

she said as she sniffed

Ruu: ok lets me go see him I'll be back ok

*** she nodded and he kissed her forehead and went to the study....he walked in, he greeted

everyone by bro-hugging all of them except for Ray who was looking down with a bottle of whiskey on his hand.....he just squeezed his shoulder and went to sit down***

Ruu: what happened?

Mateo: I was getting more information about the couple that adopted Cataleya, I even told Diego to send one of our guys in Cuba to go stake out the house

Diego: then our boy told me that the woman and Cataleya never leave the house or even sit outside which was odd, then two days back I got a call that an ambulance and the police arrived at the house apparently the woman committed suicide, she was found by her sister when she tried to call her for a couple of days and she didn't answer and he also found out the baby wasn't there apparently she has been in the hospital for a couple of days and the husband was nowhere to be seen....he paid a

nurse at hospital to get him information about the baby and what he found out...

he shook his head then Ray got up and he threw the bottle to the wall with force

Ray: he...he abused my daughter....he...he.... that son of a bitch abused my daughter Ruu!

*** he said shouting with veins popping on his forehead and Ruslan quickly got up and went to him then he chanted a spell touching his arm and Ray closed his eyes and Ruu caught him before he could fall...Heath got up and helped Ruu and they put him down on the couch ***

Jabu: what did you do to him?

Ruu: I put him to sleep..... he needs to calm down so he can think clearly

Jabu nodded

Ruu: so he abused her physically and sexually

Mateo: yeah man...fucken pedophile!

Ruu sighed shaking his head...he was angry

Diego: so I called Mateo and we decided to take her out of that country before we can tell Jefe because her safety was our number one priority.....that puta was at large and the only witness to his sick crime “committed suicide” so Cataleya was the only thing that will send that motherfucker straight to jail and...

Mateo: and we did what we had to do before we could tell Jefe

Castiel: you did good!

Diego: the bastard ran away and the wife “committed suicide” and the results from the doctor says that it wasn’t the first time she was abused

Jabu: hai man what has this world come to
he said shaking his head thinking about his daughter Jabulile

Mateo: and that puta is a brother to a notorious gangster there so they gonna do anything possible to make sure there's no evidence of what he did

Heath: including killing her and making sure her body is never found

Jabu: a ka nnyela nnyammae.... a tle mo ko mo kgaola marete....he should come o tlo bona masepa

he said with an angry voice

Diego: our boy also found out that the docket in the police station went missing so you know where all that was leading to

Jabu: those fuckers should come here...i pray they come here looking for her cause I wanna see something

Heath: yeah they should Mjava

Ruu sighed

Ruu: is she bad?

Mateo: they treated her but she's gonna need you man, she's in pain and....you need to do your thing cause the hospital can only do so much

Ruu: let me go take care of her now

then he looked at a silent Cass

Ruu: Cass you good

Castiel: im about to be a father so what that fucker did touched a sensitive place in me which is hardly touched and we should all chill cause La Parka will deal with him, our focus should be on the little one

he got up

Jabu: heh Mshikaro kganthe dinwa madi di kgona go imisa ka nnete? (Mshikaro can vampires impregnate for real)

***he whispered to Heath and Heath shrugged

his shoulders***

Castiel: let me go check on Phumi

he walked out and Ruu followed him

Ruu: hey what's wrong man...something is off with you

Cass stopped moving and he sighed looking at Ruu

Castiel: the brethren are getting closer, they were at one of the clubs I own in Durban and they were asking questions about me

Ruu: what...damn it!

Castiel: im just lucky none of my employees have met me and only my boy Brain who is part of the security detail knows how I look like...he's the one that called me

Ruu: they are now getting on my fucken last nerve!

he said pissed off

Castiel: can you believe those fuckers where going around with my picture asking my customers and employees if they've seen me before

Ruu: let's deal with this first then we'll deal with them once and for all

Castiel: yeah

he sighed

Castiel: let me go check on Phumi

Ruu: how is she?

Castiel: the baby is growing fast and she's starting to feel pains

Ruu: let me go see Cataleya first then I'll come see her

Castiel: ok

he patted his shoulder and walked away

UPSTAIRS

Castiel: does it hurt too much

Phumi: not too much but it's painful

he continued to rub her belly

Phumi: I need to pee

she said with a low tone, she couldn't even look him in the eyes.....anyway he helped her stand then she took one step and she felt dizzy, she then felt the room spinning and Cass caught her before she could hit the ground

DOWNSTAIRS

Ruu felt Cass mind-connecting to his

Ruu: "Cass"

he mind communicated with him

Cass: " come upstairs Phumi just fainted...she's regaining consciousness but im...."

Ruu: " im coming"

he got up

Ruu: I'll be back just continue to rub her wounds with this

Mbali: ok

he rushed upstairs

UPSTAIRS

the door opened and Ruu walked in

Ruu: the way she's moaning I thought you two are having sex

he said walking further in

Castiel: really man?

he walked to Phumi

Ruu: hi im Ruslan his brother....nice to finally put a face to a name

she shook his hand and she noticed that his body temperature was normal unlike Castiel's

Castiel: he's the youngest and im the oldest

Ruu looked at him

Castiel: she knows

Ruu: ooh ok then

he sat next to her, she was sweating profoundly and shaking a bit

Ruu: may i?

she nodded and he put his hands on her belly looking away from Phumi.....he mumbled a spell and his eyes turned yellow.....after some time his eyes went back to normal and he put his hand on her forehead for some time then he pulled it back and sighed

Castiel: what it is?

Ruu: you're right he's growing too fast and her body has started taking strain

Castiel: how long will she be able to carry him?

Ruu: 9 weeks

Castiel: damn

Phumi: ni...nine weeks

Ruu: yeah but don't worry we will be with you every step of the way ok

Castiel: yeah bello we will be with you every step of the way

Ruu raised his eyebrow looking at him and he ignored him

Ruu: ok

he gave Castiel a small bottle filled with a potion

Ruu: help her drink it, it's bitter and she will feel some..... ummm pain but it will fade away in a few seconds

***he got up and Castiel sat down and helped Phumi to drink the mixture and Phumi made a face and Castiel kissed her forehead and Ruu raised his eyebrow again.....after a few

seconds she started groaning with pain***

Phumi: ahhhh

she screamed holding her belly....Castiel brushed her hair gently

Ruu: it will fade away hold on

she continued to scream with tears gushing out....Cass was busy brushing her hair with his right hand and holding her left hand with his left hand...she held on until the pain faded away and she lay there breathing heavily with her eyes closed and Castiel wiped her tears off

Castiel: you still feeling pain?

she shook her head no slowly and Castiel kissed her forehead again

Castiel: its ok...its ok

***he said kissing her forehead again and he perked her lips and Ruu raised his eyebrow again then suddenly her belly grew a bit, you

could now see a bump***

Ruu: " I didn't know she meant this much to you"

he mind-communicated with Cass

Castiel: "piss off man"

Ruu chuckled

Ruu: how are you feeling now?

Phumi: I feel lighter and the pain is gone

Castiel kissed her forehead and he rubbed her belly and he noticed the bump and he looked at Ruu

Ruu: "relax or you'll freak her out but damn Cass I thought I was whipped but you take the trophy man"

he mind communicated with Cass

Castiel: " fuck off"

Ruu chuckled

Ruu: well the potion will last for 48 hours then you'll have to drink it again....i'll make enough to last her for 9 weeks

Castiel: thanks bro

Ruu: ummm Phumi thank you for....carrying his seed..... I know you might have not given your consent

He said looking at Castiel who gave him a deadly stare

Ruu: but you're about to make his sorry ass a father and me an uncle so Thank you

she opened her eyes but she didn't say anything her eyes just got teary

Ruu: ok let me go back to Cataleya I'll come check up on her later

Castiel: ok call me when Ray wakes up

he nodded and walked out, closing the door on his way out and Castiel sighed

Castiel: you sure you ok

she nodded

Phumi: I still need to pee

Castiel: ooh yah

he picked her up bridal style and went to the bathroom with her on his arms

AT KAZI'S PLACE

*** she has been trying Menzi for some time now and she still can't get hold of him, she even went to his place and the maid said he took his kids to his parent's house and she hasn't seen him since....she looked at the phone numbers on her phone screen for some time then she sighed and she bit her lower lip calling them, the phone rang and it got answered on the fourth ring***

Castiel: yah

she swallowed hard

Kazi: hi

Castiel: what do you want?

she couldn't believe he was this cold towards her while that time he made her cum without even touching her

Kazi: can you talk

Castiel: what do you want?

Kazi: can we meet up, I wanna talk to you about something

Castiel chuckled

Castiel: you need help Kazi, this entitlement syndrome you have going on will be your downfall if you're not careful

then he dropped the call...she looked at the screen of her phone not believing that he said that then she clicked her tongue feeling angry

Kazi: mxm hlala nesdudla sakho nx (stay with your fat person)....you don't know what you're missing out on nx you fucken asshole!

she then tried Menzi's numbers again and it send her straight to voicemail

Kazi: AARG!

she threw the phone on the couch next to her and she sighed with her hands covering her face

Snakes: you look like shit ndoda

Menzi looked up and found Snakes standing by the door of his office in one of his clubs

Menzi: Mamba

he walked further in and sat down then he put a usb stick on the table

Menzi: is it all the intel on him

Snakes: yeah

Menzi: ok I'll study it and tell you the day and time

Snakes: alright but know that baba wants it done asap

Menzi: yeah I know don't worry

Snakes: now spill it out udla yini ndoda (what eating you up)

Menzi sighed and he sat back

Snakes: woman problems?

Menzi: eish you have no idea

Snakes chuckled

Menzi: she confessed to still having feelings for her ex

Snakes: daaamn!

Menzi: I don't know what to do with that or how to feel about it man

Snakes: how the fuck did she even confess to that

Menzi: she was fighting with her cousin then she told me she's gonna go and fix thing and im like super cause bese ngikhathole (I was tired) with their fight then i got a call from a guy she later said its her ex Castiel and nigga said.....

Snakes: whooooh

he interrupted him

Snakes: did you say Castiel?

Menzi: yeah uyamazi? (do you know him)

Snakes: uyabona lapho mfowethu....khohlwa (you see there bro.... forget it)

Menzi: huh?

he said confused

Snakes: phuma kuye ndoda (leave her man)

Menzi: what?

Snakes: khohlwa ngaye ndoda....phuma lapho
(forget about her man....leave her) its for you own good

Menzi: wait...you know the guy?

Snakes: you don't wanna mess with him nja yami (my dog)....trust me she's not worth it

Menzi: who is he?

Snakes: satan's last born

Menzi: heh?

Snakes: look if you still want to fix things with her then take her to a Saint John church...ubatshеле bamchathe, bamgabhise futhi bamgezise isinyama then take her to iZCC church and ubatshеле bamfafaze ngemanzi wesawoti and bamnike tee etshesane and bamfake ne safety belt then take her to eShembe, you know what they should do to her there then take her to abofire-fire church so they pray for her in tongues

Menzi was still confused as to who the hell is this Castiel of a person for Snakes to be this freaked out about him....what he didn't know is Snakes wasn't freaking about "him" per se but about what he is cause him and supernatural things they don't mix at all

Menzi: who the fuck is this guy?

Snakes: like I said satan's last born...

he got up

Snakes: walk around with a small bible in your pocket and some garlic and a holy rosary just incase

Menzi: but it didn't seem like he's still interested in her, he told me to come take her or he'll end her cause she was insulting her cousin...yeah some shit like that

Snakes: mfowethu do what I just advised you to do and stay the fuck away from that bloodsucking motherfucker uma ufunu ukuphila

isikhathi eside (if you want to live long) and yah
if he says he'll kill her believe him

Menzi brushed his beard worried

Snakes: another advice, if you really love her
give her some space until she knows what she
really wants cause you have kids ndoda and
they should come first...shap

he walked out leaving Menzi thinking hard

.

18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....27

.

.

.

Ray: lure them here

they all looked at him

Mat: jefe

Ray: I said lure them here, I want them to come here looking to finish her off

Jabu: nou wa ova big Ray (now you're talking)

*** he said with a smirk on his face then he then looked at Mat***

Jabu: lure them here Mateu....we wanna show them something

Mat sighed

Mat: ok I'll leave a trail that will lead them here

Ray: and track their every move

Mat nodded then he walked out with his laptop to the basement where he likes to work without being disturbed and Cass got up too

Cass: the notorious gang leader brother is mine

then he walked out and Jabu looked at Ruslan

Jabu: o mo nwa madi Ruru?...nx eish kane setsotsitaal ke dololo mo wena (will he suck his blood Ruru?....eish I forgot you cant understand the thug language).... so i said will he drink his blood Ruru

Heath chuckled and Ruslan shook his head chuckling too

Ruslan: human blood is not part of his diet man

Jabu: then how will he deal with the brother

Ray got up

Ray: good luck Ruu

he walked out and only Ruslan, Heath, Diego and Jabu were left sitting down

Ruslan: he can rip his heart out or detach his head from his body....or he can just pluck out his eyeballs

Heath: damn!

Jabu: o sa re damn (you're saying damn),
Observer, Caesar and Mad dog can do that

Diego: who are those?

Jabu: his multiple personalities

Diego: wait....you have those hombre (man)

Jabu: he does keng e ka re (why is it like) you
don't believe me

Diego: I've never met someone who has
personalities before so im surprised

Jabu: sa wara (don't worry)...when those
fuckers gets here im sure you'll meet one and I
hope its Observer even though I despise the
nigga

Heath: or maybe he won't come out....how
about that!

he said getting up

Jabu: Observer is full of shit and he likes attention so believe me he'll come out

Heath shook his head

Ruslan: why do you even seem excited about those fuckers coming here Jabu

Jabu smirked

Jabu: cause I wanna see senwa madi (the bloodsucker) in action live

Heath laughed and he took out his phone and dialed his wife

Naledi: my love

Heath: Obim....

he said walking out and Jabu also got up and he took out his phone

Jabu: let me call my own wife too.....a ka se mphale lenna

he walked out dialing Amo's numbers

Ruslan: he's a special case this one

Diego: puedes decir eso otra vez (you can say that again)

*** They chuckled***

Diego: damn...I've never seen jefe that angry and broken man

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: well I have and it's not a nice sight to see

Diego: do you think it's a good idea to lure them here

Ruslan: no but it's good for La Parca

Diego: ooh yah

Ruslan: how long will you be in the country for?

Diego: three weeks

Ruslan: ok I need a favour man

Diego: estoy escuchando (im listening)

Ruslan: the brethren are here in the country
looking for Castiel and i

Diego: fuck no

he said with his eyes popped out

Ruslan: they are going around asking about
Castiel using his old photo in KZN

Diego: bastardos (bastards)

Ruslan: so can you....

he interrupted him

Diego: I'll speak to the Cubans deployed there

Ruslan: make sure they don't approach them....i
just want to know where they are and where
they headed

Diego: I almost forgot how dangerous they are

Ruslan: and it's those annoying twins Cosmo
the bitch and Constantine the asshole

Diego: damn it

Ruslan: war is coming hombre and it's gonna be nasty as hell

Diego: I guess we all better get ready then

then they saw the lights flick vigorously and Ruslan quickly got up

Ruslan: ooh damn it!

he rushed out

UPSTAIRS (a few minutes ago)

*** Mbali was sleeping with Cataleya and Kalu next to her, she was deep in her sleep when suddenly she opened her eyes and she was lying on the cold floor, she quickly got up looking around and she could see she wasn't in her house.... her heart beat fast cause she could now clearly see that she wasn't in her house.....she heard some shouting and she saw a vase and she picked it up and walked there

slowly, she saw two figures a man and a woman arguing but what freaked her out was the way they are.... they looked like holograms, even the way they moved wasn't normal...the man slapped the woman hard and she fell on the ground and he pulled her up by her hair while she screamed....Mbali rushed there***

Mbali: LET HER GO YOU SON OF A BITCH!

she shouted but it was like they couldn't see her or hear her, she got to them and she tried to hit the man with the vas but it just went through him.....she moved back slowly shocked with her heart beating out of her ribcage

Mbali: what's going..... ooh my God RAY...BABY!

she called out for him looking around but Ray didn't answer

Mbali: ooh my God...where am i...

***then she heard a faint cry of a baby behind her, she turned and looked around but she

didn't see any baby but the cry didn't stop...she followed the cry until she ended up in a bedroom and on top of the bed was a baby, covered in blood faintly crying....she rushed there and stopped on her tracks and the vase she was holding slipped out of her hands and smashed on the floor when she saw the identity of the baby***

Mbali: ooh my God Cataleya

she said with her hands shaking with tears running down her cheeks

Mbali: Leya?

she tried to pick her up but she couldn't touch her also, her hands just went through her.....she saw the blood on her naked lower body and she shook her head moving backwards, she was visibly shaking and crying

Mbali: Leya...Le....ooh my God....ooh my

God...ooh my God...no...no...no

she said then she let out a painful cry.....she went to her again and tried to pick her up but she couldn't touch her

Mbali: why can't I touch her....why can't I touch you Leya

she said trying to pick her up countless time but she couldn't....she turned and ran out of the bedroom screaming for help and she found the man and woman not there , she ran to the door and tried to touch it so she could open it but she couldn't...she screamed for help then she ran back to the bedroom and the bed was empty even the bloodied sheets were now clean

Mbali: Leya...Cataleya!

she called out for her looking around and she couldn't find her

Mbali: someone please wake me up

please....this has to be a dream....it has to be a dream

*** she said crying then her mind thought of Saint the demon***

Mbali: yes..yes.....SAINT....SAINT....SAINT BABY PLEASE HELP ME....HELP MOMMY!

*** AND THAT'S WHEN RUSLAN AND EVERYONE IN THE HOUSE SAW THE LIGHTS FLICK ***

DOWNSTAIRS

Ray and Ruslan met on the staircase running, they didn't say anything to one another they just ran up the stairs and budged inside the main bedroom and rushed to Mbali.....she was mumbling things in her sleep

Ray: baby wake up...wake up!

***he said shaking her but she wasn't waking up....Ruslan looked over at Kalu who's sleeping

next to Cataleya and his were opened and they were black in colour ***

Ruslan: Saint is in there

Ray: what the fuck is going.....Mbali open your eyes baby...open them please

she then started shaking vigorously and tears gushed out of her closed eyes and Ray held her trying to restrain her

Ray: Mbali wake up...please don't do this to me im begging you!

*** Castiel mind communicated with Ruu***

Cass: "what's going on Madou"

Ruslan: " its Mbali and Saint....come and take Cataleya"

Cass: " ok"

within a blink of an eye he was here

Castiel: what's happening?

Ruslan: her spirit is trapped somewhere and it can't come back

Cass: damn it.... tell me what to do

Ruslan: take Cataleya and make sure her and Phumi are ok, im sure Phumi is freaked out by all this lights flicking

Cass: yeah

He took Cataleya and walked out then Ruslan put his palm on her forehead and his eyes turned black

BACK TO MBALI

Saint was now covering Mbali with his black smoke to prevent her from seeing the woman hanging on the ceiling....then they heard Ruslan's voice

Ruslan: Saint take her out of there!

Saint: only mommy can get herself out

***by now Ray was sitting on the edge of the

bed holding Mbali's shaking body***

Ruslan: right...Mbali I need you to create a door
that only you can open

Mbali: i...how...i can't do that...i cant?

Ruslan: yes you can Mbali remember that place
is not real, it exists in real life but right now it's
not real his flower.....you are being shown what
really happened there, whatever you're seeing
has already happened so please his flower
create a door that only you can touch....you can
do it, Cataleya is here with me and she's crying
for you

Mbali: she..she's there?

Ruslan: yeah now use your mind to create that
door so you can come out of there

Mbali: ok

***she closed her eyes and she imagined a pink
door on the wall and it appeared***

Saint: mommy you did it

he moved her towards the door and only opened a small way from the black smoke and Mbali reached out to the door handle and she could touch it then she quickly opened the door

Ray saw her opening her eyes and she gasped for air then black smoke came of her nostrils, mouth and ears and it formed a figure next to the bed and Mbali's breathing became normal but all of a sudden she started breathing fast and she jumped up ready to ran but Ray was holding her tight....as for Saint, he went back to sleep

Ray: its ok you're save now...you're safe baby...you're save

***she looked around with her eyes popped out then she heard Kalu crying....Ruslan picked him

up and Mbali frowned***

Mbali: where's Cataleya....where is she

she said panicking

Ray: relax she's safe, she's with Castiel and Phumi....she's sleeping

***she breathed out then she indicated that Ruu give her Kalu and he did since he was crying his lungs out....she kissed him all over his tiny handsome face ***

Mbali: thank you baby....Thank you Saint....you did good baby....you did good

he stopped crying and his eyes switched from normal to black then to normal again and he made cute baby sound and Mbali smiled...she then took out her breast and fed him.....Ray brushed Kalu's hair and he bend down and kissed his forehead

Ray: you did good my boy....keep it up

Saint made cute sounds while sucking on her mama's breast then Ray kissed Mbali's forehead and he wiped her face

Ray: don't ever scare me like that my flower

Ruslan: what happened his flower?

***she told them what happened ***

Mbali: please tell Cass to bring Leya

Ruslan: ok

he mind-communicated with Cass

Ruslan: this gift of hers is dangerous Ray

Ray: I know but its like its triggered by traumatic shit that she experiences

Ruslan: with Zambo?

Ray: Whoever or whatever gave her this gift was trying to show her the danger approaching her family but unfortunately Zambo saw her spirit

***Ruslan nodded then Cass walked in with a

sleeping Cataleya....Ray took Kalu from her since he was done feeding and she took Cataleya and kissed her forehead***

Mbali: when will she wake up?

she said looking at Ruslan

Ruslan: two hours tops....she needs to rest

she nodded then she sniffed

Mbali: why would they show me that.....that man hanged her wife she didn't commit suicide so what's that got to do with me

Ray kissed the top of her head

Ruslan: there's a reason why they took you there and made you see all that you saw his flower....you'll figure it out as time goes by

Mbali: I don't wanna think about it....i don't wanna see Leya like that ever again

she said with a breaking voice and tears ran down her cheeks

Ray: its ok....you don't have to.....im just glad you're ok my flower

he kissed the side of her head and she continued to brush Leya curly hair gently sniffing....Ray got up with Kalu in his hands and he whispered to his ear

Ray: analyze what you saw in there and find out why they took mommy there but do it discreetly

Kalu made cute baby sound and Ray kissed his forehead

DOWNSTAIRS

Cass and Phumi walked down the stairs and found the guys sitting in the lounge eating pizza except for Ray and Mbali they were still upstairs with Leya and Kalu

Cass: wow so ya'll are eating without us

Mateo: relax we left some for the couples

***Jabu stopped eating and he looked at Phumi

and he smirked looking at Castiel***

Cass: what

Jabu: where are your manners Mr night
walker...etsa di intro man (introduce us man)

Diego: did you just call him Mr night walker
hombre

he said holding in his laugh

Jabu: yah he's the night walker and im a day
walker

they busted out with laughter

Cass: ignore him bello he's the special one

Jabu: esmaar net you know I cant kick your ass
because of....that..... so you're lucky....mara
voetsek

Heath laughed while other chuckled

Cass: you done

Jabu: no

he got up and he extended his hand out to Phumi for a handshake

Jabu: Jabu is the name and handsome is my middle name so wena beautiful what's your name

more laughter

Phumi: Phu...Phumi

she shook his hand and Cass pulled Phumi's hand away from the handshake

Cass: that's enough handshake

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: yeer isikhwele esingaka Castiel (so much jealousy Cass)

Castiel: tsek

Jabu laughed and he went to sit down

Ruslan: she shouldn't stand too long Cass

Cass: umm Phumi these are my

brothers....Mateo, Diego, Heath and Mr day walker Jabu and you already know Ruslan....Ray is upstairs with his wife Mbali, you met her when we got here

Phumi: nice to meet you all

Them: same here

Cass: alright then see you tomorrow, tell Ray I'll call him later

Jabu: wa vaya? (you're leaving)

Cass: Phumi needs to rest

Jabu: wait a minute....let her sit for a minute hao

Cass: no...no no...not happening

*** the guys laughed at Cass's reaction***

Ruslan: let her sit for a minute Cass like I told you she's not supposed to stand for a long time

Jabu: yah

Cass: mxm

him and Phumi sat down and Cass held her hand and the guys looked at each other

Cass: stop acting like you've never seen a man and woman holding hands

Mateo: well we have never seen you holding a woman's hand

Diego: mmmmh

Cass: wow you too Dee?

they laughed

Diego: yho man they are influencing me im telling you....i think I should just go back to Cuba before I lose myself and become like them

he said with his deep Spanish accent and they all laughed

Jabu: so suster Phumza

she looked at him smiling shyly

Jabu: so you are pregnant heh

she nodded

Jabu: wa no motlogela a go banisa njalo nje
(you just let him impregnate you just like that)

***she didn't know what to say to that so she
just kept quiet***

Jabu: wa jaja gore why kere ke nightwalker (do
you understand why I call him the nightwalker)

***she looked at Cass and nodded looking
down***

Jabu: wa jaja (you know)

he asked with a shocked voice

Phumi: yeah

Cass: Jabu!

Jabu: and o shap ka dai deng (and you're cool
with that)

he ignored him and she sighed

Phumi: he was born like this and its not like he can change who or what he is

Cass smirked and Ruslan was happy with her answer

Jabu: damn dimpya tse dingwe di lucky jong
(damn some dogs are lucky)

Heath: Mjava

he said holding in a laugh

Cass: you making her uncomfortable Jabu

Jabu: relax man....yehlisa isikhwele kancane
(take the jealousy down a notch) man night walker before you scare off our very own Jill Scott

Phumi looking down trying not to laugh and Cass gave him a deadly look

Jabu: don't mind him im sure he has never met someone like you that's why he's behaving like

this and plus these are the perks of dating a million years old man, you should ask Thandi Ruslan is like that with her too

loud laughter erupted

Ruslan: fuck you!

Jabu: it's the truth hao

Cass: let's go bello cause once he starts he doesn't stop

Jabu: wait kancane hao entlek ujageleni (wait a little why are you in a hurry)....anyway JS we both know your man here is old like ancient old so aren't you scared your child will come out looking wrinkled with a grey beard and grey hair like an old man

loud laughter erupted

Castiel: voetsek Jabu man

Jabu: ah ah ngiyazibuzela nje (im just asking)

Heath: don't mind him Phumi most of the time

he's worse than this

Jabu: o nya go reng Mshikaro (what are you trying to say Mshikaro)

Heath: gore you forgot to take your pills

Jabu: fosek

then he looked at Phumi

Jabu: ka dlala JS (im playing Jill Scott) I just want to embarrass him nyana

Phumi laughed a bit

Jabu: mara on a serious note this nigga better buy you a private jet as a push out present cause yeses gape nthwe e rwele tlhogo suster (this thing has a big head sister)

***Heath laughed and Phumi laughed too, she tried to hold herself but she couldn't ***

Cass: really bello so now you're laughing at his stupidity

Jabu: tsek.... stupidity is that huge head of yours that has been filled with problems of the universe since 1847 when you were born

more loud laughter and Cass stood up and Jabu also stood up and went to stand behind Ruslan

Jabu: you better do something Ruu remember you're dating my sister

more laughter

Castiel: uzonya Jabulani (you'll shit yourself Jabulani)

he said pointing at him

Jabu: nna my wife smears me with the holy oil
Cass you touch me and you'll burn to ashes

more laughter

Cass: lets see if I'll burn then

he said moving towards him

Jabu: RUU YOU BETTER DO SOMETHING!

Ruslan: Cass stop it man

he said wiping his tears off still laughing as for Phumi she tried not to laugh but it was just too hard

Cass: so you talk shit and embarrass me in front of my woman cause you know Madou will save your ugly ass heh

Jabu: vele (yes) gape you have powers and I don't.....if you want us to fight man to man wena thatha ubuvampire bakho ububeke le (take your vampire side and put it away) then we will fight like men skhiphane inkani once....not what you want to do, imagine man vs vampire even okhokho bami (my ancestors) will complain cause its not fair

Phumi's tears were now running down her cheeks as she laughed her ass off, she couldn't believe how crazy Jabu was

Jabu: ah ah you'll just push me once and I'll land on that wall and crash my insides and they'll turn into mince meat instantly then I'll become an ancestor leaving fuckers to eat my wife's pussy while ngimele aboHeath, big Ray and noMJ ukuthi bazongithelela isnuff se6landi nomqombhothi wemamSibiya that was made by otikoloshi bakhe ethuneni lam babusy bangitshela inkinga zabo zoknuka ingathi yimi uJesu owafa esiphambanweni ngenxa yezono zabo (waiting for Heath, big Ray and Mj to come and pour R6 snuff and mamSibiya's traditional beer that is prepared by her zombies to my grave busy telling me their useless problems as if im Jesus who died on the cross for their sins)..... awunyi perhaps

Heath was now on the floor while Phumi couldn't even breathe will all the laughter she was having

Jabu: I'll never rest in peace because of Heath,

big Ray and more especially Mj with their endless problems so they need to become ancestors first so when I finally become one I'll get to rest in peace

More loud laughter and Cass just laughed shaking his head as he was defeated

Jabu: so if you wanna fight me take out your Vampire side and put it aside first until then im bound by the blood of Jesus so touch me and uzosha ndoda (you'll burn man)

Cass just helped Phumi up gently

Cass: let's go bello

he said chuckling and they walked out laughing and Jabu went to sit down

Jabu: yeeer that was close

***they laughed some more ***

LATER ON AT CASTIEL'S HOUSE

Phumi: is Mbali ok now

Cass sighed

Cass: yeah this thing that happened to Leya hit her hard

Phumi sighed

Phumi: I would go crazy too so I can't imagine what she's going through

Cass brushed her belly and he felt a move and smiled while Phumi frowned

Cass: you felt that

she nodded

Cass: he didn't hurt you right

Phumi: it was more like a light cramp

she sighed and Cass looked at her

Cass: I know it's a lot to take in bello but im here with you and I'll be with you every step of the way

Phumi: im scared Cass

***she said and tears ran down her cheeks then
Cass quickly pulled her in for a hug***

Cass: I know...im scared too

she sniffed

Phumi: what are you scared of, im the one who
might die not you

Cass: if you die I'll die too and I feel like this is it
you know, what I have been longing for bello....a
family of my own so im scared that if you die I
won't have it....im not scared of death but im
scared of dying before I get to experience how
it's like to be a family man

she kept quiet and she wiped her tears

Phumi: what do you mean you'll....die
too....vamps can'tdie right?

Cass: in the eyes of higher beings im a creature,
an abomination and im not supposed to

associate myself with humans especially the ones favoured up there

Phumi: I don't understand

she said getting off his hold and she looked at him

Cass: you belong to the man upstairs while I....

he kept quiet

Phumi: why do you call yourself a creature?

she said sitting up and supporting her back with the headboard

Cass: cause that's what im called

Phumi: by who?

Cass: some powerful higher beings

Phumi: God?

Cass laughed

Cass: ofcourse not

Phumi: then fuck those higher beings

he gave her a shocked look

Phumi: only God can judge you Cass and since God doesn't judge then to hell with everyone else

he was still shocked

Phumi: I know its hard to always ignore comments or people who look down on you.... I know cause most of the time they get to me and hit me where it hurt the most but I always remind myself that as long as God doesn't see me as less of a woman, a failure or a fat unattractive woman then im not

Cass: you're not fat Phumi....you're chubby..... I mean have you seen yourself, your ass and curves....your smooth skin as if you bath in milk.....you have no stretch marks or cellulite I mean people would give anything to have your skin and your genes

Phumi: well not everyone shares your sentiments Cass

Cass: you mean Kazi

She sighed

Phumi: anyway what I wanted to say is until God himself calls you a creature to your face, then you're not....who knows maybe they are jealous that you stopped aging and you'll forever look handsome while they look like izinto ezisabekayo (scary things)

Castiel busted out with loud laughter when he thought about how La Parca looks.....she waited for him to calm down which took some time

Cass: you're crazy you know that

she smiled a little

Phumi: so don't call yourself a creature ever again

Cass: yes mam.....but tell me here why would he be protective of you while you swear like this

she frowned

Phumi: who?

Cass: the man upstairs

Phumi: how do you know he's....you know what im not even gonna ask

he chuckled

Cass: and she's learning

Phumi: mxm

she punched him a bit but nigga didn't flinch or anything it was like he was hard rock

Phumi: ouch

Cass: don't ever do that you'll break your hand bello

he took her hand and massaged it a bit then he kissed it

Cass: tell me here do you even pray?

she nodded

Phumi: it's more like God is my therapist and im his patient.....i talk to him a lot and talking to him has helped me a lot and saved me from doing stupid things that would have had me killed or landed me in jail

she said looking down

Cass: im listening

she sighed

Phumi: I once caught Thabo and some girl named Sne at the local pub looking cozy, she was sitting on his lap and they were kissing.....i fought with the girl and even beat Thabo up then I left going back home, it wasn't that far from my house so I walked there in the middle of the night, my aim was to get there and take a knife, I wanted both of them dead for making me a fool I was ready to go to jail....the anger I

felt was uncontrollable and deadly and I felt like seeing them lying dead was gonna be the only thing that will make the pain and anger to go away

she sighed

Phumi: I got home grabbed the biggest and sharpest knife I could find and as I was heading to the door I heard a voice in my head, it told me to kneel..... I tried to ignore it but it kept on telling me to kneel....and at the same time there was this low pitched voice at the back of my mind pushing me to go back to that pub and kill them and guess what I chose my therapist instead, I kneeled down and I let it all out....all the hurt I was feeling, the betrayal and the anger I told them all to him and the best part is he's a good listener and he never interrupts you when you talk to him or give you empty promises, you just see through his actions that he got your back and he had mine..... so I just talked to him

until I passed out on the floor

Cass looked at her with an intense look

Phumi: my biggest mistake was forgiving
Thabo cause he never stopped messing around
with that woman

Cass clenched his jaws

Phumi: I almost threw my life away for that man
and if it wasn't for God I would either be dead or
in jail and since then God is my confidant and I
talk to him especially when im at a crossed
road and I don't know what to do

Castiel: allow me to send a letter to your people

***he said out of the blue and she looked at him
with a frown on her face***

Phumi: what?

Castiel: for ilobolo(dowry) and damages

Phumi: Cass....

she said with a low tone shaking her head

Cass: allow me please

she opened her mouth to say something but words failed her

Cass: you have until tomorrow morning to give me your consent or I'll send it either way

he perked her lips and got up

Cass: let me go prepare dinner

he walked out leaving her still tongue tide

Phumi: the fuck!

she whispered to herself

GIYANI

*** its Friday and everyone was waiting for the hearse to bring kokwane's body, the family lied and told people that she died in her sleep. As for Joe he was still in a coma and the doctors

can't find out what's wrong with him, Jackson has been taking the whole thing hard, it was all weighing down on him.....while his uncle was at a verge of losing his mind.....every day he left the house he would feel like he was being followed and every time he looked in the mirror for a split second he would see James' face.....he couldn't even make it to his own mother's funeral that's how bad it is, all he does is lock himself inside his study and drink himself away.....

Anyway the hearse made a turn and it reversed towards the gate, people gathered and the mortuary man opened the back door and he took out the thing they put the coffin on top of and he walked inside the house and men took the coffin out of the hearse as people started singing church songs....then the moment Jackson laid his eyes on the coffin he started scratching his body, he then screamed jumping

up and down as he felt like his body was on fire and everyone stopped to look...he continued to scream taking off his jacket then continued to scratch his body screaming some morethe “good” uncle rushed to him...by now people were whispering amongst themselves ***

Uncle: what's wrong with you Jack

Jackson: na tshwa malome (im burning uncle)

Uncle: heh

*** the men took the coffin inside while people stood there watching and whispering...then Jackson took off his shirt and that's when family members grabbed him***

Jackson: let go of me....let go of me

***then he froze and his entire body shook....he was staring at “James” and it seemed like he was the only one there that could see him ***

Jackson: Ja...James

Uncle: heh

James: why?

Jackson: James nikhomele....nikhomele nako kombela (James forgive me....forgive me im begging you)

he said crying and shaking with fear

Uncle: Jackson what's going on with you?

***by now he was sweating and tears were running down his cheeks then “James” took a step forward and Jackson screamed and he ran out of the yard begging James to forgive him, his family members ran after him but he was too fast for them, the aunt’s daughter went inside to her mother and told her what happened and the aunt’s world came crushing down instantly cause Jackson is her favourite and Jackson going down like this meant she was next.....she told her daughter to tell the male family members to go find Jackson and

take her to her house***

THE FOLLOWING DAY

***kokwane was laid to rest and Jackson was still missing....on other news Heath and Jabu along with Lesedi went to Kitso's funeral and after that they went to join Castiel while Ray, Ruslan and Ray's grandfather went to pay for Phumi's dowry.....yes she finally agreed for Cass to pay for her dowry and damages after Cass thoroughly convinced her until she agreed, as for Phumi she told her mother the lie her and Cass cooped up about her being six months pregnant, she told her mother that she knew all along that she was pregnant but she was ashamed and scared to tell her cause apparently she had a one night stand with Cass six months ago and he disappeared on her, then when she went to KZN to visit Kazi they bumped into each other and she told him about

the pregnancy and that time he came to see her he was trying to convince her to allow him to do right by her but she was still with Thabo so she was ashamed, her mother was hurt that she kept the pregnancy from her but after a lot of apologies she forgave her and now she's happy that her only child is about to give her a grandchild she has been longing for and the man responsible for her pregnancy wants to do right by her, so even though it was short notice the lobolo negotiations went ahead and everything was paid***

P.mom: how are you feeling now that you are Mrs Monteneiro

Phumi rolled her eyes

Phumi: the same mama bathong

***she was helping her pack.....Phumi's mother only told her brothers to come and represent Phumi since she doesn't know her late

husband's immediate family, her late husband paid people to come and represent him when he wanted to marry her and his reason for not telling his family was that they disowned him so she just understood and never pushed to know more about the matter cause he didn't want to ever talk about his family***

P.mom: you know this is all I ever wanted for you

she looked at her mother

P.mom: for you to meet a guy who will take good care of you.....a man who'll+ looks at you like you're the only precious thing on earth

Phumi: ma we don't even know each other that well so I don't know what you're talking about

P.mom: he loves you

she gave her mother a bored look

P.mom: im telling you and the way he's been

calling you since maabane (yesterday)
checking up on you and the baby its just cute,
the man is head over heels nana

Phumi: he's just excited of being a father
remember this is his first child so ofcourse he'll
call a million times ma bathong

P.mom: ooh stop being in denial....that man
loves you Phumi I know these things....just like I
knew you were pregnant

***Phumi just shook her head and her mother
hugged her smiling emotionally***

Phumi: mama you're being weird

P.mom: hai suka....you'll soon be a mother so
one day you'll understand why im being like
this.....i know I've been hard on you but it's
because I only wanted what's best for you nana,
im not gonna be around forever so I just wanted
you to experience true love like I did with your
father, I wanted to die knowing you're secured

and that you're in good hands when I go join my love in the after life

Phumi sighed

Phumi: can we not talk about death please

she said with a low tone

P.mom: he would have been proud you know...your father I mean

Phumi: I miss him

she said with tears in her eyes

P.mom: me too but I know he's waiting for me and he's also looking over us and now he's smiling from ear to ear cause his baby girl is married

Phumi faked a smile

P.mom: look I know you said you don't know each other that well but make it work nana...meet him half way and let him love you, that man just proved gore he knows what he

wants unlike boThabo ba ba go jeleng for 10 years for mahala nje (Thabo who had sex with you for 10 years for free) and he couldn't even give you a promise ring at least nx

Phumi sighed

Phumi: Thabo neh

she remembered few days back when he beat her up and called her names

P.mom: mxm bona that stupid boy is your past now focus on your husband and your unborn baby....ba re (they say) you don't know how precious a jewel is until you lose it and wa bona that failpop (and you see that fool) he's about to realize what he lost when he lost you shame

Phumi: remember you used to love the same failpop mama

P.mom: mxm im sure he bewitched me moloi ole (that wizard).....i don't even know why I tolerated his skinny ass for 10 years antse a ja

my only child for mahala (while he fucked my daughter for free), entlek masepa a gae le boyellow ekare ke guava ya go bola ka mogare (you know what fuck him with his yellow self like he's a ripe guava that's rotten inside)

Phumi laughed then they heard a knock and Phumi's mother went to check who it is and it was Castiel

P.mom: aah my son

Phumi held her laugh when she said that

Castiel: ummm I came to take her bags to the car....well that's if she's done packing

they were leaving the same day

P.mom: she is.... come in

he walked in and he smiled at Phumi then her phone rang and it was her man

P.mom: excuse me let me take this

she walked out answering it

Phumi: she should have said “aah mkhulu wami” instead of my son

Castiel: tsek

she laughed and he went to her and brushed her belly

Castiel: I was worried about you last night I even had to send Jabu to make sure you're ok

Phumi: but for him to wake me up from my sleep Cass...no man

Cass: I needed to make sure both of you are ok and plus Madou needed to do his things so the this little one doesn't give you problems

Phumi: but 24 hours wasn't over

Cass: I want you by my side at all times bello....i lose my mind when you aren't so talking to you made me calm the hell down cause believe me I would've been the one who knocked on the door next if you didn't wake up to go see Jabu

She sighed and looked up at him and he stole a kiss

Cass: I know we're moving too fast but it will all be worth it at the end you'll see

Phumi: I hope so

Cass: well I know so

he then kissed her forehead

OUTSIDE

after Phumi's mother talked to her man another call came through as she was about to go back inside Phumi's bedroom and it was Kazi

P.mom: Ntandokazi

Kazi: ma unjani (how are you ma)

P.mom: hai ngiyaphila ntombi yam and wena?
(im alright my girl and you?)

Kazi: hai nami ngiyaphila (im also alright) I just

miss you nje

P.mom: hai suka, you know where I live nje

Kazi laughed

Kazi: ahh work is keeping me super busy but I promise I'll make time when im not too busy

P.mom: mmmmh miss business woman, so how is it going baby

Kazi: aahh well im making money so the workload is worth it at the end of the day

P.mom: that's my girl, make that moola wena girl and come and spoil your favourite aunt

Kazi laughed

P.mom: so tell me here entlek nilwelani wena noPhumi (why are you and Phumi fighting)

Kazi: huh

she was caught off guard

P.mom: today was her lobola negotiations and

you didn't come and when I ask her why you aren't here to celebrate with her athi nilwile but she won't tell me why

Kazi: wait amalobolo for Phumi? (Phumi's dowry negotiations).....heh so uThabo has finally proposed?

P.mom: mxm oho don't tell me about that useless boy.....a guy named Castiel is the one that paid for her lobola

Kazi: wh....what did you say his name is ma?

P.mom: Castiel...heh yazi you girls can keep a secret I swear ningabulala umuntu (you two can kill a person) and take the secret to the grave with you, imagine Phumi being six months pregnant and she hid it from me....six months nogal then boom some handsome man is the one that's responsible and not the boyfriend I know....hai but at least that man is responsible and he's doing right by her unlike

that failpop who wasted 10 years of her life nje

Kazi: oooh my God....oooh my God....it cant
be...no it cant be

***she said with a breaking voice and Phumi's
mother frowned***

P.mom: Kazi are you ok

Kazi: she....she's pregnant with his child
and....and he paid ilobolo for her?

P.mom: yeah...what's wrong, you sound funny....
are you ok?

***then she heard something falling hard on the
other side of the phone***

P.mom: Kazi?

nothing

P.mom: Kazi....Ntandokazi are you still there?

still nothing

P.mom: hebanna

she looked at the screen and Kazi didn't drop the call

P.mom: hello....hello Ntandokazi?

still nothing

P.mom: mxm

she dropped the call

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

INSERT.....28

***it's been a few hours since Kazi woke up she was now at her place drinking to numb the pain

in her heart....Well one of her employees found her passed out on the floor and she sprinkled some water on her face and she woke up.....she couldn't believe that Castiel paid dowry for Phumi but what baffled her the most is the fact that Phumi was six months pregnant...six months!***

Kazi: maybe...maybe the baby is Thabo's and Castiel shoots blanks so this was the only way he could be a father....yah that's the only explanation

She said to herself then she took her other new phone and dialed Castiel's numbers....it rang for some time and send her to voicemail

Kazi: nx

she tried it again and he answered

Cass: yah

his voice made her swallowed hard

Kazi: hi

*** she said with a low tone, even his voice nje had a strong effect on her***

Castiel: who's this?

Kazi: it's Kazi

Castiel: what do you want?

he was so cold towards her

Kazi: so I see you're ready to father another man's child

Castiel: what are you talking about?

Kazi: the child Phumi is carrying, we both know its Thabo's child so let me guess you're impotent and now you want to father another man's child

Castiel laughed

Castiel: is that what your tiny brain is telling you?

Kazi: don't insult me Castiel, I know what im

talking about

Castiel: maybe Phumi and I met six months ago
and we fucked how about that

Kazi: Phumi would have told me

Castiel: we got together behind your back and
now she's even my wife and she's pregnant and
she still didn't tell you

she kept quiet getting angry

Castiel: why are you like this Kazi, its like you
feel entitled to shit or some sort

Kazi: you and Phumi betrayed me...you used me
and when it was convenient for you you
dumped me just like that

Castiel laughed

Castiel: I think you're bipolar or something
woman...how did we betray you or is it me
making you cum without touching you or
showing interest in you that made you think

you're entitled to me

she gasped

Kazi: im sure it makes you feel proud neh

Castiel: listen here Kazi, I used to want you but I don't anymore now I want Phumi and her alone and the sooner you accept that the better.....where's your dignity man, your desperation is appalling and a total turn off

Kazi: why her heh, what does she have that I don't

she said with a breaking voice

Castiel: a kindred heart, beautiful smile and a beautiful mind

Kazi: what....dude my body is goals that every man out there would give up their wealth just to have me so don't tell me about that rubbish

she laughed bitterly

Kazi: "a beautiful mind and a kindred heart"

while on the other hand she looks like a whale and im sure you're even embarrassed to take her to your business functions or to even meet your friends

Castiel laughed

Castiel: in other words you saying Phumi is fat?

Kazi: we both know she is, she's just lucky all that cholesterol helped her have an ass and curves if not she would be a round big jojo tank

Castiel laughed again*

Castiel: she's chubby Kazi not fat and there's a difference but I wouldn't put my money on you to get it cause you a dumb bitch.....and just so you know her "fat" body gives me a hard on every time I look at her

Kazi: hahaha wow trying to convince yourself that you made the right choice?

Castiel: I know I made the right choice and body

shaming another woman is a total turn off if you didn't know

he said with a serious tone

Kazi: wait... did you just call me a dumb bitch?

Castiel: and things register slowly in that tiny brain of yours, why am I even surprised

he chuckled

Kazi: fuck you uyangizwa (you hear me)....fuck you and that fat pig of yours nx I hope she loses that bastard she's carrying msoon!

Castiel chuckled then he got serious

Castiel: you the one who'll die single and alone for being an evil bitch nx..... and just so you know the baby my Phumi is carrying is biologically mine and now she's living the life you were supposed to live and its all your fault....now this should be the last time you call me...you don't exist in our lives so stop with

your obsession, I don't want you now get that through your fucken skull.... I choose Phumi so concentrate on your hitman and stay the fuck away from us!

he said with a serious tone and he dropped the call leaving Kazi hurt.....her bottom lip was trembling and she felt stupid for calling him...she wished she didn't call him...she had a mixture of hurt and anger in her, she knew from that instant she despises Phumi for turning her into this person

Kazi: mxm they can both go to hell

she wiped her falling tears and she got up

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S NEW HOUSE

Cass shook his head after he dropped the call

Castiel: all because I made her cum without

touching her and now she's acting like a crazy
ex nx

***he said to himself and went back to making
late lunch for him and Phumi***

Phumi: you must have been really hurt when
she chose Menzi over you, I mean like you said
to her, she could be living my life now if she
knew what she wanted...so yay lucky me the
second choice

***she said the last part sarcastically with tears
in her eyes and as soon as Castiel turned to
look at her tears ran down her cheeks***

Castiel: bello

he said feeling like shit

Phumi: keep on entertaining her akere she's
your first choice

she walked away wiping her tears off

Castiel: damn it!

he switched the stove off and went after her

Castiel: bello

Phumi: don't call me that

Castiel: Phumi come on

Phumi: leave me alone Castiel!

she said with a warning tone and Cass raised his eyebrow

Castiel: im not entertaining her bello

she chuckled

Phumi: I'll never catch a break will I, I guess im unlovable

Castiel: are you trying to hurt my feelings on purpose

Phumi: what feelings Castiel when you have an option to go back to your first choice

***Castiel just shook his head and he chuckled

which meant he was now pissed off***

Castiel: im just gonna pretend like you didn't just say that

he said with a pissed off tone

Phumi: pretend all you want but it's the truth

she said not even looking at him

Phumi: and just so you know im not insecure cause I know you don't love me and that im just your incubator....im just hurt that you entertain another woman to a point that you even feel free to talk about how fat I am with her

Castiel: that's not what....

Phumi: respect me Castiel, you may not love me but atleast respect me cause im out here putting my life at risk just so you can be a father so respect is all I need from you

Castiel: that's not how it went Phumi....can we just not fight about this please

Phumi: I don't care just respect me Castiel
that's all

***he sat down cause he felt like she was giving
up on him or something***

Castiel: bello look Kazi is...

Phumi: I don't wanna hear that name ever again
Castiel.....look I said my peace and what I asked
for is not a lot I just want you to respect me
that's all so please I need to rest excuse me

***she got up slowly and she went to the
bedroom that is downstairs***

Castiel: fuck!

KAZI'S HOUSE

***its been a week and she still felt
embarrassed and stupid for chasing after a
man that didn't want her anymore.... nigga even
called her a dumb bitch and he didn't even

apologies which was now clear indication to her that Castiel wasn't into her anymore or maybe he wasn't to begin with he was just infatuated by her nje or maybe he just wanted some pussy and move on but what still baffled her was the fact that Phumi was six months pregnant and Castiel confirmed that the pregnancy is his, that is what hurt her the most cause it meant that they knew each other all along and pretended not to know each other around her.....she then felt bad for her relationship with Menzi, she knew she loves him and he loves her back and she hoped that he understands that this was just a stage she's not proud of and that she's ready to put everything behind and fix things with him....she tried his numbers and it send her straight to voicemail, she sighed and tried to call him using her other new phone with a new simcard and it rang***

Kazi: ooh my God he blocked me

she said to herself hurt

Menzi: hello

Kazi: so you blocked my numbers Menzi

he sighed

Menzi: Ntandokazi

Kazi: I know I hurt you but to block my numbers
Menzi, I've been worried about you and wena
you blocked my numbers

Voice: look what I came up with Ngcobo.....ooh
sorry

***she whispered the last part and Menzi
cleared his throat***

Kazi: who the hell is that?

she asked sounding worked up

Menzi: look I have to go....ummm I'll unblock
your numbers

Kazi: MENZI WHO THE FUCK IS THAT!

Menzi: she's a colleague Kazi and I don't like your tone!

Kazi: YOU DON'T LIKE MY TONE, ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME!

Menzi: I have to go shap

he ended the call and she sat there shocked by the turn of events....she looked at her screen and she huffed looking angry

Kazi: nx

she got up and went to her bedroom to change and she locked up and got inside her car and drove out

AT MENZI'S HOUSE

Lorraine: sorry about that I wasn't aware you're on the phone

Menzi: its ok don't worry about it

Lorraine: ok now look what I came up with
***he looked at the papers and a smile formed
on his lips***

Menzi: ok now this figures makes sense and I
can work with them

Lorraine: am I good or am I good?

Menzi: mxm stop bragging...uyazama nje
(you're just trying)

***she laughed and she pushed him and he
chuckled***

Lorraine: mxm uyabora shame

Menzi: so should I fill up your glass madam

Lorraine: yeah but this is my last glass, I still
need to drive home

Menzi: don't worry I'll gladly drive you back
home provided you make that lasagna I found
you eating in your office...it looked delicious
and smelled good

she laughed beautifully

Lorraine: I knew it....i saw your eyes kept going to my lunchbox every now and then

they laughed

Menzi: now you know so?

Lorraine: I don't want to over stay my welcome Menzi and plus I don't wanna get comfortable in another woman's kitchen cause hey women of today bathela ubuso ngeacid unye nyi for their man so eish (they'll pour you with acid on your face for their man so eish)

Menzi chuckled

Menzi: that kitchen belongs to me Raine so relax and make me that Lasagna assomblief....my mouth is even watering just thinking about it

she laughed

Lorraine: ooh God what have I gotten myself

into

Menzi smiled as she made a face that looked cute

Lorraine: fine but im leaving with an unopened bottled of one of that fine wine we are drinking

Menzi: done

she looked at him and she shook her head with a smile on her face

Lorraine: fine I hope you have lots of cheese cause that wasn't some typical traditional lasagna but a custom made one

he chuckled following behind her looking at her ass moving and he bit his lower lip and put his hands inside his pockets

Menzi: Custom made huh?

Lorraine: yep....wow nice modern kitchen
Ngcobo

***she said turning to look at him and also

admiring the kitchen and he quickly cleared his throat***

Menzi: thanks

he showed her where everything was and she started with her preparations with Menzi helping here and there while they held a nice conversation....after a while she was done and she dished up for the both of them and they went to the lounge and ate while watching Tv

Menzi: damn this is good nkosazana

she blushed

Lorraine: its my favourite dish actually that's why I perfect it like this

Menzi: now its my new favourite dish

she blushed some more

Lorraine: I'll write down the recipe so your helper will cook it for you sometime

Menzi: nope I want you to prepare it for me

he said looking at her and she shyly looked down to her plate and Menzi smirked then they heard a door bell ring.....he cleared his throat and put his plate down

Menzi: let me get that

he went to the door and opened it then he frowned

Menzi: Ntandokazi...what are you doing here?

she raised her eyebrow at him

Kazi: askies?

Menzi: I mean why didn't you tell me you were coming

Kazi: you've been ignoring my calls Menzi

Menzi: we talked like an hour ago!

he said with an annoyed voice

Kazi: how was I to tell you when you dropped the call on me!

she said sounding angry and she pushed him out of the way and she walked in and saw a woman sitting in the lounge with a plate and a glass of wine next to her and she raised her eyebrow at her

Kazi: and who might you be ntombazana (girly)

she asked with a bit of attitude

Menzi: Ntandokazi!

he warned her

Kazi: whoa yimakancane bhuti (wait a minute), im sitting at home worried sick about you cause your numbers weren't going through and wena you're here entertaining whores

Raine: whooooh....whooooh.....i don't know you and you don't know me so let's not step on each other's toenails ntombazana

she said getting up

Kazi: askies....uthini kimi wena sfebe (what did

you just say to me bitch)

Menzi: Ntandokazi that's enough!

he said with a firm tone

Menzi: uyahlanya yini (are you crazy), how dare you come to my house and insult my guest!

He said with an angry voice and Lorraine wore her heels not looking pleased

Menzi: Raine look im sorry about all this embarrassment

Kazi: so im an embarrassment now Menzi

***she said sounding hurt ***

Raine: its ok.... just get back to me about those figures and a contract that will benefit both of us cause im not settling for anything less than what I spoke to you about

***Menzi cleared his throat as she packed her laptop inside her laptop bag along with some papers and she picked her handbag and she

walked towards the door with Menzi following behind her.....she stopped walking and she turned and looked at an angry looking Kazi***

Raine: never call me a whore or a bitch again Ntandokazi cause I may be a classy and respectable woman but I'll wipe this tiled floor with your pretty face if you ever disrespect me like that ever again....im glad we understand each other....have a lovely evening

she turned and walked out with Menzi following behind her shocked by what she just said.....she opened the back door and she put her laptop bag inside and she closed it

Menzi: im sorry about what happened Raine....i didn't know she was coming and I didn't expect her to behave that way

he said sincerely as she opened the driver side of her car

Raine: from now on we work in either your

office or mine so something like this doesn't happen again

Menzi sighed

Menzi: it won't happen again trust me

Raine: I trust no one Ngcobo so from now on we keep things professional ok

Menzi: come on Raine it hasn't gotten to that

Raine: I was called isfebe so it has gotten to that im afraid

he sighed disappointed

Raine: but I had a great time and I'll wait to hear from you about the contract...bye

she got inside her car and Menzi closed the door for her, she buckled up and started the car then she reversed out....Menzi watched her until she drove away then he sighed and walked back in

Kazi: you took your time!

he ignored her and he picked the plates up and went to the kitchen with them and Kazi followed him

Kazi: are you cheating on me Menzi

she asked with a voice filled with hurt

Menzi: do you still have feelings for your ex

she swallowed

Kazi: it was only feelings Menzi, I didn't say I love him and want to be with him

Menzi: you haven't answered my question

Kazi: yes...now are you cheating on me?

Menzi: no....my dick hasn't fucked another woman's pussy if that's what you're asking

she felt relieved cause she knew she couldn't take another heartbreak

Kazi: im sorry Menzi, I messed up.....i know I hurt by admitting to having feeling for another

man but I swear I have never acted on them and I have decided to let Phumi and Castiel be

Menzi chuckled shaking his head

Menzi: who exactly is this Castiel of a guy and what powers does he have that made you admit to still having feeling for him to my face

Kazi: babe can we just move on from this please....im sorry I acted that way, I love you Menzi and its you that I want not him

Menzi looked at her intensely

Menzi: what happened to you Ntandokazi, you're not the woman I fell in love with months ago.....its like ever since you came back from being kidnapped you're a different woman all together and it got nothing to do with the trauma you went through.....you just insulted my guest like you're some hood rat for no reason whatsoever and you're fighting with your best friend over an ex while you had a man who

loved you like his life depended on it

Kazi: Menzi....

Menzi: you don't know what you want Kazi and
im not about to have another Buhle in my life

tears ran down her cheeks

Kazi: im nothing like your ex-wife Menzi...I've
never cheated on you and I truly love you

Menzi: find yourself Ntandokazi then we will
talk cause im not about to fight for you with
that man, a friend of mine warned me about
him and he said I shouldn't even think of going
into war with him cause I have children in case
you forgot and they come first!

Kazi: what are you saying Menzi, you don't have
to go to war with anyone

Menzi: YOU TOLD ME YOU'RE STILL INTO THIS
GUY AND YOU'RE EVEN HATING ON YOUR
BEST FRIEND BECAUSE OF HIM....YOU'RE

DOING ALL THIS KNOWING VERY WELL THAT I
LOVE YOU NTANDOKAZI...DO YOU EVEN
KNOW HOW DANGEROUS THAT MAN IS

she was just crying

Menzi: HE EVEN CALLED ME NTANDOKAZI TO
COME AND TAKE YOU CAUSE YOU WERE
INSULTING PHUMI AND THAT DIDN'T GIVE
YOU THE HINT THAT AKAKUFUNI ! (he doesn't
want you)

Kazi: I don't want him too...i want you!

she said wiping her tears off

Menzi: when did you realize that huh, after he
paid ilobolo for Phumi or before?

she froze a bit

Kazi: he paid that cause she's pregnant, there's
nothing special about that

Menzi chuckled defeated

Menzi: you need help wena

he then walked away

Kazi: Menzi...

Menzi: hai fokof man

she swallowed hard

RAY'S HOUSE

Ray walked inside the kitchen where Mbali was busy making breakfast for the both of them holding Kalu

Ray: she's clinging on to you as if you'll run away

Mbali laughed

Mbali: I even had to strap her on my back so I can work

He didn't say anything he just stared at her with an intense look asking himself what he did so good to deserve her

Mbali: what?

Ray: what did I do to the man upstairs to deserve you my flower

Mbali: you saved my life remember

She said smiling and he chuckled...he got closer to her and they kissed for some time

Ray: I love you

Mbali: I love you too baby

Ray: don't cook lunch we are going out the four of us

she smiled surprised cause it's been a while since they went out

Mbali: ok

she continued making breakfast for them

Ray: my flower

Mbali: mmmmh?

Ray: you're not a house wife and you'll never be

one ok

she didn't say anything she just smiled lightly at him

Ray: I have big plans for you my flower, and it starts with you going back to school to finish your degree

Mbali: how will I juggle two kids, being a wife and being a student Ray

Ray: you're not a single mom and besides we will make it work you'll see....i can't wait for the day you'll graduate just so I can see your father and your grandmother's faces

She smiled emotionally

Mbali: I can't wait too

he kissed her forehead

Ray: we gonna be a force to be recon with, just wait a see

***she smiled at him and he perked her lips

then her phone rang, it was Naledi and she answered***

Mbali: mamkhulu

Naledi laughed

Naledi: mamncane unjani

Ray kissed her forehead and Cataleya's forehead and he walked away with Kalu

Mbali: hai ngiright wena (im good and you)

Naledi: ngiright nami(im also good) so i want your advice on something

Mbali: ok im listening

Naledi: what do you think about baby pink and cream white?

Mbali: umm they are nice I guess...why?

Naledi: you don't sound convincing mamncane

Mbali laughed

Mbali: for someone else im sure will be nice but

for me it's a no no

Naledi: ok what would your colors be then?

Mbali: gold and baby pink

Naledi: wow ok

Mbali: ok so are you hosting a party or what

Naledi: yeah one of the girls we're funding is turning 21 so we were thinking of throwing her a party and plus she's doing really well with her studies

Mbali: wow that's thoughtful of you, im sure she'll be happy especially with those colors

Naledi laughed

Naledi: let's hope so

Mbali: I know so trust me

Naledi: ok fingers crossed..... well let me call the décor people we will talk later ok

Mbali: ok and please send me pictures

Naledi: I will shap sthandwa

Mbali: shap babe

NALEDI'S HOUSE

she called Thandi's numbers and she answered on the third ring

Thandi: a reng? (what did she say)

Naledi: gold and baby pink

Thandi: wa bona (you see)....i told Ntombi gore she's now grown bopink and purple ke tsa eng

Naledi laughed

Naledi: mmh even le Pink and cream white was a no no for her

Thandi: ai bontombi ba tla re irisa boshadi waitsi (ai we nearly messed up because of Ntombi)

Naledi laughed

Naledi: hai..... anyway how's Phumi...i hope I'll meet her ko parting

Thandi: o shap its just her pregnancy is showing her flames shame, I don't even think she'll be able to make it cause Castiel o over protective ka yena shame (with her)

Naledi: ai ok retla bona ka yena (ok we will see if she comes)

Thandi: mmmmh mara shame you'll like her....gai pone (she doesn't think highly of herself) and she looks like the younger version of Jill Scott...she's just pretty and cute with that million dollar smile of hers no wonder Castiel is smitten shame

Naledi: mmmmh now I can't wait to meet her..... anyway wena call the déco people and give them di colors

Thandi: alright I love you

Naledi: I love you too my love

Thandi: mwaaaah

Naledi laughed and they ended the call

.

.

INSERT.....29

.

.

.

.

.

AT PHUMI AND CASTIEL'S NEW HOME

***Phumi was sitting by the balcony staring into space while rubbing her belly..... the pregnancy was already taking a toll on her. Ruslan was doing his bit to help with the pregnancy but it was weighing down on her every single day, she can't stand for too long and she was losing

weight, well she's not as skinny as Bella on twilight was but you could see that she was losing weight..... everything that she's going through is all worth it every time the baby moves or kicks which happens a lot these days, the pregnancy is only four weeks old but the baby was already moving.....as for Castiel he has been an amazing partner, he's with her 24/7 and he takes care of her, every day he falls deep for her and he cant even help it.....Anyway he walked in with two glasses filled with blood and he gave her her glass and he sat down next to her and gave her a straw, she put her straw inside the glass and started drinking while moaning and Cass smiled.....She started craving for blood few days back when she started with her weight loss cause she couldn't stomach solid food..... when he gave her a glass filled with blood just to see if she can stomach it since she cant stomach solid food that well, she drank it without any problem so

from there on he started giving her two glasses of blood per day with soft porridge and half-done meat between even vegetables were a no no for her***

Castiel: have you vomited today after eating the porridge?

Phumi: no but I felt nauseas, I still do even now

Cass sighed

Castiel: I'll tell Madou and see if he can't help you with that

he sighed looking at her

Castiel: when will you stop being mad at me?

Phumi didn't say anything

Castiel: Bello

Phumi: I don't know

*** she said dismissing him and he sighed***

Castiel: I don't want her anymore and you know

it

Phumi: in other words im a rebound or your second choice

Castiel: you're not and you know it

she chuckled bitterly

Phumi: you think im your fool wena, just because I accepted a lot of shit about you you think im a YES girl kao bona (I see)

she said with an angry tone

Castiel: calm down and we're not fighting about this anymore....i wont let Kazi come between us Phumi and im dead serious!

he said with a firm tone

Phumi: this is not about Kazi Castiel its about you, she can call you a million times and if you're entertaining her this shit is about you not her cause you had a choice to ignore her or even block her but you didn't cause you enjoy

her insulting and calling me names so this is about you and not her cause im not married to Kazi and im not carrying her child!

she put the glass down and she looked away feeling emotional

Castiel: I hear you and I have said im sorry for the hundredth time.....i don't want Kazi and I never will, its you I want Phumi so can we let this go

She didn't say anything

Cass: Bello

Phumi: leave me alone Castiel....please just let me be.....i swear the day I'll deal with you e tlore ge o bona (you'll see) a woman passing by you'll quickly look the other way.....you don't know me wena continue disrespecting me and you'll see

***He frowned looking at her then he raised an eyebrow shocked by the threats..... he then

breathed out and sat back with a serious look on his face..... they heard a car driving in and he could tell it was Ruslan and he was with Thandi, he sighed cause they knew about the Kazi issue and Thandi wasn't pleased with him***

Castiel: Madou and Thandi are here

she didn't say anything and he sighed and got up taking her glass and he went and put both glasses inside the mini fridge in their bedroom and he went back to Phumi

Castiel: let's go

she raised her hands and he picked her up bridal style and went downstairs with her, he didn't want her to go up and down the stairs on her own....anyway he put her down gently on the couch and he sat down next to her then the door opened and they walked in, Phumi forced a smile

Thandi: girl!

she shouted and Phumi chuckled

Phumi: hey

Thandi got to her and kissed her cheek and she sat down chowing on her biltong

Thandi: Castiel

Cass: our wife...so when will I go back to being called Cass

Thandi: the day you stop entertaining hoes

He chuckled shaking his head

Ruslan: Phumi

Phumi: hi Ruu

Ruslan looked at Cass

Ruslan: joined me

He then looked at the ladies

Ruslan: excuse us

***Phumi nodded and Thandi gave Cass a nasty

look and Cass chuckled***

Cass: what?

Thandi: mxm I hope you cooked or ordered pizza for me

Cass: I cooked

Thandi: good

*** he followed Ruslan shaking his head...she went to dish for herself, she wanted to dish for Phumi too but she said she was ok.....she came back and sat next to Phumi and started eating***

Thandi: o right?

she nodded

Phumi: it's just I feel like a YES girl when it comes to Castiel and I hate feeling like that

Thandi: wena why do you agree to everything he says or wants

Phumi sighed

Phumi: I don't know maybe wanloya (he's bewitching me)

Thandi laughed

Phumi: serious..... the day I was coming back from KZN he said lets go to my place and I'll drive you home the next day and I was like Ok.....then at night he said ithi ngilifake kancane (let me put in only the tip) and I was like OK then boom I fell pregnant.....then he said let me send my people to your people and I was like OK..... the next thing he said im a Vampire and im like COOL....jiki jiki this baby might kill you and im like YIPPY

Thandi was laughing her ass off

Phumi: so I think ungidlisile or oyangiloya (I think he fed me a love potion or he's bewitching me)

***Thandi wiped her tears off still laughing ***

Thandi: hai shame udlile (you were fed love potion) for sure

Phumi shook her head

Thandi: mara le tlo ba shap ankere (you'll be fine right?)

Phumi: I cant help but feel used somehow, I mean I feel like he just wants a baby from me and I also feel like since Kazi chose Menzi I became his second option when we met and I also feel like it's the only way he could hurt her through me

she said with a sad tone

Thandi: look I may be mad at him for hurting you by entertaining that desperate bitch but I can see love in his eyes when he looks at you Phumi, the way he's protective over you

Phumi shook her head

Phumi: he's doing all that for his child

Thandi...im just an incubator and nothing more to him and the sooner I accept that the better..... I mean I might even die during delivery of this baby so maybe im just the incubator and him and Kazi will work things out and raise the baby together

Thandi sighed

Thandi: I don't think so Phumi I truly don't.....i can see he loves you believe me on that, he may have a funny way of showing it but he does

Phumi: ai aritsi (hai I don't know)

she said shrugging her shoulder

Thandi: well nigga is so into you and I stand by that

Phumi: trust me he doesn't, he may care deeply but that's it

Thandi: hai re tla bona (we will see) as times goes on, he's gonna prove you wrong....anyway

on a lighter note I feel like it's not fair gore
you're pregnant and losing weight while im also
pregnant but gaining weight

Phumi's eyes popped out

Phumi: bathong Thandi we both know why im
losing weight

Thandi: well sometimes I low key wish Ruu was
a vamp too...i can't fit into my clothes anymore
and that breaks my heart each time I try
something on

she said sulking and Phumi giggled

Phumi: trust me you don't want to carry a
vampire's child

they both laughed

Thandi: girl you lost weight and you're being
pampered and carried around like an egg as for
nna I only get carried when nigga wants some
pussy other than that dololo

They laughed

Phumi: atleast wa kukiwa hao (at least you're being carried haw)

they laughed

Thandi: it's not the same and you know it

Phumi chuckled

IN THE STUDY

Ruslan: you look like shit

Cass: well I feel like shit

Ruslan: she's still mad?

he sighed

Cass: yeah...a whole fucken week man....a week of total horror

Ruslan sighed and he took a sip of his drink

Ruslan: do you blame her?

Cass: she's not a rebound Madou nor is she being used to make that bitch jealous....i don't even know why I entertained her cause im in shit.....for fucks sake I never even dated Kazi or fucked her so how is she a rebound?

He said sitting down since he was standing by the window

Ruslan: want some?

Cass: nah you know I cant mix blood and alcohol or I'll start acting crazy

Ruslan: ooh you were feeding?

Cass: yeah we were when you were driving in

Ruslan: she's hurt man you can see it behind that smile she forced on her face

Cass: she's hurting herself cause I told her time without number that it's her I want, her insecurities are the ones hurting her.....im here

with her 24/7, I paid for her dowry but still that is not enough...she's letting Kazi ruin things between us then she puts the blame on me...aarg fok man

He said with an annoyed tone and Ruslan raised an eyebrow looking at him

Cass: don't look at me like that

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: anyway will you make it for Mbali's surprise party

Cass: how when Phumi will be 7 weeks... I don't wanna take chances

Ruslan: yeah i almost forgot, don't worry I'll take a video for you

Cass: mxm

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: its nice what Ray is doing for her

Cass: yeah, she's been through the worst man

Ruslan: mmmmh I cant believe how much he has changed

Cass chuckled

Cass: that's what love does to you

Ruslan: speaking from experience?

Cass: mxm and she cant even see it cause she's hang up on Ntando fucken Kazi

Ruslan laughed

after their talk they went back to the lounge and found Phumi and Thandi now talking about this Cass and Kazi issue

Thandi: wow I didn't know that's how you two met

Phumi: you see, one minute Kazi was telling me about this guy called Castiel she met that made

her cum without touching her, she even said he made her chose between him and Menzi her boyfriend and she chose Menzi the next thing he's interested in me....it's clear im the second choice or he's using me and stupid me fell for it

Cass: is that how you really feel Phumi

both Phumi and Thandi froze and Ruslan sighed cause he knew what was about to happen

Cass: I asked you a question?

Ruslan: Cass

Cass: stay out of this Madou!

he looked at Phumi

Cass: you think im using you Phumi

Phumi: I have nothing to say

Ruslan cleared his throat

Ruu: amor lets go to the kitchen so they can

talk in private

she got up and looked at Cass

Thandi: calm the hell down

then they walked away

Cass: you think im using you?

Phumi: if Kazi knew what she wanted she'll be the one carrying this baby, she'll be the one whom you paid lobola for

Castiel shook his head

Cass: your insecurities will be your downfall.....you should talk to your God about that cause they are getting out of hand!

Phumi: Just go to hell Castiel nx.....stop pretending as if you give a fuck about me for fucks sake....that's what pisses me off the most, ga o nrate and gao nratele le bophelo (you don't love me and you don't care if I live or die) so stop pretending as if you care!

she said shouting and Cass chuckled

Cass: talk to your God so you can calm the fuck down before you upset my child

he said with a chilled out voice and he started walking away

Phumi: Fuck you uyangizwa (you hear me).....fuck you uyinja Castiel....umgodoyi wenjanx!

she said getting up

Castiel: THAT'S ENOUGH
PHUMELELE....UNGAZONGIJWAELA
AMASIMBA UYANGIZWA (don't piss me off).....I'LL FUCKEN SLAP YOU ONCE AND
YOU'LL WAKE UP IN FRONT OF THE GATES OF
HEAVEN WITH MISSING TEETH....WHO DO YOU
THINK YOU ARE TALKING TO LIKE THAT!

he roared with total anger visible on his face

Phumi: try it....come and try it....you think im scared of you wena just because you're a vampire angithi...well o fitlhile park station mo nna! (well try that shit on me)

Ruslan: Cass calm down!

he said walking in with Thandi

Phumi: no leave him....let him slap me...slap me Castiel, o poo wena askere (you're Mr. tough guy right).....o goliathe wena askere (you're Goliath right) so come and slap me!

Ruslan: enough Phumi!

he roared

Ruslan: im not about to have another Ray and Mbali shit going on here Castiel so calm the fuck down...in fact take a walk!

*** Cass chuckled and he turned and attempted to walk away and Phumi picked a remote and threw it at him and it hit him on his back***

Thandi: Phumi!

Phumi: don't fucken walk away from me Castiel!

she said looking extremely angry and Ruslan shook his head while Castiel turned and looked at her looking angry

Castiel: ufunani kimi wena Phumelele (what the hell do you want from me Phumelele)

Thandi: Cass please calm down remember she's pregnant

Cass: answer me damn it what the fuck do you want from me!

he shouted and both Thandi and Phumi jumped up scared

Thandi: its probably hormones Cass

he pleaded on her behalf

Phumi: you know what...im going back home and I'll tell my mother to send you your stupid lobola money cause I see ke yona e go fang

makoko a gondisrespecta nx (I see its what giving you the balls to disrespect me nx)

Thandi: Phumi stop....calm down assomblief.....Cass walk away please!

Cass: try it and you'll see...just try it!

she walked away and Cass went after her, Thandi attempted to go after them but Ruslan pulled her back

Thandi: Ruu....

Ruslan: leave them, he made her angry now let him experience what happens when you make a pregnant woman who's carrying a hybrid baby with wizardry genes in him

Thandi: what if he hurts her

she said with a worried tone

Ruslan: he won't but she will

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: sit down and stop stressing my princess

he pulled her to sit down

Cass: Phumelele im fucking talking to you!

she saw a screw driver and two nails on top of a side table with a vas filled with flowers that was next to the stairs, she picked the screw driver angrily and turned.....by the time she realized what she has done Castiel was holding the screw driver that was penetrated on his chest.....she started shaking as she looked at it stuck on his chest..... his eyes were popped out as he was shocked by what she just did then he slowly looked at the object stabbed right through his chest

Phumi: ooh my God...ohh my God....oooh God what have I done.....what have I done...he's gonna die....he's gonna die....

Cass: MADOU!

He shouted as he could see that she was going into shock....she was visibly shaking and her breathing pattern wasn't normal anymore.....then she started having a panic attack

Cass: MADOU!

he said catching her before she could hit the floor and that's when Ruslan walked to him.....her eyes landed on the screw driver stuck on his chest and she passed out

Ruslan: I told you to calm down didn't i!

Cass: not now ok just put her down gently so I can take off this thing from my chest

Ruslan put Phumi down gently

Thandi: ooh my God Phumi...what did you do to her!

***when her eyes landed on the screwdriver she

screamed loud***

Thandi: ohh my God!

Cass: relax im fine

*** he said with a chilled out voice and Ruslan quickly pulled her to his chest and Castiel pulled the screw driver out and he groaned as he did then he threw it on top of the table as the wound closed itself up slowly.....he then picked Phumi up from the floor and took her upstairs***

Thandi: ooh my God did she?

Ruslan: he deserves it, he should know better than to argue with her and relax he heals quickly and he doesn't bleed out..... all in all you need to chop his head off to kill him so he's good, he felt a bit of pain when he pulled the object off which he deserved but he's fine

Thandi looked at him with a horrified look on her face

Ruslan and Thandi did leave after Phumi woke up, they needed to make sure she was fine.... anyway she was now in the bedroom resting, her eyes were blood shot red from all the crying she's been doing ever since Ruu and Thandi left, she couldn't believe she stabbed Cass like that....she sat up straight slowly and she moved her right leg to the edge of the bed slowly then she breathed out cause that was a job and a half for her, she then moved her other leg slowly and she moaned as she moved her body towards the edge of the bed... that fainting scene put some strain on her body and the baby, her belly felt heavier now....she sat there for a while trying to gather all the strength she can get to stand up on her own and that's when Cass budged in***

Cass: what are you doing....you know you can't move around on your own

she ignored him and attempted to get up and Cass rushed to her and held her

Castiel: what do you think you're doing Phumelele!

Phumi: I want to go and pee

she said with a low tone

Cass: and why didn't you call me

Phumi: im not disabled Castiel ok!

*** She snapped at him and he looked at her with an angry look on his face***

Cass: you're starting to piss me off manje.....you're getting on my fucken last nerve and you'll hate me for real when im angry so don't push me!

she felt chills down her spine and she looked down feeling scared by the change of his tone and tears filled her eyes

Castiel: you're angry at me fine but leave my

child out of it siyazwana

he picked her up and took her to the bathroom and she did her business and he took her back....she lay down and faced the other way then Cass walked out then her tears gushed out, she cried herself to sleep.... her hormones were all over the place and she didn't know what to do..... Anyway she was deep in her sleep when she felt something on her pussy entrance.....she moaned in her sleep and Cass whispered to her ear

Cass: wake up

Phumi: huh?

Cass: I said wake up

she opened her eyes

Cass: you still angry?

he sucked on her neck gently and her breath hinged

Cass: you can't talk now

Phumi: im...im trying to sleep Cass

****"Im Cass now" he thought then he smirked***

Cass: I asked if you're still mad

he pushed the tip in which made her moan then he stopped moving

Phumi: Cass...

Cass: what was that?

She swallowed hard

Phumi: please

she said with a pleading tone

Cass: you still mad?

she quickly shook her head, she didn't let him touch her for a week and now he was about to have her....he then pushed it all inside and she gasped as he stretched her wide

Phumi: ooh God!

Cass: are you done acting crazy now?

Phumi: Cass...

Cass: are you?

Phumi: ye...yes

Cass: and you'll never do the shit you did to me ever again

Phumi: ye..yes

He kissed her neck and he started moving which made her to moan out loud

Cass: moan for daddy my beautiful YES girl

and he started moving slowly as he held her right leg up

Phumi: ooh gosh!

***he increased his pace going in and out of her and she moaned grabbing tight to the sheets...he had her until they both came and he

pulled out of her and reached for a towel and he cleaned both of them then he kissed her neck and held her from behind with his hand on her belly and the baby moved a bit***

Castiel: usuthi boy?

he then chuckled and rubbed her belly

Castiel: just so you know....im in love with you and your craziness bello

her eyes popped out

Cass: yeah I do and I've been showing it to you through my actions but you're just too crazy to see it

she pushed him a bit

Phumi: im not crazy

Cass: you are and we both know you know that you are and now i have a scar to prove it

she sighed

Phumi: im sorry Cass, I don't know why I did thatim sorry.....i

she said with a breaking voice

Cass: you wouldn't be my mate if you weren't a little crazy trust me

she sniffed and wiped her tears off and he kissed her neck then he pulled her leg up and entered her again and they both moaned

Cass: fuck his pussy will be the death of me

A WEEK LATER

***Kazi was sitting in bar drowning on her sorrows.....Menzi have been giving her the cold shoulder and she just couldn't take it anymore, he kept telling her that he still loves her but that she needed to deal with her shit first and to also find herself again and until then she should give him some space.....she regrets ever saying that

Cass is her ex and she still have feelings for him to his face cause it was about to cost her the only man that truly loves her.....she didn't know how to start dealing with the obsession she has with Castiel and she doesn't even know where to start finding herself again.....Castiel is all she thinks about and she can't help it.....the fact that he chose Phumi over her is what she can't get over cause she feels she's way better than her in every way, she has never had a problem with getting any man she wants no matter how handsome, rich, crazy or abusive they may be and the fact that she can't get Castiel was driving her nuts and turning her into a crazy woman and she hated it.....Anyway she was lost in her thoughts when a beautiful slender black woman sat next to her***

Woman: barman give me it a glass of red wine please

she said with an American accent

Barman: coming right up

Woman: hi

Kazi: hi

she drank her martini then the barman gave the lady her drink... then the woman chuckled

Woman: to think I gave that son of a bitch my all and all I got is betrayal and a heartbreak

she then sniffed and chuckled again

Woman: 5 years...5 fucken years and I find out he's married with kids

then she looked at Kazi who just cleared her throat

Woman: im sorry i.....i have no one here in fact I don't know anyone here.....i came all the way from the United States for a fucken married man can you believe it

Kazi: wow

she wiped a tear and she sniffed and played with her drink

Kazi: how did you find out he's married...if you don't mind me asking

Woman: I became suspicious cause he always flew back here whenever he receive a certain call he said it's from his interim CEO in one of his companies..... and he always made excuses every time I wanted to meet his family....a friend of mine advised me to hire a PI on the internet back here to find out more about him and what he came back with shocked me so I came here to see it for myself and I wish I didn't come

she sniffed and wiped her tears off and continued to play with her drink

Kazi: damn....i hate him

they chuckled

Woman: I wish to hate him but my heart won't let me

Kazi: I know what you're talking about

Woman: im Carmine by the way but my friends call me Cosmo

Kazi: Ntandokazi but my friends call me Kazi

they shook hands and giggled, Cosmo was wearing those finger popping half gloves and she was wearing all black

Cosmo: so what's your story

Kazi: my ex and my best friend betrayed me

Cosmo: they fucked?

Kazi: worse she's even pregnant and he married her

Cosmo: ouch....i take it you still had feelings for the ex

Kazi: worse we were trying to make it work again then boom he saw her and went for her instead

Cosmo: wow that sounds like something that happens in the movies

Kazi: you know I cant believe Castiel did that to me.....he made me fall for him then boom he goes for my best friend mxm

tears filled her eyes and she chuckled pushing them back

Cosmo: that name sounds odd to be South African

she said trying not to sound pushy

Kazi: I know and its even weirder cause he's black and he even speaks isiZulu one of our official languages but his eyes man....yho every time he looks into your eyes you feel like he's looking into your soul....its creepy but a turn on at the same time

Cosmo: interesting....i mean maybe one of his parents is not South African

Kazi: mmmmh maybe

Cosmo: so they betrayed you just like that

Kazi: yeah can you imagine

she said sounding hurt

Cosmo: I hate them

they giggled

Kazi: and like you my heart can't seem to allow me to hate him but I despise that bitch Phumi to the core

Cosmo: cheers to hating the bitch then

they toasted and giggled

Cosmo: so he's also from here...i mean the way he hurt you I wouldn't be surprised if he's related to Jacob my now married ex

they both giggled

Kazi: I think so but now he's in Pretoria living with that fat pig

Cosmo: ooh ok

she looked at her watch

Cosmo: ooh look at that.....well let me go before it gets too late and plus I have an early morning flight back home

Kazi: ooh but you didn't touch your drink

Cosmo: im a bloody Mary kinda girl I don't even know why I ordered this

she pushed it to her

Kazi: its stress girl

they both laughed

Cosmo: but you can have it....it was really nice meeting you Kazi...im feeling better already

Kazi: same here

she walked away and the other guy that was sitting at the far corner also got up and walked out

OUTSIDE

Constantine: wow that was an Oscar winning performance sis

Cosmo: well thank you very much brother

she said taking a bow and Constantine chuckled

Cosmo: and I told you it's her.....her scent gave her away, she was at that house that those bastards burned down.....i told I'll find her

Constantine rolled his eyes

Constantine: and I could tell by her scent that her blood tastes good

he said and his fangs came out

Cosmo: calm down.....elders said no feeding on humans here....we don't want people to ask questions, we're here for the brothers.....you don't wanna go against the elders' orders and you know it and you know I can't lose you

Constantine: you no fun.....im tired on feed on animals

he sulked

Cosmo: then go back home and I'll deal with this on my own.....

Constantine: you know I won't let you do that

Cosmo: fine now stop acting crazy and let's wait for her to get out of that hideous place so we can get her phone and maybe those lovely earrings she's wearing

Constantine: you and earrings

he shook his head and they went to stand by the dark

.

.

INSERT.....30

.

.

.

Kazi walked out of the bar and she went to her car and within a blink of an eye something passed her like a speed of lightning and she turned around quickly to see what that was and she didn't see anything but she heard laughs....her heart started beating

Kazi: who's there?

*** Constantine laughed some more walking slowly towards her and she looked around for help and saw two guys walking towards them and she screamed***

Kazi: HELP ME!

***with a blink of an eye she felt herself being carried and she saw herself being thrown down to the ground then more laughter...she then had a flash of a memory of the same thing happening before where she was carried and

the thing that carried her moved at the same speed***

Voice: be careful bro she's pregnant

*** Then the woman laughed and Kazi shook off the memory from her brain and she looked around and she could see she wasn't at the place she was a second ago***

Kazi: who's there....please don't hurt me im begging you

she said getting up slowly and Cosmo came out of the dark with Kazi's handbag on her hand and Kazi's eyes popped out

Kazi: YOU!

Cosmo: you know I knew humans are stupid and gullible but you take the cup

***she said with her American accent ***

Kazi: what....i thought....

she said with her heart beating fast

Cosmo: you know its fine to talk to a stranger about your problems cause there's a saying that goes like " a problem shared is a problem half solved" but you darling are just too gullible.

Kazi: who...who are you and what do you want from me

Constantine: we want Castiel and his "fat wife" as you call her

Kazi: wh....what?

Constantine: you see the only people we are here to kill are Castiel and his family

Cosmo: and guess what your cousin is part of that family now and you're like cause it would be you if she didn't steal him from you

****Kazi started shaking***

Kazi: what noo....nooo please nooo

Constantine took out a large knife and Kazi moved back crying and shaking

Kazi: please don't hurt me....please

Constantine: they said we shouldn't feed on you useless humans but they didn't say we shouldn't drive this beautiful knife right into your stupid human gut and twist it until you take your last breath

Kazi: please don't hurt me please....please

she pleaded crying and shaking

Constantine: where is your cousin from?

Kazi shook her head crying

Constantine: you think about playing little girl

Cosmo: just make it snappy will ya we have a vampire and a wizard to kill

Kazi: please....

Constantine: talk!

*** she told them and Constantine put the knife on her throat and it cut her a bit and blood

came out and Constantine liked it and he moaned***

Constantine: fuck it tastes so good!

*** she cried shaking with fear then all of a sudden she started feeling dizzy and she fell to the floor unconscious***

Constantine: weak ass fuck!

Cosmo laughed....then they head voices of people coming their way and within a blink of an eye they were gone

She opened her eyes and she blinked for some time then she scanned the room and her eyes landed on Menzi who was standing by the window looking outside....she cleared her throat and she felt pain on her throat and that's when Menzi turned and rushed to her

Menzi: hey you're awake

Kazi: wa...water

he poured water into a glass and helped her drink

Menzi: who did this to you.....the guards I paid to look after you from a distance said they saw you talking to a man and then you just disappeared into thin air....they searched for you until they found you laying unconscious in a dark alley bleeding on your throat

she swallowed hard...she wanted to tell him all about the twins but that meant she would have to mention Castiel's name and she just knew it will piss him off....right now she was angry at herself for being so obsessed with Castiel to a point that it almost got her killed

Kazi: they took my bag which had everything, my phone, money, and purse then the guy said...

tears filled her eyes and she let them fall

Menzi: they?

she nodded

Kazi: a man and a woman....the man wanted to cut my throat and....and the woman said he should make it fast....they had my bag and they still wanted to kill me

she said crying, she was even shaking.....all that talk about Vampires and wizards and killing Phumi was just too much for her

Menzi: its ok you're safe now....im here no one will hurt you anymore

he said holding her as she cried loud until a nurse rushed in and she was sedated

LATER ON

Menzi: tell me good news man

he was talking to his IT guy on the phone, he wasn't as good or even close to being as good as Snakes but he could do his job really well

Guy: I emailed you the CCTV footage from the bar and also outside the bar and you wont believe what you'll see boss

Menzi: ok let me check it first and I'll call you back

Guy: ok

***they ended the call and Menzi went to his emails and saw it, he opened it and saw two attached documents and he downloaded them and the first video played....he saw Kazi being approached by something he couldn't explain..... The figure was that of a woman but the video showed her skin glistening like small diamonds....all he saw was a figure built like a woman but her face and the rest of her body were her skin was visible, was glistening like bright diamonds.....what confused him the most was the fact that people in the bar weren't aware of what he was seeing especially Kazi.....he looked to the far end of the video

and he saw another figure sitting there but he couldn't make out if it was a man or a woman but he could see some glistening from that figure too.....then after some time the woman walked out and the figure that now looked like a man followed her.....outside he couldn't see the two figures up until Kazi walked out....he saw the man approaching her and they spoke for a bit, then she started screaming and then they disappeared***

Menzi: what the fuck!

he looked at Kazi and he swallowed hard and he dialed his IT guy

Guy: boss

Menzi: what the fuck was I watching Kyle?

Kyle: I don't know boss, I don't even know how to explain what or who those things were....only the madam can answer those questions

Menzi: ok...keeping searching for them, they

have her belongings especially her phone so as soon as its turned on track it or when one of her cards are used let me know

Kyle: ok boss

they ended the call and Menzi forwarded the email to Snakes and asked him to analyze it for him and that it's a matter of life and death

A WEEK LATER

AT RAYS HOUSE

he held her from behind and kissed her neck pushing his boner on her back and she moaned

Ray: you don't know how happy I am this morning

Mbali: mmh I can feel it

they both chuckled

Ray: you showed me flames last night Mrs Owoh-Masden

she chuckled

Mbali: can you go take a cold shower so I can feed my kids please

Ray: please just help me out with this and I swear my flower I won't bother you for the rest of the day

Mbali chuckled

Mbali: ah ah

Ray: please

he begged her pushing his hard rod on her back some more and he groaned on her ear..... he then grabbed her ass and squeezed tight

Ray: fuck my flower...please just one round

Mbali: my babies Ray

Ray: ok a quickie then in the laundry room

please

she turned and when her eyes landed on his boner she gasped

Mbali: ok tell the truth did you drink Viagra pills

Ray: I don't need those shitty things to get hard my flower....I've been starving for quite a while now and last night just woke the horny beast in me

she laughed and she went to check on Leya and she was concentrating on the TV with cartoons playing

Mbali: ¿estas bien cariño? (you're ok baby?)

***she asked in Spanish (she has been learning simple Spanish words to communicate with her and she speaks English and Zulu to her too) and Leya nodded then Mbali kissed the top of her head and she went to the crib to check on Kalu and he was sleeping ***

Mbali: you sleep too much my handsome prince
no no this is too much

Ray: let him enjoy it cause once he starts
walking Saint will keep him busy

***she sighed and bend then she kissed his
forehead and whispered to him***

Mbali: I love you

***she turned and she found Ray with his hands
inside his pockets ***

Ray: please

***he begged and she looked at Leya and she
was concentrating on the cartoons***

Mbali: let's go before you scare my baby with
that huge tent

***he cleared his throat and they went to the
laundry room and as soon as Mbali closed the
door he attacked her with a kiss which took her
by surprise, he took off her gown still kissing

her and she was wearing her very short silk night dress without any underwear.....and when his hand landed on her cookie and he could feel she wasn't wearing any underwear and that she was wet his body visibly shook***

Ray: fuck!

he picked her up and pinned her to the wall and she wrapped her legs around his waist as they kissed hungrily.....he left her mouth and started sucking on her neck which drove her crazy, his hand went between them and he took out his hard dick and inserted it inside her wet nana and she lost it

Mbali: ooh fuck baby!

Ray: you gonna the death of me Mbali I swear to the high and mighty you gonna be the death of me

he started moving

****he was now hitting it from behind as she held on to the washing machine with one of her shirts gagged inside her mouth to minimize her screams....Ray was holding her waist tight as he fucked her hard with his own groans filling the room...his wet dick slid in and out of her fast, he was sweating all over his body and so was she....he went fast hitting all the right spots and her body shook for the third time as another orgasm hit her ***

Mbali: ooh God....ooh God

she said almost out of breath

Ray: Ahhh..... shit my flower!

*** he said that without stopping with sweat dripping down his body as he fucked her good and hard....he went faster and deeper with his grip getting tighter as if he wanted to rip her body apart and she took out the shirt from her mouth***

Mbali: RAY!

he went too fast with Mbali screaming, he was close..... he then gave her one powerful thrust and he pushed himself in deeper as he released hard inside of her

Ray:

ahhrg....ahhrg....ahhrg....shit...shit..mmmmhhhh
h

he said with a deeper voice then he stood there with his shaky legs looking down with his eyes closed.....he then slowly pulled out and his semen ran down her trembling thighs and he stumbled back a bit and he balanced himself with a dryer while Mbali slowly went down to the floor and she lay there panting

Ray: My flower you ok?

she didn't respond

Ray: Mbali!

he said panicking as he went to her

Mbali: im fine but you have killed me today....no sex for you for the rest of the week

she said with a lazy voice and Ray chuckled as he sat next to her

Ray: you're the one who have killed me my flower....my dick is numb I can't feel it

Mbali: angithi you drank Viagra pills and fucked me like a porn star

he frowned

Ray: don't say that my flower....i respect you too much to even think of treating you like a porn star ok

she chuckled and smiled at him

Mbali: I know baby and I was kidding

Ray: well don't joke like that my flower

***she touched his now flaccid dick and it didn't

get hard***

Ray: its out of service until further notice

Mbali laughed and he joined her

Mbali: let me go check on OUR KIDS we just forgot about

Ray: shit I forgot about them

they laughed and got up and quickly cleaned themselves and got dressed then they walked out with Mbali limping and Ray chuckled and when she gave him a bad stare, he stopped but he smiled naughtily..... anyway they found Cataleya smiling and laughing as Tom and Jerry played and they smiled looking at her**

Ray: she's slowly becoming free

Mbali: mmmmh...i thought it will take her longer but im glad it didn't and I must say you make beautiful babies

Ray: we make beautiful babies

she looked at him then she shook her head

Ray: don't forget we have somewhere to be at two o'clock ok

Mbali: how will I forget when you have been reminding me since yesterday?

Ray: just be ready by then please

he turned her face and smooched her lips

Ray: let me go take a quick shower....i love you Mrs me

Mbali: I love you too Mr me

*** he walked away laughing and she went to the kitchen***

***Its been a week and Kazi has been too quiet for Menzi's liking and too closed off and he's worried about her especially after finding out that she's pregnant...he couldn't believe that

she's pregnant and he regretted stressing her out like that, he tried to find out more information from her about the two figures that attacked her and she just doesn't wanna talk about it, she just cries each time he asks her about it so he decided to stop.....Snakes got back to him and he also couldn't understand what or who those things were but he said he'll ask around and maybe someone might know something but that didn't stop Menzi from doing his own research.....as for Kazi she wondered if she should call Phumi or Cass to warn them about the dangers coming at them but she decided against it even though she wished to ask Cass a few questions about what the twins said about him and his brother....and again she remembered that Cass did warn her never to call him ever again and just thinking about that conversation she felt like she didn't owe them anything after all they did to him.....she's at Menzi's house, he didn't want

her to be all alone in her house after all she went through more over because she's pregnant.....Anyway Menzi was outside in the balcony talking on his work phone while his personal phone that was on top of the table, it suddenly rang and she glanced on the screen and Raine was plastered on it.....she remembered the woman she found in the house with Menzi and he called her Raine, she looked at Menzi and he seemed like he was having an intense conversation on his other phone so she picked the phone up and answered it***

Kazi: yes?

***she answered with attitude which caught Lorraine by surprise ***

Raine: umm hi can I speak to Menzi please

Kazi: listen here ntombazana..... Menzi is mine unyangizwa and we are about to be parents and yes im pregnant so stay in your lane and leave

my man alone!

***Raine was caught off guard but she regained her composure quickly ***

Raine: listen here girly....i don't have time for an insecure thing like you ok....just give Menzi the damn phone and stop talking rubbish

Kazi: ungijwaela kabi wena.....you think I'll just sit back and let you take my man angithi, well bitch you clearly don't know me!

Raine: you know what I don't argue with fools so I'll try him again later on on his business numbers since the number is busy now nx

Kazi: you know your desperation makes me feel sorry for you cause I know he's just using you, that man chose me over his wife...his own wife so wena who do you think you are mmmmh....im sure all he wants from you is just your pussy then he'll pretend like you don't exist

***Raine swallowed hard cause she's been hurt

and dumped before by a man she gave her all to
but she regained her composure again cause
she didn't want her thinking she hit a nerve***

Raine: I should be the one saying that cause yho
its clear you're one of those baby mamas that
no guy wants and just so you know, if I wanted
Menzi believe me I'll have him just like that and
sweety he'll even forget your existence once im
done with him

Kazi: uyanya msoon....try that shit and believe
me i'll practice witchcraft ngawe msoon
kanyoko nx!

***tu tu tu Raine dropped the call leaving Kazi
fuming with anger....she threw the phone on top
of the couch and tears ran down her cheeks,
she lost Castiel so the thought of her losing
Menzi to another woman too broke her heart
some more....***

Menzi: hey why are you crying?

he said walking to her

Kazi: your bitch called and...and

Menzi: wait you answered my phone?

he asked with a serious tone and she chuckled with more tears gushing out

Kazi: you know I wish those creepy fucks killed me instead....i mean I have nothing to live for so they should have just killed me

****she got up and he sighed***

Menzi: Ntandokazi...

Kazi: LEAVE ME ALONE NXA!

she walked away

Menzi: sthandwa sam...

Kazi: go to the nearest hell Menzi along with your bitch nxal!

***she said climbing up the stairs and he sighed brushing his head and he sat down shaking his

head then he called Lorraine back a couple of times but she didn't answer his calls***

AT RUSLAN AND THANDI'S HOUSE

Ruslan: you in my house....whatever you want to talk to me about must be big

Snakes: for a week I have been trying to figure out what the hell is going on on this video and there's no logical explanation so maybe you can explain it better

he sighed then he showed him the video

Ruslan: where did you get this?

he asked standing up

Snakes: first tell me who or what the fuck they are

Ruslan: damn it!....fine...ummm they are vampires and I think it's the twins Cosmo and Constantine

he brushed his head pacing around

Ruslan: damn it...damn it!

Snakes: you seem freaked out man....what the hell is going on

he asked with a serious tone

Ruslan: who else knows about this?

Snakes: do you even have to ask, ofcourse my brothers do now answer my question

he breathed out

Ruslan: im not freaked out cause im scared of those fuckers but because I have Thandi and the boys while Cass has Phumi and Ray has....Mbali and the kids too

Snakes frowned

Snakes: what does Mbali got to do with vampires?

Ruslan: she's Ray's wife

Snakes: so?

Ruslan just gave him a bored look

Snakes: hei hei hei...lalela la wena (listen here)....you and your brothers better make sure nothing happens to my princess
uyangizwa.....hei I'll take my phobia of supernatural things and put it aside and fucken deal with the three of you.....Mbali is off limits!

He shouted at Ruslan and Ruu sighed

Ruslan: well go tell them that

Snakes: im telling you angithi you're the one that brought those fuckers here so im telling you!

he said feeling worked up

Ruslan: ok I heard you now answer my question....where did you get that

Snakes huffed and he got up

Snakes: those two Godforsaken things attacked

Kazi, Menzi's gi....

***then his face fell and he closed his eyes
shaking his head***

Snakes: why didn't I put two and two
together..... they attacked her because of
Castiel right?

Ruslan: you know her?

Snakes: answer my question

Ruslan: I don't know man...unless they...damn
it.....they must have caught her scent the day
Eden found us

Snakes: what do you mean her scent....so she
really fucked Castiel..... yah neh I swear abafazi
will even sleep with a gorilla as ugly and scary
as it looks as long as it has a huge dick, fucks
good and has money

Ruslan: fucked h...ooh hell no.....he didn't sleep
with her, he just saved her life the time Menzi's

wife send people to kill her

he defended his brother

Snakes: whooo....whooo...whooo...whooo..... so
Castiel was the one that kidnapped her

he asked surprised

Ruslan: he didn't kidnap her ok, he saved her
life....saved her life man

Snakes shook his head

Snaked: yah neh

Ruslan: look she's alive today because of Cass
ok

Snakes: then why is she so obsessed with
him.....i mean she even told Menzi that Castiel
is her ex and she still has feelings for him

Ruslan: well something must be wrong with her
head cause they never dated or fucked

Snakes frowned

Snakes: what?

he was confused

Ruslan: look tell your hit-boy to make sure his girl is protected by all times....she shouldn't leave the house at all cause they can't enter someone's house without being invited in it or else they'll kill her thinking they'll lure Castiel and I out

Snakes sighed

Snakes: all I care about now is my little sister Ruu....all of you better make sure nothing happens to her or we as her brothers excluding Thor will be the least of your problems cause Pops and Mkhulu and Thor will fucken rip you apart

Ruslan: we got everything under control so chill and it's like you forget what we're capable off Mamba....your little sister as you call her is La Parca's wife and Saint's mother

He said with a serious tone and Snakes looked at him with a serious look on his face too

Snakes: and never forget that she's Nighthawks only daughter and Killer the dragon slayer's only granddaughter and Spilotro, Krane, Mamba, black Jesus and Thor aka Beast's only sister

then he took his phone and car keys and walked out Ruslan shook his head then he dialed Ray and told him about the twins then he dialed Castiel

Castiel: bad timing man...bad fucken timing!

Ruslan: wait don't tell me you're having sex with Phumi in her condition Castiel

Castiel: what condition?

Ruslan: she's fucken carrying a vampire baby what do you mean what condition and she's close to giving birth.....what the fuck is wrong with you!

he said shouting

Castiel: and Thandi is carrying a witch so you mean to tell me you don't fuck her too

Ruslan: shut the fuck up!

Castiel: shut the fuck up too and let me enjoy my wife in peace.... ah ah this nigga...don't be a cockblocker man

Ruslan shook his head defeated

Ruslan: you know what...whatever and its not even why I called.....we have a problem

Castiel: wait

he heard him talking to Phumi

Castiel: I'll be back ok

Phumi: ok

she said softly and he heard them kissing and Phumi moaned and Ruu quickly moved the phone from his ear making a face

Castiel: ngiyakthanda yezwa

then he chuckled

Castiel: yeah what's the problem man?

Ruslan: you didn't have to make me listen to porno on the phone you know that right

Castiel laughed

Ruslan: anyway Cosmo and Constantine got to Kazi and almost killed her

Castiel: what....is she ok?

he asked with a worried tone

Ruslan: ooh so you care about her well being?

Castiel: what ...ofcourse not..... I just don't want her involved in shit that got nothing to do with her

Ruslan: yeah right anyway I think they caught her scent that time we killed Eden

Castiel: damn it.....i hope she didn't sell me out

Ruslan: you think she would

Castiel: she's obsessed with me man and she believes I betrayed her by getting with Phumi

Ruslan breathed out

Ruslan: she has your numbers man and they took her bag and im sure they took her phone as well so they might track your numbers they got from her phone if they haven't already

Castiel: or Phumi's numbers if she told them about her and i ...damn it...i swear if anything happens to my wife and child that bitch is dead!

he said with an angry voice and then he heard him walking

Ruslan: you need to move from that house now!

Castiel: not happening... and you better stay where you are cause they might know my location but they don't know yours

Ruslan: im not gonna let you do this alone Cass

Cass: believe me they wont strike until they see you....they might act touch but we both know they are afraid of you so attacking us both at once and not one at a time is the best option they have

Ruu sighed

Ruslan: wait what if Kazi gave out Phumi's home address since she doesn't know yours

Cass froze

Cass: shit....let me call you back

he dropped the call and dialed his mother in law's numbers and they rang for some time then a woman's voice answered

Voice: hello

he knew that voice pretty well

Cass: is she still alive

he said with a serious tone and Cosmo laughed

Cosmo: what do you know....and he calls.....

she laughed

Cosmo: you know I wondered what
Mmm...kh...we...ni...whatever she saved you
with means

Cass clenched his jaws

Cass: you're so pathetic you know that...going
after an old defenseless woman just because
you can't face my brother and I head on

Cosmo: what gave you the idea that we cant
face your stupid asses

Cass: cause my brother took ya'll on all by
himself so imagine what will happen now with
others backing him

Cosmo: I don't have time for games
Castiel.....her life for yours and your brothers

Cass laughed

Cass: go ahead and kill her, she and her

daughter don't see eye to eye in fact they can't stand each other so do it

Cosmo: if she means so little to you then why does she have your numbers

Cass: this is Africa you dumb bitch....to marry someone's child here you need to pay the dowry to the family before she becomes yours and how the hell do you think I would know what to do without communicating with her

Cosmo didn't say anything and Castiel hoped that she buys the story

Cass: anyway just make sure you don't make too much of a mess cause we both know the brethren hate incompetent, disposable and useless errant boys and girls who likes causing unnecessary mess for the world to see

Cosmo: im gonna get you you son of a witch and I'll enjoy killing all your loved ones as you watch then I'll rip that useless head of yours

and burn you bitch

Cass: still a ranting bitch I see.....say hi to that ass loving twin of yours

he chuckled then he dropped the call

Cass: shiiittt...fucken shittt!

he dialed Ray's numbers

Ray: Cass

Cass: I need a favor man it's a matter of life and death

Ray: im listening

he told him about the call with Cosmo

Ray: damn it, sit tight I'll go there myself don't worry

Cass: thanks bro

they ended the call and he called Ruslan back and told him everything

well Ray met up with Mat at Phumi's home and they found Phumi's mother passed out with a serious head injury and the twins were nowhere in sight.....they rushed her to the hospital and she has been in a coma ever since, well Castiel decided not to tell Phumi about her mother because of her condition

A WEEK LATER

The Khumalo brothers did pay Ray a visit and he told them everything he knows about the brethren and promised them that Mbali is safe cause they are here for Ruu and Cass and not him, but he also told them that it doesn't mean he won't lay down his life for Cass and Ruu cause come rain or sunshine he will be part of that fight alongside his brothers....they didn't fight or argue with him cause they themselves knew they would do the same if they were in his shoes

Ray: come on my flower we're getting late

Mbali: can you just wait a bit

Ray: I have been waiting for an hour come on

Lady: we are almost done sir

Ray: what the hell are you doing to her face for
an hour

the lady laughed

Mbali: you the one that brought her here to
make me look good so chill please

Ray: and now I regret it....just finish up we
gonna be late

*** he said with an annoyed voice and he
walked out and Mbali rolled her eyes then they
laughed quietly ***

Lady: ai.... men

Mbali: you can say that again

they laughed some more then she continued doing some finishing touches on her make up since she was done with her hair then she helped her wear her custom made evening dress and the lady packed her things and Mbali took her clutch bag

Lady: you look like you're about to enter a Miss South Africa pageant damn girl

Mbali laughed blushing

Lady: hai shem jealous down umuhle girl

Mbali: thanks love...lets go before he comes back here and drags me out

*** they laughed then they walked out***

she walked down the stairs slowly with the make-up lady in front on her...when Ray saw the make-up lady walking down the stairs he got up

Ray: finally!

the lady chuckled and when he saw the madam of the house walking down the stairs slowly his jaw dropped and his eyes popped out

Mbali: close your mouth hubby

she said chuckling and he swallowed hard and put his hands inside his pockets...she looked beautiful and sexy in her dress no lies....he has never seen her like this before and he wondered how she will look wearing a white wedding dress if she looks this exquisite now

Ray: wow my flower

she smiled looking at his face...she got to him and he kissed her cheek and whispered to her ear

Ray: im hard as a rock by just looking at you
damn

she chuckled and blushed

Ray: you look beautiful my flower....i....i.... don't even know what to say.....im just speechless.....damn

she blushed some more then Ray turned to the make-up lady

Ray: thank you

Lady: my pleasure sir....ummm have fun.... bye

Mbali: bye

*** the lady walked out and he pulled her face closer and perked her lips***

Ray: lets go before I have you right here and now

***she laughed and they took their kids and their bags and walked out.....Soon they arrived at the venue, it definitely wasn't where she thought they would go....the venue was at some ranch farm place deep inside the woods but the

building was beautiful and huge....the farm had horses, cows, donkeys, goats, sheep, chicken and pigs....it also had swings for kids, jumping castles and bar shades for elders to sit and watch over the kids having fun while they drank and there was also a hall room where conferences, wedding and parties were held...it was just a perfect venue to host a party for the men but not as much for the women***

Mbali: ok I didn't think we will reach a place like this after we drove for some time inside these woods

***he smiled at her, for the men it was a perfect place to have a party cause it was far from people's houses for just in case something happens since the Brethren are in town and even though it wasn't ideal for the women but it was a fun and relaxing place ***

Ray: its just perfect for our privacy

Mbali: mmmmh

she saw cars she didn't recognize parked in the front yard.....she looked at Ray and he laughed

Ray: what?

Mbali: why are we here Mr

Ray: for some kid's party my flower

***she remembered Naledi's phone call ***

Mbali: ooh it's a party for that girl Naledi is funding

Ray: mmmmh

Mbali: ok I hope im not over dressed

Ray: no you're not believe me

Mbali: ok

he got out of the car and opened the door for her and helped her out

Ray: you look breathtaking baby..... but damn its

gonna be one hell of a day for me cause im sure
I'll have a boner for the rest of the day

she blushed then she laughed

Mbali: well you look handsome too baby so im
sure I'll have a wet underwear for the rest of the
day

***he chuckled and kissed her cheek and they
took the kids out of the car***

Ray: let's go

*** they walked to the door ***

Mbali: wait why did we bring kids to a 21st
birthday party of a girl we don't even know Ray

***Ray opened the door ignoring her and
everyone screamed " SURPRISE ".....she
jumped startled which made Cataleya and Kalu
to cry with Cataleya clinging tight onto
Mbali....everyone laughed and they went to a
shocked Mbali who was frozen on the

spot....Ruslan took a crying Kalu and hushed him and Ray took Leya and he hushed her too....she was clinging to him shaking while crying as everyone was hugging Mbali***

Ray: its ok baby...its ok I told you daddy will castrate anyone who even attempts to hurt you

he brushed her back until she calmed down....he went back to Mbali and she was busy wiping her tears off looking emotional

Mbali: I can't believe you guys did this for me

Ntombi: you should thank your hubby for that princess...we just made phone calls here and there while he coughed out the hard cash

she looked over at Ray who was smiling wide and she got closer to him and perked his lips

Mbali: thank you baby

Ladies: wuuuuh

Mbali: what

they laughed

Mbali: and wena Mamkhulu

Naledi laughed

Naledi: I had to lie I had no choice love

Heath kissed her cheek smiling at her, he was in love with her and it was written all over his face

Mbali: well thank you for helping hubby and thank you to everyone who was involved in planning this party

Muzi: what about us who didn't help plan this

everyone laughed

Mbali: well since I see that we're only family here then thank you all for being in my life, for loving me and protecting me

Muzi: I love you princess

he went to her and hugged her

Mbali: I love you too bhuti

Snakes also went to her they hugged and she whispered to him

Mbali: my favourite bro

he chuckled and they hugged for some time

Snakes: damn you're no longer a baby my princess

he said with a sad tone

Mbali: but I know I'll always be your little princess no matter what

Snakes: damn right....

they laughed and Jase and Jay hugged her too

Jase: I love you baby and enjoy your appreciation party

Jay: does this kind of party exist out there or
kunyelwa thina la

laughter

Snakes: uRay uyasinyela straight (Ray is
messing with us)

laughter

Kedi: language guys haw there are kids in here

Jase perked her lips

Jay: ngiyadlala and askies his heart....you
deserve it baby

***he kissed her cheek then the mighty Thor
walked to her and her eyes got filled with
tears....he hugged her lifting her off from the
ground and she held on to him tight
sobbing....he put her down again and she didn't
let go.....after some time she broke the hug and
he wiped her tears off....the wives also wiped
their tears off too***

Thor: I hope these are tears of joy my princess

she nodded as he looked down at her

Thor: mother of two

she chuckled and he looked over at Ray and he shook his head then he looked back at her

Thor: im proud of you my princess....you have Ma's kind heart and even though she couldn't make it cause baba just can't get enough of travelling the world with her by also entering God forsaken countries for a baecation with uMa which makes it hard for us to contact them, I know she would be saying how proud she is of you and as for baba and pops, well they would be busy threatening him

***he pointed at Ray and everyone laughed...well he lied about the baecation, Ma was recovering from the cancer after a successful surgery ***

Snakes: Pop's flight got delayed so he'll land

tomorrow in the afternoon but he said he loves you and asked what is an appreciation party and what is he supposed to get you for it

more laughter...Thor kissed her forehead

Thor: I love you

Mbali: I love you too bhuti

Heath and Jabu also went to her and hugged her

Mbali: my husbands

laughter

Jabu: yah neh rich people's things...an appreciation party from lepara la gao while rena le di birthday party di ya pala from bowifey (an appreciation from hubby while we don't even get birthday parties from our wives)

he looked over at Amo who gave him a death stare as everyone laughed

Jabu: ka dlala rato laka man (im playing my

love)...mmmh thambo lam lomkhutlhane (my flue bone)

***more laughter ***

Jabu: kao rata wautlwa my nunuza (I love you ok baby)

***Amo blushed and Jabu chuckled ***

Heath: well dad and ma couldn't make it apparently dad strained his back changing the bulb but we both know he never changes bulbs in the house so im sure sex send him to the ER

laughter

Mbali: ooh my God

more laughter

Ruslan: you deserve this party and more his flower

he hugged her and kissed her forehead and she looked at him with tears in her eyes

Ruslan: you look stunning by the way

Mbali: thank you

***Mj and Sbu hugged her too and all the kids also hugged her...Mj couldn't even joke around with Mbali cause he was still mesmerized by how beautiful she looked in her dress especially the way it hugged her curvaceous body ***

Ray: my flower

she looked at him and smiled

Mbali: yes baby

Ray: this party is for you, it's an appreciation party for being the best wife I could've ever asked for.....this party is from me to you for accepting and loving Cataleya as your own...for taking care of Kalu and accepting him and also embracing what he is

they wives were confused by the Kalu part

Ray: it is also an appreciation party from me to

you for accepting me with all my flaws, for having my back and for loving me unconditionally...i love you so much my flower...you truly are my missing rib and im glad to have you as my wife with all your craziness

laughter....Mballi was a crying mess along with the wives...Thandi included

Ray: and this is your push out present, I know it's a bit too late but I feel like this is the right time

he gave her car keys and her eyes popped out

Mballi: A MASERATI RAY?

Ray nodded and she screamed jumping up and down

Mballi: where is it....where is it

***She asked with an excited voice ***

Ray: at the back

she ran towards the door in her high heels and everyone followed her laughing....and when she saw that it was custom made exactly the way she always told Ray about her dream car whenever they had their pillow talkshe screamed and cried....Ray hugged her for some time until she calmed down

Mbali: A 2019 ROSE GOLD MASERATI GRAN TURISMO RAY....you bought me a.....

*** he nodded with a huge smile on his face and she cried some more until she calmed down again then she unlocked it and got inside wiping her tears.... everyone congratulated her admiring the car***

Sbu: hai shame mfowethu o ka se loke daar (bro you can't handle her)....a fucken brand new Maserati man

Mj punched his shoulder and he laughed

Mj: yes she's fine as hell but im no longer there

Sbuda, my demons just got silenced by that sexy mamasita with long sexy legs and a fine round ass standing with Mphiledamn who is she?

Sbu looked where Mj was looking and it was Tiara

Sbu: sisMbalí's niece

Mj: damn... what the hell are they feeding the ladies in that family...no man im sure whatever that thing is its not even legal

he said looking at her body and his eyes landed on her yellow thighs showing on her short dress and he put his hands inside his jeans cursing and Sbu laughed shaking his head

Sbu: hah mfowethu net so (bro just like that)

he said laughing at him

Mj: voetsek sani

they both laughed

Mj: I think I just met my soulmate Sbuda, even my crush on Mbali just vanished into thin air man

Sbu laughed and Mj called Omphile over and she walked to them

Omphile: rangwane (uncle)

Mj: who's that

she looked and she smiled looking back at him

Phile: Tiara...she's pretty neh...and she's nice too and she said I should ask dad to move from my school to hers next year....its an all girls school and she said I'll enjoy schooling there

Sbu: ooh so now you're best friends?

Phile: I think it will lead to that...she's so cool and down to earth

Mj cleared his throat

Mj: do you have her numbers

she frowned looking at him suspiciously

Phile: why?

Mj: just answer my question princess and stop asking me questions

Phine: ok yeah I have them

Mj looked at Sbu and he smirked

Mj: send them to me

Phile: askies

Sbu: don't be like that man Mphile

MJ: how much do you want for them

Phile: nothing but you can ask her for them

then she called Tiara over and Mj's eyes popped out and Omphile smirked at him

Tiara: hi guys

Mj: "fuck her voice"

he thought

Sbu: sho ntwana

Mj: h...h

he cleared his throat

Mj: hi

Tiara: girl what's up?

Mj: ummm nothing she just...wanted to introduce you to us

Omphile and Sbu held in their laughter as they looked at a panicking MJ

Tiara: ooh ok

Phile: Tee this is my brother Sbu and this my uncle MJ

Tiara: uncle?

Mj: im her father's younger bro so that makes me her uncle

Tiara: ooh ok I get I guess your family is as

traditional as mine

she smiled at them and Mj's face flushed as all his blood rushed to his already hard dick

Mj: " she even looks like an angel when she smiles...fuck!"

he thought to himself

Omphile: ummm ok then....excuse us guys

Tiara: nice meeting you guys

Sbu: same here

Mj cleared his throat

Mj: ye...yeah same here

she walked away with Omphile and Phile turned and she silently laughed looking at Mj and Mj showed her a fist...as for Sbu he laughed his ass off looking at Mj

Mj: fuck you man

Sbu: fuck you too

***he continued to laugh**

Sbu: damn you got it bad man

Mj rubbed his face

Mj: fuck...i think im in love man

Voice: be in love all you like but all her fathers will skin you alive boy....look at them, do you see how buffed up the dark one is, he's an ex Special Forces man.... he's one dangerous mother fucker

it was Ruu and Mj cleared his throat

Mj: brother Ruu

Ruslan: im glad you're over the little crush you had for Mbali but you see with that girl, your own won't be as easy as Rays...they'll literally kill you....think about that

he walked passed them with Kalu in his arms and both Sbu and Mj swallowed hard

Mj: this time God don butter my bread bros so

im not about to be ungrateful.... next year when I move this side im gonna make her mine come rain or sunshine

Sbu: didn't you hear uncle Ruu

Mj: big Ray made it so im sure I'll make it too

Sbu: Amen!

***he said defeated.....Anyway the party started with Mj and Sbu as Djs, Mj kept on looking at Tiara every now and then and he was glad this was a family thing or else he would be losing his mind when he sees her talking to another boythe party didn't have waiters or waitresses... even the owners of the ranch weren't around, Ray booked the whole place and even paid extra for them to leave to give them the privacy they'll need and they didn't mind cause the money Ray paid didn't give them any reason to refuse...they danced, ate and danced some more....the kids even enjoyed

themselves outside riding horses and playing on swings and running around on the green grass, all in all it was a fun party that even the wives enjoyed themselves including the Khumalo brothers....in the afternoon the kids went side to eat again and suddenly Ruu got up***

Ruu: they are here

Ray: what

*** he said getting up and the Khumalo's also got up then the front door opened and 15 men and one woman stood there wearing all black***

Ray: I swear they all gonna pay for ruining my wife's party nx

he said looking angry

TO BE CONTINUED.....

↗ MARRIED AGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

CONTINUATION OF INSERT 30

*** They stood by the door wearing all black which caught everyone's attention...then they looked around and their wondering eyes landed on Ruslan who looked angry.... Sbu stopped the music wondering what was happening by the hall entrance ***

Cosmo: mmmmh this is nice...is this a family reunion?

she said with her American accent and Constantine and the others chuckled

Constantine: and he thought we wouldn't find him....where's that annoying brother of

yours....ooh I forgot he's nursing his dying wife cause we all know she wont make it, that baby will kill her

he asked Ruslan then he laughed

Jay: so these are the stupid fucks who calls themselves the broken

Jase: they are called the brenden Jay

Muzi: no I think Ruu said they call themselves the brackets

Snakes: nah they are called the Mahotella Queens the first since they are a million years older than our lovely Mahotella Queens

***his brothers looked at him and laughter erupted ***

Jabu: heh mfo I think ba ipitsa Lesilo brass band (bro I think they call themselves the Lesilo brass band)

*** (Lesilo is a Zombie from a 1980s South

African horror series called Lesilo rula) Anyway more laughter erupted then Mbali held Ray's hand, Ray had Leya on his other hand while Kalu was held by Ruslan...as for Thorsten he was standing there looking at them with a serious look on his face...all he was thinking off was how he was gonna take the women and children to safety***

Jabu: heh Mshikaro ba busy ba timpetse lebosetlha ekare ba tlhaga komeng messoono (they look pale as if they just finished with their traditional initiation in the mountain)

More laughter

Heath: keng ekare ba rouletse satan ka all black so? (why is it like they are mourning for satan with all black)

more laughter

Cosmo: ENOUGH!

Mbali: what's going on Ray?

Ray: this are the bad guys.....im sorry but your appreciation party is about to be ruined

he said looking at her with an apologetic look

Mbali: what?

Ray: they are not human so Saint needs to take the women and kids out of here to a safe place and he should protect all of you

she looked around with her heart beating fast

Constantine: no one will save you sweetie

he said looking at Mbali who held on tight to Ray's hand....the Khumalo wives gathered their children and so did Thandi, Amo and Naledi while MJ and Sbu moved closer and they stood together wondering what was going on....MJ looked over at Tiara and she was holding on to Nomhle and he sighed

Ruslan: you really gonna do this here

Cosmo indicated that the rest of The Brethren move further in and Jabu and Heath took out their guns

Sbu&MJ: ooh shit!

Ruslan: put those guns away they won't work on them

Constantine looked at them

Constantine: you wanna shoot bitch....take your best shot come on plus it's been a while since I've been tickled by those weak ass things

he said stretching his arms wide then the rest of The Brethren laughed

Jabu: eish konje (ooh right)

Snakes: Ntombi give me the holy water and holy oil daar

he said with a serious voice

Jay: really Mamba?

Snakes: I think there's also food here that was cooked with garlic....we should also tie butter knives and forks to make crosses, im sure they'll get scared and leave

Constantine: you disrespecting me human

he said sounding angry

Snakes: you're disrespecting yourself lesilo

within a blink of an eye he was holding Snakes by his neck and Ruslan's eyes changed colour to clear white and he pointed at Constantine and he flew away letting Snakes go but he turned midair and he gained control of his body and he landed on the floor with his one hand balancing on the floor and he smirked looking at Ruslan.....screams where heard from the wives while the kids looked scared

Mbali: Saint wake up now and take all the women and children to a safe place and protect

them!

*** she shouted and the room got darker and black smoke covered the tall ceilings and The Brethren looked up wondering what the heck was going on***

Ray: NOW SAINT!

***The Brethren rushed to the women and children but black smoke quickly covered them and loud roars erupted inside the hall and Jay and Jase's beasts charged at The Brethren that were going to the women.... with a human eye they wouldn't see them as they moved as fast as lightning but in a beast form they could see them.... they intercepted The Brethren before they could reach the women and children even though Saint was ready for them and they hit them hard and they flew away hitting the wall at the far end but they quickly got up and charged at them again, Cosmo and Constantine were surprised to see beasts in Africa of all

places.....Anyway one of the vampires charged at Ray and Mbali and Ruslan put his palm up and lightning stroke and it hit the vampire and it made him fly up and he hit the ceiling and landed on the floor hard which made a large crack on the tiles...all along Thorsten was standing there watching the whole thing....Ruu made another blue lightning and it hit The Brethren that were fighting with Jay and Jase's beasts***

Cosmo: fucken wizard!

she said sounding pissed

Snakes: eish uyabona manje...lightning, shitty things moving at a high speed and beasts....angizwane nalamasimba mina (I don't like this shit at all)

he breathed out shaking his head meanwhile MJ and Sbu where now hiding under the table that had food on top looking scared

Muzi: I wish I had a beast too at this moment

Snakes: hai kabi but mina ngigrand (no thanks
im good)

Jabu: fuck.... ledimpya tsa naga.... mos ke
twilight fela mo (fuck... wild dogs too?....i
swear this is like twilight)

*** he said with his eyes popped out and his
heart beating fast...as for Heath, he had a
serious look on his face....Mad Dog was out to
play***

Ray: Saint now!

***the black smoke disappeared with the
women and children and the beasts growled
looking around***

Ray: they are safe relax!

***they looked at him and then they calmed
down and looked at The Brethren***

Mj: Chineke m..... di...did you see that man?

he whispered to Sbu who just nodded slowly with his eyes popped out

Cosmo: don't just stand there go after them and kill them all!

The Brethren stood still

Vamp1: they just disappeared into thin air
Cosmo how the hell are we supposed to follow them

she looked at him and her eyes changed color and the vamp covered his ears screaming for some time then she blinked and he stopped screaming....then the black smoke came back again and Mbali, Kalu and Leya disappeared too

Cosmo: DAMN IT!

Ruslan chuckled

Muzi: damn he's good!

Cosmo: you think you're all clever right

Ruslan: you shouldn't have come to this country
Cosmo.... believe me you shouldn't have

***the beasts grunted with their thick saliva
dripping from their mouths***

Constantine: that was a nice move you did with
that demon but he's not here to save all of you
cause im sure he's protecting all those weak
humans and babies so let the games begin

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: oohh Constantine you're so clueless

Thorsten: my wife is pregnant Ruslan so let's
deal with this shitty things so I can go be with
her

***he said with his deep manly voice....Cosmo
was taken by his voice as she looked at
him....she scanned him up and down and she
bit her lower lip cause nigga looked fine as hell
not that all the guys in the hall didn't look fine
but Thorsten had that thing man you

know....that thing***

Cosmo: I wouldn't mind having you for one night lover boy

she said looking at Thorsten

Thorsten: you'll have to die a million times more to make my dick get hard for your ugly ass

he face fell and the rest of The Brethren held in their laughs

Ruslan: Beast let's kill them all and burn them to ashes

Thorsten: let's get on with it then

***Cosmo looked at all of them and her eyes changed colour and everyone including Jay and Jase's beasts but except for Thorsten's screamed covering their ears...she smiled looking at all of them screaming as they went down to the floor with their hands covering their ears but when her eyes landed on an angry

looking Thorsten her smile faded***

Constantine: it's not possible

*** Constantine looked at her and a bone cracking sound was heard as Thorsten changed to his beast form and the screams stopped as Cosmo was shocked at seeing Thorsten's kind of beast and in the process she stopped concentrating on making them feel pain***

Cosmo: a....a Gevaudan beast

before they could snap out of it Thor's beast had already separated Cosmo's head from her body and Constantine screamed loud while Mj and Jabu's son fainted under the table

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

***he just received a call from Mbali who sounded frantic, she told him what happened and he didn't know what to do, she couldn't

leave Phumi alone and at the same time he couldn't let his brothers fight The Brethren alone***

Castiel: fuck it

he went to the bedroom where a pale looking Phumi with dark circles around her eyes was sleeping on a hospital bed he put inside their bedroom and some machines to monitor her heart rate, she also had a fluid and loss dehydration IV onher belly was huge and she lost a lot of weight you'd swear she has Aids or she's on her last stages of cancer...he swallowed hard cause he couldn't leave her alone in this state, she only has two weeks left and she will give birth

Castiel: I hope im doing the right thing

***he said to himself then he sat at the edge of the bed and he held her hand and kissed it then she opened her eyes and smiled weakly at

him***

Phumi: hey

she said with a weak voice and he swallowed hard

Phumi: what's wrong?

she said frowning

Castiel: something happened at the party and... everyone's lives is in danger

Phumi: what

Castiel: Mbali called me crying and she said....

he sighed

Castiel: they need me....there's kids there bello

Phumi: ummm ok... go I'll be fine

Castiel: at the same time I can't leave you all alone in your condition

Phumi: I have a catheter thingy on and my phone is here

Castiel: I don't know bello

he said having a feeling of doubt

Phumi: im ok considering but your family is not Cass

he sighed and smashed his lips on hers then he kissed the tip of her nose and her forehead then her huge belly

Castiel: I love you

she blushed

Phumi: I love you too

Castiel: I'll be back ok

she nodded and he swallowed hard cause he didn't want to leave her all alone

Castiel: if you start feeling any pain call me ok, I'll know but call me please

she nodded and she could see he had a worried look on his face

Phumi: I'll be fine

he kissed her lips one more time and he went to the bar fridge in the bedroom and took out a patch full blood and filled a tall Styrofoam cup for her and he put it on the hospital table bed and he adjusted the bed a bit so she will be able to reach it....he kissed her one more time and within a blink of an eye he was inside his car and he opened the gate and drove out in total speed

*** after a while Phumi felt the baby move roughly and she brushed her belly moaning cause she felt pain***

Phumi: calm down baby

****the baby stopped for some time then she breathed out and closed her eyes resting a bit but she opened her eyes when she felt an extremely sharp pain inside her stomach....she

screamed holding her belly and when she moved a bit she felt something breaking on her right ribs and she screamed loud with the machine beeping loudly...she held her belly screaming with tears gushing out and that's when she saw blood between her legs.....she felt the baby moving vigorously inside her belly as if it was fighting to get out and she screamed to the top of her lungs.....she moved her hand between her legs and she felt more excruciating pain on her right rib as she felt something break inside of her again and she continued to scream..... she fought through the pain and she got hold of the catheter tube and she pulled it out and let go of it.....she then opened her legs wide as hard as it was and she decided to push cause the baby was coming out while ripping her insides outthe pain she was feeling was worse than anything she has ever felt before or anything she would never wish even for her enemies, she felt like

someone stabbed her on her right ribs and he's busy twisting the knife, she also felt like her insides where being ripped apart and that she was about to die....she screamed loudly as the baby was ripping its way out of her womb and more blood gushed out of her vagina***

Phumi: Cassss...he...l...p....m...eee

she managed to say in a whisper as she struggled to breathe with her head bend on her right side looking towards the door.....The machines continued to make a loud noise with her heart rate dropping

MEANWHILE

***Castiel was about to call Ruslan to tell him he's on his way and to find out if anyone was hurt when he felt a sharp pain on his chest.....he quickly packed on the side of the road and he groaned in pain, he has never felt such pain before even when he was still with Juana....

Phumi's face flashed through his mind and he quickly started the car and he made a dangerous sharp U-turn and his car flew on the road as he headed back home still feeling that pain***

BACK TO THE VENUE

Constantine's fangs came out and he screamed looking deadly angry and he charged at the Gevaudan beast and a fight broke out, the other Vampires also charged at the rest of the guys and that's when the floor shook and voices of tortured souls where heard all over....everyone stopped except for Thor's beast and Constantine.....a black cloud just lifted Ray up and covered him then La Parca emerged as Ray disappeared

Snakes: ooh shit....shit...shit

Jabu: no no no no....not again....not again

he said shaking his head...then he knelt with one knee on the floor looking down and Muzi and Snakes looked at him like he's crazy

Snakes: wenzani? (what are you doing)

he whispered to him and Jabu looked up slowly and found that he's the only one kneeling and he got up with his heart pounding hard

Jabu: the last time.....you know what never mind

***Sounds of those tortured souls got louder and Jabu along with Snakes and Muzi moved back looking around while Mad Dog stood there ready for a fight “ with a vampire” imagine!.... Anyway the Brethren hissed with their long fangs all out looking at La Parca bending forwards a bit ready for a fight....La Parca then hit his scythe on the ground and a large crack emerged between the humans and vampires....

Thor's beast managed to grab Constantine's

neck and it choke slammed him to the floor shattering the tiles in the process with Constantine trying to fight it off him...it used its large veined left hand and punched him on the face over and over as its thick and slimy saliva dripped down from its mouth....Constantine's face cracked as more blows were thrown on his face, with his head going deeper inside the hole on floor made by his head being pushed deeper by those blows.... The crack got bigger and a bright orange light came out from it and Jay and Jase's beasts grunted moving back and so did the Brethren meanwhile Thor's beast was still throwing blows at Constantine's face which was showing more cracks with its right hand squeezing tight around his neck too, he was trying to fight the beast off him but it was futile thing to do....The Brethren jumped over the large crack on the floor and Ruslan said some words in the forbidden language and they were pushed back by a powerful force and flew back

hitting the wall hard and they quickly got up and charged at them again and that's when La Parca pointed his scythe to the burning huge crack on the floor and it got wider and deeper and that's when red skinned demons crawled out of it and the beasts growled looking angry as they looked from the demons to the vampires ***

Snakes: ooh hell no!

he shouted

Jabu: Mshikaro get the fuck away from there....Mshikaro!

Heath didn't move....Jabu attempted to rush to him but when one of the demons looked at him he stopped and he started shaking moving back slowly

Jabu: morena ke modisa wame gankitla ke tlhoka sepe, le ga madimone a ka ntebella ka matlho a ma hibidu gankitla di nketsa sepe ka

ntlha ya gae! (The Lord is my Shepard I shall not want, even if demons are looking at me with red eyes they will do nothing to me because of him!)

*** he repeated that over and over and the demon crawled to them in a creepy way, it then looked at Heath and Mad Dog didn't show any emotion on his face and when Mad Dog turned his head to look back at the bone shattering demon, he clenched his jaws and shook his head while moving his index finger from left to right warning it to not even try it***

Jabu: VOETSEK!....VOETSEK!

***it turned and looked at Jabu, Muzi and Snakes and Muzi pulled out his gun and so did Jabu and Snakes but when it jumped like a spider coming towards them they ran around the tables started shooting at it and when their eyes landed on Mj and Sbu who were passed out under the table, Muzi screamed Ruslan's

name***

Muzi: Ruu the boys are here!

Ruu turned looking at them and he spoke in the forbidden language and the demon exploded and blood red liquid scattered all over with some landing on Snakes, Jabu and Muzi and that's when Muzi , Jabu rushed to the boys while Snakes sat down on the floor with his hand on his chest as he struggled to breathe

Jabu: check your brother man I got them

Muzi looked over at Snakes and quickly rushed to him

Muzi: breathe Nhlaka....just breathe.....think of Ntombi and calm the fuck down

he thought of Ntombi, his grandmother, all his kids and Mbali the way she looked when she walked in, her happy face when she realized that Ray threw her a party....the tears of joy on her face made him calm down

Muzi: you having a panic attack so calm down man and breathe....find your happy place and breathe

La Parca: የ ስፍራው በዚም ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን
ፍርሃት ለእነስ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታወቁ ግን በእነስ ላይ
የእርምት ችግዋል ላይ በያስቀምጥኑም አንፃ እያደርገኑም

(light and darkness don't mix and that is why you have your own dark world and humans have this world now what are you doing here creatures!)

Ruslan: your worst mistake is trying to kill our women and children you pieces of shit

*** He said floating on white smoke with his eyes still all white in colour and his face was filled with visible dark veins...he looked scary and angry.....Then Thor's beast stopped punching Constantine and it pulled him up closer to its scary face ***

Thor's beast: my family is off limits!

it spoke slowly looking straight into his cold eyes then it ripped his head from his body and threw the body and the head inside the flames then it growled loud making the room shake, then it grabbed a demon that was passing next to him and it detached it's head from its body too and it threw it inside the flames and grunted looking at the remaining demons and vampires

La Parca: ΦΦΦ! (you!)

he pointed at one of the brethren guys with his skeletal index finger who looked scared

La Parca: go tell your Leader about what happened here.....tell him that he broke the rules by involving mere humans into a fight of mystical creatures... tell him that he should prepare himself to go willingly or by force....GO NOW!

***The young scared brethren ran out like a

speed of lightning then La Parca hit his scythe on the floor and the demons looked at him***

La Parca: እምዕስ ይህን ፈውአሰማቻቸ ጥሩ ልምምድ እናኩ የሰተዋዎ (take the dead ones back home demons!)

the demons stopped and turned to the remaining vampires

La Parca: ወለደ! (NOW!)

***the ground shook as he commanded them and the demons jumped on the Vampires who tried by all means to fight them off and they dragged them inside the flames with them screaming...La Parca looked over at one of the tables ***

La Parca: ስለታል በሙላማዎ እለም ወሰተበጥ ፈሃጻት (don't test my patience demon!)

***one demon crawled from under the table like a spider and it went straight into the flames rumbling and mumbling in the forbidden

language then La Parca hit the scythe on the ground and the crack closed and he looked at Ruslan***

La Parca: የእኩ ጥርጉ ስይሆን የእባቱ ነው እናም እኩ ተጠቃቀው እኩ ነው (if the human dies im coming for your brother)

then off he went and Ray emerged from the black smoke and it put him down on the floor and it disappeared

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

***Cass parked and rushed in like a speed of lightning and what he found when he walked inside the bedroom will haunt him for eternity...there was a baby between Phumi's legs looking pale and covered in blood and he wasn't crying or moving and as for Phumi, she laid there with her eyes closed and she wasn't moving too and the machine that read her heart

rate were making a neutral beep sound which indicated that her heart stopped beating***

Cass: no...no no

he rushed to her and felt her pulse and it wasn't there...he went to his son and found him lying there with his eyes opened blinking but he wasn't moving or crying or even making baby sounds...he then rushed downstairs to the basement like a speed of lightning and he came back holding a string, a resuscitation machine and a sterilized scalpel..... within a blink of an eyes he had cut and tied the umbilical cord separating the baby from Phumi then he quickly used the resuscitation machine on Phumi, he used it severally not giving up while screaming at her to wake up

Cass: baby wake up please...please wake up!

***he begged her as he tried one more time and still nothing changed...he backed away from

the bed with his eyes popped out and his hands shaking from fear for the first time in very long time and he fell on the floor with his butt***

Cass: no...no....Phumi please...please don't do this to me im begging you

he whispered looking like his world was coming to an end

Cass: NOOOOO!

*** He screamed which startled the baby and he cried his lungs out but Cass didn't move he continued to scream out loud.... the baby continued to cry her tiny lungs out then out of the blue Cass head the machine beeping....he quickly got up and looked at it and she had a heartbeat but it was low***

Cass: thank you baby....thank you

***he kissed her forehead and with a blink of an eye he took off the IV and carried her to the basement, where a hospital like white room was

packed with hospital equipment and other things and he connected her to an anesthetic machine that will help her breathe....he then went back upstairs to get the baby and he found a brethren holding the baby waiting for him***

Cass: not today Fabiano....you have 10 seconds to give me my son and get the fuck out of here!

he said with an angry voice

Fabiano: I was waiting for a go ahead from Cosmo and his hard headed brother but nah they are just taking forever so I'll do this my way

Cass: 10....9....8....7

Fabiano: you know touching this tiny neck and giving him a little squeeze and he's gon.....

*** within a blink of an eye Cass got to him and he detached his head from his body and he threw the head on the floor then he quickly took his son as the body was falling down and put

him on top of the bed gently.....he carried both the body and head downstairs to the fire place and switched it on and threw them in and he closed it and rushed back upstairs and took his son where Phumi was..... Since the white room was prepared for both Phumi and the baby he quickly cleaned him up and checked him then he wrapped him up with a baby blanket and put him side an incubator and he went to prepare himself for Phumi's surgery.... he didn't understand what just happened with Phumi cause she was gone but then her heart started beating again after it stopped beating for quite some time....anyway he got busy with her hoping that the baby didn't do any unfixable damage to her insides and that she'll hold on and live for him cause he couldn't lose her**

WE ARE BACK PEOPLE....NO MORE WAITING FOR "MONTHS" TO GET AN INSERT BUT IM

GONNA CUT A LITTLE DOWN ON THE LENGTH
OF THE INSERTS TO POST
REGULARLY....ENJOY!

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

INSERT.....31

Jabu: yah neh I thought metlholo e fedile le bo

moshe (I thought miracles ended with Moses)

Snakes: ungasho futhi Jabulani (you can say that again Jabulani).....some things us humans are not supposed to see

Jabu: mara jy weet what.....msoono wa La Parca...mesoono ya di vampire..... msoono wa moloi and mesoono ya dimpya tsa naga...entlek fuck satane,mmagae, papagae, bana ba gae le badimo ba gae.....entlek le*#te la papagae and ny*#*a ya mmage!.... (but you know what.....La Parca's cunt....vampires cunts....a wizard's cunt and wild dogs' cunts....actually fuck satan, his mother, his father, his children and his ancestors..... actually both his parents privates!)

he said looking angry

Heath: mjavi!

he reprimanded him but it fell on deaf ears

Jabu: Iwena msoono wa gao Mshikaro le Mad Dog wa gao wa go nyako tseya tseyana le ledimone!Iwena Ray msoono wa gao..... o botse le Ruslan kere msoono wa gae...le ledimone le ne lere lang attacka o le botse gore kere msoono wa Iona! (your cunt too Mshikaro and that your Mad Dog who wanted to take on a vampire! you too Ray your cunt....tell Ruslan I said his cunt too...even that demon that wanted to attack me tell it I said its cunt too!)

Ray sighed then he chuckled shaking his head

Snakes: yah ngivumalana nawe Jabulani....msooono yabo bonke nje ngoba ushilo nximagine ngise mncane kangaka sengishawa yipanic attack....bas'jwaela kabi laba.....yah batshele.... msoono yabo bonke! (Yeah I agree with you Jabulani....their cunt as you said....imagine as young as I am I suffered a panic attack..... yah tell them..... their cunt all

of them)

***the guys laughed even though they could see
they are serious***

Snakes: nihlekani mesoono nx!....nis'jwaela kabi
nina nx (what are you laughing at you cunts....)

***he said with a pissed off voice as they
waited for Ruslan to finish cleansing the room
where all that demonic scene happened ***

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Nomhle: what the hell is happening Mbali, who
were those people wearing black and how
come we appeared here....not to mention this
scary black smoke

Imani: yeah what's going on and when will our kids wake up

they asked worried and Mbali sighed

Mbali: this black smoke is Saint....a special and lovely demon attached to my son's soul and your kids will wake up once Saint feel that we are now save

their eyes popped out

Ntombi: askies?

Mbali: yeah just like your husbands and sons, well except for you Ntombi, Naledi and Amo and Noma have beasts in them while my son and husband have demons in them

she said like it's a normal thing to say

Amo: Jesus Christ!

Naledi: beasts and demons Mbali

Mbali: do you want me to tell Saint to show his real self to believe me

they all swallowed hard and Imani sighed

Imani: how long have you known

Mbali: for quite a while now

Amo: wait Imani you want to tell me that you believe her.....beasts and demons....come on

she said clearly not believing what Mbali was saying and Kedi rolled her eyes

Kedi: just because you don't believe that such things exists doesn't mean they actually don't exist Amo.....just like there are people who don't believe in God but it doesn't mean there isn't any God out there

Amo kept quiet

Noma: with what I've experienced in our family I don't doubt you Mbali

Naledi frowned confused

Ntombi: but Kalu is here in your arms

Mbali....isn't he supposed to disappear cause

the....demon is out

she whispered the last part

Saint: my name is Saint not demon!

they all jumped and screamed except for Mbali looking scared when Saint spoke

Amo: ooh my God, my protector..... I call upon you my God to please put on a protective shield around us....let no evil get their way with us....show your power through us my Lord...please protect us my God please show how great and powerful you are through us....thank you Jesus....thank you my Lord....Amen

Saint: AMEN!

Amo jumped again shaking

Amo: ohh God...oooh God

Mbali: are you done being dramatic Amo

Naledi: she's not dramatic Mbali, just because

you are used to all this it doesn't mean we all are

Thandi: well my man is a wizard and his brother is a vampire....i thought I should also share

Naledi: AMEN!

Nomhle: your man as in Ruslan?

Thandi: a ke sfebe Nomhle (im not a whore Nomhle) ofcourse im talking about Ruslan haw

Nomhle rolled her eyes

Mbali: and naledi don't act all holy and shit ok....Heath had multiple personalities and you don't see me judging him or you

Naledi's face fell

Mbali: and you my lovely sisters your husbands and sons have beasts in them....and Thandi just confirmed what her man and brother in law are and as for you Amo your man knows about all this, it's either you get used to all these and

accept that this is also part of your life because of your husband and your brother in laws or you just pretend like we don't exist and you exclude us in your life, it's as simple as that

Amo: im a Christian Mbali ok...all this is just against my religion

Imani: do you believe in God or in religion Amo

Kedi: can we not get into a debate about God and religion....i don't want Amo to feel like we are attacking her and her beliefs

Naledi breathed out...all this was just too much for her....she looked up and the black smoke was there and it also covered the entry way

Naledi: where are the guys and why didn't....Saint save them too?

Mbali: they are dealing with those guys and girl and FYI those guys are vicious vampires from some cult so Saint saved our asses and our

children's asses

the room became quiet

Imani: well im not even shocked by all this....

Smiso's beast just opened my eyes to a whole lot of things and one of those things is I had to accept that this world is not as it seems

Noma: can we get something to eat im starving

They all looked at her

Noma: yini? (what)

Ntombi: ngikutshelile ukuthi umithi wena (I told you you're pregnant), the way you're eating you're busy feeding little Muzi in there

Noma rolled her eyes

Noma: weeeh Saint ngilambile (Saint im hungry) so do something please!

The Khumalo wives, Thandi and Mbali laughed

Ntombi: I already feel sorry for Muzi shame

Noma: im not pregnant im just hungry jeez

Nomhle: umithi lo (she's pregnant)

Kedi: mmmmh she's carrying the little black
Jesus

***they giggled ***

Noma: mxm

Saint: Jesus is not little

***they all jumped including Mbali cause she
didn't expect Saint to say anything***

Amo: Jesus!

Mbali: damn Saint don't scare me like that

she said with her hand on her chest

Saint: sorry mommy

Amo: why are you all ok with what is
happening....there's a demon in the room for
God's sake!!

Mbali gave her a bad look

Saint: mommy warn her for me.....im a demon
that runs out of patience!

***they all kept quiet and Amo swallowed
hard***

Thandi: just keep your thought and opinions to
yourself or at least until you leave here
Amogelang assomblief

***Amo closed her eyes and did a silent
prayer***

AT PHUMI AND CASTIEL'S HOUSE

***He's been sitting on a chair staring at Phumi
with his son who has albinism in his arms, he

was feeding him milk***

Cass: your mother needs to wake up boy.....she has to

the baby made baby sounds as he sucked on the bottle and Cass sighed

Cass: you hear that bello.....it's your son....please wake up he needs you

The baby blinked fast and his eyes changed from blue “his natural color” to yellow then back to blue again

Cass: and now wena Khehla how did you do that

he said smiling at him then he looked over at Phumi

Cass: he just changed his eyes baby....you need to wake up and see for yourself

***Then he sighed and swallowed painfully cause he knew her organs are failing and her

waking up would be a miracle***

Cass: you need to wake up Phumi...please

he whispered

AT THE PARTY VENUE

*** Jabu slapped Mj and Sbu's faces waking them up***

Jabu: hai man tsogang yeses (wake up jeez)

Snakes came with a bottle of water and poured it on their faces and they gasped for air as they woke up...they coughed for some time

Jabu: hai man nawe Snakes wabathela rough so ngamanzi? (why did you pour water on them

like that?)

Snakes: hai suka they are the future of the family so they need to toughen up

Jabu: look who's talking

Snakes: fosek (piss off)

Jabu: nawe fosek (you too piss off)

Snakes: ey wake up nina (hey wake up)

*** they sat up straight looking confused***

Mj: wha...what happened?

Sbu: eish my head

Mj: damn I had the scariest and weirdest dream ever

Sbu: me too

they looked around and frowned

Sbu: papa where are we?

Jabu: aunt Mbali's party

Mj: wait....the dream....it was at.....

he quickly got up while Sbu slowly got up

Mj: demons....and Ruu he was flying and....

Sbu: gigantic werewolves!

Mj: and those guys that moved fast

Jabu: relax man

Mj: we saw them bros....we saw them

he said panicking

Snakes: yes you saw them now calm down
before you faint again

***They looked at him with horrified looks on
their faces***

Mj: Tiara...where's Tiara

Snakes frowned

Snakes: why are you calling my daughter's
name

***he came back to his senses ***

Mj: ummm I mean i....she

Sbu: ummm he wanted to say Omphile's name too

he said looking at Mj and Mj nodded quickly

Mj: yeah...what he said

Snakes: lalelani la messono....Tiara is off limits you hear me....off limits....go after her and I'll blow your testicles off....amasende gone (Testicles gone) you get me little fuckers

they nodded quickly looking scared

Snakes: im glad we understand each other

Jabu: remember we have daughters too and you have boys as well so if one of them looks over at my girls I won't just threaten them ko ba kgaola marete (I'll chop off their testicles)

Snakes: do you I'll do me man

Jabu: its on man....hash tag kgaola marete
(hash tag chopping off testicles)

Snakes: it's on and just so you know im a pro at
kgaoling marete (at chopping testicles)

Jabu: well im a master at kgaoling
marete(chopping off testicles)

Mj and Sbu just looked at them shocked

Ruslan: all is good now....you'll take care of the
tiles and ceiling I need to rush somewhere

Ray: what's going on

Ruslan: something bad is wrong with Cass and
Phumi

Heath: you think the....Vamps got to them?

Ruslan: I think it's worse than that bros

Ray: shit....lets go

Smiso: go we got this

Ruslan nodded at him

Ruslan: and the women and kids are safe in Ray's house in the basement....some should remain here and get the place fixed while some should go to them cause some of you have some explaining to do...ooh and call Mbali so she can tell Saint to go to sleep or else you won't enter the premises

Then he looked at Heath

Ruslan: explain everything to Thandi bros

Heath nodded then Ruu and Ray rushed out

ON THEIR WAY TO CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

Ruslan: after making sure that Cass and Phumi are ok you need to put La Parca to sleep

Ray sighed

Ray: yeah.....what is it that you felt

Ruslan: ever since Cass and I fixed things I have this special connection with him so during the fight I could feel that something was wrong with him...something big

Ray: do you think its....Phumi

Ruu sighed heavily

Ruslan: I have a bad feeling that is her

Ray: shit....

he then held his head and groaned

Ruslan: he needs to sleep

Ray: I know....I'll put him to sleep once I know
Cass and his wife are good

Ruu sighed and he nodded.....after some time they arrived and got out quickly and Ruu stopped midway which made Ray to stop too

Ray: what?

Ruslan: a brethren was here

Ray: He better have not done anything to them cause La Parca is still wide awake!

Ruslan rushed in followed by Ray and they started screaming Castiel's name then he appeared on the door way that went to the basement holding his son

Ruslan: shit...shit....shit.....

Ray: tell me she's ok man

Castiel swallowed hard and he looked at his sleeping son and he weakly smiled

Castiel: her heart stopped beating for some

time but his cries brought her back to us

Ruslan sighed painfully

Castiel: she lost her womb and she's in a coma.....her organs are failing so she's between life and death now

he then chuckled painfully while Ruu and Ray brushed their heads roughly while pacing

Castiel: I can't change her without her permission even it's the only thing that will make her not to leave us and there's nothing medically that can be done for her....the only thing I can do is change her without her permission and I get dragged to hell

Ruslan: not happening!

Ray: I need painkillers man

Castiel: La Parca?

Ray: yeah he needs to sleep before night falls

Castiel: in the kitchen top drawer next to the

fridge

Ray walked away and Ruslan got closer and he smiled looking at the baby

Ruslan: he looks like you man

Castiel: yeah

Ruslan: give him to me

Cass handed the baby to Ruu and he held him gently and smiled down at him

Ruslan: he's the first child to be born with albinism in our family

Castiel: maybe but with Selbatore fucking around and getting women pregnant all over so I might have siblings that have albinism

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: well that's if those babies survived like you and the little man here did....carrying and giving birth to a vampire baby is no childs play.....you need a powerful witch or wizard to

help you throughout the pregnancy

Castiel: is this you telling me that you are powerful

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: you said it not me

Castiel: mxm

Ray: I forgot he likes to show off this one

Ruslan: piss off Ray

Ray: puta

***Ruslan showed him the middle finger and went to sit down, Cass and Ray went to join him while Ray lay down on his back on the couch ***

Ruslan: I'll make sure Phumi gives her consent

Castiel: no you won't

he said firmly

Ray: yes he will

Castiel: I will not let you do it Madou

Ray: that's not your call to make Cass....let him save his sister in law in peace abeg

the baby made some sounds in his sleeps then he went back to quietly sleeping

Castiel: by doing black magic?....that shit is dangerous Ray....he has a child on the way for fucks sake!

Ruslan: I know all that Cass but I also won't sit back and watch you taken to hell!

he said that through his teeth and Cass sighed and got up

Castiel: but dark magic Madou.....the last time you did it consumed you and you became addicted Madou, I don't even want to think about how you handled it after you killed the brethrens

Ruslan: I have Thandi and my unborn child and

the boys to think about now Cass and im not doing it for revenge but to help Phumi

Cass sighed and he sat down

Castiel: just so you know I don't support this

Ray: noted now lets go...after that I'll let La Parca loose so you talk to him then he needs to be put to sleep, the shitty things I see in my head are scary as fuck so chop chop "Madou"

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: how about we do everything tomorrow

he teased him

Ray: and I'll go to the animal center myself and kill that stupid monkey of yours

Ruslan: touch Miles and La Parca will be the least of your problems

Ray: wow he's choosing a monkey over me

Castiel: kurough mfowethu (its rough bro)

he then chuckled

Ruslan: what's this little fellow's name?

Cass sighed

Castiel: I haven't named him

Ruslan: and why not

Castiel: I can't with Phumi lying on her death bed

Ray: well news flash Cass after Ruslan gets her permission and La Parca gives you the go ahead she's gonna be vampire

Castiel gave him a bored look

Ray: im just saying

he said shrugging his shoulders

Ruslan: Thiago

Cass: Thiah...i wouldn't have thought of that....it's a nice name

Ray: he'll also need an African name

Ruslan: I don't think so

Cass: why not

Ruslan: all is not as it seem man

he said with a frown on his face

Ray: what do you mean by that?

Ruslan: all will be revealed with time.....so let's get right on it

***he said getting up and walking away then

Ray and Cass looked at each other ***

AT MENZI'S HOUSE

Kazi: so you really gonna leave me alone for a week while im pregnant Menzi

he sighed

Menzi: my boss needs me Ntandokazi

Kazi: ooh so your boss is more important than me and your unborn child?

He didn't answer her

Kazi: wow

Menzi: look I work for Bab'Khumalo and im loyal to him.....im literally who I am today because of him....he doesn't control my life but when he calls I drop everything and go, you might not understand it but that's what I come with
Ntandokazi

She chuckled bitterly

Kazi: so now that im pregnant you're telling me that I have no choice than to share you with your boss...mmmh Menzi?

Menzi: I don't have time for this

***he walked away leaving Kazi fuming with

anger then she sat down and tears rolled down her cheeks....her phone rang and she answered wiping her tears off***

Kazi: hello

Voice: h...hi nonoza

she froze and swallowed hard...only her mother calls her that

Kazi: m...ma?

Mom: yeah....unjani? (how are you?)

Kazi: good....why are you calling me

her mother sighed

Mom: look I know Im the last person you want to see or talk to but....can we meet up, I want to tell you something important

Kazi: you can say it now....i don't wanna meet up with you

she kept quiet a bit

Kazi: its either you tell me now or forever hold your piece

she said with a serious tone and her mother chuckled a bit cause she knew how stubborn Kazi is

Mom: well Im divorcing

Kazi: ok

she said without any care on the world

Mom: and I think you should know something about what I let him do...gosh i can't even say his name

Kazi: im listening

Mom: he...he sold you to some rich guy he owed money to

silence

Kazi: askies?

Mom: yes and I must say that the man is scary,

creepy and dangerous and there's just something dark about him.....he would get in the house without us knowing how he got in and as if that wasn't scary enough, we would wake up from sleep in the middle of the night and find him looking at us

Kazi swallowed hard as a chill ran down her spine

Kazi: W...What?

Mom: he once told us that you were shot the next thing we read somewhere that you were kidnapped....i wanted to call the police and let them know of the suspect but M....."my stupid ex" talked me out of it.....i tried to call him and ask if he's the one that kidnapped you but we couldn't reach him.....I know im a bad mother nozoza but im willing to right my wrongs, my eyes are opened now and im aware now that he was the one using me and not the other way around....I've been trying to call the man so I

can make a deal with him to let you go but I just can't find him

she said with a breaking voice

Mom: im sorry Ntandokazi

she said crying

Kazi: how...how could you....why would you and your useless husband do this to me.....what did I ever do to you huh

she said crying

Mom: im sorry Ntandokazi...i was just naïve and let him use me

she said crying

Kazi: listen here...i don't belong to anyone so whatever deal you made with that man has got nothing to do with me uyangizwa (you hear me)....if anything happens to me I swear to God I'll report you and your useless husband to the cops....you better pray nothing happens to me!

Mom: nono I swear i....

Kazi: I hate you...i never thought I'd ever say this to you but I hate you.....i hate you for selling your own flesh and blood because of a dick!

she said crying then she dropped the call

Menzi: who are you gonna report to the cops

she jumped a bit then she composed herself and got up then wiped her tears off

Kazi: as if you care nxa

Menzi: what's that supposed to mean?

*** she walked away leaving him there ***

Menzi: Ntandokazi!

he sighed and brushed his beard

Menzi: hai ngazengavelelwa bo

he went after her

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

***they lowered the hospital bed a bit down and Ruslan prepped the area properly for the ritual, the lights were off and candles were lit on the floor surrounding the bed ***

Ruslan: you ready?

***Cass nodded and Ruslan held Phumi's hand ***

Ruslan: Et spiritus grandis et universum servandi Phumi liceat mihi, u tea coniungere cum spiritu!

***he said that countless times with his skin getting pale and his veins being visible and black all over his body more especially on his face and the machines started flicking and

beeping as his eyes turned all black....his and Phumi's bodies shook.... then like a blink of an eye her eyes flipped open and they were all white in color***

Ruslan: Et spiritus grandis et universum servandi Phumi liceat mihi, u tea coniungere cum spiritu!

he continued to chant those words in the Latin language with their bodies shaking then they stopped shaking and sat still and the candles went off so did the machines

Cass: I fucken hate black magic

he whispered

Ruslan: Phumi....Phumi

***he said walking around many spirit stuck in a

dimension between the living and the dead....they were all lost and walking around aimlessly some crying and shaking while others whispered to themselves looking scary and creepy....he called out Phumi's name as he walked around searching for her....he called out to her as he went around for some time until he saw her....she had her arms wrapped around her body and she was crying as she walked around looking for a way out of this depressing, creepy and hideous place.....as he was walking towards her a hand grabbed his arm and he stopped and quickly turned***

Spirit: get me out of here

Ruslan tried to get off his grip but it tightened the grip

Spirit: I said get me out of here!

***it said getting aggressive, it could see that Ruslan's skin color is normal while theirs is pale

and grey...Anyway Ruslan looked over at where Phumi's spirit was and it was walking away***

Ruslan: get your fucken hands off me!

he said getting angry

Spirit: get me out of here or I'll fucken kill you....believe me I will, I have killed so many people so it won't be hard to make you meet your maker!

it said with an angry voice and Ruslan got angry and the spirit quickly let go of him feeling a strong dark feeling where it touched him

Ruslan: listen here you useless piece of shit, you gonna stay stuck here for eternity for each and every innocent soul you took...you deserve to be stuck in this never ending dimension walking around and looking like shit

*** the spirit took a step back then Ruu looked around and couldn't see Phumi's spirit anymore***

Ruslan: damn it!...now go on and roam around little shit

he walked on and searched around for some time until he saw it/her....he rushed to her

Ruslan: Phumi

***she turned ***

Phumi: Ruu...Ruu is...is this you....where am i....why is my tummy flat what happened to my baby....where's Castiel.....where am I Ruu

***she said crying and Ruu embraced her ***

Ruslan: its ok im here now.....listen here, you don't have much time...we need to get you out of here and there's only two ways

he breathed out

Phumi: help me get out of here Ruu Please, it's scary here...im scared

she said crying and shaking

Ruslan: listen to me carefully....its either you die for real which will mean Castiel dies too and your son will become an orphan or you give Cass permission to turn you into a vampire

Phumi: wh...what?

she said with her eyes popped out and moving out of his arms

Ruslan: you gave birth Phumi but it wasn't all rosy...right now you're on your death bed and once your organs give up completely you'll die and Castiel will die too cause he promised a higher power to keep you alive or Cass can change you now and you become like him and you two raise your son together but he can do that with your permission

she looked at him as tears ran down her cheeks

Phumi: a Vam....but i....i cant....i

Ruslan: think of your son Phumi.....Cass won't

be there for him cause he'll be taken to hell...please let him change you

she wrapped her arms around her body as if she's cold and she looked around with more tears gushing out....the place is scary...it's filled with mist and the sky is dark with spirits of both men and women and even children walking around screaming for help with some talking alone while walking around aimlessly...there was no beginning nor ending at this place

Ruslan: think of your son Phumi please and also think of Cass....he loves you...he did everything possible to save you but he's not God, he's just a man born a vampire.....right now he doesn't care if he lives or not all he wants is for you to raise your son

Phumi: im...im scared Ruu

Ruslan: you don't have to be....we got you

she kept quiet a bit sobbing silently

AT MENZI'S HOUSE

Menzi: will you just talk to me please

she wiped her tears off and told him everything her mother told her

Menzi: the fuck!.....who does that to their own child

he said with a pissed off tone and she sniffed

Kazi: I can't believe she did that to me....she sold me Menzi and what if that guy comes after me huh

***he said pulling her to his chest ***

Menzi: I won't let that happen now stop

stressing and call your mother back

Kazi: I don't wanna talk to her Menzi

she said pulling away

Menzi: I need to know the guy's name and anything else she can tell me about him so I know who im about to deal with

she breathed out and wiped her tears off....what her mother told her freaked her out pretty bad....she accepted the fact that they are not close but for her and her husband to sell her just like that hurt her to the core....she took her phone and called her mother back

Mom: Nonoza

Menzi raised an eyebrow at her with a smirk forming on his lips

Kazi: what's his name?

Mom: who?

Kazi: don't pretend like you don't know what im

talking about!

she said with an angry voice and her mother sighed

Mom: people know him as the night-crawler but I once heard “my stupid to be ex” calling him Castil

The pronunciation was wrong but Kazi quickly caught on and she quickly looked at Menzi

Kazi: do you mean....Castiel, sapphire eyes, black, tall and a little pale skin with tattoos showing on his neck?

Mom: yes...yes that's....wait do you know him.....oooh nkosi yam please don't tell me you have already met him

she said with a panicking voice and Kazi quickly dropped the call and her hands started shaking

Kazi: oooh God...ooh God

Menzi: the same Castiel Ntandokazi?

Tears ran down her cheeks

Kazi: Phumi's life is in danger Menzi....i....the woman and man that abducted me.....what if...ooh God

She said with a shaky voice

Menzi: ukhulumana ngani Ntandokazi (what are you talking about)

she just got up from the edge of the bed and she started fanning her face using her hands

Menzi: calm down before you upset my child and sit down and tell me what the heck is going on!

he said raising his voice

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

Castiel: why is he not coming back...it's been three fucken hours

he whispered

Ray: you the one that knows about black magic and shit but you're right we need to get this thing over and done with so I can put La Parca to sleep cause this nigga is busy ramming my head as if I insulted his mother

he whispered back

Ray: plus I miss my wife and kids man

***he whispered again in the dark then all of a sudden the candles lit on and the machines switched on again and Phumi's eyes closed ***

Cass: Madou?

he said with a shaky voice and Ruslan breathed out

Ruslan: calm your tits she agreed...she gave you her permission

They looked at each other with frowns on their faces

Cass: you better come back to us and lose that shitty accent and attitude or else im calling Thandi

*** he warned him and Ruslan turned and looked at them with a smirk on his face***

Ruslan: will ya'll stop killin my fucken vibe man....do you fucken know how good I feel....the power I feel running through my veins it's just phenomenal I swear I can even take on Angel Gabriel man, that's how fucken good I feel

Ray: that's it im calling her!

he said taking out his phone

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....32

.

.

.

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

***Thandi parked Ray's car on the drive way and

she got out and rushed to the door....she didn't even knock she just opened the door and walked in.....The hair on the back of her neck stood up and she stopped walking***

Castiel: thanks for coming

she jumped frightened cause she didn't see him

Thandi: jeez Cass you nearly gave me a heart attack

he smiled at her

Castiel: im sorry

she looked at his face and he looked like hell, then her eyes went to the baby in his arms and she swallowed hard

Thandi: where's Phumi Cass

he sighed

Cass: upstairs

Thandi: alive?

he swallowed

Cass: something like that

Thandi: what's that supposed to mean Cass,
please don't tell me you and Ruu failed to save
her

She said with her heart beating fast

Ruu: babe

***she quickly turned and frowned looking at
him cause he never calls her that***

Cass: ummm that's what I called you here for

Ruu: ya'll are exaggerating man....ya'll need to
chill the fuck up

***Thandi raised an eyebrow looking at him as
he said that with her head slightly bent to the
side***

Thandi: ok where's my man and who the hell is

this?

Ruu: wow... where's the love babe

Thandi: Castiel!

she shouted

Cass: he...he used black magic to save Phumi
and he's been like this ever since

Thandi: what?

Cass: I warned him against it just so you know
but he insisted

***she swallowed hard and jumped a bit as he
grabbed her ass and squeezed it***

Ruu: nice ass you got here babe and it drives
me crazy all the damn time

Cass: ok im just gonna...ummm.... put Thia
down

*** he walked away and Thandi moved away
from Ruslan***

Thandi: Ruu what's going on?

Ruu: what do you mean sweet cheeks?

Thandi: STOP OK...JUST STOP!!

he frowned looking at him

Ruu: wait did you just raise your voice at me?

he asked frowning

Ruu:....now listen here sweetie I won't tolerate disrespect from you you hear me know your place before you step on my toes aiyt!!

He said with a pissed off tone and Thandi swallowed hard with tears filling her eyes

Ruu: I said aiyt!

she nodded as tears fell down her cheeks

Ray: is that how you talk to my sister now Ruu

***he said walked in looking like shit.....they just summoned La Parca and everything went well.....Cass bit Phumi transferring his venom

into her veins and now they have to wait for her to turn and that could take up to 38 hours to 48 hours to happen.....now all Ray needed was to put La Parca to sleep and he'll be good***

Ruu: stay out of this man...this is between my girl and i

Thandi: I stopped being "your girl" seconds ago

Ruu: excuse you?

he said frowning at her

Thandi: im in a relationship with Ruslan who calls me amor and not all that nonsense....i don't know what happened to you but im sorry its over Ruslan.....my kids and I don't need this American nigga in our lives

Ruu frown as his heart beat fast

Ruu: don't fuck with me Thandi

Thandi: it's over

***She turned to Ray ***

Thandi: can I see Phumi?

he shook his head

Ray: not yet, I don't want you to see her in that state

she nodded

Ruu: Thandi....

Thandi: nkatoge tuu....just leave me alone wena nxo

she walked to Ray

Thandi: take me to the baby

Ray looked at Ruu who had a look of disbelief on his face

Ray: this way

she followed him

Ruu: Thandi!

Thandi: fotsek!!

Ray chuckled

Ruu: did she just swear at me?

he asked himself

Ruu: hell no....fuck!

he said brushing his face

Ruu: I mean shit

he said to himself again

Ruu: damn it!

***he huffed and went to sit down....he knew now that he needed to go back to his old self whether he likes it or not.....he got up from the couch and sat on the floor and crossed his legs, sitting in meditating position and he put his hands on his knees and he breathed out loud three times and he closed his eyes blocking everything out ***

INSIDE THIAGO'S NURSERY

*** Thandi was holding Thia in her arms, she was walking around the room looking down at him as he sucked on his pacifier sleeping***

Thandi: he's so perfect Cass

Cass: yeah, I can't believe im a father....I'll never thank Phumi enough for this gift she gave me

Thandi: I swear she's gonna fall in love with him the moment she sees him

Cass sighed

Cass: I wasn't here when she gave birth, I only arrived when....

Ray: don't do that to yourself man

Cass: I failed her man....i failed her

he said with a pained voice

Ray: that's not true Cass

Thandi: the only way you'll fail her is if you keep doing that to yourself....you're a father and a

husband now man so man up.....self-pity
doesn't suit you

***he looked at her surprised by her response
she then smiled down at Thia***

Thandi: I also want a child born with albinism
they chuckled

Thandi: I never knew vamp babies are this
cute....the color of his eyes....his flawless
skin....his golden hair

she chuckled

Thandi: I think im in love guys

***they laughed and she continued to walk
around the room holding him in her arms ***

Ray: I need to go back home....you'll be fine with
Thandi?...im leaving with the single nigga in
there

Castiel laughed

Thandi: mxm

Cass: we will be fine man...right MaTha?

Thandi giggled nodding and Ray walked out and Thandi sighed

Thandi: will he go back to normal

Castiel: yeah the only thing that scares the daylights out of him is losing you and the kids....he's meditating now so I know he'll be fine, he'll do anything possible and impossible to go back to our Mahamadou... Thandi's man and not that fake American nigga shit

Thandi smiled and Thia moved and she walked around humming a song for him and Cass smiled....he pictured Phumi doing that while he took a video of her....he then breathed out loud

Thandi: she'll wake up and I think she's gonna kick your ass.....remember Bella woke up stronger than Edward on Twilight

she giggled

Cass: who's Bella and Edward now?

She gave him a bored look

Thandi: ai never mind mkhulu

Cass: mkhulu is that "yho yho ma nigga" of yours.... mxm let me go check on Phumi

he walked out and Thandi laughed

AT HEATH AND NALEDI'S HOUSE

Naledi was slowly putting lotion on her legs while sitting on the edge of the bed lost in thoughts while Heath was standing by the door looking at her with a frown on his face and his hands in his pockets....he looked sexy as hell standing there but Naledi was so deeply lost in thoughts to see him

Heath: Obi m

nothing

Heath: Obi M!

she jumped

Naledi: jeez.... you almost gave me a heart attack

she said with her hand on her chest

Heath: what's boring you...and don't say it's nothing

She sighed and he went to join her

Naledi: i...i just didn't like how Mbali spoke to me and Amo when we were shocked to learn about her son and husband

Heath: what did she say?

She sighed

Naledi: she said rudely that I shouldn't act all holy and shit cause you also have a multiple personality disorder and she didn't judge you

Heath sighed and he brushed his beard

Heath: do you feel ashamed about my disorder
Obi m?

Naledi: ofcourse not how can you ask me that

Heath: good....now please be mad at her cause
you're older than her and you felt disrespected
by the tone she used to speak to you and not
because she reminded you about my disorder

Naledi: but...

Heath: no buts Obi m....my disorder doesn't
shame me....im here today because of it, we
wouldn't have met and Kalu wouldn't be here
cause I'd be dead

she swallowed hard

Heath: the same way people say negative and
stupid things about you having albinism and I
laugh instead it's because they don't know how
crazy it drives me....your flawless skin, your pink

lips, golden hair, the color of your eyes and
mind you I haven't even touched on your
body...your ass, pussy, breasts

***he breathed out loud and bit his lower lip and
she blushed***

Heath: so you get what im saying right

she breathed out

Naledi: yeah

Heath: good....be mad for the harsh way she
spoke to you but not about my disorder ok

She nodded

Heath: and I think she didn't mean to sound
harshly she was just in a defensive
mode....imagine having a son and husband
having their souls attached to demons Obi m,
then you also have to deal with people's
reactions or judgments

Naledi: I wasn't judging her Heath

Heath: yes I know because I know you my wife but im sure your shock was received as you judging her which we both know it's not true

Naledi: I just felt disrespected Heath im not gonna lie

he pulled her closer and kissed her cheek

Heath: and you have every right to be but just have mercy on her obi m....once she apologize which I know she will just kiss and make up ok

she nodded

Heath: I don't want you holding grudges on small things obi m....you too sexy, beautiful and drop dead gorgeous to do that

she blushed giggling

Naledi: charming aren't we

***he laughed then he got up and went to the door and locked it and when he turned she saw the bulge below his belt and she swallowed and

bit her lower lip....he took off his clothes until he was left only on his birth suit and he walked to her stroking his hard shaft and the rest is history ***

AT JABU AND AMOGELANG'S PLACE

Jabu: o tlo nchaela gore bothata keng rato laka or ke fotseke before keo tlatsa phinya ka go balabala too much? (will you tell me what's wrong or I should piss off before I get on your last nevers with my nagging)

she sighed and turned to look at him....they were in the kitchen making something to eat for Sbu and Jabulile

Amo: why didn't you tell me?

Jabu: eng? (what)

Amo: about your brother Ray and his son

he frowned

Jabu: so you wanted me to tell you about Ray and Mbali's business

Amo: you know what I mean Jabu

Jabu: no a ke frostane Amo so beya taba pila ke tlhaloganye fandi one one (no I don't understand Amo so make me understand)

Amo: Jabu you know my religion doesn't allow me to associate myself with ungodly things

Jabu: woooh bese....stopa net daar..... o re ungodly things Amo? (wait...stop right there....you saying ungodly things Amo?)

Amo: you know what I mean

Jabu: stop saying I know what you mean cause I don't!

she turned getting angry at his tone

Amo: never mind

Jabu: o sampotsa gore never mind

Amogelang....o sampotsa dai deng.... jy weet

gore everytime re ova ka something serious e
be o re never mind ko nna enkwatisa
blaen....now ova ke utlwelletse! (don't say never
mind Amogelang....don't tell me that.....you
know every time we argue about something
serious and you say never mind it pisses me
off...now talk im listening)

***she kept quiet a bit trying to calm herself
down***

Amo: your brother and nephew have demons in
them Jabu....i pray every day for God to protect
me from such and now...

she shook her head looking down

Jabu: you are a hypocrite

Amo: askies?

Jabu: onkutlwile (you heard me)....o robala
ebile o ja ke a gangster (you sleep and you're
also fucked by a gangster) worst of it all you're
married to him and you have child with him.... I

have blood in my hands Amo....i have killed before and as long as im still living that life I know I'll waste anyone that messes with me, my business or my family

she swallowed hard

Jabu: first of all if you said you don't know how to feel about Ray and his son having demons in them or asked if they are a danger to us or if there isn't anything that can be done to help them then it was something but this judgmental shit you have going on ya nk watisa cause Iwena you are not a saint....o te associat(a) le mmolai, tsotsi mara o kgona go judg(a) batho ba bangwe..... (it pisses me off cause you are not a saint yourself....you associate yourself with a murderer, a thug but you judge other people)

She looked away swallowing with tears in her eyes

Jabu: search yourself Amogelang..... I don't

want a judgmental wife nna cause I know im a sinner, im not proud of it but I do it anyway cause that life is in my blood and im not prepared to leave it not now anyway.... Ray has to live with the fact that all his male children will be born with a demon and there's nothing he can do about it...Mbalí have to accept gore all her sons will be born with it and worst part she suffers every time she gives birth cause the births are not a normal at all so they don't need you to judge them cause only God is allowed to not a human being who don't know how it's like to be them

Tears ran down her cheeks

Jabu: check yourself my wife cause being married to me comes with a lot of shocking things...and being shocked is fine....being scared is also fine but being judgmental is a no no for me

Jabu: bona ka jaja gore batho a re tshwane

(look I know people are different) and we react differently but judging another person doesn't make you better than them....tswella pele o rapela Modimo wa gao (continue praying to your God) while they continue with their demons....a di go tshwenye in any way (they don't disturb you in any way), in fact Saint saved your life along with our daughter's life from those things so tswella pele ka liewe (go on with your life) and let the judging to God assomblief

Then he breathed out

Jabu: eish ompoledisa thata bona nou ke fetsa go o fa speech sa go gana go fela (you making rant look now I just gave you a never ending speech)

he said smiling at her....he then went closer and cupped her face wiping her tears off with his thumbs then he perked her lips

Jabu: I love you Amo....a kao fasa ka phoso....a kao trowa ka phoso gape so assomblief (I didn't ask you out by mistake....i also didn't marry you by mistake so please) dont derail from God by turning into a judgmental person..... rato laka (my love) don't let fear turn you into something you're not....Amo waka wa rapela goed and ga tshabe fokol cause Modimo o nale yena at all times (my Amo is a prayer warrior and she doesn't fear anything cause God is with her all the time)

she sobbed and he hugged her

Jabu: Amo waka nkebe a le ko kamoreng a ba rapella goed (my Amo would be in our bedroom now praying for them)

he then made her look at him

Jabu: pray for them and let the judging to God ok

she nodded

Jabu: daar se (good)

he smiled at her as he wiped her tears off

Jabu: fetsa mo o tle upstairs ko gofa one nyana
ya gontsha stress, in fact we both need it
(finish up here and come upstairs so I can give
you some sex to take off stress, in fact we both
need it)

she smiled faintly

Jabu: o sa mpha di faint smile....ke batla a
naughty one from wena hao (don't give me
faint smiles....i want naughty ones from you)

she giggled

Jabu: wa bona ebile o tsogile grootman (you
can see that big man "his dick" is even awake)

***she looked at his bulge and she giggled
again***

Jabu: fetsa ka pele kao galla rato laka (finish
up im craving you my love)

Amo: bathong Jabu

she said blushing

Jabu: ko shapa ka doggy, ke e tsentsha ke e lebelletse e fellela ka mo gare ga my sacred place....ge ke fetsa ko spank(e) lerago nyana wa bona ke le busy ko morago (im gonna hit it doggy style, im gonna slide it in my sacred place while looking at it....after that I'll spank you ass while im busy behind you)

he said biting his lower lip scanning her body

Amo: can you just stop bathong....there are kids in the house

she said giggling

Jabu: fetsa man grootman wa vibrat(a) ka mo gare ga joki (be done groot man (big man) is even vibrating inside my underwear)

***she laughed and he joined her with his

charming laugh....she stopped laughing and she sighed***

Jabu: keng?(what is it)

Amo: im sorry for being judgmental

he smiled with his beautiful smile

Jabu: for saying that ko shapa ka two rounds
(im gonna give you two rounds)

she laughed then he kissed her forehead and walked away

Jabu: FETSA DAAR! (finish up)

he said walking away with his hands in his pockets and Amo sighed thinking about what happened earlier with Saint and her shoulders vibrated

Amo: JESUS!

She breathed out and continued with what she was doing

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

Thandi was sitting in the lounge eating while watching Tv when the door opened and Ruslan walked in

Thandi: mxm

Ruslan: don't be like that amor

Thandi: so keng bo nigga bo gone?

he chuckled walking to her cause he put two and two together when he heard “nigga” and “gone” and understood what she said

Ruslan: yeah....i know I shouldn't have let the power im experiencing change me and im really sorry for that amor

Thandi: mxm

Ruslan: don't be like that amor please

Thandi: like what?

he sighed and sat next to her and tried to touch her baby bump and she pushed his hand away

Thandi: don't touch me with your nigga hands

he looked at her shocked

Ruslan: amor please

Thandi: mxm you were busy acting crazy when I was busy seeing demons....im still shook by what I saw and I had to rush here for you cause you let yourself become weak

he sighed and put his lower arms on his thighs and he popped his knuckles looking down with his jaws clenched

Thandi: you're a wizard Ruu and you have enemies out there and I have to worry about your safety and our kids safety...i don't have to worry about you letting some stupid power turn you into some arrogant nigga speaking asshole who talks to me like ke sfebe sa gae (like im

his bitch).....bathi uzenzile akakhalelwa, yes I chose to stay even after you told me who you really are, what you can do and who your brother is cause I love you but I will not tolerate nonsense the same way you won't tolerate my purposely done nonsense

Ruslan: I heard you amor

Thandi: no you didn't....ke batla e tsene ka mo tlhogong eo e kima and enne ka moteng (I want it to get inside that big head of yours and stay in there)....if you ever let some stupid powers change you Ruslan I swear ka papa wa ka wa stlaela wa go bolaya ke aids because of bofebe (I swear with my stupid father who was killed by AIDS because of his whoring ways) and I will take my kids and leave your ass and im not playing and there's nothing you'll do about it ok

he sighed

Ruslan: yes mam I hear you....are we good now?

Thandi: mxm

Ruslan: amor come on I said im sorry and it will never happen again

Thandi: wa lapisa wena mxm....give me a kiss and tell me how much you love me

he chuckled and got closer and kissed her lips with his hand on her belly and the baby moved

Ruslan: I love you so damn much amor and im sorry I worried you

she sulked looking at him

Thandi: never ever Ruu

Ruu: never ever my love

she smashed her lips on his and they kissed passionately

Castiel: there are three guest bedrooms

upstairs....don't fuck on my couch please

he said walking to the kitchen and Thandi giggled while Ruu laughed

Ruu: go and talk to Phumi and beg her to have mercy on you cause she gonna kick you fossil ass when she wakes up

Castiel: fusek Mr yho yho ma nigga

Thandi laughed

Ruslan: fuseg too

Thandi: ooh my God....what?

she said looking at him shocked

Ruslan: stop insulting me in vernac cause one of these days I'll understand what you're saying and you'll pay

she giggled and she rested her head on his chest and he wrapped his arms around her and kissed the top of her head

Ruslan: I love you.

AT THORSTEN AND IMANI'S HOUSE

*** he had her pinned to the shower wall and she had her legs wrapped around his waist and they were kissing while fucking***

Thor: fuck I love you Immy....

he said as he hit it hard with his lips still on hers....he went in and out of her fast and she screamed as her body shook, he didn't stop he continued fucking her until he groaned from deep down his throat and he exploded in her pushing his dick in deeper and deeper

Thor: FUCK!

He cursed with his deep mainly voice then looked in her eyes

Thor: you good?

***She nodded and he perked her lips then he

slid his dick out and she climbed down and his semen ran down the inside of her thighs and he opened the shower taps and they continued to showered together with Imani smiling***

Thor: what's with the smile?

he said smirking at her

Immy: ungishove kamnandi Smiso (you fucked me good Smiso)

he laughed and she joined him...it was lovely seeing him laugh cause he hardly laughs...she then grabbed his dick and it immediately got hard

Thor: shit Immy!

she got on her knees and she licked its length and he cursed again looking down at her.....she put in her mouth and he groaned and she made daddy happy that he came in her mouth and she swallowed his load

Thor: stop feeding my son his brothers and sisters

she laughed as she got up....he pulled her closer and kissed her

Thor: you turning him into a cannibalistic monster

***she continued to laugh pushing him playfully ***

Immy: trust you to say all this

He chuckled and kissed her forehead

Thor: I love you

Immy: I love you more

Thor: I doubt it but ok

she looked at him shocked

Immy: askies?

he chuckled

Thor: what...you love me but not more than I

love you and it's not debatable

Immy: mxm

she said sulking and he kissed the side of her head laughing

***She left him in the shower and after she was done drying her body and putting on lotion she wore her silk night dress and silk gown and she went to check on her baby girl and she was sleeping peacefully in her cot, she kissed her forehead and went to check on Lefa and found him sharing his bed in his bedroom with Smiso Junior....they were both asleep looking cute....he kissed both their foreheads and walked out leaving the side lamp on and she switched the main light off.....he walked out going downstairs to make herself some tea....she was busy preparing her tea and sandwich when Smiso walked inside the

kitchen with only a towel wrapped around his waist***

Immy: you want some coffee baby

he just grabbed her waist with his left hand and he bend her upper body a bit down making her to hold on the kitchen counter, he then took off the towel and pushed her silk gown and silk night dress up to her waist and parted her legs and positioned his dick and slid in from behind

Immy: SHIT!

***He started moving in and out of her with a fast pace which drove her crazy....he grabbed her waist with both hands and fucked her good until her body shook and she came....he went faster for some time until he nutted inside her groaning and he pulled out and pulled her to stand up straight and he turned her face and perked her lips as his semen ran down her legs

and he walked away***

Immy: fuck!

she said to herself with her legs still shaking

INSERT.....33

.

.

.

THE FOLLOWING DAY

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

Cass was busy draining blood from the animals that were just delivered to him for Phumi when she wakes up cause he doesn't want her feeding on human blood ever..... his phone rang and he answered

Cass: yah

Man: boss its Drew

Cass: Sure Druza skhiphani? (what's up)

Man: I have some news for you....there's a man by the name Menzi Ngcobo going around busy asking questions about you

Cass: ooh is it?

Drew: yeah do you know him by any chance

Cass: yeah I know that fool....don't worry I'll take care of him

Drew: sure boss

Cass: I hope all is going well cause in the next couple of days I will pay all of you a visit....if anyone is stealing from me tell them to kill themselves before I do

Drew: sure boss

Cass: everything better be in order Andrew or

this time I'll cut off the rest of your hand

he said with a threatening tone

Drew: i...don...don't worry boss everything is in order

Cass: good....and my dogs

Drew: well taken of

Cass: that's what I want to hear

he then dropped the call and clicked his tongue

Cass: this boy is about to get on my fucken last nerve

he searched for Menzi's numbers and called them

Menzi: hello

Cass: I heard you're asking questions about me...ufun'ukwazini ngami (what do you wanna know about me)

Menzi: who's this?

Cass: don't fucken pretend like you don't know who you're talking to nx....its Castiel....now ask away I don't have all day

Menzi chuckled

Menzi: ooh it's you

Cass: what do you wanna know?

Menzi: I want to know where you get the nerve to buy Kazi as if she's some kind of a toy

Cass chuckled

Cass: ooh I see

Menzi: nyoooh you see....is that all you can say msoono?

Castiel chuckled

Cass: siyathukana manje weMenzi (we're insulting each other now Menzi?)

Menzi: fuck you... umthenga kanjani umuntu

heh.....how can you buy a human
being....Khanti uyindoda enjani wena satani
(what kind of man are you satan!)

he said with an angry voice

Cass: wena uyindoda enjani yokubulala uyihlo
(what kind of a man does it make to kill your
own father) and ooh did you tell her who
killed her unborn baby

Menzi kept quiet

Cass: I may have TAKEN her from a crime
scene but I ended up saving her life then I let
her go..... if I wanted to do anything to her
believe me you wouldn't have found her alive or
even her body so fuck you!....i ended up saving
her life because you were too much of a fucken
coward to choose between her and your
murderous wife so ungazongitshela amasimba
uyangizwa msoono (so don't tell me shit you
hear me you cunt)

Menzi: don't talk about my late wife you bastard!

Cass: you mean that whore that fucked you and your father and even got pregnant by your father....please man

Menzi swallowed shocked....he wondered how he knew about that

Menzi: just stay away from Kazi you bastard....ngeke ngikuxwayise futhi uyangizwa (i will not warn you again you hear me)....stay the fuck away from my woman!

Cass: eh lalela la sphukuphuku senja (listen here you stupid dog) im a happily married man with a handsome new baby so I don't have time for your Kazi....now stop asking around about me or I'll make you, trust me you don't wanna die because of a woman and leave your kids as orphans!

Menzi: fuck you!

Cass: fuck you too nx

he dropped the call

Cass: fucken pussy!

***then he froze as he heard something upstairs and he moved as fast as a lightning rushing there ***

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

Ray: morning baby

*** he said kissing her cheek and she snapped out of her trail of thoughts***

Mbali: hey

he went to pour himself a cup of coffee

Mbali: how are you feeling?

Ray: like I was hit by a train

he said then took a sip of his black coffee with no sugar

Mbali: shame askies sthandwa sam

he looked at her and he could see something was bothering her

Ray: what's bothering you my flower

she sighed

Mbali: I think I was rude mostly to Naledi and Amo

he took another sip

Ray: what happened?

she sighed

Mbali: I felt like Naledi and Amo were judging me about Saint so I became defensive.... in a rude way...i think

Ray: ok

Mbali: I also reminded Naledi about.....Heath's disorder

Ray breathed out loud

Ray: why would you do that my flower?

he said looking at her with a serious look on her face

Mbali: I don't know....i just became defensive cause they just became dramatic about the Saint issue

he raised an eyebrow at her

Ray: dramatic?

Mbali: he saved their lives Ray so they weren't supposed to be that judgmental

He sighed and shook his head

Ray: weren't you dramatic when you found out about La Parca and Saint

she kept quiet looking at her cup of rooibos

Ray: do you think Thandi was like "ok" to Ruu when he told her that he's a wizard and even showed her some of his powers?

she didn't say anything

Ray: do you think Phumi was like “hell yeah” when Cass told her he’s a vampire

she swallowed

Ray: at your home you have beasts my flower meaning your world is way different to theirs....those things are not real in their world so it was normal for them to be “dramatic” as you say when they learned about Saint

she sighed

Ray: you need to apologize to them more especially Naledi cause what you did was wrong and the fact that you feel guilty about it all shows you were wrong my flower

She sighed

Ray: you know what to do.... you know Naledi is kind and a sweet person and she’s so fond of you as for Amo I don’t know her that well.....you need to fix this and maybe teach her about Saint cause whether you like it or not my flower

we are family and you know how important family is

Mbali: I know

Ray: and knowing Star, she's hurt wherever she is so you need to fix this my flower

Mbali: ok

*** she sighed and he got closer and perked her lips***

Ray: I love you

Mbali: I love you too

Ray: and thank you and Saint for saving all the women and children...well except for Mj and Sbu

Mbali: mmmmh I saw that they weren't with us in the basement... didn't Saint take them too

Ray chuckled

Ray: they fainted under one of the tables

***Mbali's eyes popped out and she laughed ***

Mbali: wait what?

Ray: I think they need counseling

Mbali: ooh my God

she said laughing

Mbali: where's Mj now

Mj: why am I hearing name beautiful someone

he said looking at Mbali then he looked at Ray

Mj: and ugly someone

he said walking inside the kitchen and Mbali laughed

Mbali: cause we're gossiping about you haw

she said sticking her tongue out to him and he looked over at Ray

Mj: wow and he told her...great just great!

he said in a sarcastic tone which made Ray and Mbali to laugh

Ray: my wife and I don't hide things from each other

Mj: abeg that's just a lame excuse bros, you're just a snitch period....his heart do you know of any churches nearby

Ray laughed

Mbali: babe stop it!

she said reprimanding Ray

Mbali: yes bab'mcane wa bo nunuza there is

Mj: can you drive me there

Ray continued to laugh

Mbali: Ray!

Ray: im sorry my flower it's just lovely seeing the mighty Michael Chukwuemeka Owoh-Masden II shaken like this

Mbali held in her laughter

Mj: mxm

Mbali: don't mind him bab'mcane.....he's also shaken by his wife most of the time so he's not better than you

Ray: excuse you

he said in a dramatic manner

Mj: that sounds gay bros...no homo!

Ray: mxm shut up my friend

Mbali and MJ Laughed then Ray's phone rang and he was shocked to see who was calling him....he walked away answering it

Ray: Mr K.....

AT ONE OF THE HOUSE POPS USES WHEN HE'S IN GAUTENG

Snakes: isn't there anything that can be done

Pops

their father shook his head looking down...he just told them the bad news

Smiso: when are they coming back in the country?

Pops: in two days' time

Jay: why didn't you tell us...why now huh.....you could've told us and maybe we would've done something or found a cure somehow

Pops: what cure Nkosenye heh..... and do you think I had a say in all this!

he said shouting

Jase: but still you could've told us!

Pops: she didn't want you all to know, it was her decision ok!

he said with an angry voice

Thor: how long does she have Pops

Pops sighed and he rubbed his head and he stood up

Pops: a few days or less... angazi (I don't know)

Them: WHAT?

Muzi: I can't believe this.....how can you, baba and uMa do this to us huh.....how can you rob us like this.....didn't we deserve to spend time with her before she..... how can you be so selfish!

he shouted getting up then he walked away*

Pops: Muzi!

Jay: he has a right to be angry Pops....you, Ma and baba just robbed us of the opportunity to spend the remaining days of her life with her

Pops: she didn't want you to....she said I shouldn't tell you ok....all this time I didn't know that she was sick until I tracked them down and

she was in hospital in USA

Nhlaka got up and paced around with his jaws clenched

Thor: how's baba?

he asked Pops who looked horrible, his beard was uncut and not trimmed....his eyes had eye bags and they were red.....he was wearing sweatpants and a simple shirt with sneakers, something he hardly wears....he just looked like shit to be more precise

Pops: he's not coping

he sighed and sat down again

Pops: I've never seen him that broken before.....he pretends to be strong around her but when he's alone.....

he shook his head....Thorsten sighed shaking his head looking down

Jay: what I want to know is why we weren't told

that she's sick.....Muzi knows shit in the underworld im sure....

Pops: you're sure what Nkosenye.....What huh?.....do you think I didn't beg her to allow me to tell you all....she made me swear....she even said it's her dying wish so what the fuck was I supposed to do huh!

He said with an angry voice

Jay: oksalayo ubufanele ukus'tshela period! (the bottom line is you were supposed to tell us)

Pops: HAI FOTSEK MAN.....UYANGIZWA FOSEK!

he roared pointing at Jay

Thor: Pops!

Pops: nx

he got up and walked away

Thor: was that necessary Jay!

Jay: hei khaume tuu (leave me alone please)

he also got up and walked away....Snakes sat down and he rubbed his face

Snakes: yah neh

Jase: why is this happening....why didn't we see ukuthi she's sick....were we too ignorant to see or kanjani?

Thor: I don't think so.....remember baba and her left just like that, they told us they are going to tour the world or shit like that....there were times where we couldn't even get through to them via phone and there were also times where baba would make excuses every time we asked to speak to Ma

Snakes: we should've known something was wrong Smie....we should've qha!

they all kept quiet for some time

Jase: who's gonna tell Mbali

Thor: I'll do it

Pops: no I'll handle it

he said walking back in and Thor nodded and they kept quiet again

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

Castiel: babe....bello?

He said brushing her short hair and she slowly opened her eyes and she moved her eyeballs around inspecting her surroundings

Castiel: you're awake....shit.....thank you bello
thank you sthandwa sam

he said bending down to her face and like that Phumi's body reacted and she grabbed Cass by his neck sitting up slowly with her eyes turning red

Cass: my love it's me....it's me Castiel

she quickly got up still holding him by his neck

Phumi: what did you do to me?

*** she asked as she looked around with a panicking facial expression***

Castiel: just...let me go and...and I'll explain everything to you....please

her hearing enhancement kicked in and she heard a tick tock sound and she quickly looked to where it was coming from and it was the wall clock....she tightened the grip around his neck looking at him

Phumi: WHAT DID YOU DO TO ME....WHY IS THAT CLOCK LOUD LIKE THAT!

Cass: calm down and let me explain please

***then she started hearing many sounds all over and she screamed and she pushed Castiel to her it wasn't that hard but because she now had super human powers....he moved backwards fast, so fast that he hit the wall with his back and it cracked all over and he fell on

the floor***

Phumi: ooh my God....ooh my God....

she said looking at her hands with her eyes popped out then back at Castiel who was slowly getting up

Castiel: damn you're strong

Phumi: WHAT DID YOU DO TO ME!

She roared getting angrier and her fangs got longer and sharper even her voice changed

Cass: babe calm down....please calm down

Phumi: YOU DID THIS TO ME.....YOU MADE ME LIKE THIS!

She spoke with an angry scary voice

Phumi: YOU DID THIS TO ME!

Cass: bello calm down!

***her intension was “ like a normal person” rush to him but because of the new speed she

has acquired she moved like lightning towards him.... Cass moved out of the way and she ran through the wall leaving a huge hole through it and she ran through another wall on the other side leaving a huge hole on it too and she flew from the second floor all the way down to the ground floor and she landed on top of a dining table breaking it to pieces....Cass sighed shaking his head and he went downstairs via the stairs***

Cass: are you now calm bello?

she moved broken glassed that were on top of her and she got up

Phumi: WHY DID YOU MOVE OUT OF THE WAY YOU BASTARD!

he sighed

Cass: bello you need to calm down please!

Phumi: YOU GONNA PAY FOR THAT!

She charged at him and she tried to punch him but he ducked....she screamed and tried to punch him again but stopped midway when she heard a baby crying....it was so loud that she covered her ears screaming

Cass: damn it!

he moved to the nursery that is upstairs leaving her there screaming

Naledi: hello

she said answering her phone

Mbali: hey unjani? (how are you)

Naledi: ke shap wena? (im ok and you)

Mbali: hai ngiright(im good)...ummm

****she then cleared her throat***

Mbali: ngiyaxolisa Naledi (im sorry Naledi)...i was mean and disrespectful towards you and

uAmo and I would like to apologize

Naledi swallowed hard surprised

Mbali: umm Naledi are you still there?

Naledi cleared her throat

Naledi: ye...yeah

Mbali: ohk ummm like I was saying.....im sorry....i just became defensive forgetting that my world is different than yours and what I have deemed normal is actually not in your world

Naledi sighed

Naledi: I hear you and its ok I forgive you

***Mbali: you sure?

Naledi sighed again

Naledi: yeah....i won't lie Mbali i felt disrespected but I had a talk with Heath and he made me understand why you reacted like that

Mbali: I had a talk with Ray too and he also

made me realize why you and Amo reacted like that too

they chuckled

Mbali: im sorry Nkanyezi (Star), it wasn't my intentions to disrespect you like that....umdala kunami(you are older than me) so normally I wouldn't have spoken to you like that.....I just became defensive but im sorry for being mean

Naledi breathed out with a smile on her face

Naledi: water under the bridge sthandwa

Mbali: yho thank you babe....you don't know how relieved im feeling now

Naledi: so how's my future heartbreaker son and beautiful daughter?

****Mbali smiled wide and she answered her then they also spoke about other things***

Mbali was now calling Amo...her numbers rang unanswered the first time but she tried it again and luckily she answered on the third ring

Amo: Mbali

Mbali: hey unjani? (how are you)

Amo: ke shap (im ok)

She said with a bit of attitude and Mbali cleared her throat

Mbali: ok....ummmm Amo I called to apologize for how I reacted with the whole Saint thing

Amo: ok

Mbali kept quiet a bit

Mbali: Amo ngiyaxolisa (im sorry) for how I spoke to you and Naledi, I was just being defensive but Ray made me realize that our world are not the same so I shouldn't expect you to be understanding just like that

Amo: look Mbali I appreciate that you called to apologize cause vele you were wrong

Mbali raised her eyebrow

Amo: Anyway I forgive you for your disrespect but that doesn't change the fact that I can't be associated with demonic things....im sorry

Mbali: ooh...wow?

Amo: im a Christian and I don't want any involvement with such things I hope you understand

Mbali: but being married to a gangster is holy right

She said in a sarcastic tone

Amo: a gangster is better than a demon child and husband sweety

***Mbali chuckled...PISSED by what Amo said

Mbali: hehe uthini? (excuse me)

Amo: it's the truth mosadi.....anyway let's not get too much into that all im saying is I forgive you but I'd like some distance from you, your husband and your child

Mbali: heh!

she said and laughed shocked

Mbali: yasin Amo hambofa nx (you know what Amo go to hell)

she then dropped the call on her

Mbali: lesfebe singijwaela kabi hehe (this bitch doesn't know me)

she said all worked up

Mbali was now on a conference call with the Khumalo wives

Nomhle: you know you were forgiven immediately after you acted like a demon's mother right?

they all laughed

Kedi: true mara hey that defensive mode was on another level

Imani: she was like “ don’t act all holy and shit Naledi”

she mimicked her voice and they laughed

Mbali: ladies please I already feel bad nkosi yam

Ntombi: are you even allowed to say “nkosi yam” wena mother of a demon

laughter

Mbali: mxm leave me alone sisNtombi assomblief

Ntombi: ngiyazibuzela nje haw (im just asking).....we need to be taught on how to behave around the mighty Saint

more laughter

Mbali: mxm

Imani: Ntombi yeka omunye umtwana
haw...(Ntombi leave the child alone)

Noma: anyway our princess we have already
forgiven you so let's talk about something
serious please

Nomhle: and what's that Mrs black Jesus

Noma: I think you guys were right....i think im
pregnant

Kedi: yeah we all know that Noma that's not a
surprise at all

Noma: mxm

Imani: does Muzi know?

Noma: we all know he does but he hasn't said
anything to me

Ntombi: Maybe he wants you to find out
yourself love

Noma sighed

Noma: yeah plus the way he's treating me these days shows that he knows, he doesn't even entertain any arguments I start whenever my mood swings start acting up, he takes blame all the damn time and I noticed that he sleeps with his hand on my belly every night

Mbali: well I guess congratulations are in order sisNoma

Noma: eish ntwana

they laughed

Ntombi: wow and the little rascal is already making you speak like Jabu

they laughed

Noma: tsek Ntombi

Ntombi: nawe tsek

Noma: ngiyotshela uMuzi (im going to tell Muzi)

Laughter

Ntombi: I'll tell Nhlaka

***Laughter ***

Kedi: and I'll tell Nkosi

more laughter

Nomhle: mina ngiyotshela uNkosenye dade (im going to tell Nkosenye)

more laughter

Imani: well mina ngiyotshela uSmiso (well im going to tell Smiso)

they kept quiet a bit

Them: hai hai hai

they all exclaimed hysterically

Ntombi: yho hai leave uSmie out of this

then they all laughed out loud

Imani: pussies!

more laughter

Noma: ai so guys have you heard about the trip back home tomorrow

Them: yeah!

Mbali: even uRay said dad wants to see him

Kedi: yeah and I have a bad feeling about this trip guys and I don't know why

Nomhle: mmh I mean the husbands were called by Pops and when Jay came back he looked like his world is coming to an end

Mbali sighed

Mbali: i had a terrible nightmare last night....i dreamed that I was crying my lungs out but I didn't know why

Ntombi: are you sure it wasn't Saint

Mbali: I know ukuthi umdala kunami sisNtombi neh but ngizokuthuka.... I swear mxmiii stru ngizokuthuka ngithi fosek (I know you're older

than me Sister Ntombi but I'll insult you....i
swear I'll insult you by saying piss off)

***she said in a joking manner and they
laughed***

Ntombi: tsek nawe

Mbali: mxm ngiyomtshela uRay no Saint (Im
going to tell Ray and Saint)

more laughter

TWO DAYS LATER (KZN)

***They all arrived two days ago and the women
were still in the dark with why they were called
here in the middle of the week, even the kids
were also surprised to be visiting their granny
and mkhulu's house during school days but
they were happy cause they weren't going to
school ***

Imani: the guys have been in the study room for

quite some time now....i wonder what's happening

they all sighed then they heard a roar of an engine outside and almost immediately the guys came out and stood by the entrance not looking ok at all.....after some time the door opened and Pops walked in and he held the door wide open and in walked Baba carrying Ma in his arms with her head rested on his chest

Muzi: no...no....hai hai

he said with a breaking voice

Melusi: ooh okhokho bam ningenzani
kodwa....kungani ningiphatha kabi
kanjena!(ooh my ancestors.... why are you
hurting me like this)

he said as tears ran down his cheeks

Jay: Ma....mama....Baba

***he said with a breaking voice too with tears

running down his cheeks***

Jase: this is not happening....this is not happening...

he said that over and over while shaking his head.....the women then rushed to them and stopped midway when they saw Ma and Baba but more especially the state Ma was in

Mbali: Ma...Ma...Mama

she said with her hands shaking

Nomhle: ooh nkosi yam

she said as she put her shaking hand on her mouth

Mbali: Baba what's going on...why is mama looking like this....dad?

she said crying as she walked to her father who had his jaws clenched looking down

Ray: shit this is bad

he whispered to himself.... as for Snakes he was looking at Ma with his bottom lip shaking and tears running down his cheek

Smiso: let me help you with that Pops

he said with a voice full of hurt walking towards pops who now was holding a crying Mbali in his arms....he took the bag and followed Baba.....Baba took Ma to the bedroom that is downstairs and he carefully laid her down and adjusted the pillows and covered her with a throw blanket and kissed her forehead....she looked thin and pale, she had no eyebrows or eyelashes anymore and she had a head wrap which covered her bald head....she weakly smiled at him

Ma: ngiyabonga Mbulazi wam omuhle and ngiyakuthanda ngentliziyo yam yonke (thank you my handsome Mbulazi and I love you with all my heart)

Baba's tears fell and he quickly wiped them.....he also lost a tremendous weight due to stress....Mbali rushed in and she cried louder as she laid eyes on Ma properly, Baba turned giving his wife his back and he looked down defeated.....you could see he has given up

Mbali: Mama why didn't you tell me....why didn't you tell me

She said crying and Ma's eyes got filled with tears as she looked at her

Ma: ngiya....kuthanda M...bali.... (I love you Mbali) never for...forget...that

Mbali: Baba....Baba you...you need to save her.....we need to save her Baabaa...i can't live without her I can't....pleaseBaabaa....please

*** she begged him then she rushed to Ray who just walked in along with everyone***

Mbali: baby summon La Parca to come and help her, I'll sacrifice anything he wants me to

sacrifice as long as she lives Ray...i can't live without her Ray....we all can't live without her ***she said crying on her knees begging Ray who looked hurt seeing his flower like this....Ma closed her eyes as tears gushed out heart broken by Mbali's cries....the wives where standing by the door crying too....luckily all the kids were with nannies down in the cinema room***

Pops: princess

Mbali: no dad... please do something
ngiyakucela Baabaa

she turned and went to Smiso

Mbali: bhuti please do something Ma can't leave us

she begged him too then looked at Muzi who didn't look good at all...he was even sweating

Mbali: BhutMuzi...bhutMuzi ngiyakcela (brother Muzi....brotherMuzi please)

she cried and Ray held her

Ray: my flower come

she turned and cried on his chest and he walked out with her....Melusi then raised his head and frowned looking at Baba

Melusi: Baba

Baba: iyeke Melusi (let it go Melusi)

Melusi: no...no baba...ngiyakucela no (please no)

Smiso: what is it Melusi

Baba: nothing!

they all looked at Melusi who walked out with his tears running down his cheeks

Ma: please lethani abazukulu bami(please bring my grandchildren) I want to see them

Smiso went out

***She did see all the kids and she couldn't stop complementing Cataleya's beauty, she even named her Buhlebendalo...as for Tiara, she was taken out of the bedroom cause she understood what was going on so she was crying hysterically... Mnqobi, Lwandle, Gugu, Thula and Nqobile could also see that their grandmother wasn't the same grandmother they are used to so they cried too.....

Anyway now Ma was coughing out blood and Baba was cleaning her up while Pops was sitting on the other side of the bed holding her shaking hand, the guys were just standing around the bed looking like shit....pain and hurt was visible on their faces with Muzi even sweating...as for the women and children, they were asked to go out while Ray was still with Mbali upstairs who now looked weak***

Ma: mfana wami (my boy) I want you to know that this is not me just dying but me just going back home

she said to Pops with her voice sounding stronger than when she just arrived

Pops: how can you go back home while we still need you Ma

Smiso swallowed hard when he saw that her eyes where now clear while....she couldn't even look them in the eyes now

Ma: I know that you're not much of a believer sthandwa sam but I am and im happy to be going home

Pops just shook his head and he sniffed

Smiso: Ma please look me in the eyes

***she just smiled but she didn't ***

Ma: let me go my boys...all of you need to let me go cause im ready....I've made peace with it

and I have also prepared your grandfather so let me go ngiyanicela (please)

cries broke out from the guys while Smiso just looked up with his jaws clenched

Ma: call everyone in.....i want us to pray

***Smiso and Jase slowly walked out and went to call the women, children and Ray.....She asked them to sing her favorite songs SELI LAKA with Amadodana Ase Wesile's tune and to also sing DUMELA FELA still with Amadodana Ase Wesile's tuneshe always makes the wives sing the songs for her whenever they come to visit and she always listens to Amadodana Ase Wesile all the time...She's a dedicated Methodist church member and also part of Women's Manyano (a Methodist Women's Prayer and Service union "MCSA").....shewas smiling as they sang the two songsshe then coughed out blood and Baba cleaned her then she looked at Imani with

the smile still on her face then she quickly stared into space***

Ma: Imani

Imani: Ma

Ma: please pray for us sthandwa sam...i know...you're a shy person kodwa now I want you to pray for us

Imani swallowed

Imani: ummm ok Ma.....ummm let's bow our heads and ummm close our eyes

they all did and Ma just closed her eyes with that smile still on her face

Imani: Modimo ntate, Modimo morwa, Modimo moyo o'halalelang..... Modimo waka ke eme pele ga sefatlhego sa gao ka boikokobetso kere Jehovah yo o matla theoga ka bogolo o tle kwano....ngwana gao yo o lerato le pelo entle o botlhokong, ke re ramasedi o tle o tlose ditlhabi

tse a di utlwang....Monhadi wa go loka, ke kopa o bontshe bogolo ba gao ka yena..... o botlhokong Mama and gape o botlhokwa mo maphelong a rona Jehovah...ke kopa o theoge Modimo waka o beye letsogo la gao le le halalelang mo go yena gore a fole...

she said crying.....all the women were sobbing as she prayed

Imani: nothing is impossible with you Jesus....absolutely nothing so im begging you my Lord, heal her....take away all the pain she's feeling.....Ma is the most selfless, kindhearted and giving human being I have ever met in my entire life.....she always looks out for everyone, she always makes everyone happy and she always put everyone's happiness first so this time God im begging you to grant her her heart's desire....she's your loyal servant my God....she helps the needy....she never judges and she praises your name all the time so

please grant her her heart's desire and heal her
and also heal our hearts My God....we still need
her Modimo a lot but if ke thato ya gao ra
amogela ebole ra tlhaloganya (we accept and
we also understand) but if not then bring her
back to her old self and show how great you are
to her enemies.....heal her My Lord....Heal her
the best way you know how...thank you
Jesus....Thank you God....Thank you the Holy
Spirit.....Amen

Everyone: Amen!

***she wiped her tears and Kedi side hugged
her***

Snakes: Ma

***she had her eyes closed and her lips were
curved into a sweet slight smile***

Pops: Ma

***he said squeezing her hand but she didn't
move***

Baba: sthandwa sam!

he said checking her pulse and it wasn't there....he then sighed and bowed his head and Tears ran down his cheeks.....Pops got up and searched for a pulse on her neck and he didn't feel anything, he then held on to the bed as his shoulders moved and Tears dropped on the bed

Mbali: no....no....no....Maaaa..... Maaaa
hai.....Maaa vuka ngiyakcelaaaaa (Maa wake
up im begging you)

*** she said screaming and crying and the ladies started crying loud too as the guys rushed to the bed and they shook her begging her to wake up whilst crying except for Ray and Smiso....Ray was now carrying a fainted Mbali and he walked out with her and Smiso was comforting his wife who was crying out loud....the next thing Ntombi fainted too and they rushed to her and Snakes picked her up

and walked out with her followed by Smiso and Imani***

*** the guys were now sitting on the floor with their heads between their thighs crying while the remaining ladies were also sitting on the floor crying***

Baba: boys take your wives out and give me and my wife some space

he said with a low tone

Melusi: baba

Baba: don't make me ask you all again

they slowly got up and took their wives and slowly walked out

Baba: you too Bongani....i need some time with your mother

Pops kissed his mother's forehead and he walked to his father and squeezed his shoulder and his father put his hand on top of his

Baba: ngiyakuthanda mfana wami (I love you son)

tears ran down his cheeks

Pops: nami ngiyakuthanda Baba (I love you too Baba)

Baba patted his hand gently and Pops kissed his bald head and walked out....Baba smiled at his wife's body as tears ran down his face...he got up and bent to her level and perked her lips

Baba: ngiyakthanda (I love you) and thank you for being mine and giving me the best years of my life...rest in perfect peace mama im sure all the angels in heaven are waiting for you ready to celebrate your arrival.....don't be mad for what im about to do please cause you know I can't live without you

***he kissed her forehead and went to the left side of the bed and took his gun from his back

then he laid next to her and put the gun on his right side of his head and he closed his eyes and pulled the trigger***

***Everyone heard the loud gun shot and they all froze for a bit then the guys stood up except for Melusi, he was just sitting there with his head bowed sniffing..... the guys rushed to the bedroom with Ray running down the stairs from upstairs....they opened the door and rushed in then they stopped midway and they all screamed crying with their hands on top of their heads when they saw Baba dead next to Ma..... the ladies were about to rush in and Ray stopped them and he took them back to the living room as they cried cause they knew what had happened.... what Baba did....they knew there's no Baba without Ma.....

Anyway the guys including Pops were crying as they looked at Ma and Baba's corpses lying there.... Then Muzi clenched to his chest with

his right hand bending forward as he felt a sharp pain on his chest....the pain was so sharp that it made him struggle to breathe, Smiso saw him and he rushed to him and he held him as he clenched to his chest sweating and making choking sounds as he struggled to breathe***

Smiso: Muzi don't do this man...breathe....breathe!

the guys rushed to him and they helped him out of the bedroom....as soon as they left the bedroom the ladies saw them and they got up and rushed to them

Noma: OOH MY GOD BABY....BABY WHAT'S WRONG!

she said panicking as she saw the state he was in

Jay: let's take him to the basement Ray is a doctor the hospital is too far!

***as they were about to carry him he made the

final choking sound and he closed his eyes and his body became heavier and loose....the guys tightened the grip around his body so he doesn't fall down***

Jase: Muzi....Muzi ungayiyenzi lento (don't do this)

he said with his heart beating fast

Pops: mfana wami ungayiyenzi lento (my boy please don't do this to me).....please fight.....fight for me Muzi!

he begged him

Snakes: Muzi...Muzi vula amehlo mfowethu (open your eyes bro)

they put him down and Ray quickly checked his pulse and there wasn't any.....he did CPR with Noma crying her lungs out begging him to wake up

Noma: baby fight this....don't do this to me

ngiyakcela!

*** Ray tried CPR for some time but Muzi didn't wake up...he checked his pulse again and it was clear he was gone....he checked the time and sat down butt flat on the floor shaking his head***

Kedi: why did you stop Ray....

Ray: im sorry he's gone

Snakes: no....no he's not.....he's not....he's probably faking it

the guys brothers were now walking around with their hands on their hands with tears running down their faces

Ray: im sorry he's gone man....Muzi is dead

Noma took off her head wrap and shoulder scarf and threw them down shaking her head

Noma: qa....mh mh....no....no....not my Muzi

***Nomhle tried to hold her and she

screamed***

Noma: NOOOO....NOOO NOT MY
MUZI....NOT UMYENI WAMI (not my husband)

***she screamed like a mad woman..... Imani
screamed looking at Noma's legs, blood was
streaming down her legs....Noma looked down
and she saw the blood then she looked at
Muzi's body on the floor and she fainted***

****SOMEONE PLEASE TRANSLATE IMANI'S
PRAYER TO ENGLISH ON THE FIRST
PARAGRAPH, ITS IN A MIXTURE OF TSWANA
AND SOTHO.....I THINK****

MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

INSERT.....34

KZN

Noma was rushed to the hospital by Smie, Imani and Jase while the rest stayed back...Mbali and Ntombi were now awake but they were weak and it was worse now that they found out about Muzi's death....About Muzi, well he was covered with a sheet on the floor while Ma and Baba were also covered with sheets too in the bedroom

Snakes: konje we have to call the stupid cops since there's a suicide death here

***No one said anything.....they were sitting in the lounge defeated hey were waiting to hear

from Jase and Smiso about Noma's condition..... then Ray's phone rang and he sighed and answered***

Ray: bros this is not a good time, some.....

Ruu disturbed him

Ruu: are you sitting with Mbali's father

Ray: ummm no

Ruu: go find him and call the remaining brothers to join you, I need to speak to all of you

Ray: umm ohk

he said surprised but he didn't ask any questions cause Ruu sounded serious

Ray: where's your father Mamba

he just shrugged his shoulders

Ray: let's go find him it's important

***no one moved then out of the blue they all got up and rushed all over the house searching

for Pops thinking maybe he also decided to take his life....they found him in the backyard drinking straight from a whiskey bottle with tears running down his cheeks...he seemed broken***

Jay: Pops

he said with a breaking voice and he ignored them

Ruu: he needs to get sober as in now Ray!

Ruu said over the phone

Ray: Mr K I have Ruu on the phone he says its important

Pops: just leave me alone....i want to be alone

***he said with a drunkard tone ***

Jay: Pops we need...

Pops: EI NGITHE LEAVE ME THE FUCK ALONE
ANIZWI YINI!

he shouted at them

Ruu: put me on loud speaker bros

Ray did

Ray: you're on loudspeaker

Ruu: ya'll listen to me carefully.....i can bring back Muzi but I won't be able to do that with your father drunk

Jay and Snakes looked at Ray with frowns on their faces and Pops laughed out loud

Pops: ei wizard, my boy is dead so stop with your nonsense nx

he gulped down a tremendous amount of his drink and he burped

Ruu: I can bring him back cause he was sacrificed for the one with a beast to live but on this case your father can't come back cause he blew his brains out so the good doctor will wonder around with no place to go cause even

your ancestors can't find him

Pops became almost sober instantly...he put the bottle down slowly and also got up slowly

Pops: wh...what?

Jay and Snakes had their eyes popped out

Snakes: he was what?

Ruu: the person that created this beast thing left no stone unturned but he didn't think it through for when the one with a beast can't be saved and what will happen to the soul of the one sacrificed

Jay: Pops what is he talking about

he asked with his heart pounding hard

Pops: I'll explain everything later ok

Ruu: so am I allowed

Pops: do anything to bring back my son

man...anything!

Ruu: but there's a catch

Jay: ofcourse there is mxm

he said sarcastically

Ruu: I don't like your tone Spilo!

he said with an intimidating tone

Pops: Jay don't piss me off ok, if you got nothing positive to say then shut the fuck up!

silence

Pops: go on Ruslan

Ruu: don't freak out but Ray I want you to do a heart surgery on Muzi

Khumalos: what?

Ray: go on....

Ruu: I want you to switch Muzi's heart with his grandfather's

Khumalos: ini? (what)

Snakes: ai yaqala ke inkathazo madoda!
(trouble is starting now)

Jay just laughed shaking his head

Ruu: then preserve Muzi's heart in a sealed
bottled container and keep it safe for me

***The Khumalo's had freaked out expressions
on their faces***

Ruu: make sure the room that Muzi's body will
be in is approximately 4 degrees

Celsius....make sure the body doesn't freeze to
a rock I just want it and its internal and external
organs to not start decaying

Ray: ok

Ruu: as for Killer you guys need to pay a greedy
funeral parlor to make sure they take Killer's
body and not ask questions as to why his body
has fresh surgical scars and also to leave the

police out of it

Ray looked at Pops

Pops: noted

Ruu: Ray Thandi is on her way to the airport now she's coming to you so someone should go pick her up at the airport she's bringing a potion that you'll have to inject in an IV that will be attached to Muzi's veins after the surgery is done....it will do its work until I come back

Ray: ok where are you now

Ruu: im waiting for my flight....im going to Guinea Bissau I need some potions there in my Ghost asylum plot

Snakes sighed shaking his head

Snakes: he just said Ghost asylum

he whispered

Ray: ok anything else we need to do

Ruu: make sure the ladies go and watch over Muzi's wife after the doctors are done with her, she's gonna kill herself

Them: ooh shit!

Ruu: they shouldn't leave her sight and ya'll make sure I find her at the house when I get there

***Snakes quickly took out his phone and dialed it walking away and Pops breathed out looking up with his hands on his waist ***

Ruu: Ray Muzi's body better not start decaying man or else he'll need another body and ya'll you'll explain to his wife and all the kids why they should call a stranger dad

Ray: alright got it

Ruu: and there's another catch.....Muzi will be immortal once he wakes up

Ray: woooh...what?

Jay: immortal as in he won't be able to die ever
Ruu: the only time he'll die is if his original heart
is stabbed with a silver knife....anyway enough
with the talk go and do as I said and I'll see ya'll
in two days' time

Pops sighed and he shook his head

Ruu: and Ray this operation needs to be done
before midnight cause that's when La Parca will
wake up to come and take his soul to hell

Ray swallowed

Ruu: but having his heart inside Muzi will delay
everything and I'll do the ritual and Killer's spirit
will live in Muzi....the devil cant have him man
he's been waiting for him for like forever so im
about to take food out of his mouth before he
can swallow

he then chuckled

Jay: this is just too much

Ruu: ok get to work guys and don't forget to go and pick Thandi up

Ray: ok man talk to you later

Ruu dropped the call and Ray sighed

Ray: Mr K

Pops: let's go get busy

Snakes walked towards them

Snakes: Smie says Imani is also admitted in hospital

Pops: for ini manje (for what now)....what the hell is happening in this family!

Snakes: he says she's gonna be fine, she had cramps on her stomach so they immediately admitted her but he said both her and the baby are ok

Pops breathed out looking down

Pops: Nhlaka take Kedi and Nomhle to the

hospital and give them clear instructions.....they shouldn't leave her sight, even if she goes to the bathroom they should go with her and also warn them not to mention anything about the deaths to anyone, also tell Jase and Smiso.... as for Mbali and Ntombi they'll help the nannies to look after the kids

Snakes nodded

Pops: then when you arrive at the hospital take Jase and go to Mpisane funeral Parlour and get him to come and take the bodies with no questions asked, pay him any amount he wants

Snakes: ok

he walked away

Pops: Jay go and prepare the white room for the operation then come and help us with the bodies

Jay nodded and walked away then Pops sighed

Pops: do you think he'll be able to bring him back

Ray: he brought Castiel's wife back....trust me he will

Pops: so he likes playing God

Ray chuckles

Ray: Ruu is one of the most powerful being out there, that man got my soul back from the devil, I may have ended up with La Parca but to tell you the truth I'd choose being La Parca's carrier any day over being the devils bitch

Pops sighed

Pops: ai let's go

***Ray followed him....The nannies were warned not to let the kids leave the cinema room....the room is packed with junk food and there's also a toilet and the seats are all recliners and there's also Airwick mattresses for them to

sleep on***

AT THE HOSPITAL

Thorsten quickly raised his head when he felt Imani move....she opened her eyes and she found Thor looking at her

Thor: hey beautiful

she smiled weakly at him

Thor: how are you feeling?

she swallowed hard and her eyes got filled with tears then they fell

Thor: no no...don't do that my love....please don't

he said getting up and he wiped her tears off

Imani: I killed her Smie....i prayed and she died

Thor: Ma had cancer Immy and she was on the

last stage....she came back home to die in peace baby so you didn't kill her

she sniffed

Imani: it hurts Smie...it hurts so bad

Thor swallowed

Thor: I know....believe me I know

he said with a low tone and she held his hand and he weakly smiled at her squeezing it

Imani: Im sorry for you loss baby, I know you're a man and a tough one at that but im here for you....you can be tough out there but this chest is yours to be vulnerable....we will cry together

he kissed her lips

Thor: I love you

Imani: I love you too

*** he brushed her belly and she breathed

out***

Imani: how's Noma

Thor sighed

Thor: she'll be fine with time.....

tears filled her eyes

Thor: its ok baby, I know it's hard but don't stress too much....think of the baby please

she sniffed nodding then Thor's phone rang and it was Jase

Thor: Jase

Jase: Mamba is here

Thor: ok im coming

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

Castiel: relax your muscles so you don't squash him

she did as told

Phumi: why can't I cry...i want to cry but I cant

she said getting worked up

Castiel: calm down or you'll scare him

he said softly and he saw her face softening up a bit

Phumi: im a mother

she said to herself and the baby made cute sound opening his eyes a bit then closing them again and she smiled wide

Castiel: I love you Phumi

she ignored him

Castiel: I had to do what I had to do to bring you back....i couldn't lose you bello and Thiago needs you

Phumi: should I put him down here

Cass sighed

Castiel: yeah

she tried by all means to gently put him down and she managed....yesterday Cass came down with Thiago and he begged her to concentrate and try to minimize the loudness of the sounds she's hearing and after some she managed to minimize the sounds she kept hearing....then he convinced her to hold Thiago and when she did and after that she didn't want to put him down ever again....Every time he woke up she would pick him up, she even stayed in the nursery watching over him the whole night since she can't fall asleep

Phumi: you can leave I'll look after him

Castiel: we need to talk bello and plus you need to feed

she just looked at him with a deadly stare

Castiel: if you don't feed now you'll end up feeding on Thiago is that what you want?

she quickly looked at Thiago

Phumi: fine let's go

she moved fast forgetting that she has enhanced speed now and she ended up going through the door waking Thiago in the process...she tried to slow her speed and she hit the wall with her front side of her body cracking it in the process and she fell on her back...she got up and she screamed punching the wall and her hand went through it making a hole on it

Castiel: do you feel better now?

he said with Thiago in his arms, he was sucking on his bottle

Phumi: it's all your fault im like this!

She shouted at him and Cass sighed

Castiel: yeah it's my fault now let's go feed.....and walk slowly....you need to learn to

control your speed

they were now in the kitchen and she was sucking blood out of a packet full of it as if her life depends on it....Well her life depends on it but you know what I mean.....anyway she sucked 7 packets full of blood within seconds and when she was about to go take another one from the fridge Cass stopped her and the look she gave him.... yeses

Castiel: you need to control your cravings....you had 7 today and yesterday cause you're a new born but after a week or so then you'll have three per day to control your cravings

Phumi: just give me the damn packet and stop saying useless shit to me nx!

she said with her bloodied fangs all out and his face changed

Castiel: don't ever talk to me like that Phumi.....i know you can't control yourself or how you should behave as yet but I'll fucken rip that disrespectful head of yours and burn it you hear me!

he said with a stern voice and she swallowed looking down

Phumi: sorry

he continued to give her a deadly stare for some time then he clicked his tongue

Castiel: nx now control your cravings don't let it control you.... if you fail to control your cravings how will you teach Thiago how to control his?

Phumi: but im not yet full Cass

She said sulking and he sighed

Castiel: take one more but that's it for today

she quickly went to take it and she sucked on it with her eyes closed

Castiel: look at mommy enjoying that like a hungry lion

He said to his son and Phumi opened her eyes and she looked at him frowning

Castiel: im not talking to you, im talking to my son haw

He looked at his son

Castiel: ai unyoko mfana wami (your mother my boy)

Phumi rolled her eyes and continued to suck on the packet full of animal blood

KZN

*** Mbali was busy making food for the kids and nannies while Ntombi took plates of food to them....Ray, Pops and Jay were busy with the operation while Snakes and Jase where now on their way back from the funeral parlour and the

airport to pick Thandi up....Mbali was wiping the counter when she felt lightheaded, she held on to the counter with her shaky hands.....the next thing she was going down as her knees gave up to her when something caught her and it carried her, she opened her eyes slowly and she saw a smoke like figure ***

Mbali: S...Saint?

Saint: yes it's me mommy

it went with him to the lounge, Ntombi was coming from the cinema/playroom when she stopped on her track with her eyes popped out and her heart pounding hard

Saint: breath sisNtombi or you'll pass out

Saint said walking to the couch carrying Mbali.....Ntombi wasn't even aware that she was holding in her breath when she breathed out

Saint: Baba said I should go help mommy cause

she was gonna faint and hit her head hard on
the floor as she fell

***Ntombi swallowed hard and Saint put Mbali
down on the couch and he covered her with a
throw blanket***

Ntombi: B...Baba?

Saint: yes he's still here

Ntombi quickly looked around

Saint: he's down in the basement

***Ntombi closed her eyes and she opened
them again and Saint was still there***

Saint: you better get used to me cause im not
going anywhere any time soon

***Ntombi swallowed hard then she breathed
out***

Saint: She has so much pain in her heart...is it
normal?

Ntombi looked at Mbali who had her eyes closed

Ntombi: we...we are all feeling the pain but I guess in different ways

Saint: so its normal for humans to feel it

she nodded slowly

Saint: she also felt something similar after Amo said unpleasant words to her

Ntombi frowned

Ntombi: what do you mean by unpleasant?

Saint: Mommy called her to apologize and she said she doesn't want to associate herself with demonic things, she said mommy and her family should distance themselves from her

Ntombi: she said that?

Saint: something of that nature and mommy was feeling something similar to this with a mixture of anger

Ntombi: hehe that over ripe bitch nxa

Saint could feel Ntombi's anger rising from where he's standing

Saint: you're angry

Ntombi finally moved from her spot and she went to sit down, she just realized that being scared of Saint to a point of shaking every time he's around is a waste of time and energy cause like he said, he's gonna be around for a long time

Ntombi: I can't believe she said that to Mbali after Mbali called to apologize...nx....she's lucky im in mourning or else I'll deal with her nx

Saint: you would do that for mommy

he asked surprised

Ntombi: family comes first in our family and we have each other's backs always

Saint: mmmmh

Voice: hai hai hai....no man....and nou?

it was Snakes

Saint: he's scared of me let me go before he faints again

and the smoke disappeared and Ntombi sighed

Snakes: where did he go?

he said looking around then he looked at Ntombi

Snakes: ukhuluma nama demoni manje Ntombi?
(you're speaking to demons now Ntombi)

Ntombi: eish leave me alone Nhlaka
tuu...ngizilile (im in mourning) for heaven's sake!

then Jase walked in with Thandi and Ntombi got up and went to her and they hugged

Jase: what?

Snakes: Saint was out here talking to Ntombi
can you imagine

he said in a dramatic manner

Ntombi: ai let's go this way Thandi

***she said rolling her eyes and they walked
away***

Snakes: mxm

Jase: what's wrong with you?

Snakes: she was talking to a demon as if it's a
normal thing to do Jase...hai no man

Jase shook his head

Jase: just stop with your “too soon” moments
Nhlaka this is not the time assomblief

Snakes: what “too soon” moments.....mfowethu
I walked in on my wife chatting with Saint!

Jase: did she look frightened

Snakes: no...but

Jase: then let it go mfowethu we have important things to deal with haw

Snakes: hai man this shit is not normal at all

Jase: you still freaked out about Saint is what is not normal

Snakes: tsek!

Saint: tell him bhutiJase!

they both jumped up startled looking around

Snakes: tsek man Saint...uyangizwa...fosek msunu nxa!

*** He shouted looking around and Jase chuckled a little shaking his head then he went to Mbali***

Jase: princess

Mbali: mmmmh

she said with her eyes still closed

Jase: what's wrong...why are you sleeping here?

Mbali: I feel dizzy and I have a headache

Jase: bring painkillers and some water upstairs

Snakes

***Snakes rushed towards the kitchen and Jase picked Mbali up and went upstairs with her.....an hour later the mortuary people came and took Baba and Ma's corpses and they left with them ***

Voice: ooh Amoooo!

Amo heard someone call her name in her sleep but she ignored it

Voice: Amo wake up.....wake up Amo.....

***she opened her eyes slowly thinking its Jabu and all of a sudden she felt her body being turned and she faced up....her heart pounded hard against her chest cause she could tell

whatever that was happening was not normal at all....she tried to opened her mouth and scream out for Jabu but she couldn't***

Voice: don't waste your breath he can't hear you....he's sleeping peacefully

the voice said....she tried to move but her body felt stiff....she then decided to pray in her heart but in some weird way she couldn't....tears gushed out as total fear took over....Then a scary demonic face appeared closer to her face and she could see it clearly cause her side lamp was on..... her eyes popped out then she tried to scream but her voice couldn't come out

Saint: you hurt mommy....she apologized and you hurt her

*** Saint said with a scary voice and Amo continued to cry silently as Saint's demonic face was right in front of hers..... besides her

slept Jabu who was even snoring a bit***

Saint: you think you're better than me just because you are human and im a demon right...well let me tell you something, the only Christian that is better than me is the one that doesn't judge others and most importantly follows all the Ten commandments....do you follow all of them Amo

she just cried silently

Saint: you know if I didn't let the devil take over my emotions I would be in heaven right now.....i was a dedicated Christian to a point that if you slapped me on one cheek I'll hand over another one gracefully..... you see I was a slave so I prayed long and hard for God to save me from my cruel master.....i had faith and I prayed like a devoted Christian until one day my master killed my brother in cold blood and after that he ordered that his body be fed to his dogs for lunch.....right then I derailed from my faith and I

made a decision out of anger and hurt and I broke into his house and stabbed him countless times....his son shot me on my back and I died on the spot and when I opened my eyes thinking that maybe he missed I realized that I was in hell or somewhere close to that....the demon that was torturing me told me the man I killed was gonna die of a short illness in a few weeks and I proved right to the devil that we only believe in God and his miracles not wholeheartedly and only to a certain point until we “think” he has forgotten us which is not true....if only I held on to my faith a while longer and I wouldn’t have been like this.....

Amo continued to cry silently

Saint: that was my mistake but I will not make a mistake of letting a Christian with conditions like you hurt her or judge her for accepting her son as he is..... no one hurts mommy and gets away with it....no one!

then he disappeared and that's when a loud cry escaped her mouth and Jabu jumped up switching on his side lamp

Jabu: what's wrong...keng!

he said as he looked at her

Jabu: keng rato laka? (what is it my love)

she just cried shaking with fear...he pulled her closer and held her tight as she cried shaking

Jabu: it was just a nightmare rato laka its ok....

he said comforting her until she calmed down

Amo: I...i wasn't dreaming....he...he was here

Jabu....he was here

Jabu: who?

Amo: the evil demon....

Jabu: what evil demon?

Amo: Saint....he was here....he was here Jabu.....

Jabu: heh?

he asked with a confused look on his face

INSERT.....35

.

.

.

**** I TRIED GUYS...ENJOY****

.

.

.

KZN

*** Muzi sat up straight slowly looking lost....he scanned the room and he recognized it then he saw his brothers, Ruu, Ray and his father looking like shit***

Muzi: wh...what happened?

He asked looking confused

Ruu: how are you feeling Doc?

Muzi: ummm I don't know.....different

Ruu nodded

Ruu: any pain on your chest?

***He said touching Muzi's wound on his chest that looked completely healed thanks to his potions**

Muzi: no....why would I feel chest pains....wait did i suffer a heart attack?

they looked at one another then they sighed

Pops: yes you did my boy and you died...you don't remember anything that happened?

Muzi frowned

Muzi: ini? (what)...i did what?

Ruu: you died and Ray and I just brought you back

He looked at them like they are crazy

Ruu: calm down so you don't go into shock Doc

Muzi swallowed hard and they all stayed silent a bit

Muzi: what happened?

He asked with a low tone

Ruu: after your grandfather killed himself you had a heart attack and died but....

***then he looked at Pops and Muzi frowned as all that happened played in his head....his bottom lip trembled and he swallowed hard as

his eyes got filled with tears but he fought hard to stop them from falling***

Pops: we will talk about all the details later for now im glad you are alive ndodana (son)

Muzi: where's Noma...where's my wife

***he asked about his wife with a breaking voice not wanting to talk about the death of his grandparents ***

Jay: eish Noma neh

Muzi looked at him with a frown on his face

Muzi: where's my wife Nkosenye

he asked panicking a bit

Jay: she's fine relax...she's sleeping upstairs

***Muzi sighed and he closed his eyes a bit ***

Muzi: was...was she there when I..... died?

Jay: yeah and....

He sighed

Jase: she lost the baby man....im sorry foza

***Muzi opened then he closed his eyes again
as if he's in pain***

Pops: ngiyaxolisa ndodana (im sorry son)

***he said with a pained voice....Muzi opened
his eyes and looked at Pops with a pained look
on his face ***

Muzi: I need to see her....she needs to know im
alive and.....

***he swallowed the big lump on his throat as
he fought off his tears***

Pops: she was told that you are alive in fact all
of them were told that you survived so don't
worry about that

***he touched his chest cause it felt
different...he wasn't in pain but something was
different...then he felt the wound and he

frowned looking at it***

Muzi: was it that bad?

He said looking at Ray

Ray: I had to replace your heart with your
grandfathers

Muzi's eyes popped out

Muzi: ini? (what)....but....but it's not possible
cause he's....

Ruu: calm down Doc.....i used dark magic and
my potions to make it possible but it has its
side effects and conditions which you'll be told
about later on

Snakes: ubuthakathi kuphela (only witchcraft)
....ubuloyi....itweebenare!

***He said shaking his head and they all looked
at him***

Snakes: what nangihlahlela amehlo ingathi
nginqunu....iqiniso....abantu bayaloya (why are

you looking at me as if im naked....its the truth....people are witches)....ummm ngisho laba not you Pops angisho wena baba (umm I talking about this ones not you dad)

They all smiled shaking their heads

Jay: too soon bafo...too soon

Snakes: too soon ya masimba....nigga died....he died Jay....ufile fi and now he's here talking to us....all this shit is getting out of hand manje....wena Ruu you're in competition with God and one of these days thunder and lightning will hit you unye ngiyakutshela (and you'll shit yourself im telling)

he said with a serious look on his face

Snakes: and wena spoki (ghost)

he pointed at Muzi

Snakes: I know I call you mafa vuka but I didn't mean you should actually die and come back to

life again..... bengis'dlalela nje (I was joking)....even being called the black Jesus we didn't mean you should literally be in competition with the real Jesus haw besidlala (we were joking) mara wena you took it serious and now you just resurrected.....uzoninyisa uNkulunkulu nganishela....nizonya (he's gonna deal with you all God im telling you....you'll shit yourselves)

they all laughed

Snakes: mxm lag...qhubekani and lag (mxm laugh.....go on and laugh)

more laughter

Smiso: only the black Mamba can make people laugh like that

He said walking in looking hot even though he felt like shit inside

Smiso: foza welcome back to the land of the living

Muzi gave him a fade smile as he squeezed his shoulder

Pops: is everything ok

Smiso: yeah she's sleeping now and so is Noma and the ladies are keeping an eye on her

Muzi: why are they keeping an eye on my wife?

he asked quickly

Smiso: she's a danger to herself bafo

Ruu: I saw her committing suicide so the ladies are there to make sure she doesn't do it

Muzi: wait...what?

he slowly got off the bed

Jase: you should rest a bit man

Muzi: where is she?

he asked ignoring Jase's statement

Smiso: your bedroom

He walked to the door

Smiso: you should wear a shirt man, that scar doesn't look pretty

Jay took off his shirt and gave it to him to wear and he was only left with a vest on and Muzi walked out

Ruu: you need to sit him down and tell him the truth

Pops: I will....let him attend to his wife first

Ruu nodded

Ruu: and you should take his heart and go bury it at your sacred cave and don't take it out of that bronze box

Snakes: ey ndoda how do you know about the cave

Ruu: I know a lot of things man...a whole lot of things

***Chills ran down Snakes' spine and he shook

his head***

Snakes: I need Ntombi to pray for me....angifuni ukuthakathwa mina (I don't want to be bewitched)

he said walking to the door and the guys chuckled shaking their heads

Pops: wangahlula uNhlakanipho struu (I cant deal with Nhlakanipho)

he said shaking his head

Snakes: now some of us can't even say what we what to say cause we are scared to be loiyed (bewitched) ai kunzima emhlabeni

***the guys chuckled cause they heard him and Ruu just shook his head ***

Smiso: does he get baba's beast?

he asked with his deep and bold voice

Ruu: no but he just became one of the most strongest immortals to ever live

Thorsten nodded

Jase: so he really can't die

Ruu nodded

Ray: he can only die if his heart is stabbed by a special knife....right Ruu?

Ruu nodded then he opened his bag and took out something wrapped with a golden cloth, he unwrapped it and a beautiful and nicely crafted ancient knifeimmerged and he handed it to Pops

Ruu: this is the knife, go and bury it somewhere else....somewhere no one will ever find it and make sure it's far away from where his heart is....you should be the only one who knows where it's buried while the guys bury the heart

Pops nodded

Ruu: you should go now and the boys will leave late in the afternoon because the heart needs to

be buried at 12 midnight

Pops: ok

He looked at Thorsten

Pops: make sure everything is ok until I get back

Thorsten nodded and Pops walked out then Jay and Jase followed him out

Ray: you know your shit man...sometimes I forget how powerful you are

Ruu: sometimes I forget how powerful I am

both him and Ray chuckled

Smiso: there are people who will come after him right

he asked with a serious tone and Ruu sighed

Ruu: relevant people already know that he exist so they will start searching for him

Smiso: why?

Ruu: eating his raw heart after stabbing it with the knife makes the eater immortal

Thorsten shook his head

Ray: damn

Ruu: that's what he get to live with.... at least his grandfather lives in him and he'll protect him and communicate with him when his life is in danger.....remember the Khumalo and Nthuli (Ntuli) ancestors don't know where he is cause he's not dead and he's not alive either so your grandfather is the only ancestor that knows where he is because of his heart, he's only ancestor that can protect him

Thorsten shook his head

Smiso: all this is messed up

Ray: tell me about it man

UPSTAIRS

The ladies where happy to see Muzi alive to a point that they even cried hugging him tight which woke Noma up.....after they calmed down they left the bedroom to give Noma and Muzi some privacy....Noma was still shocked and she was just looking at Muzi with tears running down her cheeks, they told her that he was alive but she didn't believe them and seeing him with her own eyes was just overwhelming

Muzi: hey

she just looked at him with tears gushing out

Muzi: i....im sorry my love.... im sorry i scared you like that to a point that you ended up miscarrying

a soft sob escaped her mouth and he rushed to her, he sat next to her and hugged her as she cried

Muzi: shhh its ok baby...its ok

she cried herself to sleep and when he realized she fell asleep he laid her down gently and joined her on the bed and he held her from behind....he kissed her neck and whispered to her ear

Muzi: I love you with everything in me
Noma....ngiyakuthanda mkami kakhulu futhi (I love you my wife and too much)

IN THE BACK PORCH

***Ruu was holding Thandi from behind with his hands on her belly ***

Thandi: life neh

He sighed

Ruu: they'll be fine as time goes

Thandi: im worried about Mbali....she looks weak and.....

they both sighed

Ruu: she'll pull through don't worry

Thandi: there's another funeral ko Guyani

Ruu: how do you know that

Thandi: AuntMoloi called me

Ruu frowned

Ruu: who's that?

she giggled

Thandi: moloi means a witch baby

***Ruu kept quiet a bit then he chuckled when
he got it***

Ruu: you're savage amour

***she laughed softly and he bend a bit and
kissed her cheek***

Ruu: so she called huh

Thandi: mmmmh

Ruu: who died?

he knew

Thandi: soldier man....apparently he was hit by a car and the worst part is it was a hit and run

Ruu: mmmmh

Thandi: and guess what....she said I should bring the boys to the funeral

his body tensed

Ruu: I hope you told her that won't happen

he said with a stern voice

Thandi: well I said more than that but in a polite way akere she's in mourning

Ruu chuckled

Ruu: that's why you're my missing rib...thank you for having my back amour

Thandi: you have my back too so there's no need to thank me baby but I won't say no to one round nyana as a thank you

*** they both laughed and he turned her around and perked her lips then she rested her head on his lower chest and he wrapped his arms around her....that's how tall and bold he was....he loved Thandi so much that he fears that soon the love he feels for her will reach an obsession stage....or it already has just that he doesn't know as yet***

MBALI'S BEDROOM

***she was sitting on top of the bed with her legs crossed breastfeeding Kalu while Leya was playing with her phone on top of the bed....her eyelids were swollen and her eyes were red while her face was pink from all the crying.....she wondered how she will go on without her lovely grandparents but then she looked at Kalu and Leya and she sighed....she knew she has to be strong for them, they need her and she wasn't about to let them down even though she was broken inside....she quickly

wiped her falling tears so Leya doesn't see them then she heard a voice whispering closer to her ear***

Saint: so do not fear, for I am with you; do not be dismayed, for I am your God. I will strengthen you and help you; I will uphold you with my righteous right hand.....ISAIAH 41:10
mommy

*** He whispered to her which made her heart to skip a beat cause he caught her off guard.....she then closed her eyes a bit trying to calm down cause that scared the shit out of her....she breathed out then she sighed***

Saint: mommy have faith that the Lord our God is always near, for even through the trials and tribulations of life, you never walk alone

he whispered again and her eyes got filled with tears and she looked up trying to fight them back

Saint: Struggles are essential to the soul mommy, but the Lord will always watch over you, like a shepherd over his sheep.....he will support you in trying times and this is one of those times

He said again

Saint: rest your weary soul with the Lord mommy, and he will grant you peace of mind, body and soul....in the harshest days, our God is our Savior, and will cradle our pain away with his love

He whispered to her some more and tears ran down her cheeks but she quickly wiped them trying so hard to keep it together

Saint: he is waiting for you to reach out to him so he can heal your broken heart mommy.....you need to pray and talk to him so he can give you strength to be strong for us your children and dad

she sniffed wiping her falling tears off

Saint: he loves you always remember that

***then the door opened and Ray walked in and his heart broke into a million pieces when he saw how broken his wife is.... he walked further in and he got to her and pushed her chin up and kissed her ***

Ray: I love you

she bit her lower lip trying hard not to break down

Mbali: I love you too

Ray: and we're going to mourn together and heal together ok

she nodded as tears ran down her cheeks...she quickly wiped them and she put her nipple back into Kalu's mouth as it slipped out and she sniffed

Ray: look at me

she did and he wiped her tears off

Ray: we will go through this together ok

She nodded and sniffed again....he kissed her forehead then he sat on the edge of the bed and pulled Leya with her leg and she fell with her back on the bed laughing then he pulled her to him whilst she laughed and Mbali smiled a little looking at them.... she loved them so much....she then looked down at her boy and kissed his forehead

Mbali: thank you my Saint

she whispered

CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

Phumi: ooh my gosh that is terrible Cass

***Cass sighed...he remembered the day he lost his mother and the day he lost his step father.....that time he felt like he was losing his

mind, he doesn't even want to think about when he thought he lost Juana...he didn't think he would ever come back from all that pain that's until he found out she never existed in the first place.....he sighed and rubbed his hair***

Cass: I know that pain very well so im sure they are losing their minds

she sighed and looked down at her son

Phumi: eish kunzima shame (its hard shame)

then she looked at Cass

Phumi: ka ne when did mama say she'll come back

his body tensed a bit and she noticed that

Cass: eish I don't know bello

Phumi: why are you lying to me Castiel.....where is my mother?

she asked with a frown on her face and he swallowed without looking at her

Cass: im not lying to you bello....your....your mother said she's going on a vacation with her man

Phumi: so we lie to each other now...it has gotten to that

****she could tell he was lying to her...even the first time she asked about her mother and he told her she went away with her boyfriend she could sense he was tense a bit***

Cass: why do you think im lying Phumi....i just told you what your mother told me and you're saying im fucken lying!

he snapped at her and she chuckled standing up from the couch

Phumi: remember im a new born and when I get angry I lose it....you have one last chance to tell me the truth cause if I find out gore you are really lying to me this house will be too small for the both of us but if you're telling the truth I'll

gladly and humbly apologize

***she said with a calm tone then she walked away with her son and Cass clenched his jaws.....he sighed and rubbed his face, he didn't know how to tell her that her mother is in a coma and she refuses to wake up, now machines were helping her to breathe cause she has given up, she chose to remain with her husband in the afterlife than to come back to Phumi....The doctors are all baffled as to what caused her to be in a coma cause she doesn't have any internal or external injuries on her body...they didn't have any explanation and even the test all came bearing no answers to their endless questions....Now Cass was afraid to tell Phumi cause he knows why her mother is in that state...it was because of him and Ruu cause the Brethren cult was after them....he felt guilty and he didn't know how to tell her that her mother is gone and only the machines are

keeping her alive and its all his fault...she came back and stood by the entrance without Thia ***

Phumi: that guilt im getting from you every time I mention my mother is what is making me doubt you Castiel

he looked down

Phumi: what did you do....where is my mother Castiel

she asked in a pleading tone

Cass: my enemies found me

***she went and sat down on another couch and she looked at him intensely ***

Cass: when I left remember I went to help my brothers only for you to go into labor

Phumi: don't remind me of that please

she said with a low tone looking away

Cass: they....they already got to your mother

she froze

Cass: someone told them where you are from and they went there to find you but they found your mother instead

she started breathing fast looking at him and Castiel kept quiet for some time

Phumi: where's my mother Castiel?

she asked with a low tone

Cass: in a coma at the hospital

she felt everything come to a standstill

Cass: she's not responding bello.....the machines are what is now keeping her alive

she blinked fast looking at him....he wanted to go closer to her to comfort her but he knows how newborns act out of anger

Phumi: what...what did they do to her?

he swallowed

Cass: they cut her life short....they put her in a coma that made her chose to fight and find the way back or to just give up and join the dead in their land

Phumi: which hospital?

he told her and she got up

Cass: bello you...you can't leave....we will go later in the afternoon when the sun has set....remember the sun is your enemies while darkness is your friend

she walked away without saying anything to him going upstairs and Cass sighed.....he didn't expecting her to react that way, he thought a fight will break out with her blaming him but instead she looked hurt.....but then he felt lighter after telling her the truth even though she basically forced it out of him

***The drive to the hospital was a silent

one....Castiel was wary of her, now he had an eye at the back of his head waiting for her to react....Thiago was sleeping peacefully on his car seat....soon they arrived and he parked then he got out and went to take Thia out while Phumi took his diaper bag***

Cass: calm your nerves and don't look at their pulsating veins especially the one on their necks....you will be able to smell fresh or dry blood so control or fight off the edge feed....you drank enough red juice to keep you calm so please bello

He pleaded with her and she nodded once and he sighed

Cass: the light in there will be too much so be prepared and control your hearing cause you'll hear things normal people can't hear in there, remember it's a hospital

***then she quickly looked to the right when the

hair on the back of her head stood up and saw a bloodied woman standing there with torn clothes looking at them....Cass looked over where she was looking and saw what she was seeing***

Cass: ey voetsek....we not the one that killed you....go look for your killer and stop staring at us like that!

he said with a stern voice and Phumi swallowed cause it now just dawned at her that...that woman is a ghost...." I can now see ghosts" she thought

Cass: you ok?

Phumi: I can see ghost now?

she asked with a low tone and Cass sighed then he nodded

Cass: there's still a lot you'll discover about your new abilities bello

she looked over to where the ghost was and she wasn't there anymore then she sighed.....she didn't feel scared but she felt the dark energy she felt when the ghost was standing there was now gone

Cass: let's go

***they walked from the parking lot to the entrance then they walked inside..... She then stopped and covered her ears as the defining noise she felt inside was unbearable, to a normal human it was quiet but to her it wasn't ...the beeping sounds, cries and moans of patients in pain was just too much....the voices of people, the sound of other things like the refrigerator in the coffee shop and telephones ringing was just unbearable ***

Cass: fight it off bello

***he said pulling her towards the couches and they sat down then she rested her head on his

shoulder and tried to calm down.....after some time she managed to minimize the sounds she was hearing to be bearable to her ears and she raised her head and breathed out***

Cass: you good?

She nodded

Phumi: let's go

she got up and he also did and they walked further in....he was still worried about her reaction about the whole thing to him she was too calm for his liking....right now he was just waiting for her to pounce on him or lash out..... They got to the ICU unit and Phumi went in alone since a baby wasn't allowed in so Cass had to stay outside with Thiago

Phumi: mama

***she said with a voice full of pain sitting down on a chair looking at her being connected to tubes which were connected to a

machine....She swallowed hard feeling drained, she had an unpleasant feeling where her cold heart is but tears dololo***

Phumi: im sorry....Castiel told me and im sorry I wasn't there mama....im sorry you had to go through that alone

She looked down with that unpleasant feeling getting stronger....she clenched her jaws feeling anger resurface from the pit of her stomach then she heard a voice in her head

Cass: calm down bello...i can feel your anger from out here

she swallowed hard and counted to 100 to calm herself down

JABU AND AMO'S HOUSE

***They were in their bedroom ready to sleep....Jabu was on the phone with Ray, he

was giving her an update on what was happening there and Mbali's state....they finished up with their call and Jabu sighed putting his phone down on the side drawer then he laid next to Amo***

Jabu: Mbali is not coping at all and it's taking an effect on big Ray

he said with a worried tone

Amo: mmmmh

she said not interested....when she heard about the death of Mbali's grandparents she prayed thanking God for fighting for her

Jabu: ba boloka next weekend so I'll ask maOlady to look after Lile and Sbu (the funeral is next weekend so I'll ask my mother to look after Lile and Sbu)

She didn't say anything

Jabu: did you hear me rato laka (my love)

Amo: mmmmh.....but im not going

he frowned looking at her

Jabu: why?

Amo: why would I go there Jabu

he looked at her confused

Jabu: heh?

he was still confused

Amo: their demon child almost killed me the other night and you want me to go there...never shem

Jabu chuckled shaking his head....he couldn't believe she said that

Jabu: that demon child is my nephew
Amogelang!

he said with a stern voice sitting up

Amo: and so?

Jabu: hebanna kganthe o tsene ke eng wena?

(what's gotten into you)

Amo: I was almost killed Jabu and you still saying nothing about that....i didn't dream about it but it was here threatening me for God's sake

she said with a breaking voice

Amo: you almost killed my brother when he manhandled me but its ok for your demon nephew to torment me

she said with tears in her eyes and Jabu chuckled getting out of bed, he was getting angry

Jabu: what do you want me to do now

Amogelang.... tell me

she laughed bitterly wiping her tears off

Amo: you have already chosen a side so good night Jabulani

she said switching her side lamp off and turning to look the other way

Jabu: Amogelang!

she ignored him

Jabu: AMOGELANG!

he said raising his voice and she sat up looking at him

Jabu: are you trying to tell me to cut ties with my brother and his family....is that what you're telling me?

he asked with an angry look on his face

Amo: yes....i don't want Mbali and her little family near me Jabu im sure even my God punished her by taking her grandparents for sending that evil demon to torment me nxa

***she said angrily then she turned and laid down again....Jabu shook his head shocked by this other side of Amo he didn't know existed.....he wondered if he knows the real her at all....He was angry and he knows how he gets

when he's angry so he needed to get the hell out of the house before shit happens.....he went to the closet and changed from his pyjamas to a jean and a V-neck Polo shirt and he wore his Nike sneakers and he took a jacket and went back to the bedroom.....he took his car keys and phone then he walked to the door***

Amo: o ya kae? (where are you going)

Jabu: out

Amo: out where this late Jabulani!

she said sitting up...he ignored her and walked out

.

.

.

INSERT.....36

.

.

.

THE FOLLOWING MORNING

Amo walked to the kitchen with her swollen eye and she found Jabu eating breakfast with his children...she was surprised to see him cause he didn't come back to bed last night

Amo: morning

Jabu: sho

Sbu: morning ma

Lile: mama

she said excitedly and Amo went to her and kissed her forehead

Amo: hello my love....hello baby ya mamagae

***she said tickling her and Lile laughed, she

then joined them on the table and Sbu got up and went to take Amo's food and they ate in silence until Sbu cleared his throat***

Sbu: ummm baba since you and ma are going to the funeral and I know you'll ask gogo to look after us can I go to Atteridgeville cause abo Mpe and Mphile will go there

Amo: im not going to the funeral so you don't have to go to Atteridgeville Sbusiso

Sbu: oooh

he said disappointed and Jabu gave Amo a deadly look

Sbu: ummm ok but can I still go to Atteridgeville...please

Jabu: yeah

Amo: no

***they said at the same time and Jabu looked at Amo with a serious look on his face then his

face softened when he looked at Sbu***

Jabu: its ok you can go join your cousins boy

Sbu smiled faintly cause he could see things were not good between his parents

Sbu: ngiyabonga baba no ma (thank you mom and dad)

Amo chuckled bitterly then she concentrated on her plate and Jabu continued to feed Lile.....a minute later a horn was heard outside and Sbu quickly got up and he went to take his school bag and he kissed Amo and Lile's cheeks and he fist bumped with his dad and he rushed out....he refused to have a private driver so he uses a special transport his friends uses to get to and from school

Amo: where did you sleep Jabulani?

Jabu: guest bedroom

she huffed

Amo: so every time we argue you'll leave to go to God knows where then you come back and that's if you came back last night and you sleep in the guest bedroom!

she said with a pissed off tone

Jabu: so what did you want me to do
Amogelang...sit and let you continue with the shit you were saying

Amo: askies?

Jabu: you better find yourself and ask God for mercy for dilo tse ne o di ova gester (things that you said yesterday).....for you to say Modimo killed Mbali's grandparents for you is uncalled for and heartless

Amo chuckled bitterly

Amo: so when God fights for me suddenly im heartless Jabulani

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: im not about to argue with you about the bible cause ga ke e judg(e) (I don't know it)....ke jaja fela Johanna 14, Pesalome 24 le Genesis but one thing ke e jajang ke gore, it's a sin to use God's name in vain (I only know Johanna 14, Psalm 24 and Genesis but one thing I know is, it's a sin to use God's name in vain)

Amo chuckled

Jabu: im not even gonna touch on you trying to come between me and my brothers....wa bona daar ongatile khonse Amogelang and a ko nnela masepa ao (you there you pushed me too far Amogelang and I won't stand for that shit).....if you can't stand my brothers then don't be in the same room as them and don't visit their houses or show up for gatherings but you should never say I should choose between you and them cause believe me you won't like my choice

Amo: so you would choose your family over me
your wife Jabulani....so go shapo (so its ok)
when they send their demon to terrorize me

Jabu: who send a demon to terrorize you
Amogelang heh who

he said getting angry

Amo: I told you Mbali send her demonic child to come and threaten me but you refuse to believe me.....you saw how terrified I was Jabu but still you don't care

Jabu: I prayed with you and even stayed awake with you Amogelang until you fell asleep.... o nyaka goreng ge o re I don't care!! (what do you mean I don't care)

he said with an angry voice

Amo: if you cared you would protect me from them, you would make sure we stay away from them and their evil child

Jabu: ENOUGH!!!!

he said firmly not too loud to scare Lile but enough for Amo to keep quiet

Jabu: Mbali is going through shit right now to even care about you Amogelang....she lost one of the two most important people in her life to send “ her demonic child” to come and terrorize you.....i can’t believe you right now

Amogelang....i can’t believe this is you...you just went from my sweet wife to a judgmental heartless woman

he said it through his teeth looking angry

Amo: ofcourse you’ll take her side instead of your wife’s....your loyalty lies with her and her family than with your own family and im sick and tired of that

she said sounding angry and Jabu shook his head chuckling then he stood up

Jabu: yah shem ke na le bati ge go tla mo

basading (I have bad luck when it comes to women)

he picked Lile up

Amo: what are you trying to say Jabulani

she said hurt by what he said and he just ignored her and walked away with his daughter leaving Amo with tears running down her cheeks

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

Cass walked inside their bedroom and found Phumi standing by the window looking outside while Thia was sleeping on top of the bed peacefully....he walked to her holding a glass filled with the “red juice” and he handed it to her

Phumi: thanks

***he was still astonished by her response to

the whole thing....he thought she would act crazy but its like her mother's condition humbled her somehow cause she was calm, hurt but calm***

Cass: I love you bello....so much that I can't even imagine myself living in this useless world without you

she didn't say anything

Cass: I know you blame me for what happened to your mother and im....

Phumi: I don't blame you

she interrupted him

Phumi: I blame the person that gave those people my mother's address.....we all have enemies Cass I mean Thabo could've went ko gae drunk and cause problems there after he heard about you paying lobola for me and hurt mama cause he gets violent that even his own parents fail to control him when he is....the

guilty person here is the person that gave people my home address

Cass sighed

Cass: I know you're angry and hurt but you need to concentrate on finding a solution to your mother's condition

Phumi: im switching off the machines

She said and took a sip of her red juice while Cass raised his eyebrows looking at her surprised***

KZN

the guys were sitting in baba's study room ready to have a serious conversation, Muzi wanted to know about his condition cause weird things were happening to him and they worried him

Snakes: so have any of you able to reach Pops

or Melusi again

they shook their heads.....Pops called them last night to tell them not to be worried about him as he is fine, he said he left with Melusi and that he'll contact them once he has hidden the knife in a place where he's sure it will prove difficult to find and he hasn't called since then

Muzi: im all ears

Jase: so uthi what happened to you last night

Muzi sighed

Muzi: I called Noma Mkami when she woke up sweating from a nightmare and it felt like it's a normal word I use all the time to call her

they looked at him with surprised looks on their faces cause he never calls her that...only Baba called Ma that

Snakes: uthi you did what?

Muzi: ungizwile man Nhlakanipho (you heard me man Nhlakanipho)

he said with a firm voice almost sounding like baba and Snakes dramatically got up with his eyes popped out

Snakes: fuck no....no no no

Muzi sighed looking down

Smiso: what's going with him man

he asked Ruu

Ruu: his grandfather lives in him....it's as simple as that

Snakes: simple....uthi simple.....mafa vuka sounded like baba man....he sounded like baba for fucks sake so don't say simple

Jase: will you just calm down

Ruu: ok I'll explain now calm your tits

Snakes: mxm you better explain thoroughly

he sat down and Ruu just shook his head

Ruu: well Doc you have already adopted your grandfather's traits and every now and then you'll behave like him...to you it will seem normal but to others it will be shocking

Jay shook his head

Jay: I think baba heard us that time Jase when we said no one should ever name a child after him

Jase chuckled

Muzi: so its not me losing my mind

Ruu: no... The will be times when you'll hear his voice in your head, don't be afraid that's when he'll be warning you about the danger that's coming your way or your family's way

Muzi swallowed hard

Muzi: being immortal means I can't die so what will happen to my wife and kids, does it mean I'll

watch them grow old and die

Ruu sighed

Ruu: yeah man but....the are other ways you can keep them alive for as long as you live in this world

Smiso: what other ways

Ruu: changing them

Snakes: changing them how?

Ruu sighed

Ray: Doc Cass can change your wife to a vampire and as for your kids he can change them on a later stage of their lives....well when they give their consent after they are off age

Them: what?!

Ruu: it's just a suggestion calm down

Snakes:

wooooh....wooooh....wooooh....vag.....what did you

just say (wait...what did you say)

Muzi frowned looking at Ray

Ruu: he took words out of my mouth.....that's the only way you cannot watch your family get old and die....i may be good at this witchcraft thing but im no God....i was able to help you cause your grandfather had a beast and the connection you all have for one another is strong so bringing you from the dead by using your grandfather's heart and soul wasn't that much of a challenge

*** Muzi swallowed and he kept quiet***

Ray: those are the decisions you cant take alone man.....sit down with your wife and talk

Snakes: hai lomhlaba o bolile struu (this world is rotten)

Jase: im just happy my brother is alive the rest we will deal with them as time goes

Jay: yeah me too

Smiso: there's something else

he said looking at Ruu

Ruu: yeah umm there's a catch with you being alive

Snakes: what do you mean by that....entlek why can't everything be as it seem heh

Ray: there will always be a catch when you bring someone from the dead Snakes...always

Snakes just shook his head

Muzi: what is it?

Ruu: the people from the dark world know of your existence man and they'll do anything in their powers to have your heart and the knife in their possession

Snakes: why?

***he asked looking serious....he didn't like

where this was going one bit***

Ruu: so they can stab your original heart with that special knife and eat it raw while conducting a ritual to become immortal

Snakes and Muzi shook their heads

Snakes: ngishilo ngathi uJeso uyabuya....uyeza shem.... manje useNorth Pole uyayehla uza la esgodini soKhumalo to deal with us....siqolile kabi la ekhaya....siqolile ukufa (I did say Jesus is coming....he's coming....right now he's still at the North Pole and he's on his way here to the Khumalo household).....i mean why wouldn't he when others are even competing with God nc nc nc

he shook his head and he got up and went to pour himself another drink then out of the blue Muzi laughed shaking his head then all of them followed....Ray translated to Ruu what Snakes said and Ruu laughed too

IN THE LOUNGE

the ladies were sitting in the lounge drinking alcohol using coffee mugs

Ntombi: uMa right now would be telling us to drink but to make sure that we don't get drunk cause she'll embarrass us in front of our husbands

they laughed a bit

Thandi: she sounds like she was a cool mother in law

Kedi: that she was....im gonna miss her terribly

she said with a pained voice

Mbali: I remember when I fell pregnant with Kalu and I was more worried about not experiencing umemulo like my mates have but Ma said most of those girls never gets married and they have multiple baby daddies and even gets aids by sleeping with blesser for money so

they are not better than me in any way cause I'll still finish my studies and my baby daddy would move mountains for me and he paid lobola for me

she then sighed and her eyes got filled with tears

Mbali: I don't know how I'll go on without her and baba

Nomhle side hugged her and she sobbed then the door opened and Ntombi's mother walked in with some man.....the ladies looked at one another then back at Bongi

Bongi: nangihlahlela a mehlo (why are you just staring at me)....come and help me with my bags

Ntombi: is that guy a ghost or what...why didn't he carry the bags inside

she said pointing at the guy

Bongi: I said go get my bags and stop annoying me!

Noma: I don't have time for this nonsense nx

she got up and walked away leaving Bongi shocked cause she knows Noma as the quiet one

Bongi: wait did she just....

Ntombi: hey khaume Bongi....we are in mourning for fucks sake man! (will you just stop Bongi)

she shouted at her mother

Man: hei don't talk to her like that!

Ntombi: and then wena who the fuck are you to come here with your ugly face to tell me how to speak with her

***the guy took a step forward looking angry but Bongi stopped him and Ntombi laughed but as for Thandi she was looking at the guy as if

she's seeing a ghost***

Ntombi: you wanna hit me old man?

she said looking at the guy with a disgusted look on her face

Kedi: let him try in fact he should get the hell out

Bongi: no one is leaving here....he's here with me so he's staying nxa!

she shouted

Voice: what the hell is going on here!

they all jumped startled cause the voice was deep, even Imani was caught off guard...then all of a sudden Bongi started "crying"

Bongi: ooh Nkulunkulu wami.... (ooh my God)...why God.....why....

***the ladies looked at her like she's crazy and Ntombi clapped her hands laughing a bit....the guy helped her sit down and she continued to

“cry” then Thorsten indicated that Imani should come to him and she went to him then he kissed her forehead***

Smiso: you ok

***she nodded then the guys came out and each went to their women except for Muzi ***

Muzi: where's my wife

Kedi: upstairs

he went to look for her

Ruu: you ok

he could see she wasn't ok

Thandi: so you don't even recognize me Mbuso

the man frowned looking at Thandi....then his eyes popped out and then he tried by all means to compose himself by keeping a straight face.....Ruu frowned looking from the man to Thandi

Ruu: amour what's going on?

they all looked at her and she looked hurt

Thandi: he used to be my step father.... a step father that used to abuse me and my mother

she said with a pained tone

Ruu: what?

the guys more especially Ray gave this guy a deadly look

Ray: abuse you how?

Mbuso: she's lying I've never abused her.....wena you're just like your useless mother....unamanga (you are a liar)

*** he said pointing at Thandi and she laughed with tears running down her cheeks and that upset Ruu and Ray***

Thandi: useless is that thing between your legs
Mbuso im just glad my mother left your sorry ass before it was too late

then she looked at Bongi

Thandi: I feel sorry for you cause you don't know how evil this animal is

she then walked away wiping her tears off and the room became silent with the guys and their wives giving Mbuso deadly looks

Bongi: she's lying....Mbuso wami is a sweetheart....he would never hurt a fly....unamanga lodoti (that rubbish is a liar)

Mbali: let me go check up on her

she said to Ray and she walked away...Ruu was just looking at Mbuso with an angry look on his face then he looked at the brothers

Ruu: you guys are in mourning and I don't want to disrespect the Khumalo household so I'll just take my woman and leave before more blood is spilled in here

he turned and went after Thandi

Bongi: so you're going to believe that girl just like that!

Ntombi: you're a disappointment Bongi.....i wish uMa lived and you died in her place im sure I wouldn't even shed a single tear for you nxa

then she walked away to go check on the kids and their nannies

Imani: im not gonna stay with this guy in the same house Smie

she said to Thorsten with tears in her eyes and she followed Ntombi

Smiso: get out

he said to Mbuso with a serious tone

Bongi: ini (what)

Snakes: he said voetsek and he doesn't like to repeat himself!

Bongi: this is my brother's house niyangizwa (you hear me).....i won't sit here and watch you

treat my man like this....uMbuso akayindawo
(Mbuso is not going anywhere) and that's that!!

***within a spilt second Smiso was holding
Mbuso by his neck looking angry....he hated
abusers more because of what Imani went
through with Ben***

Smiso: I said get out!

***he said it through his teeth and he pushed
him backwards hard and he fell with his back to
the floor and he groaned in pain***

Bongi: wenzani Smiso!! (what are you doing
Smiso)

Smiso: im going to make sure my wife is fine
and when I come back and I better not find you
here...and wena

he pointed at Bongi

Smiso: you know I don't give a shit about you
and we hate each other's guts so please piss

me off some more so I will send you straight to a coma with one blow....just continue to piss me off and you'll see

he clicked his tongue and walked away and Snakes shook his head....Jay and Jase took their wives and they also walked away while Ray stood there still looking at Mbuso

Bongi: I can't believe im being treated like this in my brother's house...that boy threatened me in my brother's house cabanga nje nx (just imagine)

Snakes: weeh aunty tell your boyfriend to leave cause uSmie uyombulala (Smie will kill him) when he comes back and find him here and im not even gonna touch on what Ruu will do to him

then he looked at Mbuso

Snakes: if I were you I would beg for maTha to forgive you cause this week won't end well for

you

then he looked at Bongi and his expression changed to that of an angry beast

Snakes: and wena Bongiwe one of this days you'll see the other side of me that even Ntombi doesn't know if you keep on hurting my wife....just because I always laugh and make jokes doesn't mean im a fool, you'll curse the day I was brought into this family the day I'll manhandle you....qhube ka wena and hurt my wife... ubhuti wakho (your brother) won't be here to save you

He said pointing at Bongi with a deadly look on his face that Bongi has never seen before and he walked away leaving Ray still staring at Mbuso who was now standing up rubbing his lower back

Mbuso: I've never been insulted like this Bongiwe....you watched these boys treat me

like im nothing and you did nothing!

Bongi: khaume Mbuso tuu (just stop Mbuso please)

Mbuso: do you know who I am
Bongiwe...people respect me for fucks sake
and you let these small boys to insult me!!

he said looking and sounding angry

Ray: ገዢዎች ገኅ እይደለም, አነስተ በዘርዝሩ ላይ እይደለም

they quickly looked at him when they heard a scary voice speaking and saw that his eyes were black in color and his skin was pale with black veins visible then Bongiwe screamed while Mbuso ran towards the door....Ray walked towards Bongi who stood frozen and pee ran down her legs

Ray: I kill for my family and I feel no remorse afterwards....if your nephews are used to you abusing their wives then im not them.....I'll bring hell to earth just for you if you come at Mbali,

Kedi or Thandi do you fucken hear me

she nodded quickly shaking with fear then he clicked his tongue and his skin and eyes went back to normal and he turned and went to look for Thandi, Ruu and his wife with a frown on his face....he didn't know how he changed like that, he was in control of his body but he could also tell that something woke from deep inside....something dark....it felt dark and powerful but he could control it luckily....or did he?

AT MENZI'S HOUSE

***Menzi was locked up in his study drinking his pain away..... Hearing about baba's death hit him hard, baba was like a father figure to him.....he picked him from the gutter and made him into someone people respect today.... he wondered how his family is holding up more

especially nighthawk and the family's
princess....he held his glass up high***

Menzi: to you Mbulazi.... rest in peace the
mighty Killer the dragon slayer

***then he gulped the whole whiskey down his
throat and he sat there and reminisced about
the good old days.....after some time he took
his phone and dialed Lorraine's numbers***

Lorraine: Menzi

***she said with a serious tone and Menzi
sighed***

Menzi: hey I just wanted to hear your voice

he said with a drunkard tone

Lorraine: wait are you drunk Menzi

Menzi: he's gone Raine....he's gone and it
hurts...it didn't even hurt this much when my
father died

Lorraine: who are you talking about.....where are

you?

he sighed

Menzi: I'll be fine I just....i just wanted to hear your voice that's all

She sighed

Lorraine: is your girlfriend home

he sighed

Menzi: yeah

Lorraine: ok ummm....just tell me about this person that's making you call me on my personal phone even though we agreed to keep things professional

Menzi: trust you to remind me of that

Lorraine: you have a crazy girlfriend dude and I don't wanna be poured with acid

Menzi chuckled and they continued to chat

IN THE LOUNGE

Kazi was busy with her salon books checking how her salon is doing, she just finished speaking with her suppliers and she was now trying to balance her books when her phone rang and she answered

Kazi: hello

Voice: Ntandokazi

she froze for a bit then she composed herself

Kazi: Phumi

Phumi: how does it feel?

Kazi: what?

Phumi: being responsible for my mother's death

she frowned....she didn't miss the coldness of Phumi's voice

Kazi: what?

Phumi: those people you gave laddress
yasekhaya to find me actually found uMa and
they killed her, so im asking you again....how
does it feel

***Kazi swallowed hard as her heart beat
fast***

Kazi: I...i don't know what you're talking about

Phumi: sleep with one eye open Kazi cause the
day I'll strike even lucifer will sit down and take
points... I hope uMa haunts you until you die nx

***then the call got dropped....She put the
phone down slowly with her shaky hands***

Kazi: ooh God....ooh God

tears streamed down her cheeks

Kazi: ma....mamkhulu....ooh God what have I
done

***she sat there staring into space with tear
running down her cheeks***

JABU AND AMO'S HOUSE

later in the evening

Jabu: sure I'll meet you there

then he laughed

Jabu: ok shap

he dropped the call and he got up and went upstairs.....Amo followed him and she found him changing clothes

Amo: o ya kae Jabu? (where are you going)

Jabu: out to meet up with Heath.... go na le goetes tse re tshwanetseng go ringa ka tsona (there are things we need to talk about)

Amo: its late Jabu....i know things are not ok between us but you cant be going out at night like this, you're a married man Jabu

he sighed and turned to look at her

Jabu: he would come here but since you don't want my family near you then we will meet somewhere else

he turned and finished getting dressed and he went and sprayed some perfume on him and walked towards the door

Amo: so things are going to be like this from now on huh

she asked with a hurt voice

Jabu: my family is full of demons, wizards, vampires and people with multiple personalities and since you don't want to associate yourself with them then they'll never set their feet here and you should never set foot in their houses too for peace to reign since I can't choose between you and them

she bit her lower lip looking away

Amo: this is you making a choice Jabu....this is you prepared to lose me instead of your

family.....you took my virginity and made me a mother and now that I no longer look appealing to you you treat me like shit

*** she said with tears in her eyes and Jabu just chuckled not believing what he was hearing***

Jabu: Amogelang

Amo: no Jabu....you ruined my relationship with my family but wena you refuse to choose me over your own family while I did.....you are two faced and I just realized that you're one selfish human being.....im not even sure if you really love me

she rushed to the en-suite bathroom and locked herself in there

Jabu: hai yah neh

he took his phone and made a call

Heath: Javas

Jabu: go shoro mo dladleng Mshikaro (things

are bad at home Mshikaro) let's just postpone to tomorrow after your meeting with Mdlalose

***Heath sighed....he was worried about Jabu and his marriage but disappointed at Amo and her recent behavior ***

Heath: no flop....o tlo ba shap (no problem....will you be ok)

Jabu sighed

Jabu: Amo o chenxitse Mshikaro vrou e e zamang go go Iwesa le family ya gao ga se yona Mshikaro....i don't even know what to do cause ka mo nxanywa die kind and blaen (Amo has changed Mshikaro....a wife that tries to make you fight with your family is not a good wife Mshikaro)

Heath sighed

Heath: haarde man (sorry man).....maybe you should sit down with her and talk to her calmly

Jabu just sighed and he rubbed his eyes

Jabu: eish ke tla bona..... e re ko cheka on Lile
re tla ova kaosane (eish I'll see....le me go
check ok Lile we will talk tomorrow)

Heath: sure kiss the princess for me

Jabu: shap

***they ended the call and Jabu went towards
the bathroom and he sighed...it was clear this
whole thing was weighing down on him***

Jabu: im disappointed in you Amogelang...very
disappointed but I still love you and blaen but
one thing you should know is I will never stay
away from my brothers so its up to you to
accept and live with that or...

Amo: or what?

*** She asked with a blocked nose but he
couldn't miss the attitude she used to ask him
that....so he just shook his head and he walked

away***

Amo: I said or what Jabulani!!

*** she asked again but she didn't get an answer so she opened the door and he wasn't there.....she clicked her tongue and went to sit down on the bed and she took out her phone and dialed a number***

Voice: hello

she kept quiet a bit as she got emotional again when she heard her voice, its been a while since she spoke to her.....tears filled her eyes and she found herself breaking down

Voice: Amogelang

Amo: mama

she cried

Voice: why o lla.... bothata ke eng? (why are you crying....what's wrong)

***she asked concerned and Amo just

continued to cry***

Voice: Amogelang keng.... ke
Jabulile.....go diragalang ngwanaka?
(Amogelang what's wrong...is it
Jabulile...whatgoing on my child?)

Amo: I...i think I made a mistake mama

she said crying

Voice: phoso ya eng....go diragalang
Amogelang bua le nna? (what
mistake....what's going on Amogelang talk to
me)

Amo: ke batla go bowa gae mama ga ke sa
kgona (I want to come back home I can't do
this anymore)

Jabu: what?

***he said standing by the door with a deadly
frown on his face ***

INSERT.....37

Amo: mama I'll call you back

then she dropped the call

Jabu: o re you want to do what?

Amo: I think its best I went back home

Jabu: are you hearing yourself Amogelang...o
nagana gore re mo mojolong mo (you think
we're dating here)

Amo: it's for the best

Jabu: best ya masepa.... best for who
huh....best for who!!

He said sounding angry and Amo stood up and she breathed out.

Amo: I have a headache can we not do this now

She went back to the bathroom leaving Jabu standing there trying to make sense on what he just heard

MENZI'S HOUSE

*** Menzi finally got out of his study room and went to look for Kazi....he found her in the dining room area crying.....he rushed to her and when she felt his arms around her she let it all out.....he also let her cry whatever that hurt her out and when she calmed down he pulled a chair and sat next to her***

Menzi: what going...is it the baby?

He asked with a concerned tone and she shook her head no

Menzi: then what's wrong

Kazi: Phu... Phumi's mother is dead

He frowned then his face softened and he sighed looking down

Menzi: eish....ngiyaxolisa sthandwa sam (im sorry my love)....what happened, was she sick?

she shook her head no as tears ran down her cheeks

Kazi: that....that guy and that woman I gave Phumi's address to killed her

Menzi's eyes popped out

Kazi: I got her killed Menzi....her blood is in my hands....i killed my aunt Menzi

She cried and Menzi sighed and he made her stand up then he pulled her so she sat on his lap and he held her as she cried

Menzi: shhh its ok....its ok

she shook her head no

Kazi: Phumi knows Menzi....she called me and she said I should sleep with one eye opened

Menzi: what...but how did she know and where does she get the nerve to threaten you

She sniffed and wiped her tears off

Kazi: I don't know but she does and she sounded cold and scary

Menzi: don't worry she won't do anything to you

Kazi: you don't get it Menzi.....when she said I should sleep with one eye opened I actually felt shivers run down my spine.....there's something about her Menzi, she wasn't even crying or sounding emotional or angry, she was just cold

Menzi: and I said she won't do anything to you
Ntandokazi now stop stressing my baby and calm down

***She just sniffed and rested her head on his

shoulder and he wrapped his arms around her***

Menzi: nothing will happen to you or our baby ok

she nodded....after some time they retired to bed and slept...in the middle of the night she woke up screaming and sweating like crazy....Menzi woke up too and tried to calm her down but all she did was to cry hysterically

Menzi: sthandwa sam look at me please...look at me

he made her look at him...she was even shaking

Menzi: you need to calm down please...it was just a dream

she nodded quickly as she tried to calm down and he just held her tight worried

***The following morning Jabu left early in the morning to go attend an important meeting with one of his suppliers, he was gonna come back after the meeting to sitting and talk with his wife so they find common ground in a calm matter but what he didn't expect is to come back from the meeting to find his wife and daughter gone along with their clothes...he tried to call her but it send him straight to voicemail....he then rushed out with his car keys and drove out of his yard in a rush....

He arrived at her parents' house and saw her car....he breathed out with relief then he got out of his car and walked inside the yard all the way to the door and he knocked, after some time the door opened and Amo's mother stood there***

Jabu: mamazala le kae? (mother in law how are you)

Amo'smom: ke teng...tsena (im fine...come in)

She made way for Jabu to walk in and he went to his daughter when he saw her playing on the floor with her toys.... she screamed raising her hands to her father when she saw him, he picked her up and she giggled as he kissed her all over her face....he sat down and he put her on his lap and Amo's mother sat down too

Jabu: where is Amo dimamzo

Amo'smom: she's sleeping

he sighed....this whole thing with Amo was weighing him down cause he loves her so much

Jabu: mmmmh...can I have my daughter's bags dimamzo and as for your daughter will come home once she realizes that she's someone's wife

Amo'smom: go etsagalang Jabu....why Amo a

re family ya geno e tletse ka madimoni le baloi
le di vampire (what's going on Jabu...why is
Amo saying your family is full of demons and
witches and also vampires)

***Jabu clenched his jaws not believing that
Amo betrayed him like that***

Jabu: that is between my wife and I mamzo

Amo'smom: so ke nnete? (so it's the truth)

Jabu: tlisa beke ya Lile ke nyako vaya
assomblief (please bring Lile's bag I want to
leave)

***He said with an annoyed tone and Amo's
mother shook her head and she got up and
went to the bedroom Amo was sleeping in and
she woke her up and told her Jabu is here and
he wants to take Lile with, she woke up and
went to the lounge....they stared at each other
for some time until Amo looked away***

Amo: you're not leaving with her Jabu

Jabu: I need your permission because?

he asked with a frown on his face

Amo: im her mother!!

she said raising her voice a bit

Jabu: and im her father

She kept quiet for a bit

Jabu: so you want to break our family apart

Amo

Amo: what family Jabu....your family is with
your brothers and their wives and Mbali's family

Jabu: why are you doing this?

She didn't answer him

Jabu: you want me to choose you over my
family then what....what do you think will
happen to us and our marriage

Amo: with God's help we will be fine

Jabu laughed shaking his head

Jabu: so to hell with me and my feelings as long as Amo get what she wants right

she didn't say anything and Jabu chuckled shaking his head

Jabu: you know what give me my daughter's bags and let me go

Amo: you're not going anywhere with my daughter Jabu

Jabu: I don't wanna argue with you so tlisa beke ya Lile (so bring Lile's bag)

Amo: I said my daughter is not going anywhere!!

she shouted

Amo'smom: Amogelang how dare you raise your voice at your husband like that....e le gore o tsenwe ke eng!!(what's gotten into you)

Amo: he wants to take my daughter away from me....just because you could sit around and let your dead husband kick me out of his house

like a dog don't think I'll do the same!!

Jabu just shook his head looking down disappointed by her behavior

Amo'smom: Amogelang....

Amo ignored her mother and looked at Jabu

Amo: you have your son now leave my daughter for me....don't take me on Jabulani or else I'll hurt you were it hurts the most

Jabu just looked at her wondering what went wrong

Jabu: when your father kicked you out like a dog who was there to save you and today you're the one who threatens me to my face

Amogelang.....i have been nothing but good to you, I treated you like a queen making sure every woman around envies you and now you're doing this to me just because I refused to choose between you and my family

he said with a voice full of pain

Amo: I didn't ask you too

those words hurt Jabu to the core

Jabu: wow....

he whispered

Amo'smom: mokhwenyana ema pele ke founelle
abuti wa gae.....maybe he'll knock some sense
mo tlhogong ya gae (son in law wait a minute
and let me call her brother....maybe he'll knock
some sense into her head)

Jabu: no ma I just realized gore being
mamzalwane doesn't mean gore you'll make a
good and accepting wife....im sure le
legosha(even a prostitute) will make a better
wife

Amo: wa reng Jabu (what did you just say
Jabu)....take that back now

***she said hurt by his statement and Jabu just

kissed Lile's cheek and he got up giving her to Amo's mother ***

Amo: JABU!!

she shouted scaring Lile in the process

Jabu: hei hei not in front of my daughter....ke tlao tunner into susu ka warm klap e one mo pele ga mmagao (I'll give you only one slap in front of your mother that will turn you deaf instantly) if you ever showcase your bitchy side in front of my daughter!!

He said with a firm voice pointing at Amo and she kept quiet

Jabu: dimamzo askies for disrespecting you and your home.... I'll come and see Lile tomorrow

then he looked at Amo and clicked his tongue and he walked out feeling a mixture of hurt and anger

Amo'smom: to think I was scared gore Modise will take after his father and guess what my daughter is the one that took after him

she shook her head

Amo: Ma please not now!!

She stood up and walked away and Amo's mother just shook her head feeling defeated

CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

Cass: you packed everything?

***They were leaving for KZN permanently for more privacy in their farm house.....but for Cass he wanted to be closer so he'll be able to support Ray and Mbali during this tough times without worrying about Phumi and Thia being alone far away from him in another province....anyway she nodded and kept quiet looking outside the window....she wished she

could go outside and let the sun hit her skin giving her all the vitamins her skin needed but she couldn't and she will never experience that ever....she sighed looking down***

Cass: talk to me

He could see she was troubled

Phumi: will Thia be able to go and play outside during the day

she asked looking outside again

Cass: I don't know yet bello....there are different types of vampires out there so I don't know as yet of the kind of vampire our Thia will be....only time will tell

She sighed and nodded

Phumi: so I'll be cooped up inside the house for eternity

Cass: no...once the sun sets we will go outside...we can even take a walk with Thia or

we can move to a country where it's always cold and snowing and the sun hardly comes out....its all up to you

She shook her head no.....he then took a leap of blind fate and he wrapped his arms around her body from behind and he kissed the top of her head

Cass: I love you

She didn't say it back but he was glad she didn't push him off her even though her body was a bit tense

Cass: I know you love me too so there's no need for you to say it back

she smiled and relaxed

Phumi: what will happen if I step outside and let the sun hit my skin?

Cass: you'll evaporate....meaning you'll die

Phumi: but that day ko gae you were walking

outside while it was sunny

He sighed and kissed the top of her head

Cass: im not a full blown vampire Bello I was born not bitten while you were bitten....im a half vampire half wizard meaning im a hybrid called a Siphoner.....i siphon magic from the energy that keeps me alive and use it as the source of my magic meaning I basically use tricks to make me walk on the sun for a few minutes without burning to death...come let me show you something

he pulled her and they walked away going to the back porch...she quickly closed her eyes when the sun light got too much for her and Cass quickly went inside like a speed of lightning and came back with a pair of sunglasses and she wore them

Cass: is it better now?

she nodded and he kissed her forehead

Cass: this is what I wanted to show you

he went to the edge of the porch and stretched his bare hand to the sunlight and after a few seconds it started to burn....he clenched his jaws as the pain was unbearable and after a few seconds he pulled his burned and shaking hand back and Phumi looked at it with her eyes popped out....she could see his skeletal bones from where it was burnt....he clenched his jaws and took it like a man until his hand repaired its self until it got back to normal...she was still shaken even when his hand healed

Phumi: ooh G...jeez....did I just see your bones...ooh my gosh

Cass: that's what happens....i managed to pull my hand back cause the rest of my body wasn't burning but imagine if my whole body was there in the middle and the sun was burning me like that all over my body....by now I would be dead

and turned into ashes not forgetting the pain its unbearable but my magic helps with slowing the burn and minimizing the intensity of the pain I feel when my skin burns

Phumi swallowed hard

Cass: I can only last in the sun for 10 to 15 minutes tops before the pain gets intense and I start feeling like im being burned alive to death

Phumi: I can't believe this

she looked terrified

Cass: this is our life Bello and it's not that much of a big deal...once the sun sets night walkers like ourselves come out to play...it's the sun that is our number one enemy that's why I hope that Thiago is a Dhampir

she sighed and turned then she walked back in.... she suddenly felt so much fear for the sun....Cass joined her as she watched Thia sleeping in his cot

Phumi: I think you're right....look at him sleeping peacefully.....are you sure he's a vampire too

he chuckled and he wrapped his arms around her

Cass: yeah that's why I said I think he's a different one altogether....he could be a Dhampir in fact I hope he's one

Phumi: what's that?

Cass: Dhampir are also called Daywalkers.....they have all the powers vampires have but without all those weaknesses full blown vampires have like the sun being their enemy

*** she finally breathed out with relief, at least all is not lost....maybe her son will have some kind of normal life even though he's a vampire.....she hoped he's a Dhampir too.....then she felt his hand going to her curves and he brushed them and he grabbed her ass

and groaned a bit***

Cass: the day I'll have you.....our house will be left in mess once we done.....i swear we will have to buy knew furniture cause everything will be broken but eish..... I miss your love handles bello

she raised her eyebrows

Phumi: askies

he chuckled

Cass: I miss holding on to them as I hit it from behind...what am I hold on to from now on

Phumi: im not even gonna entertain you

she said walking away and he checked out her ass and he bit his lower lip and he whistled

Cass: but damn that ass...whooooooh

Phumi just shook her head with a small smile on her face as he followed behind her

Cass: are you sure this is all you

Phumi: mxm sambora creature (don't bore me creature)

Cass: nawe creature (you too creature)

she chuckled....he loved that she was slowly going back to the Phumi he loves but he was still treading carefully around her

Cass: I love your new body im not gonna lie, that tiny waist, perky breasts and your out there round ass drive me crazy but I miss your love handles bello...eish

Phumi laughed shaking her head...her laughter warmed his cold heart

Phumi: you're crazy Jes.....

she kept quiet and kept a straight face....she sat down on the bar stools in the kitchen looking sad all of a sudden

Cass: you can say his name you know

he said witting next to her

Phumi: it feels wrong.....i feel like I betrayed him by agreeing to be turned but at the same time im glad to be alive even though im actually notif you know what I mean

Cass: people are judgmental but not God Bello.....Saint is a demon but he acknowledges God and worships him like no other...so don't care what society thinks about vampires their opinions don't matter, the only one that matters is Gods'

she bit her lower lip looking down

Cass: im not into religion cause I've seen how the real world is like....I've been to places that would question your whole knowledge of life and this world....I've seen creatures that humans don't believe exist even those that people believe are myths but I do believe in a higher being....the creator or heaven and

earth...some may say that's God but other religions call him with different names....even amanye amaZulu have a name for him, they call him Umvelinqangi, the most high....Devine consciousness who is considered the source of all that has been, that is and all that ever will be.....you can debate with them and say but that's God but they'll disagree and say no....the different religions like Baha'I, Buddhism, Christianity, Confucianism, Hinduism, Islam, Jainism, Judaism, Shinto, Sikhism, Taoism and Zoroastrianism have a name they use to call him....they may all believe their own name is the right one but one thing they have in common is they believe he is the higher being, the creator of all so that's why I believe in a higher power but not religion

Phumi: mmmmh

She said taking in all he just said

Phumi: you read a lot neh?

he nodded

Cass: you will too once the years goes by...knowledge is power Belloso back to God, you can call him Umvelinqangi ke how about that

She smiled a bit

Phumi: and you know it's not like I....we worship the devil...even though im a vamp now I still believe in G...in Umvelinqangi....i still have faith in him....i still believe if he didn't care or he thought me being turned into this is so wrong and an abomination in his eyes he would've made sure I don't make it but here I am....i still love him and I still believe he's the creator of all and that he loves me but because society is judgmental and...yah.....it's even making it hard for me to say his name...it's like when you're a sangoma and you call out his name, some Christians give you a dirty looks as if it's an abomination for a sangoma to call upon his

name...it's just sad

Cass sighed and he pulled her and her chair closer and she rested her head on his chest and he wrapped his arms around her

Cass: stop caring about what people say
Bello....care about what God or Umvelinqangi thinks of you....we are what is called a myth, an abomination but yet were still here....look at Saint he's a demon but he's more of a believer of God than many Christians...he doesn't even care what he is...as long as he still gets to call on God's name and to worship him in his own way then he's good....ukuthi wena uthi he's a demon, he's evil, he's this and that akusilo ibhizinisi lakhe lelo (it's not his business) but at the same time let's not forget that there are some Christians and some people too from other religions that are not judgmental, those that don't think they are God's advisers and believe they know more than God so there's still

hope for Christianity and other religions and humanity....those are the people that make this world a better place and I have tremendous respect for them

she sighed and kept quiet a bit

Phumi: I called Phumi last night

He didn't say anything

Phumi: you know

Cass: yeah

she sighed

Phumi: I was angry last night but not anymore

Cass: why?

Phumi: angazi (I don't know)....i just.... its because I know she loves my mother, my mother was more of a mother to her than her own mother was and she would never put her in harm's way intentionally

Cass: what if they found you there....would you still feel the same way

she kept quiet

Cass: its ok to let some things go Bello but never let anyone take advantage of your kind heart....you're no longer that vulnerable Phumi but a vampire who's married to a half vamp and half wizard....you can be a sweet heart all you want but never take shit from anyone including me ok

she nodded slowly

Cass: she was willing to let those two fuckers hurt you for a man that never fucked her or even dated her....what she did was childish but her giving strangers you home address is just.....

he shook his head

Cass: you know if it was years back she would be dead by now but since im trying to be a good example for my boy I'll let her be.....so let her

own guilt eat her up and let's concentrate on our family and raising our son ok

Phumi: ok

****she breathed out***

Cass: thank you for forgiving me and for giving us a chance to making this work

she didn't say anything and he kissed her forehead

Cass: I love you Bello so much

Phumi: I love you too

he smirked like a retard

Phumi: don't even say it

he laughed

Cass: I still miss those love handles

she got away from him and he laughed some more

Phumi: may Amadioha hit that your mouth mxm

she said with a Nigerian accent and Cass laughed some more

Cass: what's Amadioha?

Phumi: I don't know they usually say it in Nigerian movies

Cass laughed out loud

Phumi: mxm

she got up and walked away

Cass: Amadioha come back....

he teased her

Phumi: voetsek!!

MENZI'S HOUSE

***it was around 3 in the afternoon and Kazi was still in their bedroom with her eyes bloodshot red....she couldn't believe that her aunt died like that, she blamed herself for her

death and she wished she could turn the hands of time and make things right.....after staring into space for some time she took her phone and decided to unblock her mother's numbers then send her a message telling her about the passing of her sister, she has been contemplating on whether to tell her or not since last night cause she's her only sister or rather she was her only sister, despite how much she despises her mother but the person that died is her blood sister and she deserved to knowher phone rang for some time and she answered.....Kazi then told her about her sister's death ***

Joyce: ithi uyadlala Ntandokazi (say you're joking Ntandokazi)

fresh tears ran down Kazi's face

Kazi: Phumi said she died

***Kazi's mother started crying over the phone

and Kazi dropped the call....she then send her Phumi's numbers and she put the phone down and cried some more....after some time she wiped her tears off and stared into space as she dwelled on her pain....the door got pushed open and Menzi walked in with a tray on his hands....he put the tray on top of a small table that is next to a couch that is inside the bedroom and he sighed...he was worried about her stress level***

Menzi: come and eat

she wanted to tell him that she's not hungry but she thought of her baby and slowly got out of the bed...Menzi saw red stains on the sheets ...the next thing a red liquid ran down her legs and she held her stomach feeling some pain

Menzi: noooo....noooo

***she looked down and saw more blood running down her legs and she started

shaking***

Kazi: God....noooo...pleasee....noooo

***he rushed to her and quickly picked her up
and rushed out***

***Phumi's phone rang and she didn't recognize
the numbers but she answered anyways***

Phumi: hello

Aunty: hello Phumi....its your aunt, Kazi's
mother

She frowned

Phumi: ooh hi...aunty

***She didn't know what to say to her...she was
shocked that she called her...she heard her sniff
on the other side of the phone and she
sighed...she knew Kazi told her but she was
surprised that they are talking now ***

Aunt: ngyaxolisa ngane yami(im sorry my child)....im sorry for the pain you're going through....uNtandokazi called and told me about what happened

she cried and Phumi sighed

Phumi: yeah uma is gone and she's not coming back

Her aunt cried some more

Aunt: I'll come tomorrow to help you prepare for the funeral ok...I'll leave early in the morning

Phumi: there's no need aunty...uma is cremated but you can tell abaphansi ukuthi indodakazi yabo (the ancestors that their daughter) is no longer with us in this world but she's with them in their world

Aunt: ini? (what)

***She shouted ***

Aunt: uthi umenzeni umtakama!! (what did you

say you did to my mother's child)

she shouted

Phumi: I cremated her aunty

Aunt: you did what....Phumelele who gave you the right to cremate my sister...who heh?

she asked sounding angry and Phumi breathed out calming herself down

Phumi: aunty the last time I saw you was during my father's funeral and I was 8 that time.....i don't even remember how you look like now I mean your own child couldn't reach you for some time cause you even changed your numbers.....you called your own daughter with different numbers whenever you felt like it and you didn't even bother to call your sister to check on herthe only reason why I even remember that my mother has a sister is because of Kazi cause even mama never talks about you

Aunt: hey doti (rubbish)....don't tell me nonsense.....you cremated your mother without letting her family know about her passing....uyinja yengane (you're a shitty child).....i can't believe my sister gave birth to such a thing

her words hurt Phumi but she didn't break down

Phumi: what family....do you even know that she once suffered a stroke and she was limping because of that.....do you know that she has been in and out of hospital because of arthritis and high blood so don't tell me about mtakama.....mtakama yamasimba

Aunt: is this how you talk to me
Phumelele.....you're telling me that shit

Phumi breathed out calming herself

Phumi: yazin (you know what) aunty I don't have time for you....I'll let you get eaten by your

own guilt cause I know my mother is resting in peace....she's with my dad and im sure they are happy so wena hlala necala lakho (so stay with your guilt)

she then dropped the call and she looked up as her cold heart ached.....she was going through a lot and she was trying by all mean to remain calm and level headed for her own peace of mind and for her son but people keep pushing her

AT THE HOSPITAL

Menzi is sitting on the hospital couches feeling defeated, after the doctor told him that Kazi lost the baby due to stress he just sat down and let it all out....everything was getting too much for him cause he lost his mentor and now his unborn child....its been almost an hour now since the doctor told him the bad news and he

hasn't even went to see Kazi....he just couldn't face her, he blamed her for the miscarriage.....Anyway he got up and walked out of the building all the way to the parking lot and got inside his car then he rested his forehead on the steering wheel and cried some more.....he remembered the time Buhle lost their first pregnancy how it shuttered him....he wiped his tears off using his vest that has some blood on it and he took out his phone and made a call***

Voice: Ngcobo

Menzi: ngiyenzeni engaka Lorraine (what did I do so bad Lorraine) to go through all this pain

Lorraine: huh?

she was confused

Menzi: I begged her to stop stressing.....i begged her but.....now my baby is dead

Lorraine: what are you talking about Menzi.....is Ntandokazi ok....is the baby ok

Menzi: she lost my baby and it hurt man....fuck it hurts so bad

Lorraine: ooh my God.....im sorry Menzi....im really sorry

she said sounding sad....losing a baby breaks one's soul, she knows from experience it doesn't matter whether it's through miscarriage or not.....she then heard him sniff

Menzi: yaz I begged her...i begged her to not stress but no

Lorraine: you're not gonna do that Menzi, don't be that petty assomblief.....people are not the same, we handle stressful situations differently so stop it

she reprimanded him

Menzi: so you're taking her side....she killed my

baby with her stress and you're taking her side

Lorraine: angizwani no doti Menzi (I don't take kindly to nonsense Menzi)....Ntandokazi also lost her unborn baby.....even if she was sitting in her veranda sipping tea and a stray bullet hit her stomach and the baby died she'd still blame herself so she doesn't need you blaming her too even though it's not her fault.....stop being a jerk and be there for her

Menzi frowned

Lorraine: I know how it's like to lose a baby so I won't sit and listen to you blame your girlfriend for the miscarriage while you also failed to calm her down....what you're doing is a turn off in so many ways cause it shows you're not to be trusted and that you're weak and a coward...nxa I hate men like you

***Then she dropped the call leaving Menzi shocked by her outburst ***

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....38

.

.

.

.

Heath: what happened?

he said sitting next to him.....after Jabu called him and asked him if Sbu could spend some days at his house he knew something was wrong so he drove straight to his house after he tracked his phone and found him drinking his problems away

Jabu: yah mfowethu o tshabe dicheri (be afraid of women)

Heath sighed

Heath: what did Amo do now Javas

Jabu chuckled a bit

Jabu: she left me

Heath: heh?

he was shocked

Jabu: she packed diporogwane tsa gae le tsa
Lile (she packed her bags and Lile's) and went
back home

***Heath looked at Jabu with a frown on his
face....he couldn't believe what he was
hearing***

Jabu: you know...what she said to me after I
reminded her about how I saved her, just to
remind her how I fought for her and guess(a) o
rileng monna (and guess what she said to
me)....

he chuckled

Jabu: a re I didn't ask you

Heath closed his eyes as if he's in pain

Jabu: ka moncanywa dai cheri Mshikaro and blaen so why anchuna so (I love that girl Mshikaro and a lot so why is she doing me like this)

*** He said with a broken voice as tears ran down his cheeks and Heath sighed looking down***

Heath: I know you love her Javas....i know

Jabu: then why anketsa so (is she doing this to me)

Heath swallowed hard fighting his own tears back....he couldn't bare seeing his brother crying like this

Jabu: or maybe ga e tswe pila ka se tsotsi maybe ka sengamla e tla utlwagala (or maybe it doesn't come out right in thug language

maybe in English it will come out right).....i love that woman mfowethu....i would even give up my life for hers

Heath: and I know that man....even big Ray wa e jaja dai deng (knows that)

Jabu: then why anghurt(a) so (then why does she hurt me like this)

he said crying and Heath pulled him into a tight hug and he let him cry it all out.....the last time he saw Jabu cry like this was when he found out that a guy he once trusted with his life betrayed him by landing him in jail....the heist they attempted to do didn't fail cause it wasn't planned correctly but because his trusted now dead friend betrayed him....he cried and after he was done he told Caesar to kill him in a most painful way and he gladly did

AFTER SOME TIME

Heath: o shap?

Jabu nodded and he gulped his drink at one go and he sat back on the couch and exhaled

Heath: what should I do?

Jabu: nex....mo tlogele o tlo ngopola een dag
(nothing....leave her she'll remember me one day)

He said with his blocked nose with his eyes red and puffy and Heath nodded

Heath: and if it comes to shared custody of Lile and she gives you problems Cass is there so sa wara (so don't worry)

Jabu didn't say anything

Jabu: eish...i never thought I'll ever find my marriage here..... I believed gore we will grow old together Mshikaro

Heath sighed

Heath: you can still grow old together once she calms the fuck down and come back to her

senses

Jabu shook his head no

Jabu: I don't trust her anymore.....it will take everything in me to trust her again and again for her to come back I have to distance myself from my family and I can't have that ncono a hambe (its better she leaves)....she's choosing her beliefs and im choosing my family

Heath: Mjava don't make decisions based on anger and emotions.....give it some time then make a decision

Jabu: what I know is that I will not choose between her and my family and it will take a lot from me to trust her again or to look at her the same again....can you believe she even told her mother about our family secrets

Heath closed his eyes shaking his head

Heath: amen

Jabu shook his head

Jabu: eish die cheri onrobile pelo (eish this girl broke my heart).....i think finding her with another guy fucking is better than this Mshikaro....imagine being made to choose between your wife and your brothers who would take a bullet for you, brothers who would give up their lives for yours....brothers that had my back for as long as I can remember and top of that a re she didn't ask me to save her, she basically said to my face that she didn't ask me to love her, to marry her and to make her the center of my universe....with cheating she can redeem herself and win over my trust and I can just kill the bastard and punish her until im satisfied but with this Mshikaro she can't un-break my heart....she can't take back what she said...she can't un-break my heart

he sighed and so did Heath

Jabu: im hurt Mfowethu.....im not even angry im

just hurt, her words keep ringing in my head

then he chuckled

Jabu: she even said I can keep MY son and she'll keep Her daughter.....she just disregarded Sbu as nothing to her after making him believe gore he found a mother in her

he swallowed hard and Heath clenched his jaws

Jabu: yah o e tshabe cheri (be scared of a woman)

Heath: go and pack your clothes and I'll go and pack Sbu's

Jabu shook his head

Heath: I wasn't asking you....now get up re vaye (now get up and lets go)

Jabu breathed out

Heath: you're not staying here alone now get up.....you'll have all the privacy you need, no one

will bother you as long as you're close to me in this trying time

After some time Jabu finally gave up and went to pack and Heath went to pack Sbu's clothes....he then called Naledi to let her know what's going on and she didn't have a problem with Sbu and Jabu staying with them for some time

HEATH AND NALEDI'S HOUSE

***Naledi couldn't believe that Amo packed her bags and left her matrimonial home just like that, she's also scared of demons, vampires and wizards but she loves and trusts her husband more than she fears the demons and stuff.....Heath said they will never harm her in any way and she believes him cause she trusts him but she didn't wanna judge Amo cause people are not the same, she knows that what

works for her might not work for Amo.....she was suddenly concerned and worried that maybe she couldn't talk to Jabu about her fears so maybe she might open up to her since they are married in the same family, so she took her phone and dialed Amo's numbers...after the third ring she answered***

Amo: Naledi

she said with a bored tone

Naledi: hey Amo o right....Heath just told me about what happened

Amo: Heath told you about what happened?

Naledi: yeah...well not in so many details but....

Amo: why are calling me Naledi

Naledi kept quiet a bit....she didn't understand why she was this cold towards her

Naledi: to check if you're ok....im worried about

you

Amo: are we perhaps.... friends?

Naledi frowned

Naledi: what....ummm Amo what's going on....i just called to check gore o shap

Amo: bona tell your husband to stay out of my marital business and wena stop having pillow talks with that mentally personality what what husband of yours about my marriage with Jabu nxa

she then dropped the call leaving Naledi shocked

Naledi: wow

later on Naledi told Heath what happened and Heath couldn't believe it, more especially about what she said about his mental state....he couldn't believe it

Amo clicked her tongue as she put her phone down

Amo: mxm...Jabu and his big mouth....im sure im the talk of town nx

***She picked her phone and made a call to Jabu but his phone rang answered and she clicked her...then her mother walked in with a sleeping Lile strapped on her back ***

Her.mom: Amogelang what's really going on....what really made you leave your matrimonial home and don't tell me about demons

Amo: mama please

She said dismissing her then she frowned

Amo: wait... why are you wearing that evil thing mama

She said pointing at a ZCC badge her mother was wearing

Her.mom: evil ke that heart of yours nx

Amo: bathong....how can you say that

Her.mom: say what....this is my house I can say whatever I want and wear whatever I want

Amo: wow

Her.mom: yes askere le wena o nyetswe and o nale ko ga gao.... so le nna ka mo ke ka mo nna, now talk or leave my house (yes you're also married and you have your own house....so this is my house now talk or leave my house)

Amo: bathong mama

Her.mom: ke re bolela Amogelang (talk Amogelang)....you left the comfort of your home to come here and give me attitude....when I say talk you talk or pack up and leave....i don't even know where you'll go cause your savor Jabu is no longer available and you don't even know gore you'll be able to get access to HIS money to survive out there

since o le unemployed and your bother a re you let Jabu man-handle him when he went to bring you back home so ga a ditsene (he's not getting involved)

Amo's eyes got filled with tear, this is the mother she knows not the sweet mother she met when she arrived here

Amo: this is my father's house...you can't kick me out

Her.mom: wa mmona mo ntatao....ke re wa mmona na? (can you see your father here....i said can you see him?)

Amo: mama why are you like this...why can't you support me like a mother should

Her.mom: hei....i supported stabane se ba reng ke ntatao (I supported that gay called your father)....i chose him over my own family only for him to betray, hurt and embarrassed me!!

she said bitterly

Amo: what?

Her.mom: o re why ke apere beche nou (why do you think im wearing a badge now).....i fixed things with my family... even your brother stopped going to the 'family' church....he joined another church and he's even drinking now and going to parties....your father broke Modise....Modise looked up to him and he was even ready to take over from him as pastor when your father retired as the pastor

Amo: why are you lying against dad

Her mother laughed

Her.mom: go to church on Sunday that's if you'll still be here and you will know who your father really was...

she walked to the door then she stopped and turned to face Amo

Her.mom: a pastor that slept with younger boys at some hotel in town....ke re go na le le video

ya gae a le busy le bashimane nxa (there's even a video of him with boy)

she walked out leaving Amo shocked

KZN (Thursday)

***The Women's Manyano (The Methodist Women's Prayer and Service union) just left, it was a blessed day were singing and prayers were held at the homestead of the Khumalos....they celebrated Ma and Baba even though they didn't know baba so well but they knew him through Ma's generosity and kind heart....They sang and danced and everyone spoke highly of her and many were sad that she's gone....after the service they were served food and drinks and they were even updated about the funeral arrangements....later they left and the Khumalo wives and their husbands cleaned around and the wives cooked for the

family and now they were sitting around the table eating while the children and their nannies were sitting in the TV room eating too and others being fed.....Ray left after the church service for Gauteng but he's gonna be back the following day with his brothers (Ruu included), his grandfather, Thndi, Naledi and Michael senior and his wife who will arrive later on from Nigeria***

Nomhle: today was amazing....the singing and dancing was just amazing

Kedi: mmh uMa and Baba were celebrated shem

Ntombi: mmmmh i found myself dancing and singing with them

Noma: im just glad aunt Bongi agreed to sit on the mattress

Mbali: if she refused I would have sat on it

***then they heard the gate slide open and

Snakes went to check who it was and he saw
Pops coming out of the car after the car parked
inside the yard***

Snakes: its Pops

he said sitting down again

Ntombi: thank God he's back home safely

Smiso: don't freak out

he said to Mbali

Mbali: huh?

***she said confused and the door opened and
as soon as the kids saw their grandpa they
screamed and got up running to him....he
quickly put the bags he was holding down and
hugged them, after he kissed their foreheads
they went back to sit down then Pops went to
Cataleya since she was too shy to run to Pops
like the other children and he picked her up and
spoke to her in Spanish, he Kissed for forehead

too then he put her down and he greeted the nannies....he went to the lady he walked in with and held her hand and they went to the dining area....they both greeted everyone and sat down, by now Melusi was already served with his own plate of food***

Imani: let me go and dish up for you and your guest dad

she said getting up, the tension on the table was just too much...everyone was quiet and the guys and Mbali except for Smiso were looking from Pops to the lady sitting next to him and Pops ignored them

Snakes: kgm kgm

He cleared his throat and Pops ignored him

Snakes: ngithe kgm kgm Pops (I said kgm kgm Pops)

Melusi chuckled and Pops looked at him

Pops: yes Nhlaka

Snakes: introductions?

Pops just shook his head

Pops: I was about to...uyaphapha (you're too forward)

then he cleared his throat

Pops: ummm mdeni (ummm family) this is Anna-Maria Martinez and she's the woman in my life

then he looked at Mbali

Pops: the woman I love

Mbali swallowed hard and she looked down at her place....they all became quiet....Imani put the plates of food in front of Pops and his lady and she went back to the kitchen and came back with a bowl of water and Pops washed his hands and so did Anna-Maria and they thanked her as she sat next to her husband

Snakes: don't tell me uyashada Pops....you're too old for that....imagine your age mates as Istroy's haikhona baba (don't tell me you're getting married Pops....you're too old for that...imagine your age mates as groomsmen no dad)

Melusi laughed and so did Anna-Maria

Snakes: buka uyahleka what if ngiyamthuka (look at her laughing what if im insulting her)

Melusi laughed some more and the ladies looked at him while the guys were still looking at Pops cause they didn't even know he was dating and for him to bring the lady to meet them meant she was important in his life

Anna-Maria: yehlisa umoya Nhlaka uyihlo nami asishadanga (calm down Nhlaka, your father and I are not getting married)

***She said with an accent and Snakes froze and everyone looked at her, they couldn't

believe she was speaking in isiZulu.... She looked like an upgraded Salma Hayek, she had an hour glass figure for a woman her age with sterling gray eye color***

Snakes: ummm

He then cleared his throat

Snakes: you can understand IsiZulu

Anna: yeah

Snakes: ooh ok

then silence....they ate dinner quietly and after they were done Pops got up and looked at Mbali

Pops: princess please follow me

Mbali slowly got up and followed him outside to the back porch

Pops: I thought you'll throw a tantrum and walk out when I introduced Anna

Mbali sighed

Mbali: if I was single and not a mother I would have because it would feel like you're cheating on me

she said jokingly and Pops laughed

Mbali: on a serious note daddy....im glad you have found someone, I was worried that now that uMa and baba are...gone you'll be all alone since all your children are married and living in another province

Pops sighed

Pops: I will never love her like I loved your mother the love of my love.....i will never marry her but I do love her and she means a lot to me.....she keeps me sane and focused and she's loyal

Mbali breathed out

Mbali: is she ok with you not wanting to remarry

ever again

Pops: yeah...she was also married to the love of her life, he was killed by the Mariachi.....we both want the same things in life and marriage is not one of them.....we got married to our soul mates and that's about it

Mbali: does she know about the family secrets

Pops: yeah

Mbali: and she's cool with everything

He sighed

Pops: yeah...she was pretty shaken when I showed her my beast the first time but she didn't run away....i explained everything and she was shocked to learn about Saint, in her village there's a legend of The Saint so to know that its not just a legend made her see that there's truth in every legend out there

***Mbali got closer and Pops wrapped his arms

around her as she rested her head on his chest***

Mbali: I love you daddy...so much

Pops: I love you too my Princess....you have grown my Mbali would have told me she hated me and that im trying to replace her mother blah blah blah

She wrapped her hands around his waist tight

Mbali: you gave Ray and I your blessings even though you know who Ray really is so it would be cowardly and unfair of me to not give you mine too

He kissed the top of her head

Pops: thank you my love

they kept quiet a bit

Mbali: I miss them so much daddy

she said and she sniffed

Pops: I miss them too

AN HOUR LATER INSIDE THE STUDY ROOM

Snakes: yah neh entlek bakwenzani abafazi
abamnyama Pops (what did black women ever
do to you)

****Pops chuckled***

Pops: fosek

Snakes chuckled

Pops: twins you have been quiet.....i thought by
now you would have raised your concerns

Jase: you would never or should I say the beast
would never allow you to bring a bad woman to
the Khumalo household so I have nothing to
raise

Pops: true

Jay: so are you gonna marry her

Pops: no and we're both in agreement to that

The guys nodded

Muzi: did ma and ubaba know about her

Pops: yeah

He nodded

Pops: what about you Smiso don't you have any questions for me

Smiso: I did a thorough background check on her and she's clean....i know everything there is no know about her to im good

Jay: wait you knew about her?

Smiso: yeah

Snakes: and you didn't say anything

Smiso: did Pops or baba know about the women in your lives before you introduced them or told them about them

Jay: that's not the same Smiso and you know

that

Smiso: so as old as you are Jay you have a problem with your father moving on after your mother passed away 21 years ago

Jay: don't talk about my mother!!

Smiso raised an eyebrow at him then he shook his head

Pops: what's going with you Nkosenye

Jay: my problem is Thorsten here kept this from us...he knew you were dating and he kept quiet

Smiso: I knew you cheated on your wife and still didn't tell anyone until you decided to tell...so now its fine for me to keep your shit to myself but not to keep everyone else's....stop being two faced Jay it doesn't suit you

Jay looked away

Pops: wait....you cheated on Nomhle Nkosenye

Smiso: worse....the lady he cheated with was a

spy that wanted to bring down this family

Jay: I didn't sleep with her we were just talking and flirting and...kissing that's all so stop making it seem like I fucked her

Pops: and that makes it ok?

he was getting angry

Jay: no Pops

Pops: does Nomhle know

Jay: no

Pops: nxa let me leave before I bust that useless head of yours against the wall.....you boys never learn....maybe one of you should die by the beast when your chosen one leaves you maybe the rest of you will realize how important your wives are to you and your beasts

Snakes: well Muzi and I don't have beasts Pops

Pops: fosek Nhlaka!!

***he then walked out...he didn't even talk to them about the funeral arrangement ***

Jay: why did you tell him about that?

he said pissed off at him which didn't move Smiso one bit

Smiso: cause that's what you want me to do right....to tell on all your shitty shenanigans

Snakes: woooh not me....you keep my shenanigans to yourself until I decide to come clean

Muzi got up shaking his head

Muzi: you boys will never learn....one of these days you'll learn the hard way!!

He said with a deep voice and he walked out....it was as if baba just spoke and that freaked out the guys, they even had chills run down their backs

Jase: what the fuck!!

***he said with his eyes wide opened ***

Jay: did...did we just hear baba's voice

Smiso chuckled shaking his head while he looked down

Snakes: you see now this is the shit I don't like....he's not even buried yet and already uyapoka (he's haunting us)

he said not sounding happy at all

AT RUSLAN AND THANDI'S HOUSE

Ruslan and Thandi were sleeping with Ruu spooning Thandi from behind when his phone rang....he turned and reached for his phone and it was his son

Ruu: Carl is everything ok

He said after he answered it

Carl: dad where are you

he said sounding agitated

Ruslan: what's going on son you sound agitated

Carl: my life is in danger dad and im at the airport right now

Ruslan: why what happened

he said sitting up

Carl: it's the Brethren one of them is dating mom

Ruslan: shit...ok buy a plane ticket to South Africa you'll find me waiting for you

Carl: ok

Ruslan: did you take all the necessary precautions

Carl: yes dad

Ruslan: good be save

Carl: alright

***they ended the call and Ruslan breathed out

brushing his head then he called Castiel***

.

INSERT.....39

.

.

.

Ruslan: amour this is my son Carl....my boy this is the woman that owns my heart...the one that my heart beats for

Carl: nice to finally put a face to the person my dad can't seem to shut up about

they laughed and hugged

Ruslan: don't score points with my name boy

Carl: im not scoring any points dad im just telling her the truth

Thandi: leave my boy alone please

She said looking at Ruslan and Carl stuck his tongue to his dad and Ruslan laughed

Carl: Carl one and Ruslan zero

They laughed out loud then the boys came down stairs and they greeted Carl then Mpilo went to Ruslan and held his hand

Ruslan: ummm boys I want you to meet my other son, your big brother Carl...son this is your younger brothers Mpilo and Mpendulo

Carl: sup

he said to Mpe

Mpe: sho

Carl looked at Ruslan and he chuckled

Ruslan: it means “hi”

Carl: ohw ok....sho

He said to Mpe and Mpe chuckled

Mpe: you can call me Mpe

Mpilo: you can call me Mr Pilot

he said with his soft voice and they laughed

Carl: nice to meet you Mr Pilot

Thandi: umm Carl you are not a guest here...this is your home ok

Carl: yes mam...thank you

Thandi: its Ma or mom to you...Mpe help your brother with his bags to the other bedroom that next to yours

then she looked at Carl

Thandi: go and freshen up then come down to eat

Carl: ok

he followed Mpe up the stairs and Mpilo followed them

Ruslan: thank you amour

he said pulling her closer and he kissed her forehead

Thandi: for what?

she asked confused

Ruslan: for welcoming him with open arms

Thandi: he's your son and that makes him my son too

he perked her lips

Ruslan: I love you so much

she blushed

Thandi: I love you too baby

he brushed her baby bump

INSIDE CARL'S BEDROOM

***he took his phone and dialed a number until

someone answered***

Voice: hello

Carl: Tanequa its Carl

Nequa: you son of a....where the hell are you boy!!!

she shouted and Carl sighed

Carl: I just wanted to tell you im safe so don't be going to the popo to open a missing person's case aiyt

she laughed

Nequa: don't make me ask you again boy....

Carl: im away from you and your boyfriend that's all you need to know

she huffed

Carl: your so called new boyfriend doesn't love you he's just using you to get to me so he'll use me as bait to get dad

she laughed her ass off

Nequa: boy stop sniffing dog's shit....are you out of your mind....who the hell do you think you are...are you fucken out of your mind

Carl sighed

Carl: I know you don't believe me like you didn't believe me when I said I liked boys and not girls and you made me sleep with your friend Shenice to prove that im straight...your friend raped me!!!

Nequa: ooh shut up she didn't rape you...she made you taste how good pussy is...you fai....

Ruslan: what!!!

*** he said behind Carl and Carl froze for a few seconds then he dropped the call***

Ruslan: when did this happen.....

he asked with almost a whisper Carl kept quiet

Ruslan: RUSLAN CARLOS MAHAMADOU IM
TALKING TO YOU!!!

he raised his voice startling him

Carl: when I was....i was sixteen

he said with a shaky voice looking scared

Ruslan: why didn't you tell me...

he asked trying to control his anger but the cold air that is suddenly felt inside the room was clear indication that he was failing dismally

Carl: dad she....

he breathed out and sat down facing down

Carl: it was horrible cause I couldn't even get an erection even though I saw her friend naked in front of me....Tanequa made take me some pills and suddenly I had an erection and.....

he sighed

Carl: she said if I tell you or anyone else she'll disown me and hate me forever.....she said she did all that so I'll stop being gay cause it's a disgrace to her to have a moffie as a son....after a few months I still felt violated so I spoke to a counselor at school and she helped me...i still talk to her from time to time when it's one of those days

Thandi: baby something is wrong.....with the....lights...in the the...house
She looked around as she heard wind like sounds in the room and Carl quickly go up

Thandi: Ruu?....baby what's wrong

Carl: dad...ummm please calm down....you'll scare Tha...mom...remember she's pregnant and stress is....

Ruslan: so she had you raped by her friend
Carl looked at Thandi and he looked down

Thandi: what???

Ruslan: she had my son raped!!!

he said with his body shaking

Thandi: baby....Ruu you need to calm down

****she pleaded with him until she reached him and held his arm***

Thandi: I don't know what's going on but baby it sounds like your...our son was violated, he needs your hug and to be comforted and not you looking angry like this towards him.....

Ruslan: he was sixteen amour...sixteen....i always knew something was wrong with him but I thought it's because he was a teen and that the rejection of his mothers' family is what made him so distance emotionally

Thandi: now you know baby so be there for him...calm down now....your other sons are freaking out with the flicking of lights

downstairs

Carl cleared his throat

Carl: so ya'll are gonna comfort each other in front of me.....you do know dad was supposed to rush out and you'll rush after him and you'll find him sitting down crying and you'll comfort him...not this things you all are doing...ya'll are weird parents

they both looked at him surprised, he shook his head and walked to the door

Carl: nigga is famished....you'll find me downstairs

he walked out leaving them shocked

Thandi: what just happened?

Ruslan: he doesn't shock me anymore.....he takes after his uncle Castiel

Thandi: yho another Castiel...haowa bathong

***Ruslan chuckled then he sighed and he went

to sit down on the bed and Thandi joined him***

Amo was lying in bed lost in thoughts....she still couldn't believe that her own macho father slept with younger mena whole pastor

Amo: but at least he wasn't a demon or mentally unstable

she tried to comfort herself then tears ran down her cheeks

Amo: oooh God

she then heard a knock on her bedroom door and she quickly wiped her tears

Amo: come in

the door opened and her brother Modise walked in.....he looked different with a beard and nicely cut haircut

Amo: abuti (brother)

Modise: Amogelang

he said sitting on the edge of the bed

Modise: what are you doing here

she frowned

Amo: askies

Modise: o nyakang mo....o nyetswe akere so
obatlang mo (what are you doing here...you're
married so what are you doing here)

Amo: bathong abuti

Modise: keng he showed you his true colors
right?

Amo: what true colors

Modise: then why are you back home le di
porogwane tsa gao (with your things)

***she looked at him and she could see there was
something different about him....he wasn't that
soft spoken church going man anymore***

Amo: things just didn't work out

Modise: so keng mathata a na le wena? (so what you're the one with the problem?)

Amo: ofcourse not

Modise: then keng?...bolela (then what...talk)

Amo: I don't like your tone Modise

Modise: what tone....Ma said you left cause of his family secrets....my question is o tsena kae wena moo....o tsena kae ko diphiring tsa ko gaabo mmmmh (what has that got to do with you...where do you fit in concerning his family secrets mmmhhh)

She looked at him with an angry look on her face

Modise: my wife knows about our family secret...the fact that our father ne e le stabane (was gay)...a ja marago a banna (sleeping with other men)) but she's still married to me and

she still respect me cause she knows gore my father being a crook...a fraud...a liar and stabane (gay) has got nothing to do with her even though it has brought nothing but hurt and shame but she loves me Amo...that woman loves me and im very lucky to have her in my life....now im asking you again...ungenaphi wena? (where do you fit in)

Amo had tears in her eyes

Amo: his family has people who have demons inside of them and they love it....some have multiple personalities and they are all gangsters

Modise sighed

Modise: you have a child with this man Amogelang so if she inherits their demons and whatnots then are you going to abandon her or kill her?

Amo: Lile is my child Modise

Modise: and Jabu is your husband

Amo: im not going back there Modise....you don't know what I've been through ok....that demon attacked me and even my so called husband didn't believe me when I told him

Modise: why did it attack you....or is it maybe that you're a prayerful woman and your prayers burned him?

she cleared her throat

Amo: yes

Modise: then whatever decision you make I'll support you....if only you listened to me when I warned you about Jabu but you let his money and flashy lifestyle blind you

***she swallowed and he got up ***

Modise: give it a few weeks before you make a decision cause you're human after all so you might change your mind

****then he walked out and she breathed out***

Voice: so you lie....you lied against me....have I attacked you every time you pray, why are you humans so evil but you call us demons evil where else you're worse than us

she screamed and jumped out of bed running out

KZN.....

Castiel hugged Carl and he hugged him back after some time they broke it

Castiel: damn why do you look like me boy....you want your daddy to accuse me of fucking your mother behind his back

Carl laughed

Ruslan: fuck off Castiel

***Ruslan and Carl left going straight to Castiel's house from the airport while Jabu, their grandfather, Heath and Naledi went

straight to the Khumalo household....Thandi decided to stay back after her grandmother warned her about going to a funeral while pregnant...she left with Heath's kids, Jabu's son and her own to Atteridgeville (to her grandparents' house)***

Castiel: what he looks like me

Ruslan: he has only your eyes

he said with a bored tone

Ruslan: and this is your beautiful aunt Phumi

Castiel: why did you put in beautiful to your sentence?

he asked with a serious tone

Ruslan: cause she is, just like MY son looks like you

Phumi laughed

Carl: you're like him?

she nodded as they briefly hugged...she couldn't hug him longer cause she was still a new born

Carl: I love your hair cut and your smile is beautiful

Phumi: thank you

Carl: and those curves aunt-girl....damn

Phumi laughed out loud while Cass and Ruu just shook their heads

Phumi: you're no longer leaving....you're living with us here

laughter

Carl: I need to see the little Vamp

Castiel: little Vamp is those shaved manly legs of yours

Carl: im sure they look better than yours uncle

***he stuck his tongue out at him and Ruslan

laughed so did Phumi as she and Carl walked away***

Castiel: tsek sani!!!

Then Ruslan sighed and Castiel pulled a serious face

Castiel: I want that bitch running mad....if she wasn't his mother I'd kill her myself and as for that friend of hers I want her dead

Ruslan sat down

Ruslan: he was violated and I didn't even know it

he said with a pained voice

Castiel: in Zulu they say ophilisayo akazivezi (the healer doesn't diagnose himself)

*** Ruslan raised an eyebrow looking at him***

Castiel: even an expect needs help from others....you got help from his counselor, he/she helped him heal and deal with what he

experienced and we should be thankful for that

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: I guess

Castiel: just be there for the boy and also deal with those two bitches....make her run mad but not too much she must still see what's happen in our world so the fucken guilt eats her up day by day

Ruslan: don't worry I got this

Castiel: I know you do

he squeezed his shoulder and Ruslan flinched

Ruslan: the fuck...you want to break my bones

Cass laughed

Castiel: pussy

he said getting up

*** Jabu is smoking in the backyard....the stress of his marriage is weighing him down, he has been feeling down and stressed out....he found an sms from Amo saying that she wants a divorce....he tried to ignore how that hit him hard by keeping busy or joining in with the conversations the guys had but it was hard.....he couldn't believe his marriage is about to end just like that ***

Voice: Javas?

a female voice said behind him and he turned and frowned at the woman

Woman: you don't remember me do you

she said smiling at him but he kept a straight face

Jabu: am I supposed to

she swallowed cause that sounded rude

Woman: ummm.....im sorry to bother you

she attempted to walk away but he stopped her

Jabu: wait

she turned and faced him

Jabu: harde man....ngivuke ngo left (sorry man...i woke up on the wrong side of the bed)....uthi how do we know each other

Woman: ummm your grandmother once help my family to locate my brother who went missing for three months and we found him buried in the woods, he was killed by a serial killer who targeted gay men...he was buried in a shallow grave with other gay men the guy killed...Lorraine is my name and I was with....

he interrupted her

Jabu: wait....Lolly?

she smiled looking down

Lorraine: yep the one and only

he looked at her with his eyes popped out....he couldn't believe how grown she is

Jabu: damn eeh o godile man (you're grown man)

she laughed as they hugged

Jabu: I remember ne o le slender malailai nyana ka short hair le seriba nyana (you used to be slender with a short hair with your forehead popping out)

***they broke the hug and Lorraine kept laughing ***

Lorraine: bathong

Jabu: but bona nou....o nale dicurv(a) ebile o papara di wig (but look now....you have curves you even wear wigs)

she laughed

Lorraine: I see you haven't changed one bit

Jabu: change for who...for the why?

she laughed some more

Jabu: o shapo mara? (are you good)

she nodded

Lorraine: been through some things but im still standing

Jabu: mmhhh so how has your family been since that time

Lorraine: mama passed away few months after we buried Sbonelo

she said with a low tone

Jabu: eish san....harde man ntwana (sorry man)

she just shrugs

Lorraine: its life I guess...at least that evil guy died in prison in the most painful way...so wena how have you been

he sighed

Jabu: ahh life e tlaotshwara ka di washene

askere mara im a survivor so ke tlo ba shap
(life will humble you but im a survivor so I'll be fine)

she saw the wedding band

Lorraine: married

she said pointing at the ring and he faintly smiled

Jabu: yeah

Lorraine: wow congratulations

Jabu: sho.... so wena dintshang ka love life ya gao (so what's up with your love life)

Lorraine: was once married but as time went by he showed me his true colors by displaying how much of a piece of shit he is

Jabu: fuck him....

***she laughed and he joined her....it's now that he looked at her....like really looked at her and he couldn't believe how grown and beautiful she

is***

Lorraine: any kids?

Jabu: yeah two...a boy and a girl

Lorraine: wow

Jabu: yeah and wena

she sighed

Lorraine: the piece of shit made me lose her
when I was 7 months

Jabu's face hardened

Jabu: what did he do?

she swallowed and kept quiet

Jabu: he abused you?

she nodded then she faintly smiled

Lorraine: at least I managed to leave him while
im still alive

he clenched his jaws

Jabu: is he in jail

Lorraine: he and his wealthy father threatened me not to open a case against him but at least he forced him to give me the divorce I've always wanted

Jabu: what?

Lorraine: yeah...im just glad im alive and im doing good now...anyway I saw Shaka and his beautiful wife...i can't believe he's married

They laughed as they remembered how wild he was back then.....Then they saw Menzi walking towards them and Lorraine sighed

Menzi: sho

he said to Jabu with a serious look on his face as he got to them

Jabu: mmh

Menzi: ive been looking for you khanti you're back here

she sighed

Lorraine: yeah im catching up with an old friend

Menzi: mmh...its late I should go and drop you off

Lorraine: I'll drive myself home Menzi don't worry

Menzi: I worry cause you'll be driving out there alone...masambe (lets go)

Lorraine: can you just stop...please

she said through her teeth

Menzi: lets go over there and talk

*** he said with a serious tone and she smiled faintly at Jabu ***

Lorraine: I'll be back....don't move...please

he just nodded once and she went with Menzi

Menzi: so you talk to me like that in front of

strangers Nomusa?

Lorraine: why are you acting like this Ngcobo?

Menzi: don't change the subject!!!

Lorraine: are we perhaps dating Menzi?....the last time I checked your girl just lost her baby....you should be comforting her cause she needs you now more than ever and not stand here telling me what to do and what not to do

***Menzi chuckled ***

Menzi: so now you fuck married men....i guess you're no different from Kazi

Lorraine: askies?

Menzi: I thought you were different Lorraine.... but you're a whore like the rest of them....im sure that's why that ex-husband of yours divorced your ass!!!

she slapped him hard on his cheek

Lorraine: uyinja Menzi and I hope Kazi leaves

your sorry ass.... and for your own information that guy's grandmother once helped me and my family in a big way when I was still young...i haven't seen him for many years and that's why we were catching up but because....

She felt a hand on her lower back and she blinked fast trying to fight back her tears

Jabu: you don't owe this fool any explanation....i know metete ya go tswana le yena....ke di fokon hond nxa (I know assholes like him...they are fucken dogs)

Menzi: uthini wena (what did you just say)

Jabu: a ke ngangisane le bafana san (I don't argue with boys boy)

he looked at Lorraine

Jabu: a re vaiye (lets go)

he walked away

Lorraine: im disappointed in you Menzi...very

disappointed

she then followed Jabu and Menzi just clenched his jaws and he sighed.....his phone rang and he clicked his tongue when he saw Kazi's name plastered on his phone screen

Menzi: ja (yes)

**** He said with an annoyed tone and she kept quiet a bit***

Kazi: you now I remembered the day you knocked on my door looking for someone then you told me you'll come back for me and I should be single when you do

Menzi sighed

Kazi: I remember how you were happy when I was pregnant with the twins and how everything went south starting from the time I was shot and kidnapped

He swallowed hard

Kazi: I understand im also to be blamed for what happened to me and our break up and im sorry for my part

he frowned

Menzi: what do you mean for our break up?

she sniffed

Kazi: can you believe your late wife's cousin Lele is a cleaner here at the hospital and she told me something that just broke my heart even further

Menzi: you saw Lele?

he asked with his heart beating fast

Kazi: yes...she told me your wife is the one responsible for my babies' death...she left a suicide note....what hurts the most is you knew about it and you kept quiet

Menzi swallowed hard

Kazi: i..

he interrupted her

Menzi: its not like that Ntandokazi

Kazi: but you know what Menzi it doesn't matter anymore...im done Menzi, I've got no fight left in me....im leaving with my mother...please lose my numbers

Menzi: what do you mean by...

tu tu tu...she dropped the call.....he tried to call her back and it send him straight to voicemail...he brushed his head closing his eyes for a bit

Menzi: shit

he then took out his business phone and dialed her numbers and luckily they started ringing

Kazi: hello

she said with a low tone

Menzi: please don't hang up

she kept quiet

Menzi: im sorry....im really sorry

Ntandokazi...i...i just

he sighed

Menzi: anger is what made me say all those things to you....i didn't mean them...i still love you

Kazi: no.... falling for that woman Lorraine or whatever her name is, is what made you say all those things to me Menzi, if you still loved me Menzi and you genuinely knew how much that baby meant to me you wouldn't have said I purposely miscarried to go after Phumi's man freely...Anyway i hope she makes you happy and...

Menzi: it was just lust baby....i don't love her I swear....i was just using her cause I was hurt by you having feeling for Phumi's man

Kazi: its too late Menzi

Menzi: no its not...look im on my way to you, we will talk when I get there

Kazi: I got discharged and im going away for some time....i hope she makes you happy

Menzi: Ntandokazi don't do this

Kazi: bye Menzi

Menzi: NTANDOKAZI... please....

tu tu tu...she dropped the call and he brushed his head walking away.....he tried her numbers again and they send him straight to voicemail

Menzi: damn it...

***he walked away and on the way to the front yard he walked past Lorraine and Jabu, he had a worried look on his face....Lorraine wanted to ask him if he's ok but she thought against it and let him be...he was busy pressing his phone hurrying towards the gate going to where he

parked his car***

Jabu: o shap?

she cleared her throat looking down

Lorraine: yeah

Jabu: wa mo frostana neh (you like him)

she frowned then she swallowed

Lorraine: he has a girlfriend Jabu

Jabu: that's not what I asked you

she kept quiet

Jabu: never settle for less Lolly.... that's one thing I learned from Mshikaro

***they looked at him talking to Naledi....you could see the love between them....he was making her blush ***

Jabu: you see them....they stopped settling for less now look at them now

***she swallowed looking away....and Jabu

sighed thinking about Amo...about how she's also not settling for less...he clenched his jaws as his heart broke some more cause that meant he was the "less" part for her***

Jabu: e re ka bowa (im coming back)

then he walked away taking out his phone and he made a call

Voice: Amo's phone hello

it was a male voice and his heart skipped a beat

Jabu: Modise?

Voice: umm no...who's this?

Jabu: what are you doing with my wife's phone san

the man chuckled

Voice: ooh if it isn't Jabu the gangster...wa bona mfana... ours are written in the stars....she's my soul mate....im a very patient

man so I'll wait until your divorce is final then I'll make her mine.....im God's favorite and he told me she will come back to me when the time is right and walaaah she's on her way back to me....your type should be those shebeen going straatmates and not bo sister Amo...bao ke ba rena (those ones are ours)

Jabu chuckled as his anger hit roof top...he suddenly knew who he was talking to....to think Amo went to him angered him the most

Amo: what are you doing with my phone

Man: ooh it was ringing nonstop...take its your husband...ne ke mmotsa gore o ko ntle a tshwarenyana (I was telling him you're outside he should hold on for a bit)

Jabu was just listening trying to calm himself down

Amo: ooh ok

he then heard some shuffling

Amo: Jabu

Jabu: so le yela bofebe ko kerekeng
Amogelang....ga le sa yela lefoko la modimo le
yela pipi!! (so you're going to church to whore
around Amogelang....you're no longer going
there for the word of God you go there for a
dick!!!)

Amo: askies...bona mo...

he interrupted her

Jabu: you're still my wife and you're busy
entertaining men Amogelang....onnyatsa go
fitlha moo heh? (you're disrespecting me to that
level)

he shouted

Amo: brother Mo.....

Jabu: o sampotsa ka motete oo Amogelang
(don't tell me about that asshole Amogelang)

he said with an angry voice

Jabu: why are you hurting me like this Amo....is it your way of breaking me heh..... what have I done to deserve this

he said with a pained tone now

Amo: he's here to pray for me Jabu not that you'll understand cause omohaitele (you're a nonbeliever)

she said ignoring his pained voice

Jabu: you know what....marete a gao

then he dropped the call and paced around trying to calm himself down

.

.

.

A MONTH AFTER THE FUNERAL....

☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....40

.

.

.

.

ATTERIDGEVILLE...

Mkhulu: uthi uSambulo unani? (what did you say Sambulo have?)

Jabu sighed

Jabu: a demon is attached to his soul

Mkhulu....the name of the demon is La Parca

Mkhulu: ini? (what)

Gogo: how long has he had it

Jabu: im not sure but I think for years now

Gogo shook her head not believing what she was hearing, she always knew there was some dark force surrounding Ray but a demon wasn't what she thought it was

Mkhulu: uthi unani? (what did you say he has)

Gogo: haw baba umzwile....idimoni (baba you heard him...a demon)

Mkhulu: ini? (what)

Jabu couldn't hold himself so he just laughed....his grandparents gave him a deadly look and he kept quiet holding in his laugh

Mkhulu: kungani uhleka Jabulani (why are you laughing Jabulani)

Jabu: ummm nex Mkhulu

Mkhulu: ucabanga ukuthi iyahlekisa lento (you think this is funny)

Jabu: cha...cha Mkhulu its just your facial

expression when you asked “ini?” ne e lagisa blaen (it was funny)

Mkhulu took his hat and hit Jabu on top of his head with it while gogo laughed

Jabu: sorry Khulus

Mkhulu: nentshebe ebukeka njengayo kaKhaphela (with a beard that looks like that of Khaphela)

Both gogo and Jabu laughed

Gogo: does Mbali know

Jabu nodded

Jabu: even....

then he cleared his throat

Jabu: even Kalu has a demon attached to his soul too

Mkhulu: amen!!!

Gogo: ooh Nkosiya! uthini Jabulani (ooh my

God what are you telling me Jabulani)

Jabu: yeah look gogo noMkhulu Mbali and her family know about this and they are cool with Ray and life goes on and a ke hier for dai deng (that's not why im here)....you can call Ray and he'll come and explain everything to you

His grandparent sighed...well Jabu spoke to Ray and Heath before he came here and Ray gave him the go ahead to tell the grandparents about La Parca and Saint

Jabu: im telling you about Ray cause I think that's why Amo is acting this way

Mkhulu: how so?

Jabu: she found out about the demons and Heath's mental problem and she wanted me to choose between them and her...she wanted me to choose between my brothers and her and when I didn't entertain her she left

gogo shook her head looking down

Mkhulu: uyanya!! (she's full of shit)

he said sounding angry

Gogo: haw baba

Mkhulu: baba yani....uSambulo no Shaka having things in them how does that affect her....Mbali and Naledi should be the ones having problems with that not her....ungenaphi yena....is she perhaps sleeping with them!!

he said with an angry voice

Gogo: baba

Mkhulu: does she have children with them...does she sleeps next to them!!

Gogo sighed cause she doesn't like to see her husband angry

Gogo: baba calm down...think about you blood pressure please

Mkhulu: I will not sit back and watch someone come between my boys MaVilakazi...never!!!

Gogo: I hear you baba now please calm down

Mkhulu kept quiet trying to calm down...Jabu was shocked at his grandfather's outburst....he has never seen him like this before

Gogo: did you at least try to talk to her in a calm manner mfanawami (my boy)

Jabu sighed

Jabu: yebo gogo but she used her religion busy saying her faith doesn't allow her to associate herself with such so...

he sighed

Mkhulu: what about Heath....what does his mental problems got to do namadimoni? (with demons)

Jabu: angazi Mkhulu but... (I don't know grandpa but...)

He sighed again

Jabu: I want my wife back Mkhulu....she's not

perfect the same way im not so I think we can overcome this....i tried talking to her and that didn't go well so maybe abadala (elders) chipping in might help

he said playing with his car keys looking down

Gogo: im glad you took this decision mfanawami....i know it's not easy but im proud of you

Mkhulu: yes im also proud of you Jabulani....i must say im not happy with how uAmo handled all this and the fact that she's a prayerful woman is what's pissing me off with her decision and how she handled things

Gogo: you know I have believed that she'll be what I'd like to call a spiritual mother to all of you....that she was send in our family to keep the faith in God burning inside of all of you....but I guess that wise man that once said we

shouldn't put our faith in humans but rather in God alone was right

Mkhulu: its ok...we will go to her father's house to talk to her and her family and we will find a way to get your wife back.....im not happy with her at the moment but I know you love her and she has shown that she loves you too

Jabu: Thank you Mkhulu

gogo sighed

Gogo: hai waze wangiphoxa uKhanya (Khanya "Amo" has disappointed me)

AT AMO'S HOME....

Mondli: sister Amo

Amo: hey brother Mondli I hope im not disturbing you

Mondli: don't be silly sister Amo I'll always have time for you

Amo cleared her throat

Amo: ummm I just wanted someone to talk to

Mondli: do you want me to come over

Amo: no its fine we can talk over the phone

Mondli: ooh..ok

he said disappointed

Amo: I just wanted to tell you that his grandfather called and they are coming tomorrow for a meeting

He kept quiet a bit*

Mondli: are you gonna fix things with him

she sighed

Amo: the truth is I don't know brother Mondli....i truly still love Jabu but I can't live with what he comes with

Mondli: look before you make a decision of going back to him.....be sure that you're going

to accept him and all that he comes with....from what you told me he will never choose you over his brothers so be prepared to come second and you also better be prepared to pretend for the rest of your life with him

Amo swallowed hard

Amo: I know... umm look im busy with something we will talk later ok

Mondli: ok God be with you sister Amo

Amo: God be with you too Brother Mondli

Then they ended the call and Amo sighed

AT NOMHLE AND JAY'S HOUSE

Jay was looking at his daughter Tiara busy smiling and blushing while busy on her phone....he frowned when he saw her blushing while biting her bottom lip and his insides turned

Jay: that person that's making you blush like that better not be a boy Zandile!!

her smile faded and she cleared her throat

Tiara: umm ofcourse im not talking to boys babaa....im chatting with Omphile

***she said defensive ***

Jay: remember I've been your age before Zaza and you can't fool me

she didn't say anything

Jay: and remember ubaba wakho uNhlaka is an IT specialist so hacking phones is a small thing to do for him

she froze

Tiara: you cant invade my privacy like that babaa....that's just not on

Jay: I brought you that phone so I can do whatever I want to do to it

she sulked

Tiara: ngiyotshela uMa (im going to tell mom)

Jay: uyamtshela or not oksalayo (you tell her or not what remains is) you better not be talking to a boy on that phone.....if so then start praying for him cause siyomnyathela isen.... (we will step on his di...) just pray for him

she swallowed hard cause she knows how her fathers are like....she thought of Thorsten and how scary he is and her insides turned as her heart beat fast

Jay: you're even sweating...heh heh someone is gonna die

he sipped his drink

Tiara: " babe we hve a prblm"

she texted her boyfriend

Mj: " wat's wrng omalicha "

he texted back

Tiara: " my hectic dad jst threatnd to hack into my fone to c who im chatting 2"

Mj: " shit!!!"

Mj: " Y?"

Tiara: " he saw me blushing wth my fone and yeah...."

Mj: " ok ok Its nt panic....frm nw on don press ur fone whn u're arnd hm... wll cht whn u're aln"

Tiara: " ok "

Mj: " we nid 2 b careful omalicha or else they'll kip us away from each ada....dis s a small sacrifice for our luv"

Tiara: " I knw baby bt I luv u so much"

Mj: "nt as mch as I luv u omalicha....i knw we hv to sneak up and date in secrete but at the end it wll be worth it I promise u"

Tiara: " ok....lt me pt my fone down h's busy givin me evil luks...i love you baby"

Mj: "I love you too eze m mara nma"

Mj: " omaricha nwunye m "

Mj: " obi m"

Mj: " mma m ocha"

Mj: "nwa m"

Mj: " ezigbo nwa m"

***Tiara laughed blushing hard and Jay gave her a deadly stare and she stopped and put her phone down ***

Tiara: its Omphile making me laugh babaa

Jay: all im gonna say is I hope its not a boy or else....mmh

he increased the volume on the Tv and drank his beer while Tiara rolled her eyes

AT RUU AND THANDI'S HOUSE

***Mpilo came running and screaming being

chased by Carl and he jumped on Ruslan who was sitting on the couch***

Mpilo: he's gonna catch me daddy...hide me...hide me

he said climbing on top of him and Ruu laughed as he hugged him....Carl came and sat down on a single couch panting

Ruu: you look and sound like you were running a marathon

Carl laughed

Carl: the little guy is keeping me on my toes

they both laughed and Carl went to the kitchen to get himself a drink, he came back and sat down again....after a few minutes they heard Mpilo snoring a bit

Carl: wait did he just fall asleep

Ruu chuckled

Ruu: he's tired

Carl: but to just pass out like that

Ruu: you've been chasing him up and down
without giving him room to breathe now why
are you surprised

Carl laughed

Carl: im preparing him for the Olympics

they both laughed

Ruu: how's your stay here

Carl: interesting

he said sitting back

Ruu: just interesting?

Carl: things are different here...way different
...what I need to do from now is learn one of
the African languages to survive

Ruu laughed

Carl: especially the language uncle Jab speaks

Ruu laughed some more

Ruu: well good luck my boy

Carl chuckled

Carl: yeah im gonna need it

he then sighed

Ruu: what is it?

Carl: how is it they accepted you and your “gift” just like that and the big part is they are not even your blood

Ruu: loyalty Carlos....loyalty my boy

Carl sighed

Ruu: they have my back and I have theirs and its as simple as that

Carl nodded

Ruu: but its not all rosy cause Jabu is going through things with his wife....i always knew they won't make it cause she's pretending to be someone she's not.....she's scared to be judged

because of how she grow up and how her father raised her....she'd rather lose it all than to be herself and it's a pity

Carl: wait..... she has a problem with Uncle Jabs being a hustler?

Ruu: no apparently she has a problem with Jabu being related to us with powers, La Parca, Saint and Vampires

Carl: but uncle Jabs doesn't have any powers

Ruu: I know

Carl: some people are ungrateful, does she know how hot uncle Jabs is....is she blind....does she know how hard it is to get a man like that....she's lucky he's my uncle blood related or not or else I'd show her how to keep a man like that happy

***Ruu gave him a deadly stare and Carl raised his well-trimmed eyebrows ***

Carl: what???

he said getting up

Ruu: just get out of my face before I smack that big head of yours

Carl: why do you like violence so much
dad...aarg that's not on

***he said dramatically rolling his eyes and walking away and Ruu just shook his head

.....Mpe walked down the stairs and he cleared his throat sitting where Carl was sitting and he played with his fingers and Ruu just looked at him as Mpilo was snoring laying on top of him***

Mpe: ummm dad i....please buy me data mine is finished

Ruu: you already received your monthly data and airtime Mpe

Mpe: I know i....i used it to watch online movies

and ended up getting carried away

Ruu: you mean porn

Mpe froze

Mpe: wh...what nooo

Ruu: don't lie to me boy....you can succeed in doing that to your mother but not me

Mpe looked down and he sighed

Ruu: are you becoming addicted to that shit

Mpe

***Mpe got up getting uncomfortable ***

Mpe: umm forget I asked a....

Ruu: sit your ass down!!!

Mpe slowly sat down

Ruu: when did you start watching porn?

Mpe: dad can we just let it go

he said embarrassed

Ruu: should I tell your mother
then.....maybe you'll feel safer talking to her

Mpe: I started two nights back

*** he said quickly with his heart beating fast....even at school he couldn't concentrate, he would ask his teachers to go to the bathroom during lessons and he would watch porn in the bathroom whilst giving himself a hand job....now he regretted not asking Carl for the data instead of asking Ruu for it.....Ruu stood up gently with Mpilo***

Ruu: follow me

Mpe: ummm where...where to?

he said sounding scared, he thought he was gonna get some ass whoopin from him

Ruu: I need to show you what propels a person to watch porn or engage in unholy things out of the blue especially a person your age...everything is not as it seems my boy and

its high time you see the world as it really is...now come!!

Mpe frowned following him

THE FOLLOWING DAY

Jabu and his grandparents parked outside Amo's home, they got out of the car and Jabu locked it and they walked inside the yard.....Jabu knocked on the door and Amo's mother opened the door, they greeted each other and he let them in....inside they found Amo's brother Modise, they greeted him and sat down...they exchanged pleasantries and Amo's mother brought refreshments

Gogo: yho sis when we leave here you better give me a recipe for the scones....they taste good

***she lied there was nothing special about them, they looked boring and not tasty, Jabu

didn't even attempt to eat them by just looking at them he lost his appetite...Amo's mother smiled***

Amo's mother: don't worry I'll give it to you...it's a family recipe

gogo smiled at her

Mkhulu: so my in laws were here concerning what our son and umakoti wethu(our daughter in law) are going through....we heard umakoti packed her things and left which is wrong but im not gonna touch on that, she didn't even come to us or let us know that she's having problems with her husband, she just left so we're here to find out what's happening....we heard our son's side of the story now we're here to hear her side of the story

Amo's mother sighed

Amo's mother: hai mokhotsi go boima (in law things are tough)...let me call her so she'll

speak for herself

Gogo: kuncono kanjalo (that's better)

Amo's mother got up and went to call Amo....she came back with her and she greeted them and sat down next to her brother who was airy quiet which was unlike him

Amo's mother: Amogelang your in laws are here to find out what's happening between you and your husband and why you didn't tell them you were having problems with him

Amo sighed

Gogo: makoti what's going on.... (daughter in law what's going on)

Amo: im sure you know about what your other grandsons have gogo

gogo sighed

Gogo: we found out yesterday so what about what they have

Amo was surprised cause she thought they always knew

Amo: umm its part of why im back home

Jabu smirked shaking his head while looking down

Modise: what's funny man...you think your demonic brothers haunting my sister because she prays is funny

he said sounding angry

Jabu: im sure gao ove le nna so wena san....keng ekare wanglebala so (im sure you're not talking to me like that boy....why is it like you're forgetting who you are talking to)

he said with a deadly look on his face and Modise kept quiet with his jaws clenched

Mkhulu: boys stop it!!!

then he looked at Amo

Mkhulu: qhubeka ntombi (continue)

Amo cleared her throat

Amo: Jabu doesn't care about my feelings...all he cares about is his brothers....he always puts them first and im sick of that

Gogo: elaborate

Amo: its about Mbali's demonic and evil child

***Gogo frowned while Mkhulu clenched his jaws and Jabu just shook his head ***

Amo: ...he's been haunting me and when I told him he just took it lightly even though I looked freaked out

Gogo looked at Jabu

Gogo: Jabulani

Jabu: gogo

Gogo: umzwile (you heard her)

Jabu: she's lying

Amo: askies

Jabu: I was there for you Amogelang....i stayed with you all night....why don't you tell them the real reason you're here....its because you made me choose between you and my brothers

they all looked at Amo including her mother and brother

Jabu: that's the reason she left

Amo's mother: Amogelang...

Amo: what mama he's my husband so he's supposed to choose me and his children....he chose those demon possessed over me and I was supposed to stay...nope I don't think so

Modise: that's not what you told me Amo

Amo: it doesn't matter cause what I know is im not going back there, im not going back to be made second best im sorry

***she folded her arms across her chest and gogo was shocked by her attitude....she loved

Amo cause of the way she loved praying, she reminded her of herself back in the days but now she just seen another side of her she despises ***

Jabu: so you'll rather be happy if I break my family apart for you Amo

Amo: you wont be breaking anything Jabu it will be you choosing our family.... you protecting me and your children

Jabu chuckled shaking his head...he was hurt...really hurt

Gogo: are you hearing yourself Amo

Amo: I don't compromise when it comes to my faith and religion gogo

Jabu: but you expect me to comprise when it comes to my family.....you're a hypocrite wena

she chuckled

Amo: a hypocrite is you sucking to your cousins

like a little puppy

the room became quiet

Amo: Ray this...Heath that...when will you stand on your own...how long will you walk in their shadows Jabu mmmmh

Jabu: what are you talking about

Amo: you're their little puppet and I hate it....they say jump and you ask how high....when will you be the one to say jump huh?

Gogo: nantsi imihlolo

she clapped her hands once while Mkhulu was looking at Amo with an intense look on his face

Amo: you have no ambition Jabu...look at where you even live...your cousins live in white suburbs, even Naledi wa bo Naledi ke ra le ena Thandi wa go se rutege (even an illiterate Thandi) lives in a white people's suburb while

we live in a black dominated suburb...you own di carwash, pubs and clubs, di chisanyama, di taxi, di truck(a) le a garage while your brothers own big and well respected companies....Ray is building a hospital while Heath started and funded Naledi's organization and on the other side he owns an IT company but wena dololo

Jabu chuckled shaking his head looking down....he was shocked by this new revelation of Amo's other side and shattered by the realization of how she sees him

Amo: you even talk like some kazi boy who chills ko makuleng (tuckshop) the whole day mara o nale chelete (but you have money)....im sick and tired of always feeling small ge ke nale Mbali, Thandi le Naledi (when im with Mbali, Thandi and Naledi)..... o palla le ka surprisenyana for nna ka (you cant even surprise me with) something bigger than what your cousins got for their wives but you call

yourself a husband....you took my virginity for what huh....waitsi nke be ke ifile Mondli (I should've given it to Mondli instead) on top of it you even made me a mother....i even mothered your son but you don't even appreciate me!!!

She lashed out sounding angry.....Modise got up

Modise: ba Vilakazi I know she's my sister but I want you all to know gore I don't support her ka dichila tse a di bolelang so even if le batla magadi a lona back assomblief(with this nonsense so even if you want your dowry back please) don't involve me and my family

then he walked out and Amo's eyes popped out when she realized what she just done.....Jabu looked at his grandfather with a pained look on his face

Jabu: there's nothing to fix mo Mkhulu...we should go

Amo's mother was tongue tied and shocked by what just happened

Gogo: I'm glad I prayed before we came here for God to expose any evil that is threatening my son's happiness and marriage and I must say usatan just showed himself through her.... a whole Christian...a self-proclaimed child of God lashing out because of earthly things, status and money....hai kunzima

Amo swallowed hard looking down....she wished she could undo what she just did, all that she said wasn't supposed to come out more especially like that...she wished she could undo what just happened but it was too late

Mkhulu: we want our lobola back but you can keep the damages money

Amo's mother: bathong bo mokgotsi lets not.....

Mkhulu: ubukgotsi buphelile....the moment they finish with the divorce we better have izinkomo

zethu (our dowry) back...and don't think you'll get a cent from my grandson's money.....angithi its blood money so we don't want you to contaminate your holy self with it

he got up and helped his wife up

Mkhulu: asambe mfana wam (lets go my boy)....this thing is not a wife material....unjengabadwebi begolide, ama slam queens athanda imali (she's like gold diggers, slam "slay" queens who loves money) and she's here saying ungumama womthandazo mxm (she's a prayerful woman)

Amo's mother couldn't even defend her own daughter...Jabulooked at Amo who couldn't even maintain eye contact with a pained look on his face then he got up and walked out and his grandparents followed after him

Amo'smother: I've never been embarrassed and disappointed like I am with you

Amogelang....you just showed me how much I have failed as a mother

she said shaking her head with tears in her eyes

Amo: mama please I don't need this right now

she said with a low tone

Amo's mother: you just lost a good man I hope you'll be able to live with yourself

Amo: I knew you'll never support me...you never did anyways nxa!!

Amo's mother: ke sapote dichila Amogelang (I should support nonsense Amogelang).....wena you're just like your father....hiding behind religion while your hearts are evil.....wena ke ya go go nyakela taelo ko kerekeng infact ke ya Moria straight....o tlhoka taelo e strong ya go prepar(a) ke Baruti ba bagolo nxa

***she walked out to get some fresh air.....her

blood pressure was going up and she didn't want to end up in hospital again because of it....she was almost hit by a stroke when she found out about her husband's shenanigans so she knew she needed to keep busy so she doesn't stress herself too much.... inside the house Amo's tears ran down her cheeks as she remembered Jabu's look on his face before he walked out....she wished she wasn't that harsh with him but once she started she couldn't stop***

AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE

****its now 11 pm at night and Ray was sitting on bed with his back resting on the headboard busy on his laptop while Mbali was fast asleep next to him.....Ray couldn't sleep, he's worried about Jabu and angry at Amo....he couldn't believe what his grandparents told him happened at the meeting....he's glad Heath said

he'll spend the night at Jabu's house to make sure he doesn't do anything stupid but that doesn't mean he's not worried, he knows Jabu and how he gets when he's hurt....he knows how much Jabu loves Amo and how much he saw the rest of his future with her, all he hopes for now is for Jabu to heal and move on from all that.....he jumped a bit when Mbali jumped sitting up with her eyes popped out breathing heavily***

Ray: my flower what's wrong

he said putting his laptop away.....she looked like she was in a panic mode

Mbali: Jabu

Ray: huh

Mbali: you need...you need to stop him

Ray....he's gonna regret it....he's gonna kill her...find him and stop him please

***she said crying and shaking.....Ray tried to

hold her but she pushed him away***

Mbali: FIND HIM RAY...YOU NEED TO FIND HIM
AND STOP HIM PLEASE!!!

***she shouted crying and Ray quickly got his
phone and dialed Heath's numbers***

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....41

.

.

.

***Jabu sat in the car outside Amo's home drinking his pain away for 30 minutes.....He came there to kill her for hurting him like that, he wants so badly to end her but as soon as he parked the car flashes of his son, daughter and mother flashed through his mind.....He knew he's gonna be the prime suspect because of what's happening between them and he knows he won't get out of this one since he already had a criminal record, he knows they gonna lock him up and throw away the key.... even having money and brothers that have his back won't get him out of the shit he's thinking of doing, so he sat there and thought about it asking himself if she's even worth it....he's never gonna see his children grow up....he won't be there to protect them especially Lile....Sbu would never forgive him even if he learns why he did what he's thinking of doing and Lile would hate him when she grows up and finds out the truth, as for his mother it would rip her heart apart cause he

promised himself and her that he would never make her go through what she went through when he went to jail back then.....

After some time he called Amo and told her to come outside they needed to talk....she could hear that he didn't sound good so she agreed, she wanted him to see how good she looked and hoped they might probably fuck in the car and fix things somehow, she's willing to accept and live with his flaws cause she doesn't have all the money they paid for her dowry and also the money to pay for a lawyer....she knows Jabu and his brothers will make sure the divorce proceeding drag on and she doesn't have money to waste on top of that she knows they'll make sure she gets nothing from him, she has been thinking hard about the pros and cons of a divorce and she doesn't like the cons aspect of itOn top of it all her mother

extended the house with some of the dowry money and also started a small business, she also shared with the uncles that were part of the negotiations and some of it went to Modise and she knows none of them would help her in raising the funds to pay the Vilakazi's money back even though they are the ones that chowed it.....

Anyway she changed to her sexy short silk Pjs and a silk gown and she fixed her face and hair and she wore her fluffy sleepers and went outside, her mother and Lile were already sleeping, ever since she moved back home Lile has been sleeping with her mother.....the door of the passenger side opened and she got in and immediately Jabu locked all the doors and gave her a deadly look that send chills down her spine ***

Amo: JESUS CHRIST!!!

she jumped with her hands raised high in a surrender mode as she saw the gun he was holding pointed at her

Amo: Jabu what...

Jabu: shhh....

she turned quickly with the attempt of opening the door and he grabbed her by her hair pulling her back and she screamed as his grip got tight...she froze when he put the mouth of the gun under her chin and she peed on herself

Jabu: o batlo nnyelaa...o zamang wena sfebe!!!
(you wanna shit yourself....what are you trying to do bitch!!!)

she just cried begging him to not hurt her...she was even shaking

Jabu: shut up wa rasa jou moerskond!!! (shut up you're making noise)

she quickly muffed her cries shaking...she was scared no lies

Jabu: setse a go jele dai bari (has that fool fucked you)

she didn't say anything she just cried silently and he tightened the grip around her hair some more and she flinched

Jabu: talk man!!!

*** he shouted***

Amo: ha eh(no)

she said trying to shake her head no but the grip on her hair stopped her

Jabu: not yet akere? (right?)

Amo: nothing is going on between me and Mondli Jabu I swear

she said crying

Jabu: o sa nyako dlala ka nna wena....dai

moerskond wants you and he has been waiting for this chance...askere Iwena you made him your shoulder to cry on.....o mo fa di sign tsa gore a tsene!!!.... (don't play me for a fool....that bustard wants you and he has been waiting for this chance....you made him your shoulder to cry on...busy giving him signs that he should make his move)

he said sounding angry

Amo: I don't see him like that I swear he's just my friend

Jabu: friend ya masepa...askere you said you wished o file yena kuku eseng nna (shitty friend...you said you wished you gave him pussy instead of me)

Amo: I was just angry Jabu I swear I didn't mean it

Jabu chuckled and she just cried

Amo: Jabu please don't do this im begging

you...think about Jabulile and Sbu

Jabu: shut up!!! Did you think about them when you left....did you think about Sbu huh.....you came into our fucken lives and made him love you khante wena wa pretender (only to find out you were preteding)

she just cried

Jabu: do you even love me or o bone chelete fela (or you were interested in my money)

Amo: Jabu please...

she begged him

Jabu: answer my question or else ko go phatlhola tlhogo ka bullet (I'll blow your head with a bullet)

Jabu: answer me jou moerskond!!

***Amo is shit scared....she has never seen this side of Jabu ever....she thought she knew him but now she just realized she just woke the

monster in him***

Amo: I love you Jabu

Jabu: then why o rile masepa a le (why did you say that shit) in front of our family members
heh....you think you're better than me
wena....the same woman I saved from his father...he humiliated you in front of neighbors kicking and saying shit to you and I picked you up and made you someone important then you turn around and o botsa nna masepa!!! (you tell me shit)

Amo just cried then he let her go

Jabu: why huh...why Amo why would you break me like that

Amo: I just....i just didn't communicate with you well.... I misjudged you when we met....i should've gotten to know you better before agreeing to marry you....i...i envied Naledi and Mbali's lives and I thought I'll live it too but only

to realize that you're not like your cousins

she said honestly and Jabu chuckled

Jabu: what happened to bommamuruti huh
(miss churchgoer huh)....from being
mmamuruti to a gold digger just like that

Amo: im not a gold digger Jabu

Jabu: FOTSEK!!!

she flinched

Jabu: you have nothing Amo....when we met
you worked at the mall as a sales person....i
have a fucken degree and my own fucken
money wena what do you have except for your
matric certificate huh...then you sat there and
said im not ambitious and im my brothers'
puppet

that hit her hard and more tears came out

Jabu: who is not ambitious between us, you
can't even come to me with a business plan so I

can fund your dream....i have to think for you....ke phushe spane ko ntle sa go etsa nnyoko (i go out there and make money) then also come home and think for you...i asked you gore o batla go chuna eng (what do you wanna do)...whether o batla go ya sgela (you want to go back to school) or start a business and you said you'll get back to me about that....le nou ke saeme (even now im still waiting)

Amo: Naledi's husband surprised her with that organization of hers why couldn't you do the same to me

Jabu: ke Heath nna heh.....ke re ke Heath nah!!!
(am I Heath....i said am I Heath!!!)

he shouted at her while pointing at her looking angry...he wanted to slap her so bad

Amo: then why cant you be like him or Ray huh....you can still act like a kasi boy and have it all

he grabbed her by her neck pulling her closer to his face roughly and he tightened his grip for a bit then he loosened it as he fought off the edge to squeeze the life out of her

Jabu: you need help wena.....o fake Amo and a good pretender....you're living a lie, e no ntsha side ya gao ya bofebe once re e bone o tlogele go acta (just let loose your whore side so we all see it and stop acting)

then he let her go and she rubbed her neck crying

Amo: how can you say that to me Jabu

she said crying

Jabu: im done with you.....i came here to shoot you then burn your useless body and bury your ashes where no one will find them and go on with my life as if you never existed but ka bona gore ko oketsa dibe tsaka for masepa fela (but I see that im gonna add on to my already piling

up sins for useless shit) ...you're not worth it

she cried and Jabu just sat there shaking his head then he leaned back on the head rest swallowing hard....he's hurt....really hurt and he doesn't even know how he'll get over this or how his son will take the divorce

Heath drove like a maniac trying to get hold of Jabu but his phone just rings once and the call get dropped....after what felt like forever he arrived at Amo's neighborhood then he dialed Ray's numbers

Ray: tell me you found him

Heath: I just drove inside the neighborhood...i'll call you back

***he dropped the call and drove for some time

then he spotted Jabu's car parked outside Amo's family house, he quickly parked behind Jabu's car and got out and he rushed to the driver side...he knocked on the window several times but nothing....he tried to look inside the car through the slightly opened window but he couldn't all he could hear were sniffs ***

Jabu: GOGA LEMINA LE O GAPE AND O TLO NNYELA, LE GOGE GAPE FELA (sniff again and you'll shit yourself....sniff again) AND YOU'LL MEET YOUR FUCKEN FATHER IN HELL.....JUST BECAUSE I SAID YOU'RE NOT WORTH IT DOESN'T MEAN I CANT END YOU RIGHT NOW SO TSWELLA PELE O GOGA LEMINA LE O AND O TLA BONA!!! (so continue sniffing like that and you'll see)

Heath heard Jabu shouting from inside the car

Heath: Jabu don't do this man...open this door please...think about Jabulile and Sbu man don't

do this to them!!!

he said knocking on the window then lights of a car hit him and as the car parked behind his he knew its Ray.....he got out and rushed to Heath

Heath: they are inside...he sounds angry and drunk

Ray: ey Jabu listen here....it's either you open this fucken door or im letting La Parca out, and maybe you'll listen to him and im not playing with you

*** he said firmly then the window suddenly slides down and they saw him holding a gun, it was gently placed on his thigh pointing at Amo...they saw Amo sobbing while holding tightly to her gown...Ray reached inside and unlocked all the doors and Heath rushed to the passenger side and opened the door and roughly pulled Amo out....she was ready for

Heath to at least hug her to comfort her but he grabbed her tight with the fabric of her gown around her chest and pinned her against the car looking mad-angry***

Heath: he should have killed you you piece of shit.... he took you out of this dump and gave you a better life and you still spat on his face you ungrateful bitch....you deserve everything he did to you here and you fucken deserve more.....i fucken hate you Amo for what you almost turned him into, make sure I never cross paths with you or you'll fucken regret it

Ray: Ezeudo...

he warned him

Heath: you gonna go back inside and forget about what almost happened here...if you even try to go report this know that we will have our brother's back and make you turn out to look like a crazy bitch who lost it when he came here

to serve you with divorce papers....now move on with your life and he'll do the same

then he let her go and fixed her gown as more tears gushed down from her face, she was even shaking.....He pat her shoulders gently and took a step back

Heath: now fuck off from here and keep your fucken mouth shut!!!

she rushed inside with her wet pyjamas and gown....Heath went to them....Jabu was crying as Ray hugged him...the pain Heath felt when he saw his brother crying like that broke him, right at that moment he hated Amo with everything in him and he wished he could end her like the piece of shit he thinks she is.....he took out his phone and made a call for someone to come and drive Jabu's car back home

TWO DAYS LATER

Lorraine and Menzi had a meeting and she wondered how different this time the tension between them will be like.....He was all professional with her during their previous meetings, he didn't even smile at her or complimented her....it was like her presence annoyed him for some reason and it hurt so bad....he's giving her the cold shoulder and it breaks her heart that things have gotten to this.....her PA alerted her that Menzi has arrived and she quickly fixed herself and waited for him to enter....he did and closed the door then he greeted her putting his laptop bag on top of the table and he unbuttoned his suit jacket and sat down when she offered him the chair

Menzi: ok let's get down to business I have somewhere I need to be

"Just like that" she thought then she cleared her throat

Lorraine: how long will we keep this up Menzi

Menzi: keep what up

Lorraine: this tension between us

Menzi: what tension Lorraine....if you're feeling some tension then it's on you mina im good

she swallowed

Lorraine: you are cold towards me Menzi

Menzi: so?

" wow" she thought

Lorraine: is that all you can say Menzi

she asked with a breaking voice and Menzi sighed and leaned back on the chair looking at her

Menzi: ok here is the thing Lorraine....you're a good woman and beautiful but....

he paused for a bit

Menzi: I don't love you....i lust over you and that's about it....you're someone who would make a good side chick to me but not someone I would wife....im sorry

she swallowed as what he just said hit her hard

Menzi: Ntandokazi and I we were going through things and I thought it wouldn't work out so you were my second option of some sort but what I didn't realize is my heart beats for her....i love her so damn much and I just realized that I might lose her for good with what I did and said to her and entertaining you might make things worse so im distancing myself from this

he said pointing from him to her then he sighed

Menzi: im sorry I stringed you along and even acted like I fucken own you when I saw you with that guy....im also sorry for all the hurtful things I said to you but it is what it is

He shrugged and Lorraine looked away as she became teary

Menzi: look I would understand if you don't wanna work with me anymore....im willing to terminate our contract if that's what you want but if you don't have a problem with our working relationship then cool we can continue

silence filled the room...she wanted to cry so bad but she didn't wanna give him the satisfaction so she fought the tears back

Lorraine: why....why did you lead me on like that...i told you what I went through and you still continued to lead me on

Menzi: she lived with me Lorraine and she was pregnant with my child...you're a smart woman

so im sure you could read between the lines
and plus it's not like we fucked, we just kissed
***she chuckled bitterly shaking her head...she
can't believe she was stupid to fall for him***

Lorraine: ok

she then cleared her throat

Lorraine: can we reschedule this meeting...I'll
have my PA contact you for another date we
can have a meeting...right now I can't stand you
and I don't wanna seem unprofessional by
being petty and rude throughout the meeting...i
hope you understand Mr Ngcobo

Menzi sighed and he got up

Menzi: I take it we are still going on with the
partnership

***he said standing there with his hands inside
his pockets...to her he looked sexy as fuck but
it didn't matter anymore ***

Lorraine: im a professional Mr Ngcobo and I never let my personal feelings get in the way of me making money

Menzi smiled at her....."if only i didn't love Kazi the way i do, we would make a killer couple" he thought

Menzi: alright then I'll wait to hear from your PA

she nodded and he took his things and walked to the door then he turned and looked at her

Menzi: im sorry Raine....you can say we met at the wrong time if only.....

Lorraine: bye Mr Ngcobo

***she dismissed him and he chuckled shaking his head and he walked out....Lorraine's tears ran down her cheeks as soon as he closed the door on his way out....she can't believe he said she suited to be his side chick and nothing more...that hurt her more it would've been

better if he said he likes her but his heart beats for Kazi....she cried until she calmed down then she wiped her face and reapplied her make up tried to not focus on the pain she was feeling inside and continued with her work***

AT THANDI AND RUU'S HOUSE

***Thandi just got off the phone with Mbali and hearing that Jabu wanted to hurt Amo because of what she did and said rubbed her some typa way.....she was angry at Amo for what she did to Jabu and she was also mad at Jabu for almost throwing away his freedom for Amo's stupidity....she's trying so hard to not get involved in their marital problems but it was hard for her cause Jabu is her brother and

seeing him hurt hurts her too and Ruslan's warning to her that she shouldn't meddle in their business but only be there for Jabu as a support system was heard loud and clear cause he was dead serious, he knows how his woman is like so he had to have a talk with her before she does something drastic to Amo....

Anyway she felt hands on her waist and smelled his cologne and a smile formed on her lips***

Ruu: what time are you leaving?

Thandi: the meeting starts at 2 baby so I'll leave around past 1 so I can go through everything before he arrives

he pulled her left hand up a bit and rubbed her ring finger

Ruu: I need to put a ring on it so thirsty fools out there knows you're taken

she laughed

Thandi: there's no pressure baby

Ruu: there is amour...everyone needs to know that you're mine just like everyone needs to know that im yours

she turned and faced him then she stood on her toes and kissed him

Thandi: I love you

she smiled

Ruu: I love you too and I had a talk with your grandfather, im going to meet up with him tomorrow about the dowry I want to pay for you

she blushed looking down

Ruu: we are doing this amour and its for life ok

Thandi: ok

***he kissed her forehead and Carl walked inside the kitchen with his headsets on....he

smiled when he saw the two love birds and took them off***

Carl: some of us are single please have mercy

Thandi laughed

Ruu: I'll hit that big head of yours if you don't shut up

Carl rolled his eyes

Carl: what's with the violence dad....chill please

Thandi: yes chill baby haw

Carl: you heard her hew

Thandi laughed and Ruu chuckled shaking his head

Thandi: let me go shower....Carl please don't forget to go pick the boys up from school

Carl: I won't don't worry and Mpilow would be mad at me if I don't show up with my new ride....i swear that boy likes to show off

they laughed

Thandi: mmmmh he cant stop talking about his American brother and his cool car

she rolled her eyes walking away

Thandi: you're joining me baby?

Ruu: yeah im coming amour

Thandi: ok

she shouted back climbing up the stairs

Carl: mmmmh joining her daddy

he said wiggling his eyebrows with a naughty smile on his face and Ruu almost hit him....he laughed moving away and Ruu just shook his head

Carl: so daddy yho....you showed Mpeh mmmmh

Ruu: he told you?

Carl: duh....he was terrified dad

Ruu: good....he will stop watching other people fucking...he's too young for that...right now he should be having crushes and watching fashion shows and those chick flicks he likes and not watching boys ass fucking on the internet

Carl rolled his eyes

Carl: he's not me dad always remember that...i can handle things but he's weak he cant

Ruu: he's my son too and he needs to toughen up...being gay doesn't mean you're weak

Carl sighed then he switched on the kettle

Carl: did you at least talk to him

Ruu: yeah and he'll be fine...i didn't traumatize him I just showed him a glimpse of the whisperers and how they look like and what's their intentions when they try and hypnotize you into doing shitty things that deep down you know are wrong

Carl: I hope you made it clear to him that being gay or bisexual doesn't mean you were also a victim of the whisperers

Ruu: look at the student trying to sound cool to the teacher

Carl laughed

Carl: pssh....im my father's son duh

Ruu chuckled

Ruu: relax I had the talk with him and I didn't traumatize him

Carl: ok

Ruu smiled at him

Ruu: you're taking this big bro thing seriously huh

Carl blushed

Carl: ooh please....

he then took out a cup

Carl: can you just go to your woman before she comes down to look for you whilst naked

Ruu: I swear im gonna turn grey before my time because of your loose tongue

he said walking away while shaking his head

Carl: I love you too dad!!

he shouted then he giggled

LATER AT JABU'S HOUSE

Heath: o grand (are you ok)

he asked Jabu as he sat next to him

Jabu: ke tla ba shap sa wara (I'll be fine don't worry)

Heath sighed

Heath: im glad you didn't do it

Jabu: mxm.....eish ya neh vrou e tla go etsisa
masepa kaochaela..... (women can make you
do wrong things im telling you)

Heath: yeah I've been there...remember Lerato?

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: and suster la gae le mmagae (her sister
and mother)

Heath: eish mfowethu.....i know it was Observer
a chunneng dai deng mara (who did that but)
truth of the matter is I enjoyed watching them
suffer so I don't blame you for wanting to kill
her but im glad you didn't

Jabu sighed

Jabu: just like that go fedile (its over)

Heath: yeah neh...mara she taught you
something ka life and love.....the same way

Lerato taught me something

Jabu shook his head and took a sip of his beverage

Jabu: ko mo chaela eng Sbu (what will I tell Sbu)

Heath: the truth

Jabu looked at him

Heath: yes the truth....let him deal with this now....let him know why your marriage is ending...teach him while he's still young to love and appreciate himself Javas the same way you did....you're not living a lie and you're happy and content with who you are which is something I admire ka wena...you're raw and authentic mfowethu and Sbu needs to know that its ok to be you and to choose you....that will help him le ka liewe (with life) as he grows up...bo peer pressure and so forth...she chose to not settle "for less" so why should you

Jabu sighed

Jabu: sure Dr Phil wa le Nigeria (sure Nigerian Dr Phil)

they laughed and Heath pushed him

Heath: tsek (piss off)

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: yeer ke nyakile go flopa big time
Mshikaro.... then brugudlu big Ray ontshosetsa
ka La Parca....entlek big Ray ke enemy of
progress neh (I nearly messed up Mshikaro....
then big Ray out of the blue threatens me with
La Parca....i swear big Ray is an enemy of
progress)

Heath laughed

Jabu: waitsi keng, masepa gae le La
Parcanyana wa marete (you know what fuck
him and that dickhead La Parca)

Heath continued to laugh

Heath: don't let him hear you....so you're

drinking water for real....Jabu le le vathi? (Jabu and water?)

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: beve ke beve Mshikaro....whether ke alcohol or levathi se se salang ke thapisa mogolo (a beverage is a beverage Mshikaro....whether its alcohol based or just water what matters is im quenching my thirst)

Heath laughed out loud

Heath: wa sicka wena and wa yaka babi eo tshwere ka marete (you're sick and you're lying hangover is holding you by your balls)

they laughed...Heath was glad Jabu was laughing and making jokes after what happened....he was worried that he might sink into depression but Jabu ke Jabu and that's about it

AT AMO'S HOME

she has been sitting outside staring into space since morning, last night incident kept playing in her head....she couldn't believe Jabu did that to her and more over she embarrassed herself by peeing on herself....she has never been that scared in her life, she was sure he was gonna kill her....she sighed and wiped her falling tears and she sniffed...she knows she messed up but for him to do what he did was uncalled for, there's a lot of gender based violence going on in the country and last night she was a victim of it

Voice: why ontse o tlhone so montle
Amogelang...since vroeg o le so (why are you sitting outside like this Amogelang...since morning you've been like this)

***it was her mother and she ignored her ***

Her..mother: Amogelang??

Amo: mama leave me alone tuu assomblief

tears ran down her cheeks

Her..mother: keng...what happened

Amo sniffed

Amo: Jabu was here last night and he...he

Her..mother: he what?

Amo: onkintsheditse sthunya mama and... (he pointed a gun at me mama and...)

****she cried***

Amo: ne ke re ompolaya mama (I thought he was gonna kill me mama)....i even peed on myself

she continued to cry

Her..mother: ka tlhollwa straight....moshimane o wantlholla (im being tested straight...that boy

is testing me).... so he's the first man to be dumped heh!!!

Amo just continued to cry...she was even shaking

Her..mother: you know what a re ye (lets go)....ro tshwarisa mpya ele (we are going to have that dog arrested)....my child won't be Karabo Mokwena number two never...a re ye (lets go)

Amo: mama they'll....

her mother interrupted her

Her..mother: a re ye even if I have to call Bheki Cele gore anthuse I'll do it (lets go even if I have to call Bheki Cele to help me I'll do it)....i won't sit back and watch you die Amogelang... even though o na le go nna le masepa sometimes and o na le go acta ekare Patrice Motsepe ke papagao but o ngwanaka, ke na le lebadi la pelego ya gao....i failed you once ga i

two gona le moporofeta o mogolo papa
Lekganyane o ntlhapela matsogo so a re ye
(even though sometimes you're full of shit and
you even act like Patrice Motsepe is your father
but you're my child, I even have your birth scar
as proof....i failed you once but twice even the
biggest prophet papa Lekganyane will give up
on me so lets go)

***Ntandokazi's phone rang and it was her new
salon manager so she answered...her previous
one resigned when she got a better offer
somewhere***

Tsholo: boss lady

she said sounding nervous

Kazi: hey is everything ok

she cleared her throat

Tsholo: ummm he threatened me boss lady...i refused but he....

Kazi: who threatened you Tsholo....Tsholo hello???

she said sitting up straight

Voice: Ntandokazi

she froze then she swallowed hard

Menzi: yes I threatened her but I had no choice.....i need to talk to you and she refused to give me your new numbers

Kazi just kept quiet

Menzi: hello....Ntandokazi???

Kazi: what do you want Menzi

Menzi sighed cause he thought she dropped the call

Menzi: you.....i messed up baby and I need to fix

things

Kazi: your wife killed my babies Menzi and you kept it from me, you chose to protect her name and her memory instead of being honest with me.....you should've told me the truth and I would have dealt with the pain back there and moved on....you made me believe my kidnapper or kidnappers are the ones that killed my babies kodwa it was your wife

he sighed...he could hear the pain and brokenness in her voice

Menzi: I know ok I know and im sorry baby...ngiyaxolisa sthandwa sami just....i was protecting my kids....i wanted them to remember their mother as a good woman and not a murderer....i swear I didn't chose her I just chose them...they are innocent in all this Kazi

Kazi chuckled bitterly

Kazi: and my twins weren't???

she shouted

Menzi: ofcourse they were.....they were mine too Ntandokazi...i also lost them.....look I know I messed up ngicela ungixolele sthandwa sam (please forgive me my love)...i wanna fix things....let me fix things between us....i love you Ntandokazi

Kazi: what about what you said about the miscarriage....you broke me even further Menzi....you blamed me for it and you even called me names

she said crying

Menzi: please forgive me Ntandokazi...please baby....i love you and I can't live without you.....just tell me where you are and I'll come there and we will sit and talk...i recognize my mistakes and I wanna make things right please

he begged her

Kazi: I don't trust you anymore Menzi....the only

mistake I did was to lust over Castiel and ruin my sisterhood with Phumi....i didn't even sleep with him....i apologized then you brought that wannabe Sbahle Mpisane into our lives and on top of it all you compared me to her...you even called my womb rotten Menzi just because of her and you...

Menzi: forgive me Kazi ngiyakuncenga (im begging you)

he begged her sincerely

Kazi: I can't im sorry....now stop harassing my staff or I'll get a restraining order against you

then she dropped the call

Kazi: ooh God.....

***she cried as she cradled her stomach.....she was finding it hard to move on from the miscarriage and the truth about what Buhle did...she's now staying with her mother and she rented out her house to a nice couple....her

relationship with her mother is not 100% but they are getting there, she still has some resentment towards her but she's slowly but surely letting go of it....She's even attending therapy and until now she thought she was getting better but Menzi's call just scratched her slowly healing wounds***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....42

.

.

.

The intercom rang and Heath went to find out who it was

Heath: yah

Voice: this is detective Pietersen and sergeant Grootboom we are here to see Mr. Jabu Vilakazi

Heath: shit!!!

he whispered and turned towards the living room

Heath: Javas

Jabu: yah

Heath: call Big Ray and tell him to meet us at the police station

***Jabu got up and walked towards Heath ***

Jabu: jaive(why)

Heath: Pietersen and his stupid puppet are here

Jabu: eish nx

he walked away to call Ray and Heath opened the gate for them and he texted Ruu....He soon heard the intercom ring and he went to open

Pietersen: look who it is Grootboom it's the m*therf+cken Nigerian

Heath: akwuna abuo na-enwe mmasi ickingu dick (two prostitutes who likes sucking dick) how can I help you?

Grootboom: he said dick.... kyk na hierdie laaitie Pietersen (look at this boy Pietersen).....are you insulting us Nigerian boy?

***Heath chuckled then a creepy smile plastered on his face and Grootboom

swallowed....he has seen it before and what followed wasn't pleasant while Pietersen kept a straight face***

Heath: what do you want

***Grootboom frowned ***

Pietersen: we are here to see that cousin of yours Jabu

Heath: ey Javas!!!

Jabu came out and kept a straight face looking at the cops

Jabu: Thanos le Lesilo wat soek jy (Thanos and Lesilo what do you want)

Pietersen: we are here to take you to the station for questioning....

Pietersen said with a cocky smirk plastered across his rough face

Heath: questioning for what?

Grootboom: jy.....you have an itchy hand that likes slapping women....Mr. Mike Tyson....baby Jake Matlala mmmmh

Jabu: what??

he looked at Heath as Heath frowned

Pietersen: let's go unless you're resisting to come with us then we will be forced to use force

Jabu sighed and he chuckled shaking his head....he knew Amo went to the police, he then looked at Heath

Heath: im right behind you

Jabu nodded

Grootboom: turn around

Heath: there's no need for that, you're taking him for questioning now why are you cuffing him

Jabu: tswa mo dimpyeng tse Mshikaro, ba

tletse ka masepa (leave this dogs, they are full of shit)

he turned around and they cuffed him and took him to the van and put him at the back which made Heath angrier cause they don't even drive vans but decided to today just to embarrass Jabu.....He locked up and followed them

INSIDE THE VAN

Grootboom: does it bring back good memories sitting in the back blackie

Jabu: blackie is jou ma (blackie is your mother)

Grootboom: what did you say?

he asked getting pissed

Jabu: tsek!!

Pietersen: leave him Shaun....all we ever wanted was to have a reason to charge him with something small since him and his brothers are too careful so we can dig deeper into the illegal shit they have going on and nail them while we “Investigate” those small charges against him.....you see Shaun im saying all this while he’s listening cause I know they already know that’s our plan

***Jabu chuckled shaking his head ***

Grootboom: we are making this shit fair.....i like that

Pietersen: you see with this kind of criminals you have to think like them and not underestimate them or think they are empty heads....these things went to school and acquired degrees to con people and steal, sell

drugs, weapons and traffic our girls

Jabu chuckled shaking his head again...he knew this was a trap...he knew they are saying all this so he comment and they'll use whatever he says against him in court

Pietersen: right jail bird

Jabu: how's that sexy wife of yours man...the last time I saw her was that time....you remember it right....that time I fucked her...do you remember her moans and how she begged for my black dick....ya'll are still together?

Pietersen kept quiet and he clenched his jaws getting angry

Jabu: and you fatty....how's that loud mouth coloured bitch of yours...she's still giving birth every year?

Grootboom: voetsek...shut up jou swart bastard
(shut up you black bastard)

*** Jabu chuckled***

Jabu: did I hit a nerve fatty

Pietersen: calm down Shaun, it's one of their tactics

Jabu laughed

Grootboom: fucken useless tsotsi!!! (thug)

Jabu laughed again.... he liked the fact that he can still get under Grootboom's skin easily

AT THE POLICE STATION

***They walked inside with Jabu handcuffed and some of the police officers that were on the premises looked at one another surprised to

see Jabu handcuffed....one of the officers moved away from his colleagues and took out his phone to call Heath then he saw a car parking and Heath got out and he quickly put his phone back in his pocket and moved closer to his colleagues***

Officer1: now it makes sense why their brother and that other guy are here

Officer2: others are here?

Officer3: yeah..... what I know is he's gonna walk out of here any minute now....those two are wasting their time

Officer1: and state resources

Officer4: the only thing that will bring these brothers down is death and not jail cause they'll still push spane (work) in there making more money

Officer1: ai impilo bafowethu (life brothers)

they continued talking....

CAPE TOWN

Castiel: bello

Phumi: mmmmh

she said concentrating on the book she's reading...he sat next to her and she put her book down

Phumi: what's wrong.... you're anxious and worried

she can read people's emotions now

Castiel: Jabu is arrested

Phumi: what...why?

Castiel: they think his wife got him arrested

Phumi: what...Amo....why would she do that?

Castiel: they had an altercation and Jabu took out his gun on her but he didn't lay a finger on her but im sure she said a lot more lies to the police...i didn't like her for Jabu and I wondered why cause she looked like one of those innocent church going girls but now I know why...she's a fake bitch

Phumi: yho bathong love...

Castiel: it's the truth

Phumi: anyway why did they fight....where they having problems

Castiel: eish....

he sat back and brushed her exposed thigh and squeezed it

Castiel: she wants Jabu to look and act like Heath and Ray

Phumi: wa nyella!!! (she's full of shit)

Castiel chuckled

Phumi: I may not know him but from what you told me about him he's unique and fun to be around or keng she has crushes on Ray and Heath

he shrugged his shoulders and kissed her cheek

Phumi: we just had a quickie not long ago baby you can't be horny again come on

Castiel: I can't get enough of you bello....you just drive me crazy and plus you know I have an appetite

he turned her face and kissed her lips....they kissed for some time then within a brink of an eye she was on top of himhe sniffed her neck and his fangs shot out

Phumi: shit...just do it already

she said with an aroused tone and she tilted her head to the left giving him access and he slowly penetrated into her skin with his fangs and she moaned as an electrifying feeling ran from where Cass bit her to the rest of her body making her more aroused....Castiel forced them deeper and she moaned out loud and that drove him crazy..... he pulled his fangs out and his teeth went back to normal then he kissed where he bit her and he pulled her face closer and kissed her hungrily.....the next thing he pulled her up a bit and pulled his shorts and underwear down luckily she didn't have any underwear under her short dress so he positioned himself and pushed his hard rod inside of her slowly and they both moaned loud and cursed

Phumi: ooh.... shiiit!!!

Castiel: aah... fuck!!!

***he took off her dress throwing it across the room and she started moving slowly with her

eyes closed and her lower lip bit....Castiel then started sucking on her erect nipples whilst she moved her waist like she's dancing the Hula dance from Hawaii and Castiel went crazy, he loves it when she rides his dick like that....he sat back and let her do her things as he groaned enjoying her....she then moved her waist back and forth as if she's dancing and she moaned out loud while Castiel groaned.....his hands found their way to her waist and he helped her move faster.....she moved faster and faster while holding on to the head rest of the couch and they heard a "kkrrrr" sound, the couch was about to break but she didn't stop instead she went faster riding him..... she started riding him roughly and Cass knew she was close, the couch kept moving back and forth as she rode him.... then out of the blue the couch flipped over and they both fell backwards with it but it was like nothing happed cause Cass quickly got up and picked her up and he pinned her on the

wall and entered her quickly and he started fucking her hard losing it.....He loved the new Phumi more in fact she drove him absolutely crazy.....

They were now lying on the cold floor butt naked with Phumi's head on his chest and his arm around her while another one was under his head***

Castiel: I love you

he kissed the top of her head

Phumi: I love you too

then silence

Phumi: what is it?

he sighed

Cass: we have to go back to Pretoria tomorrow

Phumi: Jabu?

Cass: yeah.....we don't know each other that long but I consider him my brother and he's related to Ray so it automatically makes him my brother...im gonna represent him, I want to deal with the cop that's handling the case apparently he's a piece of shit that's after them

Phumi sighed

Phumi: I understand baby you don't have to explain but uthe "we" (you said "we")

Cass: im not leaving you here alone bello and its not up for discussion or an argument

she rolled her eyes

Cass: I dare you to roll them again

he warned her and she sulked...after some time he sighed

Phumi: keng Cass? (what it is Cass)

Cass: I hate your new ability

they both laughed

Phumi: mxm wa bora

she said still laughing

Cass: Ray will organize a jet for us for tomorrow night

Phumi: ok but im not happy with your controlling ways

Cass: you're also controlling...we are a controlling family so deal with it

Phumi: im not controlling

Cass: keep telling yourself that

Phumi: mxm

then they heard a baby giggling and they quickly looked to where the sound was coming from and there was their son on his fours crawling towards them and they froze with shock cause a couple of minutes ago when he was still awake before he fell asleep he couldn't even sit on his own

BACK AT THE POLICE STATION

Pietersen: I never thought I would get you to sit on that chair so soon

Jabu just looked at him bored

Jabu: why am I here Pietersen?

Pietersen: well your wife opened a case apparently you pointed a gun at her and even beat her up

Jabu laughed

Jabu: ok...anything else

Pietersen: you think this is funny huh....you know how gender based violence is the main issue in our country....you point a gun at your

wife and you're laughing about it what kind of an animal are you

Jabu: it's her word against mine, I did no such thing so are you charging me or should I call my lawyer?

Pietersen chuckled and he sat back on the chair and switched the recording devise off

Pietersen: im sure your lovely wife knows a lot more about your illegal businesses..... im also sure she'll make a perfect state witness but that's not what you are here now right

he wanted to see his reaction but Jabu just laughed

Jabu: I don't have "illegal" businesses detective im a law abiding citizen and plus don't tell me you discuss confidential shit about work with your wife....after fucking her and that's if you're still together cause once you go black you never go back, you.....

the detective bend over the table and grabbed Jabu by his shirt pulling him closer roughly and Jabu smirked

Detective: you son of a bitch!!!

Jabu: offense number one detective

****he warned him and the detective roughly let go of him and Jabu chuckled***

Jabu: should I continue?

Pietersen: you think you're clever right

Jabu: I don't think so I know so....we both know you hate me and my brothers guts and I know you'll do anything and everything to see us behind bars where you think we will suffer for the rest of our lives

then he chuckled

Jabu:.....mara nou you're getting on my last nerve with your "illegal" business shit and also trying to use my wife for your little vendetta

against me....what do you hope to achieve
huh...what....a raise?....a promotion?

Pietersen: leister hier boy (listen here boy)

Jabu: hei hei hei.....o sa nyaka gonkgotlha foro
Jappie (don't push my buttons Jappie).....im a
fucken man....a man not some little shit whose
goal is to see me behind bars even if it means
compromising his morals just because I once
fucked his cheating wife, sexually starved wives
cheat now get over it....

Jabu: you see this time my lawyer will wipe the
floor with your face, he's gonna make sure you
and your little puppet are seen as nothing but
useless vendetta filled corrupt cops by the time
he's done with you in court.....he won't even
concentrate on my wife but the two of you and
your incompetency!!

Pietersen: are you threatening me boy!!

he said with a threatening tone

Jabu: im telling you what will happen in court detective or you want me to say it in Afrikaans?

The detective looked at him with hate in his eyes and Jabu returned the look

Pietersen: you think you're clever huh....you think you're untouchable....one of these days you'll slip up and I'll be there to put you behind bars cause death is too easy for you?

Jabu just looked at him then he leaned forward

Jabu: that's if you live long enough to see that happen

he whispered to him and he coughed a little sitting back with a serious look on his face

Pietersen: you'll die first you fucken k*fir
(excuse the hurtful and forbidden word)

he whispered back then Jabu laughed as he got up

Jabu: k*fir is jou ma se poesie msoon wakho
(k*fir is your mother's pussy you cunt)

he looked at Jabu with an angry look on his face....he wanted to grab him and punch him until he took his last breath but he knew he would get into serious trouble, if only he was a just a black thug but instead he's a wealthy black thug with dangerous brothers (he thought)....he clicked his tongue and walked out taking his recording device with him

Jabu: ey mesono langlhathlhesa or bang!!! (ey assholes are you charging me or what)

he shouted

AT ANOTHER INTERROGATION ROOM

Grootboom: so you're just gonna sit there and not answer my questions Nigerian boy

Heath looked at his watch with a bored look on his face

Heath: are you charging Jabu or what

Grootboom: I asked you a question!!

he said raising his voice

Heath: ok

he said not moved then he started whistling tapping his fingers on top of the table pissing off Grootboom some more

Grootboom: nx

he clicked his tongue and he got up and he took his recording device switching it off and he walked out then Heath laughed

AT THE RECEPTION AREA

***Ray got up and went to where Amo and her

mother where sitting and Amo swallowed hard....as for Ruu he left rushing to meet Thandi for their doctor's appointment ***

Ray: I hope you know now you have made us your enemies Amo

she looked at him scared more over because of the look on his face

Ray: loyalty is very important in our family and you just betrayed one of us nc nc nc

he shook his head

Amo's mother: are you threatening us wena moshimane ke wena...mo police station nogal....sebete se se kana o se tseye kae wena (are you threatening us boy....at the police station on top of that.... where did you get such nerve)

Ray: like I said I hope you know what you're doing

he said ignoring Amo's mother and he turned and walked away going outside to his car to wait for Heath and Jabu leaving Amo shaking with fear

Amo's mother: nx ba nagana gore just because ba na le chelete ke di boss....ba tlonyella mo nna mo nx....pointing a gun at my daughter...heh heh....ka lekiwa im sure (they think just because they have money they are bosses....they'll shit themselves when it comes to me nx...pointing a gun at my daughter...heh heh im being tested)

****Amo ignored her mother's rants and she remembered Saint the demon and her eyes got filled with tears....what if he kills her in her sleep or continue to haunt her, or Ray's demon or even Heath whom now she can see how much he hates her by the way he looks at her, what if one of his personalities kills her then his mind went to what Ray just said about her being their

enemy and loyalty and she quickly got up and went inside***

Amo'mother: Amogelang keng??? (Amogelang what is it)

she got up and followed her

Amo's mother: what do you mean you're dropping the charges Amogelang

Office: umm ok wait for me here

she left to tell the detective of Amo's decision

Amo's mother: wa gafa....o tsene ke eng wena (you are mad...what has gotten to you)

she shouted at her

Amo: mama stop ok just stop.....ke wena ong

fostileng to come here (you forced me to come here).... ne ke sa batle nna (i didn't want to come)

her mother clapped her hands not believing what she was hearing

Amo: im dropping the charges ok I don't want trouble and I don't want to become an enemy to Jabulile's uncles and father I can't mama....i also have to think of Sbu, he will hate me...i can't have that im sorry but im dropping the charges

Amo'smother: you know what I give up ka wena....ompalletse Amo wankutlwa....yho Modimo wa Saint Engenas !! (you know what I give up with you....you have defeated me Amo you hear me...yho God of Saint Engenas!!!)

***she walked away as Amo wiped her falling tears.....now she regretted coming here, she wished she could just turn the hands of time

and refused to open a case against Jabu***

she got up when she saw Jabu and Heath walking out

Amo: Jabu im sorry i...

Jabu: voetsek Amogelang nx!!!

they walked out*

Pietersen: that's what you dropped the charges for...he just swore at you even though you just saved his ass

***he said pointing at Jabu and Heath as they walked away ***

Pietersen: I know gangsters marry weak women to control them but you're the weakest of them all....next time he won't just point a gun at you

but he'll kill you.....you have failed as a mother
you can't even protect your child from such a
monster....she has to grow up with that thing
around

*** he shook his head and walked inside....the
officer and people who came to lay complains
while some where there to certify copies looked
at Amo with judgmental looks on their faces***

Amo: keng....mind your own damn business nx

*** she walked out of the police station with a
heavy heart fighting back her tears***

AT AMO'S HOME

Mondli: hi

she sighed...she felt drained from everything that's been happening in her life , she didn't want to deal with Mondli right now

Amo: let me guess....my mother called you

he sat down next to her

Mondli: yeah...why sister Amo?

he asked with a not so pleased tone

Amo: I don't wanna talk about it

she said dismissing him and he sighed

Mondli: ok but you do know he's dangerous right....i mean he pointed a gun at you...your own husband....what if he killed you huh...do you want to be part of the statistics of women killed by their partners?

Amo: I know that Mondli ok there's no need for you to remind me but I had to.....you, that stupid detective and ma don't understand ok!!!!

***she snapped at him then she got up but then

Mondli gently grabbed her wrist***

Mondli: im sorry

he sighed

Mondli: im not judging you im just worried
Amogelang...im worried about you and your
safety

***she sighed as tears filled her eyes and she
broke down....Mondli got up and pulled her in
for a hug and she just let it all out as he held her
tight***

AT SNAKES HOUSE

***Jay is pacing up and down trying to calm
himself***

Jay: im gonna kill that little Nigerian fucker.....i
swear im gonna fucken kill him

Jase: she better still be intact

Muzi: you need to calm down and tackle this in
a calm manner

Jay: uthi calm manner...calm manner!!!

***he said raising his voice and Muzi gave him a
deadly look***

Jay: don't try that baba shit on me not today

Muzi ok...my daughter is dating a horny

Nigerian boy and she's only 12....fucken 12

Muzi got up

Muzi: well she takes after her father.... why are
you all surprised

***he said walking away to pour himself some
whiskey***

Jay: uthini? (what did you say)

they all looked at him

Jay: im talking to you Muzi

Muzi: am I lying?

Snakes: Muzi hayi

Muzi raised his hands in surrender

Muzi: ya'll are sensitive man yeerr

***they looked at him and now they could see
he's acting weird***

Jase:: uright bafo

Muzi: yeah....why?

Jase: you're acting weird and saying insensitive
things

he raised an eyebrow looking at him

Muzi: so me saying she takes after her father is
insensitive?

they looked at one another

Muzi: our wives are way younger than us so a time will come when our kids especially the girls will see it as ok to date older men cause oMa and oBaba did it so will the boys, they'll date or marry younger women cause their fathers did and plus it runs in the family hao

they kept quiet

Muzi: nonke niyazwela kakhulu man (ya'll are sensitive)....this whole issue is simple to fix even though Zaza's heart will be broken

Jay: how?

*** he said with a serious tone.....he was now calmer***

Muzi: that boy is in Nigeria and Zaza is here, im sure they met once at Princess's party and probably exchanged numbers and they've been talking online since

Snakes: your point mafa vuka

Muzi: f'tsek!!

Snakes smirked and showed him his middle finger

Muzi: if she's not longer pure is not Rays' brother's fault just to clear that out of the way and she didn't send him any nudes which is good.....anyway concerning this little dating thing they have going on it's a simple matter to deal with....call Ray and tell him what's going on and he'll make sure the boy ends things with Zaza cause he knows it will cause a rift in the family and put Mbali in middle of the whole shit.....he may be a fucken asshole but he loves Mbali.....aaaand you become the hero dad by comforting her unlike confronting her and she ends up hating you...done!

they all looked at him weirdly as he spoke calmly

Muzi: we don't want the Mbali drama to repeat

its self with Zaza....Mbali was in love and Zaza uphethwe yi adoli nje so approach things calmly or your relationship will suffer...ngiqedile!! (im done)

he went and sat down taking another sip of his drink

Snakes: uRuslan needs to come and explain these different people living inside my brother....angeke shem (I cant shame)....hayi qha angeke....when it's not ubaba , uMr english la with a fake American accent...hayi angeke

he said walking away

Muzi: he likes exaggerating this one

he chuckled taking another sip of his drink and the twins looked at him shocked

outside the door Snakes found Lwandle sitting down next to the door

Snakes: and nou wena

Lwandle: niqedile ukukhuluma baba (are you done taking dad)

Snakes frowned at him

Snakes: uhlaleleni la Lwandle (why are you sitting here Lwandle)

Lwandle: im waiting for you

Snakes: couldn't you wait for me in the lounge

Lwandle: qha (no)

Snakes: usho'kthini qha (what do you mean no)

Lwandle: I needed to make sure ubaba don't leave ngeback door

he got up from the floor and looked up at his father with his glasses on making a cute little frown on his face

Lwandle: nginenkinga baba (I have a problem)

Snakes raised his eyebrows

Snakes: wena... nkinga (you...problem)

Lwandle: yebo (yes)

Snakes chuckled

Snakes: ok ngilalele (ok im listening)

Lwandle: utishala wam umhle and uqhoka
Ilokwe elincane lokuvesa amathanga and mina
ngizizwa ngandlela thile umangiwabona (my
teacher is beautiful and she wears short
dresses that reveal her thighs and I feel
somehow when I see them)

****Snakes froze on the spot***

Snakes: heh?

Lwandle: ngiyamthanda and ngifisa ukumshada
baba (I love her and I want to marry her)

***Snakes just looked at him shocked to the
core***

Lwandle: baba can I use the house phone to call
Lwandile and Lwazi

Snakes didn't move

Lwandle: baba I need to call Lwazi and Lwandile about school things

Snakes: ummm yah sure but don't be too long or punishment when the bill comes

Lwandle: ok

***he walked away leaving Snakes standing there still shocked....she wondered if he heard him right cause Lwandle is too young to feel some typa way when he see woman's thighs...way too young...he turned and walked back inside the study ***

IN THE LOUNGE

***Lwandle dialed Jay's landline and the helper answered and he told him who he is and asked to speak to Lwazi and Lwandile and the helper

called them to the phone....they are used to calling each other so it wasn't shock to the helper***

Lwazi&Lwandile: bafo

Lwandle: bafos code red...code red

Lwazi&Lwandile: is it that white boy Kyle again

Lwnadle: no its sisTiara

Lwazi and Lwandile looked at each other

Lwazi&Lwandile: usisi.... what did she do

Lwandle: uyajola

Lwazi&Lwandile: ini!!!

Lwandle: ujola namaNigeria....the man is babJay's age

Lwazi&Lwandile: WHAT???

they asked with their eyes popped out

Lwandle: keep an eye on her, listen to her phone calls and write what she says to him so we give

baba the man's name so they will deal with him

Lwazi&Lwandile: ok

Lwandle: I'll call Mnqobi and Thula to let them know

Lwazi: no one dates our sister especially an old man....we will also search her bedroom

Lwandile: yeahwena keep a close look at Samkelo too she might be dating an old man too

Lwandle: I'll tell Mnqobi and Thula to keep a close look at Nqobile too and we will all keep a close look at Gugu and Thandeka together

Lwazi&Lwandile: yeah

Lwandle: salute

Lwazi&Lwandile: salute

*** Lwandle dropped the call and dialed Jase's landline numbers***

AT JAY'S HOME

Tiara found her twin little brothers staring at him with serious looks on their faces as she was watching TV in the TV room....it was creepy as hell

Tiara: what's wrong with you two....why are you staring at me like that

they didn't say anything

Tiara: can you just stop staring at me like that before I punch the two of you on your faces

they still didn't say anything....they just looked at her

Tiara: arrrrg!!!

she got up and walked up stairs and they got up and followed her

Tiara: what are you doing...where are you going

Lwazi: nowhere

***she continued to walk and they followed her
then she stopped***

Tiara: will you stop following me!!!

she shouted at them

Lwandile: why are you shouting?

he said softly

Tiara: arrrg

she screamed

Tiara: im calling mom I can't deal with you two

***she said going back downstairs as she
called Nomhle's numbersAND THEY
FOLLOWED HER***

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN ☆☆ 18SLV

INSERT.....43

Heath: o right?

Jabu: ke tla ba shap (I'll be fine)

Heath nodded

Jabu: e re ke phounle dai moerskond a tlise
Sbu mo ke nako ya gore ke mo chaele gore go
chunagalang (let me call ass “Sbu’s driver” to
drop him here its time I told him what’s going
on)

Heath sighed

Heath: eish...i hope he takes it better than I did

Jabu looked at him

Jabu: better than you did?

Heath: she hurt you Mjava....seeing you cry like
that broke me mfowethu....I've never seen you
like that before

***he said with a sad tone.....he waited for Jabu
to make fun of what he just told him but nope
he didn't***

Jabu: haarde (sorry) Mshikaro.... I remember
how I felt dai tyt (that time) you were
kidnapped

Heath swallowed hard as a flash of that scene played on his mind and he quickly shook it off

Jabu: one thing ek veet ka wena ke gore (one thing I know about you is)...zange zange ka jaja(I've never known) someone as strong as you

Heath chuckled a bit

Heath: same goes to you

Jabu: nah...wena Mshikaro....

he chuckled shaking his head

Jabu: you created personalities to survive and when Big Ray finally found you and I saw you in that state you were in....i thought o ka se laste....i thought o ipolaya....i know nna I wouldn't have made it mara wena...wena you made it out alive and vandag o phela le digafi tsa gao in peace (I thought you wont make it....i thought you'll kill yourself....i know I wouldn't

have made it but you...you made it out alive and today you live with your crazies in peace)

Heath laughed

Heath: digafi neh? (crazies?)

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: heh monna I met masepa a bareng Observer...motete wa sgafi....dai moerskond ke founder ya bogafi....tjeeerrr (man I met that shit called Observer....a crazy ass....that asshole is the founder of crazies...tjeeerrr)

Heath laughed out loud

Jabu: kao chaela...then go nale Caesar(im telling you...then there's Caesar)Mr know it all

he shook his head

Jabu: wa bona Caesar o tla go etsa o feel(e) e kare o domkop o tshwere PHD....di plane tsa gae di confus(a) tsotsi e be di e tse le sense at

the same time (you see Caesar can make you to feel like a dunderhead while you hold a PHD.... his plans confuses a thug and also makes sense at the same time)

Heath busted out with loud laughter

Jabu: eeh boss ka di bona ka digafi tsa gao struu...then go nale Mr soldier man.... (eeh boss im seeing things with your crazies for real....then there's Mr soldier man)

he then laughed

Jabu: ai

Heath was still laughing

Jabu: mara a gona flopo.... ke di amogetse and re mjojo nna le tsona (but all is good....i have excepted them and we are good me and them)

Then Jabu's phone rang and Lorraine's number flashed on his screen...he frowned then he answered

Jabu: sho

Raine: Jabu hi its...its Lorraine

she said with a shaky voice

Jabu: sure lolly...dintshang (what's up)

she kept quiet a bit

Raine: im sorry to call you like this but.....i didn't know who to call i....i need help....i need your help...but if you can't I'll understand....i just...

Jabu: wooooh....flopo keng (whats wrong)

*** Heath looked at Jabu and she breathed out over the phone***

Raine: im being threatened Jabu and I don't know what to do

Jabu: threatened by who

Raine: by Bhekimuzi....my ex-husband

Jabu: why

she kept quiet a bit

Raine: i....i can't say it over the phone....all I can say is it was a matter of life and death

Jabu kept quiet a bit

Jabu: let me guess dai moerskond helped you on something illegal and now he's using that to make you do things you don't want

she sniffed

Raine: I can't do it Jabu...i really can't....you're my last hope and if you can't help me then im gonna hand myself in than to do what he's asking of me

Jabu sighed brushing his head

Raine: he said I have a week to decide and I have begged him and offered him money to leave me alone but he's keen on making me do that

Jabu: o batla gore o chuneng (what does he want you to do)

Raine: to open a modeling agency and to lure in innocent young women....he's into human trafficking Jabu and I can't...i just cant

Jabu: moerskond!!!

Jabu: wa jaja gore sa le wa chunegela ke eng
(does he know what once happened to you)

Raine: yeah

she said with a low voice

Jabu: and still o batla o chune masepa ao (and he still wants you to do that shit)

she cried

Jabu: msoono wa gae nx.... sa wara wena come this side kaosane (his cunt nx...don't worry just come this side tomorrow)

Raine: he's having me followed Jabu

Jabu: ke re etla this side (I said come this side)

Raine: ohk....

she sniffed

Jabu: good....call me if something happens

Raine: ok thank you

Jabu: shap

he ended the call and sighed

Heath: flopo (whats wrong)

Jabu: Lolly is in shit and I need to help her and maybe helping her will take my mind off things

Heath: what kind of shit

Jabu: I think she killed someone in self-defense and ex-husband helped her and now he's threatening her gore a mo join(e) for human trafficking

Heath: what?...piece of shit!!!

Jabu: and to think gore wa jaja gore Lolly was once kidnapped and raped for days before dai moerskond dumped her somewhere thinking

gore she's dead and he asks her to do this

he shook his head

Heath: then broer wa gae (his brother) was killed by a serial killer and nou o re e kare o bodisitse motho (and now you're saying you think she killed someone)...yah neh

Jabu: she's been through a lot and moerskond o o add(a) masepa a mangwe mo dimo nx (and that ass is adding more shit on top nx)

Heath: let me do some research ka dai bari(about that fool)....i want to deal with him accordingly

Jabu: batho ba nnyela ko toilet yena onnyela mo dimo ga tlhogo ya Lolly nx....fokon shit!.....o nyaka Ruu a mo gafise a nnyele...o nale masepa (people shit inside a toilet and he shits on top of Lolly's head nx...fucken shit....Ruu will make him run mad...he's full of shit)

Heath laughed as he stood up

Jabu: and today o robala ko wena ke shap
nna..... im sure mamiwota o nyorilwe blaen
(and today you're sleeping at your house im
good...im sure mamiwota is thirsty for you)

Heath laughed

Heath: fotsek (piss off)

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: mara o mmotse gore antsholele le
mfanaka (tell her to dish for me and my boy)

***Heath laughed waking away....then Jabu's
phone rang again and he didn't recognize the
numbers but he answered anyway***

Jabu: sho

Amo: ke Amo please don't drop the call...please

*** she begged him and Jabu got angry***

Jabu: ei motho not now tuu....assomblief not
now

then he dropped the call clicking his tongue

LATER ON....

Sbu: whatever it is I didn't do it dad?

Jabu looked at him

Jabu: did I say you did something wrong

Sbu: no but...you have a serious look on your face and you want to talk to me..so.....

Jabu: wa phapha san (you're forward boy)

he said hitting him on the back of his head lightly smiling and Sbu chuckled

Sbu: so if it's not me then what's wrong

Jabu sighed

Jabu: Amo and I are separated

Sbu kept quiet looking down

Jabu: im not what she wants in a man and I can't change who I am for anyone mfanaka (my boy)

Sbu: what do you mean you're not what she wants in a man

he asked him confused

Jabu: o nyaka ke tshwane le bo uncle ba hao (she wants me to be like your uncles) the way they are and how they live

Sbu: I still don't understand papa

Jabu: she envies your aunts Mbali and Naledi's lives boy....at first she used what happened ko parting ya Mbali as an excuse but later she came clean during a meeting with both our families....

he sighed...this was hard for him

Jabu: ka mo rata Amo mara she hurt me and I don't know how to move past that hurt my boy

Sbu swallowed as his eyes got filled with tears

Sbu: I've been trying to call her but she doesn't answer my calls....i thought she left because of me

he said with a low tone

Jabu: it has nothing to do with you boy....wa jaja gore kena le bati ya basadi (you know I have bad luck when it comes to women)i could make it work with her for you and Lile but I don't want you to think gore go shap go kgotlhella masepa ko lenyalong or in a relationship for the sake ya bana (that its ok to stay in a toxic marriage or relationship for the sake of your kids)

he sighed

Jabu: that's why men end up killing women cause instead of walking away if ba bona gore the relationship e fitlile the toxic stage ba no nna bantse ba re ka mo rata (it has reached the toxic stage they just say "I love her") , "we've been through a lot together".... "we have kids and i want them to grow up in a family with two parents still together cause I didn't have that growing up "..... that is until they explode and do things they regret afterwards.....even women stay in toxic marriages for the sake of their children the next thing dincosi tsa bona (their children) more especially boys grow up thinking its right to treat women like their father did with their mother and girls think its ok to stay in an abusive or toxic relationship cause their mother did

Jabu sighed

Jabu: I want you to know gore just because you love someone it doesn't mean you have to

tolerate their nonsense....it doesn't mean you have to stay with them unless they change for real and the love is still there ok

Sbu nodded looking down

Jabu: you and your partner are gonna make mistakes cause no one is perfect but cheri that doesn't appreciate you and accept you for who you are a fotsekele kwa (she can go to hell)

.....and never I mean never ever change who you are for anyone, if they cant accept you for who you are then a ba fotseke (they can go to hell)....wa bona nna ke happy the way ke leng.....kai gafela....mmmh.... ge ke nyaka go ova senngamla ka se ovage ke nyaka go ova se kasi ka se ova mmmmh....(im happy with the way I am....im crazy...mmmh.... when I want to speak English I speak it....when I want to speak vernac I speak it)

Sbu chuckled

Jabu: I blend in le corporate people gape le ko kasi I blend in perfectly....im jack of all traits....can't get cant tholakale (im a rare breed)....mmmh... kae goga cigar ke jele an expensive suit kentse le dinngamla ke sentsha ka dinko...mmh....le patje kae bofa ke blomile le majita ko car wash ke jele di floshem le di brendwood (I can smoke a cigar while wearing an expensive suit chilling with rich people speaking polished English....mmh.... even weed I roll it on a paper while chilling with guys at a car wash wearing florsheims and brentwoods)

****they laughed***

Jabu: ka dlala I don't wear di floshem le di brendwood (im kidding I don't wear florsheims and brentwood) and weed is bad

more laughter

Jabu: and the abantu bazothini syndrome

doesn't exist in our family....if wa gafa igafela in peace....if o Mr serious be serious in peace....
(and the what will people say syndrome doesn't exist in our family....if you're crazy be crazy in peace....if you're Mr serious be serious in peace)
if oskrr skrr be skrr skrr in peace

Sbu chuckled

Jabu: mara a drug addict, a woman beater and a judgmental person yena ro mo mura nyaope e tswe a yo joina boruti same time (we will beat the nyaope out of him to a point that he will become a pastor same time)....if you have problems you talk to one of us about it, whether ke bullying or banyana (girls) or even mdavaso o ova le rona (sex you talk to us)even if o flopile (you mess up) you talk to us, we will swear at you and even whip your ass mara we will solve it for you at the end ra utlwana

Sbu: sure thaima

Jabu: as for Amo and I...re tla bona mara I can't change who I am for anyone..... so if it doesn't work out, it doesn't work out and I'll heal and continue searching for the one mara wena sa stressa....concentrate on your school work o phase so o kgone go vaya o ye Cuba....zaka ya gao e ready ke go beetse yona le apartment e teng e go emetse and o kereya le transi..... wena o sai stressa ka taba tsa batho ba bagolo cause nna those distinctions ka di batla in a few months' time, a ke nyake story... (concentrate on your school work and pass so that you will be able to go to Cuba....your money is ready I saved it for you even your apartment is there waiting for you and you'll also get a car....dont stress yourself with elder people's things cause those distinctions I want them in a few months' time, I don't want stories)

Sbu: sure thaima

Jabu: if you feel like this thing between Amo

and I it's stressing you then I'll find you a good therapist.... ok

*** Sbu nodded then Jabu wrapped his arm around his neck and pulled him closer and kissed the top of his head***

Jabu: kaocanywa wautlwa (I love you you hear me)

Sbu nodded

Sbu: lenna kaocanywa thaima (I love you too)

Jabu: now zaiya o ntlele biri and skhola vathi for wena o bowe ke tlo go mura mo PlayStation
(now go and and bring me a bottle of beer and coke for yourself and come back so I will beat on PlayStation)

Sbu laughed and stood up and walked away still laughing....Jabu's face became sad and he sighed as tears filled his eyes then he quickly fought them back and he sat back waiting for his son

AT CASTIEL AND PHUMI'S HOUSE

its late in the afternoon and Phumi and Cass still couldn't believe what was happening to their son

Phumi: so Ruslan said we shouldn't worry

Cass: Yeah...he said something like this once happened back in the medieval times...he's a grandson to Salvatore so anything is possible bello

she sighed...she was worried about her son....his eyes turned yellowish and he frowned

Phumi: and nou...Cass look

Cass: what is it boy

Phumi: what's going on Cass

***Cass frowned and he got up and so did

Phumi....they heard the same thing***

Phumi: who's that

Cass: I don't know....stay here I'll be back

Phumi: Cass...

Cass: I'll be fine bello stay here

She slowly sat down with Thia on her lap

Cass apparated and he stood behind the lady with a scary look on his face

Cass: what the fuck do you want!!

the lady jumped startled and she turned

Cass: I said what the fuck do you want

Lady: i...i need your help

the door opened and Phumi came out holding Thia

Cass: what are you doing outside with Thia Phumi... didn't I say stay inside I'll be back!!

he said not happy with her and she just gave him a look then she looked at the lady

Phumi: I can sense fear from you

the lady swallowed looking over from Cass to Phumi

Phumi: you seem nervous and scared

she looked at Cass then at Phumi again

Phumi: im his wife and this is our son Thiago

***the lady could tell when Phumi walked out that she's also a vampire....as for Cass, he just

shook his head looking down***

Phumi: she means no harm Cass so chill

Cass: don't tell me to chill Phumelele...she's a fucken witch

Phumi gave him the look

Phumi: language!!

he breathed out frustrated

Lady: im pregnant and my daughter is your son's mate

Cass laughed a mocking laugh

Cass: leave before I castrate you

Lady: you're a vampire Castiel and you know how things are in our world.....

then she looked at Phumi

Lady: im gonna get killed two weeks after I give birth and no it can't be avoided....im married to a wonderful man and he won't be able to handle

her and her gift so I need your help

Phumi: you gonna get killed?

Lady: don't feel sorry for me, I have been avoiding death but the angel of death will finally get to me at least he's gonna let me give birth first

*** she smiled faintly and Phumi frowned looking at Cass cause Ray's demon is the angel of death but Cass shook his head lightly so she doesn't say anything and she just swallowed***

Cass: how did you find us and you expect us to believe that, that baby you're carrying is our son's mate

***he chuckled ***

Lady: your son is a Dhampir and your wife here is a daughter to a powerful witch as for her father he was good kindhearted man

Phumi: excuse you?

Lady: your adopted mother always spoke about your “uncle” and his wife who were brutally killed long ago....every time she spoke about them she would shed a tear...

Phumi looked at her horrified

Phumi: how...how did you know that

Lady: first of all he wasn’t your uncle...they weren’t even related at all....she was their maid and they trusted her with you when your biological mother saw what was about to happen to them, both her and her husband wanted you to be safe, to have a normal life and not be chased by evil vampires...

Cass: what evil vampires

he said cutting her off

Lady: the brethren

Cass’s eyes popped out then he looked at Phumi....the lady also looked at Phumi

Lady: your adopted mother knew who your mother really was....she met a man and they got married and raised you together but things happened.....look your biological mother was my mother's mentor and my god mother....

Phumi: no...no this is.... no...my mother would've told me the truth....she would've...im her daughter and...and you're lying

she said shaking her head

Lady: am i....and would she?....would she tell you that your mother was a witch and she was killed by vampires....before you met him you interpretation of witches was different to now....

Cass: ok that's enough

Lady: look I have two weeks left and Im about to send you the location where my daughter and my husband will be hiding

She got busy on her phone and Castiel's phone beeped...he wondered how she got her

numbers..... then she looked at Phumi who was still trying to make sense of what this lady just said***

Lady: im sorry you're finding out everything like this....

then she looked at Cass

Lady: let fate bring them together but always look after my daughter....she's your son's life line and once he meets her his life will never be the same....in a good way....you look after mine and she'll look after yours

she then looked at Thia

Lady: a tiny bit of her blood will be his cure....always remember that!!

Then she turned to leave

Cass: wait....

she stopped waking

Cass: who's gonna kill you and what's your

name and your husband's name

Phumi: don't tell me you believe all this rubbish
Cass

Lady: the brethren and my name is Alexis.....my husband's name is Malakai Simbine, he was born in Mozambique but he lives here in South Africa....

she took a step then she stopped

Lady: protect my daughter with your life Castiel for your son's sake

then she said some foreign words and disappeared into thin air

Phumi: what the....Cass...

Cass: let's go inside

Phumi: do you believe her?

Cass: I'll only believe it if Madou says it's the truth...lets go

He looked at Thiago and he sighed then they went inside and Cass called Ruslan

The following day Castiel and Phumi arrived in Pretoria and now they are waiting for Ruslan to come and explain to them about what that lady said about Phumi and Thia

Cass: you wanna feed

Phumi shook her head no and Cass sighed

Cass: come here

she sighed and went to him then he wrapped his arms around her and kissed the top of her head

Cass: everything will be alright

Phumi: what if....

Cass sighed

Cass: it won't change anything bello and as for Thiago if that lady is telling the truth then we will do as she said and protect her daughter for our son's sake

Phumi breathed out

Phumi: this is all messed up baby

Cass: tell me about it

then his phone indicated that he just received a message and he reached for it and opened it.....it was Ruslan telling him to meet him at Jabu's place....after his meeting he'll pick Thandi up and drive there to see him

AT JABU'S HOME

Lorraine: are you sure your wife won't mind me being here Jabu

Jabu: will you just relax

Lorraine: I don't wanna cause problems for you...i really don't mind staying at a hotel

Jabu gave her a serious look and she kept quiet

Jabu: if ne ke na le jaive gore o blome mo (if I had a problem with you staying here) I would have booked you into a hotel Lorraine

she sighed

Lorraine: ok mara you did tell your wife gore o nale moeng right? (that you have a visitor right?)

Jabu: no

Lorraine: bathong Jabu....can you just call her and tell her before she gets here, I don't want problems please....you can even lie and say im

your distance cousin....you don't know how crazy women are these days...they act first and ask questions later!!!

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: she doesn't live here anymore and don't ask me why.... and le gona why are you worried about my wife...i should be the one worried and not wena

she sighed

Lorraine: I just...

she sighed again

Lorraine: I really need your help Jabu, you're my only hope and I don't want to seem ungrateful by disrespecting your matrimonial home and your wife by being here without her knowledge...what if she kicks me out and forbids you from helping me....

***she said with a low tone ...he gave her a

weird look then he sighed shaking his head***

Jabu: do you trust me

she nodded looking at him

Jabu: then relax ok

she breathed out

Lorraine: ok....im sorry im just....

Jabu: sa wara (don't worry)

she breathed out again and she relaxed then the door opened and Jabu quickly reached for his gun but he stopped when he saw Cass and his family walking in

Phumi: never ever do that again

Cass laughed...he just apparated from their car to the front porch holding on to Phumi and Thia

Cass: it was fun seeing you freaked out like that

Phumi: mxm

Jabu: wa go tonya (the cold one) aka Freeza

Cass laughed

Cass: tsek

they bro hugged as they laughed

Jabu: and you must be Phumza

Maphumza....Phumzaza....Phumisto.....Bella wa ndakie (a black Bella)

***Phumi laughed and so did Cass ***

Phumi: and you must be the famous Jabu

still laughing

Jabu: wa utlwa Lolly ke bitsiwa “ the famous one” (you hear that Lolly im being called “the famous one”)

Lorraine giggled and Jabu kissed Phumi’s cheek

Jabu: damn you’re cold

Phumi: and your blood’s smell is so appetizing

Jabu quickly moved away from her and she laughed

Jabu: keep her away from me man.....i have garlic in the house and a bible and im anointed by the blood of Jesus

he said looking at Cass and both Cass and his wife laughed while Lorraine looked at them confused by what they were saying

Jabu: anyway this is Lorraine my friend... Lolly this is my bro Castiel from another mother and his beautiful but dangerous wife Phumi and their son Thia Mathiago

Lorraine: hi

she wondered why Phumi and her husband's skins were so pale....and she could see that there is something creepy but also fascinating about them

Phumi: hello

then she frowned

Phumi: she's not dead...he lied to you

Lorraine: huh?

Phumi: the women you think you killed is not dead

Lorraine looked at her shocked with her eyes popped out and so did Jabu

Jabu: how do you know that

Cass: bello...another new one huh?

she sighed

Phumi: I guess so

Jabu: Cass explain mfowethu

Cass: she's.... gifted...yah she has a.... gift

he spoke to Jabu with his eyes

Jabu: ooh... you mean gifted...oh ok

*** he cleared his throat and Cass walked to

him and whispered to him***

Cass: you're fucked

Jabu: heh?

Cass:your soul mate is here and your ungrateful wife is at the gate

Jabu: what?

he frowned and Cass chuckled then he went to sit down

Jabu: wa gafa wena Freeza.... mxm e re ke ye six/nine ka bowa (you're crazy Freeza.... mxm let me go to the toilet I'll be back)

he walked away

Cass: come and have a sit bello

***she went to sit next to Cass and Lorraine slowly sat down with her heart beating fast...her mind was all over the place....she wondered how Phumi knew her secret and by the look of things even Jabu was shocked by her revelation

meaning he didn't tell her anything***

Phumi: there's something about this lady

***she whispered to Cass ***

Cass: she's his soul mate

he whispered back

Phumi: damn....wait.....who's that at the gate

Cass: the wife

Phumi: Amo?

she asked with her eyes popped out looking at him and he stole a kiss

Cass: yeah

they continued to whisper....while Lorraine was miles and miles away thinking about what Phumi said

Phumi: ooh shit

Thia woke up

Phumi: hey baby you are wake...mommy's boy
is awake....

she kissed his forehead

Thia: dada....

the parents looks at him shocked

Thia: mama....

then the intercom rang

.

.

.

#EndSARS

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....44

.

.

.

.

Cass: your wife is outside

Jabu: heh?

Jabu: don't tell me you opened for her man

Cass: she has your baby with her man

Jabu: Lile...eish

***she knocked and Jabu went to open and as soon as Lile saw her father she screamed wanting him to take her and Jabu chuckled

taking her from Amo***

Amo: hi

Jabu: sho

he said with a serious tone

Amo: umm she was crying for you so I thought I should bring her and plus we need to talk

Jabu....i need to apologize

Jabu: we have nothing to talk about Amogelang

she sighed

Amo: please Jabu....i won't take much of your time

he looked at her for some time

Jabu: make it quick

he said making way for her to enter and she walked in....she saw Castiel and cleared her throat then she greeted them

Phumi: hi

Lolly: hello

Castiel: mmmmh the ungrateful one

Jabu: Cass no

Castiel chuckled and he got up

Cass: let me check how far along Madou is...I'll be back

Phumi nodded and he walked away dialing his phone

Jabu: umm Lolly this is Amo....the wife

Lorraine raised her eyebrows at " THE" wife instead of my wife part

Lolly: umm hi its nice to meet you

Jabu: and Amo this is Lorraine but I call her Lolly and she a good friend of mine

Amo's heart beat fast

Amo: good friend?

Jabu: yah

Amo: I've never heard of her Jabu

Jabu: that's because we lost contact
somehow....she lives in Durban

Amo: mmhhhh I see

*** she said with a disgusted look on her face
looking at Lolly.....as for Phumi, she was looking
at them all this time....she could see Jabu was
annoyed by Amo and her attitude towards
Lorraine ***

Lolly: ummm im gonna lie down a bit...please
excuse me

***she could see Amo didn't like her or her
presence ***

Lolly: its nice meeting you Phumi and your
lovely family

***Phumi smiled at her...she liked her and her
aura***

Phumi: don't worry we will see each other a lot

she smiled a bit and walked towards the stairs

Amo: hei where do you think you're going

Lolly stopped and turned frowning

Lolly: umm I need to lay down a bit

Amo: in who's house

Jabu: hei hei....gaotlotla ka masepa mo (don't come with your shit here)....you said you wanted to talk now let's go and talk

he looked at Lolly

Jabu: vaiya o ghidla (go and rest)

she sighed and continued to walk and Amo looked at Jabu angrily

Amo: really Jabu...we are not even divorced and already you brought another woman in our matrimonial home

Jabu: I don't have your time wena....o vomboka

mo o sa bitsa ke mmotho (you come here unannounced) and you talk to my guest anyhow....osa batla go ntlatsa phinya!!! (don't make me mad)

he said looking pissed

Amo: I cant believe you right now....you're not even trying to fight for us all because of her!!!

she raised her voice at him

Phumi: guys...

Amo: wena shut up...don't get involved nx....otsena kae mo (where do you fit in)....mind your own damn business with your dead husband!!!

Phumi: otla nnyela girly....ke tlao rathafantsha soos nou (you'll shit yourself girly....i'll rip you apart right now) and Jabu wont do nothing about it....the way o naleng masepa ka teng (the way you're full of shit) you're not even pulling your husband to a private space to talk

to him...you just scatter your marital problems
in front of his guest nx

she said standing up

Amo: o reng wena (what did you just say)

Jabu: Amogelang!!!

Phumi: o tlwaela batho wena nx....Jabu otlhale
selo se nx (Jabu divorce this thing)

***she said pointing at her and she followed
where Cass went ***

Amo: so you gonna let her talk to me like that!!

Jabu: you said o batla go ova...ova then (you
want to talk...talk then)

she looked at him with tears in her eyes

Amo: just like that Jabu

Jabu: Amogelang....

Amo: no its fine I'll go...lets go nana

Lile refused and Jabu shook his head

Jabu: I'll bring her later

Amo: no im leaving with her

Jabu: o sa batla go ntshelaka wena (don't piss me off)...i said I'll bring her later are you deaf!

he said with a stern voice and she clicked her tongue and walked to the door then Jabu clicked his tongue trying to calm down

Jabu: yah neh

he said shaking his head

Lile: yah neh

she imitated her father and Jabu laughed

Jabu: wa phapha wena Miss Vilakazi (you're too forward Miss Vilakazi)

***She heard a knock on the door and she got

up and went to check who it was and she got the shock of her life***

Menzi: hi

she swallowed hard

Kazi: how...how did you find me

Menzi: i have my ways....can I come in...please

she sighed and nodded and he walked in...she closed the door and when she turned she found him standing an inch closer to her

Menzi: I missed you

she tried to move but he blocked her

Kazi: stop!!

she warned him

Menzi: you look good

*** he said ignoring what she said and she breathed out***

Kazi: Menzi....

Menzi: im sorry Ntandokazi

she looked away

Menzi: I miss you and I miss us....i know I fucked up sthandwa sam and im sorry

tears filled her eyes

Menzi: never again...i know how it's like to lose you and its hell on earth...please forgive me

she let them fall biting her lower lip stopping herself from making a sound and he just pulled her to his chest holding her tight and she just let it all out

***Ray got a call from Jay and what he told him didn't please him at all...he told Jay he would handle it and now he's calling Mj ***

Mj: big bros how far (how are you)

Ray: what the fuck is wrong with you Mj!!

Mj frowned

Mj: bros???

Ray: a fucken twelve year old Mj and worst of it all Jay's daughter...you dey mad....you dey craze huh!!!

*** he sounded angry and Mj swallowed hard***

Mj: bros listen...i love her man....i really do I swear

Ray: what do you know about love Mj.... so now you're a fucken pedophile heh..... you're attracted to twelve year olds huh

Mj: ofcourse not bros how can you say that....that girl is gonna be wife one day so im not using her or playing her I swear

Ray: you have 24 hours to end whatever nonsense you have going on with that child or

im coming to Nigeria to fucken deal with you

Mj: but bros its not fair ooo.... your flower is 20 years younger than you and no one is saying anytin...

Ray: you dey craze mumu.....

Mj: it's the truth ooo...ah ah this thing dey run in the family ooo so I don't understand why I have to be an exception

Ray: MJ.....

he warned him

Mj: bros

Ray: Mballi was legal when I first saw her....how old is Jay's child

Mj kept quiet

Ray: she's underage...way underage....how would you feel if some nigga your age or even someone older than you dated Omphile

Mj kept quiet

Ray: I asked you a question damn it!!!

Mj: I'd probably beat him to death

Ray: then why are you dating that baby

Mj breathed out

Ray: her father is angry and he has every right to be...in fact all her fathers are angry MJ....that's their baby girl for fucks sake....

*** Mj sighed***

Ray: end it...if you truly love her you'll wait until she's of legal age

Mj swallowed painfully

Mj: I hear you bros

***he said with a low tone and Ray sighed ***

Ray: I know you might love her but you're going to varsity next year...do you think you'll stay faithful to her with all those girls there?....you

gonna hurt her Mj, you gonna break that small girl....let her grow up a bit....to mature a bit before you date her....she's a child now....if you love her you'll end it now

Ray: you better do it now after this call and be gentle when doing so

then he dropped the call and Mj's tears ran down his cheeks and he quickly wiped them swallowing hard.....he really loved her and he hated himself for what he's about to do to her but his brother is right "he thought" she's way too young and her fathers are dangerous men not forgetting Mbali would be mad and disappointed at him and he can't have that....what she thinks of him matter a lot to him

Tiara: baby hey

Mj swallowed hard...she looked beautiful with her hair tide in a ponytail....he wanted to change his mind but he knew he has to do what he needs to do

Mj: im sorry I have to do this Tee

Tiara: do what baby

she said with her sweet voice

Mj: break up with you

she laughed because she thought he was joking

Tiara: stop playing like that babe

she said smiling

Mj: im not playing Tee..... look I thought about it....im going to varsity next year and I know I'll cheat on you....i love you so much so im letting you go so I don't break you like that

tears filled her eyes

Tiara: don't do this Mj please im begging you

Mj: it's for the best Tee....plus you're way too young to be dating....your father and my brothers would kill me if they found out im dating a 12 year old

she cried

Tiara: Mj I love you please don't break up with me...i love you

Mj: be good and take care of yourself and also stay beautiful princess....i'll always love you

then he dropped the WhatsApp video call and she quickly tried to call him back but he dropped the call....she tried again and it didn't go through..... The twins budged inside her bedroom when they heard her crying out loud...They were eavesdropping on her

Tiara: MJ nooo....pleasee nooo

she said crying

Lwazi: what did he say to you!!

he asked her breathing heavily with an angry look on his cute face

Lwandile: we gonna deal with him...don't cry sisi we will deal with him

he said sounding angry too...Tiara just ignored them and laid down hugging her big teddy bear crying her lungs out...her heart was broken....she couldn't believe Mj did that to her

Lwazi: lets go call bafowethu and plan for revenge....no one hurts our sister

Lwandile: even though she shouts at us sometimes

he said walking to the door and Lwandile followed him

Lwandile: we need his phone numbers

Lwazi nodded

Lwazi: but sisi won't give it to us

Lwandile: don't worry Lwandle will get it for us

Lwazi: yeah

he said nodding and they went downstairs clicking their tongues, their small hearts were beating fast due to anger

AT JABU'S HOUSE

***Thandi and Ruslan finally arrived and Thandi was happy to see Lolly again after a long time and Ruslan smiled looking at Jabu when he finally met Lorraine....he saw what Phumi and Castiel saw...Anyway now the ladies are

cooking in the kitchen chatting, Heath, Ray, Mbali and Naledi will arrive later on to join them***

IN THE STUDY

***Castiel chuckled looking at a picture of Lolly's ex-husband ***

Castiel: I know this fucker

Jabu: you do

Castiel: I do business with him

Jabu frowned

Jabu: don't tell me you sell women man

Castiel: ofcourse not man....

Jabu: good or else I was gonna squash your fossil balls right now

***Castiel chuckled and showed him the middle

finger***

Castiel: as if

Jabu: mxm

Ruslan: so Lorraine mmmmh

Jabu: what about her

Castiel: how long have you known her

Jabu: years

Castiel: mmmmh

Jabu: what

Castiel: nothing

Jabu shook his head

Jabu: don't start with that soul mate shit....she's not...she's more like a sister to me

Castiel: yeah right

Jabu: hebanna....im still married and I very much still love Amo

Ruslan: that means nothing Jabu.... the fact remains.....she's your soul mate period....now let's talk about her ex husband

Castiel: don't worry I'll take care of it...he's a small fry in a pot full of hot oil

Ruslan: good

Jabu: thaa nja yami (thanks my dog)

they fist bumped

Castiel: what about what I told you about that lady

Jabu: what lady....a le tlo bolela ka di codes mo (don't speak using codes here) ...explain

they shook their heads chuckling....Castiel explained everything to him and he whistled

Jabu: no wonder you said you can't read her mind

Castiel sighed

Jabu: tjeeerrr..... aska baloi aska baloi yeses

Ruslan: well she's telling the truth Cass....

Castiel: about what

Ruslan: everything

Castiel sighed looking down

Ruslan: the brethren have been searching for the surviving child of Sabina for years until they gave up....this is Africa so they are limited to doing things that's why they gave up

Jabu: and nou dai cheri (and now that lady) is gonna get killed

he said shaking his head

Jabu: entlek cant we just kill this fucken brethrens once and for all

Ruslan shook his head no

Ruslan: it's not just a group of people man...it's a vast organization filled with vampires....they

are everywhere, the things is they don't prefer Africa because of its weather.... you'll find them in countries with extreme cold weather conditions

Jabu: ai aritsi ge...then o yena o surviv(a) byang le vrou ya gae (we don't know then....then how does this one survive with his wife)

he repeated the same sentence in English once he remembered that Ruslan doesn't understand tsotsiTaal

Castiel: I have my ways....why do you think I increased your AC

Jabu: mxm

Cass looked at Ruu

Castiel: so I really have to protect that baby Madou

Ruslan: you have no choice

Cass shook his head

Castiel: and wena how are you gonna handle your shit with your ungrateful wife

Jabu: wa phapha.... why are you turning the spotlight on me now.... continue talking about your daughter in law hao

Ruslan laughed

Jabu: ah ha die man banna

Castiel: men were busy fucking and treating your soul mate like shit and wena ubusy neyifebe (you're busy with whores)

Jabu: fotsek mosono (piss off you cunt)....who are you calling a whore

Castiel: that thing you call a wife.... you are bewitched wena....to go for a “ church going bitch”.... a whole gangster marrying a mamfundisi....udlisiwe wena

Jabu: talk to this fossil you call a brother...no matter what Amo is still my wife.....you don't

hear me calling his fossil wife a whore

Ruslan: Cass

Castiel: leave me.....someone needs to tell him the truth.....that wife of yours is gonna get fucked by that brother you took her from....she's been hiding her hoe side for so long to please daddy...she's a judgmental person and she gets jealous when other women gets the spotlight instead of her....she's a coin lover and a lover of nice things....even if you fix things with her she'll still compare your lives with your brothers'..... she'll always want what Star, Thandi and Mbali have....you'll never be happy man....never ... you aint seen nothing.... she's gonna show you flames

he got up and walked to the door

Castiel: you had her before and you let her go and that fucker treated her like shit breaking her in the process..... now you have found her again

and if you let her go this time khohlwa
mfowethu

he walked out leaving the room quiet

Ruslan: don't mind him...he tends to be like that sometimes

Jabu: is what he's saying true

Ruu sighed

Ruslan: yeah but the heart wants what it wants right....if your heart still wants Amo go for it man and save your marriage but if not then you know what to do...that's all I can say

*** Jabu scratched his head looking down then the door opened and Thandi peeked in***

Thandi: food is ready gents

they got up and walked out

Jabu: yah neh lentshitse la tshwene mo (you outdone yourselves here)

laughter...they sat down and dished up except for Phumi and Cass....the door opened and Sbu walked in

Jabu: aow bafanas

***Sbu greeted everyone respectfully ***

Thandi: hey mfana Rakgadi (aunty's nephew)...go and change and comeback and join us

Sbu: ok

he went upstairs

Lolly: Phumi aren't you and your hubby eating
the room became quiet

Phumi: we just ate a big meal before we came here so maybe later on

she smiled at Lolly and Lolly nodded

Lolly: oh ok

then she looked at Jabu

Lolly: should I dish up for you or you'll do it yourself

Jabu: tshola fela wena (dish up)

she giggled and dished for him which made Castiel smirk.... Thandi fed Lile and they ate having crazy chats with Castiel the one making jokes joined by Jabu.....they heard the door open and something being dragged in, Jabu got up and he saw Amo with her bags and he frowned

Jabu: and nou

Amo: im moving back home and we are going to fix our marriage

he chuckled shaking his head looking at her then he looked back the table and Castiel didn't look pleased at all

Amo: and you better find your "guest" another place to sleep cause it won't be inside my house

She dragged her huge suitcase up the stairs...Lolly sighed

Lolly: let me go and take my stuff

she got up

Jabu: sit down Lorraine and eat your food

he said with a stern voice and he walked upstairs

Cass: sit Lorraine and don't mind that crazy woman

Lolly: its her house Castiel

Cass: so?

Phumi: babe ha.ah

Lolly: she has every right to kick me out...it's her house...I'll just book myself into a hotel and if Jabu can't help me anymore I'll just go back to Durban tomorrow

she said with a sad tone

Cass: mxm.... mina angimfuni
lomfazi....ulwabishi nje (I don't want that
woman....she's trash)

they all looked at him

Cass: what?

Thandi: nex (nothing)

***they continued to eat then Sbu walked down
the stairs and joined them***

Sbu: where is dad

Ruslan: upstairs

Sbu: oh ok

he dished for himself

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

(PLEASE BARE WITH ME...THIS LUPUS THING IS SHOWING ME FLAMES...EVERYDAY IS A CHALLENGE FOR ME....BREATHING PROBLEMS AND I HAVE TO USE A NEBULIZER TO HELP ME BREATHE....I HAD BLISTERS ON MY FINGERS....FATIGUE...HEADACHES...BODY ACHES...THE LIST GOES ON....SO PLEASE IM NOT NEGLECTING YALL IM JUST GOING THROUGH A LOT....WHEN I THINK I HAVE IT UNDER CONTROL I END UP TAKING 5 STEPS BACK....I EVEN THOUGHT OF TAKING A BREAK FROM WRITING BUT I CANT CAUSE WRITING IS MY ESCAPE SO PLEASE UNDERSTAND WHEN I TAKE TIME TO POST...THANKS)

.

.

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

INSERT.....45

Jabu: and nou wena

***he said as soon as he got inside their
bedroom***

Amo: nna eng (what)

Jabu: entlek nchaele mo..... o nagana gore o
Queen Nefertiti wena neh...the Queen of Egypt....
(tell me here....you think you're Queen Nefertiti
right...the Queen of Egypt)

Amo: don't insult me Jabu

Jabu: insult....entlek wena o nagana gore ke bari kao bona....sthunya sele a wa sebona pila...this time ke tlo se tsentsha ka mo gare ga motetenya oo o tletseng masepa and pull the trigger.....kao bona gore o nagana gore mo ke hotel were you come and go nxa (you think im a fool I see...it seems like you didn't seen that gun really well...this time I'll put it inside that your ass hole that is full of shit and pull the trigger)

she swallowed hard

Jabu: you don't know me wena..... o nagana gore ko sun city I went for fun nje....o nagana gore ke yes boy wena....nx (you think I went to jail for fun... is see you think im a yes boy)

***then he walked out looking angry....Amo swallowed hard and she sat on the edge of the bed and she sighed, she doesn't even know

when she decided to pack up and move back in....but when she thought of that woman Lorraine she just felt a rush of panic take over her and she started packing....on her way here she told herself that she won't let some bitch take what's hers just like that, she told herself that she'll do anything to save her marriage***

DOWNSTAIRS

Jabu sat down and continued to eat while everyone was looking at him

Jabu: keng (what is it)

Castiel: should we book a room for Lolly at a hotel

Jabu: wa phapha nx (you're forward nx)

***they heard the door opening and Heath, Ray, Mbali and Naledi walked in ***

Heath: aow family

they greeted him back and he smiled at Lorraine

Heath: aow ex slender ...dintshang (how are you)

Lorraine laughed and she showed him the middle finger

Ray: yes jail bird

he said to Jabu hitting him on the back of his head

Jabu: tsek spoko mathambo (ghost)

laughter and they sat down

Heath: Sbuda

Sbu: uncle

Heath: how was rugby practice?

Sbu: same old same old

Heath: next weekend go tlo nyewa (its gonna be lit)

Thandi: what's happening next weekend

Heath: his team is playing

Naledi: and we gonna cheer for you my boy
you'll end up being embarrassed

Sbu chuckled feeling shy

Thandi: count me in

Mbali: count me in too

Sbu smiled

Sbu: what about you uncle Ray

Ray smirked

Ray: count me in too boy

Sbu's smile widened

Sbu: ok.... what about you uncle Ruu cause
Uncle Cass won't be able to make it

Cass: says who

Heath: duh....the sun

Cass: I'll also be there boy don't worry

Ruslan: me too

Sbu looked at them excited but nervous at the same time

Heath: don't worry we got you ok

Cass: and you better tell your girlfriend that you have a crazy family

Sbu's face flushed with embarrassment and everyone laughed

Thandi: Rakgadi's boy (aunt's boy) doesn't have a girlfriend...right boy

Sbu cleared his throat

Sbu: eya Rakgadi (yes aunty)

laughter

Cass: yeah right

Mbali: leave the boy alone Cass

Cass: uyajola lo (this one is dating)

Phumi: don't mind him Sbu

Sbu nodded and he continued to eat...he was nervous about the game next weekend but knowing his family will be there to support him meant everything to him.....then Amo walked to the dining area and the room became quiet....she walked to where Lorraine was sitting which was next Jabu and she stood behind her

Amo: get up

Lorraine frowned

Lolly: askies

Amo: I said get up I want to sit

Lorraine frowned then she chuckled lightly

Thandi: really Amo

she said getting mad

Amo: this is my house Thandi so I don't get

were you fit in

Thandi: askies

she said getting up and Ruslan stopped her

Ruslan: amour no

Thandi: wa bona wena...wena....heh...nxa

she sat down and Lolly got up and moved so Amo may sit

Sbu: baba may I go eat in the lounge

he said not looking pleased at all and Jabu nodded and Sbu walked away with his plate then Lorraine took her plate

Lolly: I'll go join Sbu excuse me

Jabu: go take another chair and come and sit this side

Lolly: no its fine Jabu I'll go join Sbu

Jabu: Lorraine!!!

she sighed....Heath got up and went to take the chair for her and put it on the space next to Jabu and Lorraine sat down much to Amo's annoyance, in fact she was angry and right now she despised everyone sitting on the table cause it looked like they have turned against her and approved of Lorraine

Jabu: o right

he asked Lorraine and she nodded and Amo chuckled

Amo: so im already replaced huh

she said looking at all of them

Cass: you're looking for a fight and you'll get it if you continue with this shit

Amo: this is my house Castiel and you will not talk to me in that manner in my own house

Castiel chuckled

Thandi: that's all you know....nyis is nyai

house....nyis is nyai house.....o tsene mo ka phenthi fela (you came here owning only an underwear) and you have the rotten nerve to say this is your house

Jabu: MaTha huh huh....

Thandi looked at Jabu

Jabu: tswa dah.....o sa mo entertain(a) (leave her...don't entertain her)

Amo: is this how you talk about me

Jabu....you're making fun of me to your family

Jabu: Amogelang assomblief man not now ok....i would like to have this dinner in peace tuu

Amo: peace ya eng huh (what peace huh).....you brought a bitch into our matrimonial home and your family is busy entertaining her....she was sitting on my chair next to you and you want to have this stupid dinner in peace

Lolly: first of all don't call me a bitch and secondly do not and im gonna say it again don't not include me in your marital affairs....if your man is cheating on you then its not with me.....a reska tlwaelana blaen (lets not step on each other's toes)....i don't know you and you don't know me ok

Amo: ebile o na le molomo (you even have mouth to talk)....so you gonna let her talk to me like th...

Phumi: AI MAN ENOUGH!!!!

***she roared and they looked at her startled ***

Phumi: Amogelang or whatever the fuck your name is....his family despise you because of what you did to Jabu....you rejected his family and made him choose between you and them and on top of that you got him arrested for fucks sake what did you think was gonna happen....secondly you compared your husband

with his brothers and you think his brothers wives will like you after that....huh....

silence

Phumi: wa tena wena mxm (you're annoying)

she got up with her son in her arms

Phumi: Thandi please show me where I can put him down

Thia was asleep...Thandi got up with Lile and walked away and Phumi followed her...Mbali got up with Kalu in her arms too

Ray: where are you going?

Mbali: I need to change his diaper baby...come Leya

Leya got off her father's lap and followed Mbali as Amo's tears ran down her cheeks

Amo: so you gonna sit here and not reprimand them with the way they are talking to me

she said with a breaking voice

Jabu: Amogelang not now

***she got up and pushed her chair back with force and it fell backwards ***

Amo: I want all of you out of my house!!

Jabu closed his eyes trying to keep his cool

Amo: get out of my house now or I'll call the cops to come and throw you out !!!

she warned them

Jabu: ENOUGH MAN!!!

***he banged the table hard making Naledi and Lorraine jump startled looking scared...even Amo got startled ***

Jabu: no one is leaving my house jy verstaan...this is my fucken house...my huis....o mang wena otlang mo o tlo bolela masepa (who the hell are you to come here and talk shit)

Ray: Javas

Jabu: get her out of my sight before I lose it Big Ray assomblief

he was even breathing heavily looking angry

Amo: Jabu....

Jabu: voetsek....VOETSEK WANGKUTLWA(you hear me)...VOETSEK!!!

Amo sobbed as she ran up the stairs

Jabu: nxa

he pushed his plate way from him roughly making it crash with other plates and bowls on top of the table and he got up and walked away looking angry....Cass breathed out loud while Heath looked mad angry and Ruslan just shook his head

Cass: this one was send by the devil himself to test Jabu

Ruslan: not now Cass

Cass: im telling you she's gonna push him to his limits

Naledi: and to think she wasn't like this....i wonder what happened to her

Cass: she was just hiding her true self under that Mmamoruti parade she displayed towards ya'll....i mean if fake pastors can make ya'll believe they have the holi spirit in them and you even cough out all your money including your allowances to give to him what off Amo mmmmh...anyone can pull off the good girl act to get what they want

Ray: well if she's not careful Jabu will blow her brains off....MaOwoh-Masden please dish up for me

Naledi got up and took a plate

IN THE GUEST BEDROOM

Thandi: yho I never knew she'd turn out like this
truu

Mbali: I also liked her but the day I called her to apologize and she told me shit I knew she's been faking it all along

Phumi: I just feel sorry for her

***she said walking around trying to put Thia to sleep again...he woke up when Amo walked inside her bedroom and slammed the door hard

Thandi: you do?

Phumi: mmmmh...she's ruining things for herself, busy making enemies unknowingly

Mbali: ooh please she knows what she's doing
Phumi

Thandi: and to think Ruslan would turn me into

a mad woman if I ever talk or even disrespect him like that more especially in front of his family and yena she does that to Jabu...thee Jabu....heh...that girl doesn't even know the man she's married to....she's lucky she hasn't pushed him to his limits shem

Phumi: o nale liver shem (she has the guts)

Mbali: or she's plain stupid

Thandi sighed

Thandi: I cant believe I liked her waitsi....i thought she's the one for Jabu....gape Jabu has bad luck with women so I thought finally the bad luck is gone

she sighed

Phumi: well his soul mate is closer to him but he's too blind to see her

they looked at her

Phumi: what?

Mbali: talk mfazi (woman)

Phumi laughed

Phumi: im just saying haw

Thandi: she knows who it is lo

Mbali: mmh

Thandi: and she's gonna tell us whether she likes it or not

Phumi laughed

Phumi: I don't know who she is haw....i was just saying

Thandi: mxm

Mbali: she's lying

Thandi: mmh

Phumi just shook her head smiling

THE FOLLOWING DAY

*** Well Sbu and Lile left with Thandi and Ruslan.....Jabu didn't want his children to witness anything bad happening cause he thought Amo would start another fight but surprisingly she didn't.....her and jabu didn't even share a bed that's how bad things are between them.....Anyway now Lorraine is in the kitchen making herself some cup of coffee, she had a rough night...she didn't sleep a wink thinking Amo might attack her during the night....she would wake up whenever she heard any noise no matter how faint it is....What Amo said to her made her feel uneasy right after everyone left....She told her that she's ready to have blood in her hands if needs be to save her marriage and that spooked her.....Anyway after the coffee she's gonna get ready for her flight back to KZN , staying another night here was a no no....she stood there sipping her coffee

slowly thinking about the drama that happened yesterday and the creepy but fascinating couple being Phumi and Castiel....her thoughts were interrupted when someone clapped their hands dramatically, she turned and it was Amo***

Amo: you have no shame you home breaker

Lorraine rolled her eyes

Amo: Jabu will never leave me...he's just using you shame....using you to make me jealous

then she laughed a mocking laugh

Lorraine: waitsi wena le seriba sa mpya (you and your big forehead), you are a joke....and a stupid one at that

Amo: what did you call me

Lorraine: ka bona you think just because im quiet and respecting you since this is your house im weak....o tla nnyela mo nna mo wankutlwa (you'll shit yourself when it comes

to me you hear me)....im not some bitch you can walk over as you please

she said fed up with her stinking attitude

Lorraine: I understand gore o insecure but now wa fetella (you're too much)....im not sleeping with your husband and I don't even see him that way but this attitude of yours is gonna make me see him that way im telling you nxa

she walked passed her clicking her tongue

IN THE LOUNGE

***Lorraine was waiting for Jabu with her bag ready...the door opened and he walked in talking on the phone ***

Jabu: alright Igwe re tla ova later...shap (alright Igwe we will talk later...bye)

he dropped the call and Lorraine stood up

Jabu: and nou (and now)

Lolly: bathong im leaving...im going back to KZN

Jabu: no you're not

she sighed

Lolly: with all that is going on in your life Jabu I don't think you'll be able to help me...but thanks anyway

Jabu: did I say I won't help you

he said standing in front of her

Lolly: your wife Jabu

she huffed

Lolly: im done with her insults....you know le nna ka gafa(I can also go crazy) when I want to so I'll just leave to avoid disrespecting her in her house

Jabu: ke re ga o vaye (you are not going anywhere) and that's that....im still waiting for my contact to get back to me ka info ya dai moerskond so wena phola (im still waiting for my contact to get back to me with information concerning that asshole so just relax)

he sat down and crossed his leg on top of the other and Lorraine sighed then she sat down too

Lolly: then im booking myself into a hotel

Jabu: go and put your bags ko rooming and lets go see Gogo, Magriza le Khulus they haven't seen you for quite a while

Lolly: Jabu...

Jabu: vaiya(go) man Lolly

she sighed and got up and she took her bag and went upstairs

Amo: finally you're leaving

she said folding her arms looking at Lorraine walking to the door with Jabu

Jabu: ga vaiye ro bona magriza (she's not leaving we are going to see granny)

Amo: askies

Jabu: a re vaiye(lets go)

Lorraine opened the door

Amo: whooh...oreng(wait what did you say)

Jabu followed Lolly outside and Amo quickly followed them

Amo: Jabulani!!!

he ignored her and they got inside his car....she took out her phone with tears in her eyes as they drove out and she dialed her mother's numbers

Her.mother: keng? (what)

Amo: mama he's replacing me....he's replacing

me

she said crying

Her.mother: o re ke etseng nna byanong
Amogelang(so what should I do Amogelang)

Amo cried

Her.mother: you packed your clothes and left
my house without even waiting for me to come
back from church...you send me an sms telling
me gore you're going back to your house akere

Amo: mama im sorry...i just panicked....help me
mama im losing my husband please

her mother laughed

Her.mother: the same husband you said you
don't want anymore.....the same husband that
beat you up and pointed a gun at you

Amo: I love Jabu mama...i made a
mistake...help me mama please...even his
family turned their backs on me....ba support(a)

that home wrecker....i have no one except you
mama please don't abandon me too mama
please

her mother sighed

Her.mother: you embarrassed me ko police
station Amogelang

Amo: I panicked mama....you don't know his
brothers ba dangerous mama please....he's
even taking her to meet his mother

Her.mother: eng? (what?)

Amo: eya mama...please help me

Her.mother: fine e tla mo gae re ye kerekeng ro
mmatlela taelo (fine come back home and lets
go to the church to get help)

Amo: ok

she dropped the call and hurried inside

AT THANDI'S HOUSE

Sbu was in the kitchen making himself a cup of coffee....They slept late with Mpe playing PlayStation....as he was finishing preparing his coffee he felt someone standing behind him and he turned only to find Carl standing by the entrance of the kitchen with a naughty look on his face biting his lower lip....he turned back and faced down crept out with his eyes popped out....he cleared his throat

Sbu: umm can..can I help you

Carl: yes you can

Sbu turned and looked at him

Sbu: you want some coffee too

he said taking a sip from his coffee

Carl: nope but I won't say no to having you for breakfast

Sbu chocked on his coffee and he coughed until he calmed down with Carl looking at him with a smile on his face

Carl: don't worry I won't do anything you don't want me to do to you ok lover

Sbu: im straight Carl

Carl: well I also do straight guys so your point lover?

Sbu swallowed feeling uncomfortable

Sbu: you making me feel uncomfortable dude....and if you go on with this I'll stop coming here.....i don't do guys....i love pussy so please stop

Carl rolled his eyes

Carl: ok I'll stop for now...but know that I like you and I want you and its either we gonna do

this the easy way or the hard way....and yeah you like pussy but I know you like ass too....you smell like a bisexual to me....too cute and too manly....one day you gonna tap this ass and you gonna enjoy it too and come back for more im telling you

he say hitting his firm ass and he walked away humming a song

Sbu: the fuck!!!!

he said to himself shocked to the core

AT JAY'S HOUSE

***Nomhle is in the kitchen preparing food for the kids more especially Tiara...all the male kids slept over at her house and it was just chaos everywhere.... she's worried about Tiara and her state of mind since MJ broke up with her...yes

Jay told her what was going on and even though she's pleased that Mj broke things off she was worried about Tiara...you know how painful first breakups are so imagine that happening to your twelve year old...even though she was angry that she was dating at her age but she still felt sorry for her, first breakups are hell....With all the boys at her house, the noise was too much yhoo....sometimes it get too quiet and she would find them discussing what looks like something serious then it will get noisy, like right now it's too quiet and she wondered what they are up to....she wiped her hands and went to check on them...she found Lwandle, Lwandile and Thula while Mnqobi and Lwazi weren't with them***

Nomhle: where's Mnqobi and Lwazi

Lwandle: they went to the bathroom mama

she frowned

Nomhle: both of them

they nodded looking innocent

Nomhle: ok let me go check on them

Lwandle: mama ummm Mnqobi went to the bathroom downstairs and Lwazi to the bathroom upstairs....they both went to pee but I think Mnqobi has to poop

Nomhle: ooh

Lwandile: yes mommy

Thula: mama im hungry

he made a sad look on his face and Nomhle sighed

Nomhle ok let me go finish up

Thula: ok

she went back to the kitchen

Lwandle: that was good Thula

he whispered to him

Thula: but im really hungry

Lwandile: it doesn't matter she didn't go to check on Mnqobi and Lwazi

Lwandle: mmhh

he nodded

UPSTAIRS

***Mnqobi slowly opened the door and he peeped in and saw that Tiara is sleeping hugging her teddy bear and he also saw her phone on top of the side drawer..... he slowly went in and he went down and crawled slowly from the door towards her side drawer as Lwazi kept a look out outside the door....inside, Mnqobi slowly got up and reached for her phone and he went back to kneeling on the floor and he put in the pattern Lwandle showed him

hoping that it's the right one cause even Lwandle wasn't sure it's the right one...Lwandle is an observant child so he always observes everyone in the family who owns a phone and Tiara is not an exceptionanyway the phone unlocked and he took out a paper and pencil and he went to her WhatsApp and clicked on " baby" then he clicked on the icon at the top right then he went to "view contacts" and he scrolled down and saw his numbers then he wrote them down.....he then went back to their chat and he read them then he frowned***

Nomhle: are you two ok

*** she said as they walked to the lounge and they nodded...the boys made eye contacts amongst themselves and Mnqobi nodded then they smiled and sat down.... Nomhle frowned at them***

Nomhle: what are you all up to

the boys looked at each other

Them: nothing...

***she looked at them for some time without saying anything ***

Nomhle: mmmmh

she gave Mnqobi and Lwazi's their food and she went back to the kitchen to take Tiara's food to her room

Lwandle: so what do you have planned bafo

Mnqobi: we gonna need a phone

Lwandle: we can use mama's phone

Mnqobi: no we need a phone he can't call back on....

they all kept quiet thinking

Lwandle: I will make a plan

Lwandile: we should all have his numbers

Them: yeah

Lwandle: by the time we are done with him he will never look at our sister again

Them: mmmmh

Mnqobi: what about the teacher

Lwandle: aah that one....i told her I love her and she laughed at me

Lwazi: don't worry we will help you get her

Lwandle: kanjani (how)

Mnqobi: we will think of a plan right bafozas

Them: mmmmh

they continued to eat while chatting

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....46

.

.

.

.

they got out of the car and walked to the gate with Amo's heart beating fast...she has never been to this kind of church before where you have to wear long skirts....cover your head and shoulders.....she saw people being splashed with water by the gate and she swallowed

Her.mother: don't embarrass me....do as I do

and behave

Amo: ke metsi a eng (what's in the water)

Her.mother: shhh

they got by the gate and Moholo stopped and looked at them...Amo's mother waited to be splashed with water but Moholo just stood there looking at them....he called another Man and gave him the bucket and cup

Moholo: nsaleng morago (follow me)

they followed him a bit far from people

Moholo: kgotsong bo mmarona (he greeted them)

Amo'smother: Kgotsong Moruti (she greeted back)

Amo: hi

her mother nudged her

Amo: umm kgotso....ng Moruti

she faked a smile and Moholo kept a serious look on his face reading Amogelang then he sighed

Moholo: thuso e o e batlang o ka se e kereye ka mo (the kind of help you want you won't get it here)

Amo: wow I should have known

she said looking at her mother

Her.mother: Moholo lenyalo la ngwana la thubega....a gona ko gongwe re ka yang go yo batla thuso...ke mosione that's why ke le mo (Moholo my daughter's marriage is falling apart....there is no other place we can go for help....im part of this church that's why im here)

Moholo: ngwana gao pelo ya gae ke entsho.....o nale lenyatso le letello..... (you child's heart is dark....she looks down on people and she's disrespectful)

Amo: I don't have time for this mxm

*** she walked away***

Amo'smother: AMOGELANG!!!

she ignored her and went to her car

Amo'smother: ke kopa maitshwarelo for
maitseo a gae Moholo (please forgive her
behavior Moholo)

Moholo: tsena o ye ko morago go yo nyakisia
mara thuso e o tlo e kereyang ga se ya go
lokisa lenyalo sa gae but go lokisa yena....(go
to the back and seek help but the only help
you'll get Is not the one to help her marriage but
to help her)

***Then he walked away and Amo's mother
sighed***

Amo'smother: Kgoshi ya diKgoshi ntshuse hle
(King of Kings help me please).....what kind of
a child is this

she sighed and followed Amogelang

Amo'smother: e le gore o tsenwe ke eng wena
(what's got into you)

Amo: mama please let's just go from here

Amo'smother: Amogelang.....ga se wena o
itseng o batla thuso (didn't you say you want
help)

Amo: a gona thuso mo (there's no help here)....
that man thinks he's God....busy telling me im
disrespectful and stuff...e le gore who the hell is
he to talk to me like that

she said with a lot of attitude

Amo'smother: ENOUGH MAN....i don't know
what's possessing you but you have changed
Amogelang and not for the good....no wonder
your marriage is falling apart who would want
to stay married to someone like you nxa

***she got out of the car and went back to the
church leaving Amo with tears in her eyes***

Amo: mxm

she buckled up and drove away

ON THEIR WAY BACK...

Lolly: it was lovely seeing them....i thought your mother and grandparents forgot me

Jabu: how will Magriza forget the girl she helped

Lolly sighed.

Lolly: I'll forever be grateful to your grandmother and you and Heath

Jabu smiled at her then he concentrated back on the road

Jabu: sa wara man (don't worry)... you're good

people that's why we helped you

*** she sighed***

Lolly: now on a serious matter....what's going on between you and your wife and don't say its nothing cause now im caught in the cross fire
Jabu

Jabu sighed

Jabu: lets not talk about that Lolly assomblief

she sighed

Lolly: fine but im affected by this Jabu....you wife seems to think something is happening between us and she's busy hating me for no reason

Jabu: wa gafa oo...ignore her....o tsene ke bogafi fela nxa (she's crazy...ignore her...craziness has entered her nxa)

Lolly: bathong

Jabu: keng (what)

***he looked at her briefly ***

Lolly: ai I give up

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: so o batla go jang (so what do you want to eat)

she sighed

Lolly: lets go to your house first so I will take my luggage....i cant stay in your house anymore

Jabu...yho your wife is crazy...last night I hardly slept thinking gore she'll wake me up by pouring hot water on me

Jabu: ne a ka nnyela mara o right I'll book you into a hotel and ka laboraro(Wednesday) we will fly back to KZN

Lolly: you mean I'll fly back

Jabu: re vaiya sum(we are leaving together)

she looked at him with her eyebrows raised

Jabu: I need to have a man to man talk le mypa ele (that dog) before Cass deals with him

Lolly's eyes popped out

Lolly: you told him....how could you
Jabu....Heath I understand but Cass I don't even
know him Jabulani!!

***she raised her voice at him....he indicated
and parked by the side of the road and turned to
look at her with a hard face***

Jabu: o rasetsa mang like that (who are you
shouting at like that)

Lolly: Jabu how could....

Jabu: ke re o rasetsa mang byalo!!!(I said who
are you shouting at like that)

he said sternly and she kept quiet

Jabu: keng ekare wanlebala so (why is it like
you're forgetting who I am)

***she didn't say anything she just looked away

not looking pleased at all***

Jabu: Lorraine!!!!

****she closed her eyes a bit biting the inside of her cheeks***

Jabu: look I trust Castiel....he's my brother and he got my back ok...

she didn't say anything

Jabu: he'll deal with that bastard cause he does business with him

she looked at him

Jabu: not the human trafficking one

she sighed

Lolly: I just.....i don't want to...

Jabu: shhh I got you....Cass is good people too so sa wara(don't worry)

she sighed

Lolly: im sorry for raising my voice at you

Jabu: and enne labofelo or else next time o kreya clapa mo gara sfatlhego (and it should be the last time or else next time you'll get a slap on your face)

she swallowed and kept quiet

Jabu: reya ko chesanyama (we are going to a chesanyama) then we will go take your luggage

he started the car and drove away

AT THE CHESANYAMA

Jabu parked and they got out and walked inside.....he greeted people since he's famous this side and they know he owns the restaurant.....they got a table and sat down.....one of his workers walked to them

Guy: boss... sestere (sister)

they both greeted him back

Guy: so what should I bring for lena boss

Jabu: my usual and Benini blush for her

Guy: ok

Jabu: and o bese stake le voroso for rena moo
and otlide le bogobe (braai meat for us and
bring pap also)

Guy: sho

***he walked away and Jabu turned his
attention to Lolly***

Lolly: you own this place

Jabu nodded

Lolly: wow....im proud of you....you doing good
for yourself Jabs

he smiled

Jabu: Thaa man....its been hard but you know
me....ke malwela (im a hustler)

she laughed

Lolly: mmh I know

Voice: aow bhutiMalebvu.... bosso ya
dibosso....lepara la nnete (aow beardyboss
amongst bosses...a real man)

***Jabu turned and laughed when he saw who it
was....he got up***

Jabu: aow weMahlebezulu tsotsomela
handle...nangu Moyo nangu Moyo heye nagu
Moyo

***he sang and the guy laughed out loud....he
got to Jabu and they bro hugged***

Jabu: "ngihawkele Dlozi lami

Ngihawkele Dlozi lami

Ehh DLozi lami (ngihawkele heh Dlozi lami
ngihawkele)

Aww mina angizenzanga ngenziwe ngabalele
heh Dlozi lami

(ngihawkele ehh Dlozi lami ngihawkele)

he sang and danced and Alphalette laughed so did Lolly

Jabu: long time man

Guy: long time indeed

*** they bro hugged again and the waiter came with their drinks....he gave Jabu his and Lolly hers***

Guy: ba busy ka ntjetje ya gao boss (they are busy with your meat boss)

Jabu: sure London

he walked away

Jabu: ne o le va? (where were you)

Guy: Cape Town ke phusha phusha (hustling)

Jabu: mmmmh ...that's good

***he turned and faced Lolly ***

Jabu: Alphalette nja yami (my dog) this is Lorraine and Lolly this is Alphalette aka

Mahlebezulu tsotsomela a handle

Alphalette: tsek sani

Jabu laughed and Alphalette looked at Lolly and he raised his eyebrows at her

Alphalette: Lorraine huh

Jabu: eehh mfo brika (bro stop)...she's off limits

Alphalette chuckled

Alphalette: I know she is so relax and plus she's not my type

*** “ouch” that's what Lolly thought.....they sat down***

Jabu: so you have a type nou

Alpha: I think I found my type but I foolishly messed up and I have no fucken idea how to get her now and more (muthi) is out of the question

he looked at Lolly

Alpha: any suggestions Miss Lolly

she swallowed shook her head no...this guy was intimidating as hell....there was something creepy about him....something unsettling

Jabu: so se kae stlaela sele ba reng broer ya gao (so where is that fool called your brother)

Alphalette: he's around

he chuckled

Alpha: the girl I was talking about is his fiancée

Jabu: o go jetse lwena mo jele (he took your girl you should also take his girl)

Lolly choked on her drink...she coughed until she calmed down with the help of Jabu

Jabu: o right

she nodded

Alpha: don't be shocked Miss Lolly....you'll

never know how you'll meet your soul mate....i
mean look at you and Mjava mo

Jabu: mfowethu hah ah

Lolly looked at Jabu then at Alphalette

Lolly: what about me and Jabu

Alphalette chuckled

Alpha: so wa jaja Mjava (so you know Jabu)

Jabu: brika (stop)

Alphalette: hai suka

he looked at Lolly

Alpha: he's your soul mate...aren't you
wondering why every man you meet hurts
you...the same goes for him....your ancestors
made you two to meet years back but you
ignored it and ended up with satans as partners

***he shook his head and he stood up...Lolly
looked at Jabu and then at Alphalette

shocked***

Alpha: anyway ota na Heath eka mina (come with Heath at my place)....there's something he needs to know about his boy

Jabu: sho

Alpha: loko vokokwane va wena vangalabe mono onga foste mfo....vata ko tlhafisela votomi onya ku ku dyondzisa ku yingisela loko va volavola.....tsheketa wansate loyi wa ko penga oteka wa wena lo o nganyikiwa hi vokokwane (when your ancestors don't want someone don't force things bro....they will mess up your life and you'll shit yourself to teach you to listen to them when they speak....leave that crazy woman and take the one that was given to you by your ancestors)

Jabu swallowed

Alpha: a wotwe na wena na malebvu e ngako mashishi a noyi ya xepengo (you don't listen

with a beard that looks like a crazy witch's pubic hair)

***Jabu busted out laughing ***

Alpha: o byela Ray ko re ne re xetombo xa yena
(tell Ray I said his vjay jay)

Jabu laughed and Alphalette walked away.....he was a tall and buffed up guy....dark in completion with a black and a touch of gray beard on his face and a mole on his right cheek next to his nose.....he was a handsome man but intimidating at the same time and the red and white beads on his hands and neck made things worse cause you know how people feel about traditional healers

Lolly: what was that all about...what did he say and why did he say im your soul mate

Jabu cleared his throat

Jabu: umm don't worry about it....Alphalette is just crazy

the waiter brought their meat and more drinks...Jabu's phone rang and he looked at the screen and rejected the call....Lolly looked at him and she shook her head....she now regretted coming here.....if it's not Jabu's creepy brothers its his crazy wife and now she just met his handsome but creepy friend

Lolly: is he a sangoma

Jabu: who Alpha?

she nodded

Lolly: the beads he's wearing

Jabu: Yah but he hardly practices....he's always on the road managing his businesses from different provinces so he doesn't have time mara if they tell him they are bringing an important client to him he drops everything and do as they say

Lolly: wow no wonder the aura around him was different

Jabu: a se motho fela (he's not just an ordinary man)....i think him and Ruslan would make good friend cause they have so much in common

Lolly: wait....Ruu is a traditional healer?

Jabu: nope ke a wizard

she looked at him with her eye popped out

Lolly: how...i mean....

****Jabu sighed***

Jabu: bona my family is one messed up family..... we are a close neat family and we accept each other the way we are.....loyalty means everything to us and its one thing Amo failed to understand....

he sighed

Jabu: here's a thing.....Heath o na le a multiple personality disorderRay o nale a demon attached to his soul named La Parca....Castiel

and his wife along with their son ke di
vampire.....Mbali comes from family of beasts
and her son also has a demon attached to his
soul named Saint and he also has a beast in
him.....Ruslan yena ke moloi (he's a wizard) and
so is his son and the unborn child Thandi is
carrying

***he dropped the bombshell on Lolly and she
just busted out with laughter but she stopped
when she saw how serious Jabu is***

Lolly: wait....o serious

Jabu: as a heart attack

Lolly: no ways Jabu

***Jabu raised his eyebrow at her and her eyes
popped out***

Jabu: and Amo failed to accept themshe
wanted me to choose between them and her
and I just couldn't in fact I choose them...they
are my family and they have my back no matter

what

she swallowed hard

Jabu: I wouldn't trade them for anything

they kept quiet for some time with Lolly trying to take in what she just being told

Jabu: o shap

she nodded slowly

Lolly: is that why Cass and Phumi didn't...didn't eat anything during dinner

***Jabu nodded...she opened her mouth to say something but nothing came out.....Jabu took a bite from their meat then he sat back and looked at her shocked expression.....he admitted to himself that she was a beautiful woman and he feels at peace when he's around her.....yes they did date years back but for a brief time....he was too focused on his hustle he ended up neglected her and pushed her away

until she decided to end things and they opted to becomes friends instead and it's been like that since....she buried her feeling for him so deep that she started seeing him as a brother/friend and things have been like that since....she just didn't wanna loose him as a friend since they failed as a couple...Well as for Jabu Lolly was just too innocent for him back then and he didn't want to taint her...he was just too messed up back then.... His mind went to what Cass told him and what Alphalette just said to him and he sighed.....he knew he was fucked ***

AT JABU'S HOUSE

the phone rang until someone answered

Voice: hello

Amo: Mmamogolo (aunty) hi ke Amogelang

Aunty: ngwana sesi? (my sister's child)

Amo: eeh

Aunty: modimo waka (my God)...how are you....i thought you'll come with your mother when she came to apologize after your father passed away but she said you and her are not on good terms

Amo sighed

Amo: can I come over at your house....we will talk properly and I'll explain everything

Aunty: bothata ke eng (whats wrong)... you don't sound ok....

tears filled her eyes

Aunty: Amogelang keng (what is it)

Amo: my marriage is falling apart

Mmamogolo...i need your help....mama refused to help me

Aunty: o re Gladys refused to help you

Amo: eeh.....she took me to her church and they refused to help me....im desperate

Mmamogolo.....my husband even took the girl he's sleeping with to meet his parents....please help me

the aunt sighed

Aunty: its ok come to my place and I'll see what to do

Amo: thank you Mmamogolo I'll come tomorrow

Aunty: ok my girl

Amo: and Mmamogolo please don't call mama....she never liked my husband and I think that's why she refused to help me

Aunty: don't worry I won't wena etla(come)

tomorrow and we will see what we can do

Amo: thank you Mmamogolo....bye

Aunty: bye

she ended the call and she sighed wiping her tears off...then she got startled when she saw a figure standing by the door and her whole body froze when she saw who it was

Amo: ooh my God....no no no you're dead...you're dead!!!

he smiled at her

Man: yes I am but your changed heart brought my spirit back.....you see my daughter im tied to you...., it hurt so bad cause I had already tied myself to you but you refused to let your real self out, I treated you bad thinking you will snap and release your true self but you just didn't and that made me more angry and more strict towards you....i tried to groom you to be what I want you to be but you failed, you kept

portraying that innocent girl and I knew that was not you.....then you met that thug and he took you away from me and I thought I lost...you see your brother was the perfect candidate but he's weak....that wife of his made him weak but you....i know you had it in you but you were afraid to let that side out....i wanted you to marry that stupid boy Mondli cause I knew you would be able to control him and take over that church of theirs but you met that stupid thug and you let him control you....i became mad....if you weren't my blood and my favorite I would have killed you

Amo was still sitting were she was sitting frozen with her heart beating fast...she wanted to stand up and run but her body was just frozen on the spot

Her.father: I have been waiting for this day since and finally you let loose and now you are who I groomed to be.....now go to your aunt...i

may not like her but she's a perfect person to help you reach your full potential....make me proud my daughter and don't worry about that useless girl trying to take what's yours....I'll deal with her for you wena go and make sure that thug doesn't leave you

then he disappeared

ON THEIR WAY

***Lolly has been quiet since Jabu told her about his family's secrets....she would only speak when spoken to...she was freaked out no lies but at the same time she wanted to see them in that form to truly believe what Jabu told her about them....all he said seems unreal, it's

something she has seen in the movies like Twilight, the vampire diaries and so forth so for her to accept that all that is real just like that was just too much...with Heath she believes it cause she has seen him go from a sweet Heath to a monster, for a moment back then she even thought maybe he was bipolar but with the others it was just too good to be true***

Jabu: o tloba right (will you ok)

she breathed out

Lolly: yeah...im just shocked I'll be fine

Jabu: I didn't even enjoy the meat....ne o tlhoname ekare ke go tlhadile (you were so down as if I broke up with you)....even people were giving us weird looks cause you kept zoning out while I was talking to you....bona ka jaja I freaked you out and its ok....just take your time to let it sink in cause I also freaked out when I found out

she sighed

Lolly: im sorry I just...

Jabu's phone rang and it was Ruu...he answered

Jabu: matwetwe

Ruu: where are you?

Jabu: on my way to my house... why?

Ruu: are you with Lolly

Jabu looked at her

Jabu: yeah what's wrong

Ruu: don't go to your house....don't go there you hear me

Jabu: why what's wrong

Ruu: im going there....just go to Heath's, Ray's or even my house but don't go to yours you hear me

Jabu: I hear you but what's going on

Ruu: I'll explain later.... as a matter of fact go to my house plus Thandi is not feeling well and she has her hands full with my kids and yours...after im done I'll come and brief you

Jabu sighed

Jabu: I don't like being kept in the dark...i fucken hate it

Ruslan: I know but I'll explain when I have the full details of what I saw man....for now its just a vision now im going to confirm

Jabu: shap

he ended the call and made a U-turn and drove to Thandi's house

Lolly: what's going

Jabu: a ke jaje mara(I don't know but) I have a feeling its something not good

Lolly: ooh my God is it Bheki

Jabu: no its not

she breathed out

Ruu parked his car and he got out.....they all have each other's keys and gate remote for emergencies....anyway he stood outside his car and looked around as he felt an eerie feeling in his gut...he could tell there was a dangerous spirit roaming around

Ruslan: who the fuck are you and what are you doing here

the spirit kept quiet but he could feel it

Ruslan: im gonna ask you for the fucken last time or I'll send you straight to wherever you come from burning!!!!

he said with a stern voice and the spirit disappeared ...he couldn't feel it anymore

Ruslan: fucken shit.....shit this is not good

he said walking to the door and he opened and walked in....Amo rushed down the stairs looking terrified thinking its Jabu but she stopped on her tracked when she saw Ruu

Amo: ooh its you...where is my husband

she said looking around with her heart beating fast

Ruslan: who was here

Amo: askies

Ruslan: who was here....who were you talking to

she swallowed hard and her eyes wondered around avoiding his

Ruslan: whatever you have planned won't work....whatever shit you plan on doing just know it won't work...i'll fuck you up so bad that even the forces that want to use you for their evil deeds will not recognize you....Jabu is off

limits....touch him or that girl Lorraine and you'll deal with me personally....if you think Saint is bad then you haven't met an angry side of me

he looked around then back at Amo who looked shaken

Ruslan: tell your stupid father to leave Jabu's house...this is not a playground for useless rejected spirits

***then he walked out and Amo looked around feeling scared....she went back to their bedroom and she took the small bag she packed and she rushed out....Ruslan's car has already left the yard so she locked up and got inside her car and drove out....she called her aunt ***

Aunt: Amogelang

Amo: Mmamogolo I think papa's spirit is haunting me

Aunty: heh

Amo: he was here Mmamogolo even Jabu's friend who's a wizard felt him or something like that...im scared Mmamogolo

Aunty: I don't understand you...just come here and we will talk pila

Amo: ok

she dropped the call and breathed out....she was freaked out no lies....at first she thought she was dreaming or hallucinating but Ruslan saying all that to her meant she wasn't...he was really there

(SORRY IF I BUTCHERED THE TSONGA LANGUAGE)

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

INSERT.....47

Jabu parked in the drive way and they got out and walked to the door

Lolly: wow Thandi's house is huge and beautiful

Jabu: mmmmh.... Ruslan bought her this house

and put it in her name....im glad she's with him....I've never seen her as happy as she is with him

Lolly: mmmmh they look good together

Jabu knocked and he opened the door not waiting to be told to come in and Lolly followed him in....Mpilo saw Jabu and he got up from the couch and ran to him and Jabu picked him up and swung him around in the air as he giggled then he put him down

Jabu: o shap champ (are you ok champ)

he nodded

Mpilo: abuti Carl (brother Carl) bought me a car

he showed him his toy car

Jabu: wow....wagofrostana abutagao neh (your brother loves you right)

***Mpilo nodded and Jabu put him down....Mpe came and did his signature handshake with

Jabu***

Jabu: o shap mfanaka(are you ok my boy)

Mpe: mmmmh

then he greeted Lolly

Jabu: bafanas (my boy)

Sbu: thaima (dad)

Jabu: o grand

Sbu: yeah

Carl: thee handsome uncle Jabs

Jabu: tsek sani (piss off)

they hugged briefly

Carl: and who is this mama with a yummy yikee
(ass)

***Lolly raised her eyebrows with a smile on her
face***

Jabu: this is Lorraine but I call her Lolly

Carl: mmh ofcourse you do

he shook Lolly's hands

Carl: Carl is the name and fun is my middle name if you know what I mean

***Lolly giggled**

Lolly: nice meeting you fun

Carl: I like you already

she went to sit next to Sbu as Jabu went to find Thandi and she gently punched his shoulder and he chuckled

Lolly: o right

Sbu: yeah I guess

Lolly: ohk...dintshang (what's wrong)

Sbu sighed

Sbu: eish sesLolly die man onketsa (makes) uncomfortable

he whispered to her

Lolly: mang (who)

Sbu: ntwana ya uncle R (uncle R's son)

she frowned then she caught on

Lolly: oooh ok

Sbu: yeah

Lolly: ke because o...you know (is it because he's...you know)

Sbu: no its just.....a re wampatla and nna a ke daar (he says he wants me and im not there)

Lolly held her laugh

Lolly: a re eng? (he said what?)

Sbu: eish nou ke batla go chaela thaima gore ke batla go ya ko uncle H....ne ke tla ya gae mara mama o teng and... (now I want to tell dad that I want to go to Uncle H....i would go back home but mama is there and....)

***he just shrug his shoulders and Lolly

sighed***

Lolly: do you want me to talk to your father

Sbu: nah its cool I'll talk to him

Lolly: mmmmh ok

Carl was trying to eavesdrop on their conversation but he couldn't understand the language

Carl: "I need to learn this language"

he thought

UPSTAIRS

Jabu: o tlo ba right (will you be ok)

Thandi: yeah sa wara and don't forget gore ke imile ngwana wa eng(yeah don't worry and don't forget that im pregnant with what kind of a child)

Jabu: eish kana

Thandi sighed

Thandi: at least the daddy want to marry me so
a ke swele mahala (im not going through all
this for nothing)

Jabu: kane he's paying lobola this weekend

Thandi smiled

Thandi: I love him Jabu and he makes me so
happy

Jabu: I know and im happy for you ntwana

Thandi sighed

Thandi: van die one one, (for real) how are you

Jabu sighed

Jabu: taking it one day at a time

Thandi: o sa nnetseng abuti (why are you still
with her bro)

Jabu: o ka se tlhaloganye MaTha (you wont

ujnderstand MaTha)....i love her joh

Thandi: I've been there Jabu and I understand mara that doesn't mean I have to turn a blind eye and let you live a miserable life

Jabu: I've got everything under control sa wara
(don't worry)

Thandi: really

Jabu: yah

Thandi: mmmmh

Jabu: serious joh

Thandi: ok if you say so

Jabu sighed

Jabu: I came with Lolly

Thandi: ooh ok...help me up

Jabu: no rest she'll come here....you need to take it easy

Thandi: ok she should come with a tub of ice

cream from the fridge

Jabu: ok

he got up and kissed her forehead and he walked out

NIGERIA

Senior: do you want me to book you a psychologist or are you gonna tell me what's wrong

Mj sighed

Mj: I have been getting death threats dad

Senior: WHAT?

he said moving to the edge of his seat looking at Mj with a frown on his face

Mj: yes....i don't know who it is but....

Senior: but what

Mj: it's a South African number

Senior took out his phone and dialed a number and waited

Ray: dad

Senior: Raymond Mj is being threatened over the phone....it's a South African number

Ray: what....where is he

Senior: hold on

****he gave the phone to Mj****

Mj: bros

Ray: do you know who it is

Mj cleared his throat and he looked at his father then he looked down

Mj: ummm no....they use bad grammar bros

Ray: what do they say they want

he cleared his throat

Mj: I'll forward you the messages

Ray kept quiet a bit

Ray: what did you do Mj

Mj: no..nothing bros....look I'll forward you the messages and you'll see why

Ray: I'll see why what...you know what just forward me the messages

Mj: sure bros

then he gave the phone back to his dad and he got up and walked away

Senior: who could be threatening your brother

Ray: I don't know but what I know is they'll be sorry...don't worry I'll handle it just keep an eye on him and get him protection without him knowing

Senior: ok

Ray: look dad I'll get back to you

Senior: ok son...tell your brothers

Ray: I will

then they ended the call and Senior sighed...."who could be after my son" he thought....he has many enemies here in Nigeria and South Africa also...he sighed and made a call

OUTSIDE

***Mj received another message and it read:

"YOUR DAYS ARE NUMBERED WE WILL KILL YOU FOR HURTING HER DON'T SLEEP DON'T BLINK DON'T EAT DON'T BREATH DON'T SMILE DON'T LAUGH DON'T GO TO TOILET WE WILL KILL YOU DOG YOU ARE DEAD DEAD

DEAD DEAD YOU WILL PAY. SALUTE”

he sighed after reading the message and he forwarded a trail of messages to Ray's numbered and he swallowed hard....his mind went to “HER” they keeping referring to....”was it Tiara” he thought...then he send Ray another message

BACK IN SOUTH AFRICA

Ray laughed

Heath: wetin dey make you laugh like a mad man bros

he continued to laugh until he stopped then he gave Heath his phone

Ray: read

***Heath read the forwarded messages from Mj
and he frowned***

Heath: and now?

Ray: he's been receiving death threats from this
numbers here in SA

Heath: you call this death threats

Ray laughed

Ray: he even sounds worried man so is dad....i
was too but now....

he shook his head

Heath: let me trace the numbers

Ray: don't bother

Heath: huh

Ray: I think I know who's been sending those
messages to him

Heath: who?

Ray: Mbali's nephews

Heath laughed

Heath: you playing right

Ray shook his head chuckling

Ray: those little fuckers are trouble man....i once told Mbali about them but she laughed it off...i think they'll be worse than their fathers....you should see them in that small group of theirs whispering and nodding with serious faces as if they are planning a heist

they both laughed

Ray: those shitheads are trouble man.....i already feel sorry for their fathers

Heath laughed

Heath: damn so how will you handle this

Ray: I need to confirm that its really them sending Mj those messages and have a little chat with their fathers

Heath shook his head

Ray: what's wrong?

Heath: huh

Ray: I can see something is troubling you

Heath: its Jabu

Ray: his own is tough

Heath: mmh....if only he didn't have a baby with her I'd kill her

Ray: even if she didn't you wouldn't do that Ezeh

Heath: trust me I would

Ray shook his head

Heath: I hate that bitch....she made Jabu cry....she called him our puppet....she said words she can't take back and those same words are gonna stay with Jabu for the rest of his life.... even if he tries to move passed them but they will always be at the back of his mind

Ray sighed

Heath: he loved or still loves her and he always wanted to give her the best in life and for her to say all that to him broke him....i know it did....but because Jabu is Jabu he's never show that he's hurting

Ray kept quiet

Heath: I hate her and it kills me to know that I can't force him to leave her

Ray: just be supportive but don't stick your nose into their business...just be there for him as a brother

Heath sighed and he nodded then he opened his laptop

Heath: let me trace those numbers

Ray gave him his phone and he got down to business

THANDI'S HOUSE

Jabu: so dintshang....what's going on

Ruslan sighed and he leaned back on his chair

Ruslan: look your shit is complicated man

Jabu: what's going on Ruu

Ruslan: there was an uninvited guest in your house

Jabu frowned at him

Ruslan: a dangerous spirit

Jabu: wa bona nou (you see now)....hai hai
hai....what spirit now

he said with an alarmed look on his face

Ruslan: Amo's dead father

Jabu gave Ruu a confused look

Jabu: heh?

Ruslan: your wife is turning into what her father hope she will be.... she has a dark heart but her good side is more in control than her dark side....she contacted someone close to her....someone blood related to help her with your situation....and that someone is a traditional healer ...let's hope the traditional healer will not help her

Jabu swallowed

Jabu: Amo boloi (witchcraft)....nah Ruu....Amo and witchcraft don't mix

Ruslan: she's desperate.... did you know she went to some church with her mother but they chased her away

Jabu frowned

Ruslan: she's giving in man and that woke and gave your father in law's spirit power and he was hovering all over your house

Jabu swallowed hard

Ruslan: your father in law huh....you know Jabu....that man was sick in the head....the things he did in secret will make your stomach turn.....now he's roaming around with nowhere to go....he can't even go to his own house cause his wife strengthened her yard and house so he can't enter

Jabu: now why did he enter my yard

Ruslan: when was the last time or have you ever strengthened your yard

Jabu sighed

Jabu: eish it's been years

he said scratching his beard

Jabu: eish

he scratched his head

Ruslan: my worry is your ancestors let him in just like that

Jabu looked at him

Jabu: you mean they let him enter

Ruslan: they were standing outside the yard man.....i even begged them to enter but they didn't say anything they just stood there looking inside the yard.....you need to go consult with someone who will connect with your ancestors you need clarity on what the hell is happening

Ruslan: I've put a spell of protection in your yard and house.... after she left I went back in....I'll remove it after you have consulted and that's if the spell will prevent them from entering the yard again

Jabu's head was now all over the place he couldn't believe what he was hearing

Ruslan: now I need to cleanse you and Lorraine before you go back

Jabu looked up and he breathed out

Jabu: why man...why me?

Ruu: you just chose the wrong one that's about it....i have been there

Jabu looked at him

Ruu: Carl's mother

he chuckled shaking his head

Ruu: I loved that woman with everything in me...then she changed...i couldn't believe it but I had to accept at some point that it is what it is

Jabu: all hope is not lost with her right....i mean Amo....she can change right

Ruslan looked at him and he could see how much he loves her

Ruslan: a leopard never changes its spots

but.....the decision is all yours man...she's your wife after all

***Jabu sighed looking down.....he couldn't understand how someone so pure and kind can make a U-turn so quickly to become someone so vile and heartless

Ruu looked at him with pity.....he wanted to touch on the Lorraine topic but he thought against it

Amo's aunt threw the ancestral bone on the goat skin mat and she burped reading them.....she collected them from the mat and she put them back inside the goat skin bag and she blew inside then she said a few words and emptied the bag on the mat and she sighed after she read them

Amo: mmamogolo keng (aunt what's wrong)

Aunty: your father's spirit is following you around.....your father was a vile and coldhearted man Amogelang....he was never about God.....he had an evil heart.....he slept with young boys then he moved to young men when he killed one boy during sexual intercourse and he buried him in a shallow grave

Amo: what?

Aunty: badimo baka lempontshang mara.....
(my ancestors what are you showing me....)

she burped

Aunty: he killed a boy and buried him somewhere in a shallow grave....he was a rapist and a pedophile he was attracted to small boys

Amo's eyes filled with tears then they ran down her cheeks

Aunty: Modise....Modise

Amo: nooo mmamogolo (noo aunt)

The aunty's tears ran down her cheeks

Aunt: he doesn't remember cause he was still young....his ancestors made sure he doesn't remember....he doesn't remember what his father did to him...they don't want him to remember

tears ran down her cheeks....that was her nephew....her own nephew and she didn't see it....they didn't show her all this time.....but why now

Aunty: he has nowhere to go....his ancestors rejected him now he's roaming around....he's now trying to use you to cause havoc....he blames you for his demise cause you brought your husband into your lives and your husband exposed him

Amo was now a crying mess

Aunty: im sorry my child

Amo: you're lying

she said wiping her tears off and the aunt frowned at her

Aunty: what?

Amo: you hated papa but now this is too much.....how can you say all those lies about him.....where is the proof that he did all that....im not naïve like all of you who believe in ancestors and bones and all this rubbish.....your family hated my papa and now you're even saying lies about him when he's not even here to defend himself

Aunty: Amogelang...

she was shocked

Amo: noo mmamogolo.....maybe papa's spirit came to me cause he warned me about Jabu.....he knew what was good for me and I disobeyed him and abandoned my family and now im suffering....maybe he was there to guide

me....i lost my way and lived with a sinner...a murderer....i even had a child with him maybe he's not happy with me....yes that's why....i can't believe you said he killed a child....that he was pedophile....a whole man of God a pedophile nxa

***she got up ***

Aunty: Amogelang are you even listening to yourself....that man hit you and humiliated you in public and even called you names

Amo: because I was out of line....i disrespected him and his teaching....i sinned....im sure he was just angry that's why he did what he did

the aunt looked at her in horror....she was not even possessed...this was all her

Aunty: Amo....

she walked out

Aunty: badimo baka go etsa galang....ke

metlholo ya eng e ke fetsang go e
utlw....bolelang le nna...go
etsagalang....bolelang le nna ka le kopa (my
ancestors what is all this....what is it that I just
heard....talk to me....what's going on....talk to
me please)

***she begged them but they didn't say
anything or show her anything then she
sighed....she wondered why they decided to
show her all this now, why not when he was still
alive, why not when her younger sister came
back to her senses and she came to
apologize...."why now" she thought***

Snakes: if it isn't the dead one

Ray showed him the middle finger and he sat down then he gave him the file...he chose to speak to Snakes instead cause he knows Snakes will want to confirm before acting crazy and accusing him of lying

Snakes: ok what's all these

Ray: someone is sending those to my little brother Mj and I traced the numbers and they bounce from all your houses

Snakes frowned

Snakes: askies

Ray: and I know its not all of you cause they look like they were send by an amateur or.....a child

Snakes: woooh....wait a minuteungayi lapho (don't even got there)

Ray: we both know you kids are crazy and they are capable man

Snakes looked at him

Ray: trace the number or better still after tracing it go search for it for proof....i think they found out about Mj and Tiara and acted like that because maybe she's heartbroken

he stood up

Ray: your kids are not normal kids....well they are not worse than mine and Castiel's but you catch my drift....just keep them on a leash and make them stop threatening my brother....he fucked up but he ended things so let peace rein between our families

then he walked out and Snakes immediately traced the numbers and indeed it was in his house

Snakes: this big headed boy is gonna give me a heart attack one of these days I swear...ngizofa mxwi struu

AT MODIRI'S HOUSE

she knocked on the door and it opened and he stood there shirtless...her eyes got filled with tears and they ran down her cheeks

Modiri: hey what's wrong

Amo: please hold me

she said with a breaking voice and Modiri hugged and she cried

***they were now kissing in the lounge...Amo is the one who initiated it.....Modiri's hands were squeezing her breasts a bit tight....he was a

good kisser but the squeezing as if he's draining the liquid out of an orange wasn't on for her....she broke the kiss and removed his hands on her breasts and she got up***

Amo: lets take this to the bedroom

***he smiled widely and got up quickly...he couldn't believe he was doing this with her.....he thought he had lost her for good when he found out she went back to her husband....anyway they went to the bedroom....they took off their clothes while kissing and she laid on the bed with her legs wide opened waiting for him to eat her up a storm.....his heart was pounding hard as he looked at her shaved fat pussy...he took off his track pants along with his briefs almost falling and he stood there with his erect manhood filled with veins.....she looked at it and was disappointed that it was just an average dick size, it was smaller than Jabu's....he stroked it as he looked at her pussy

as it dripped precum....he got on top of the bed between her legs and she frowned when she felt it on her opening ***

Amo: ummm Modiri lets do foreplay first...i mean you can.....

he shoved it inside her without a warning and she screamed with her eyes popped out

Modiri: I don't last long when I do those things...don't worry you'll enjoy it that's how good I am

***he whispered to her and he kissed her lips moving in and out of her slowly and she moaned as it felt good....then he started moving in and out of her in a fast pace you would swear it was a quickie and the good feeling she was feeling disappeared....Jabu always made her hot and wet....he always made her cum with his tongue on her pussy before he fucks her good where else now she wasn't even that wet, she

came here to release stress and to forget about her problems but it seems like she came to the wrong place cause nikka was rough and not in a nice way....as for Modiri he was grunting and groaning calling Amo's name as he humped on top of her roughly.....she closed her eyes trying to block his irritating loud groans and pain she was feeling when he squeezes her breasts tightly....she tried to find pleasure in the sex that maybe rough sex is what she needed to release her stress but then she felt hands on her neck...she quickly opened her eyes and nikka was choking her as he fucked her....she tried to get his grip off her neck but he tightened it groaning with his eyes closed as he fucked her crazy....her face turned pink as she slapped his arms and he let her go and as she was busy coughing trying to control her breathing even though nikka was still tearing her pussy apart she felt his hands grabbing her hair tight as he continued fucking her and groaningshe

screamed***

Amo: ahhhh Modiri wankgobatsa!!! (ahhh Modiri you're hurting me)

Modiri: call me daddy....fuck your pussy is nice
Amo....i fucken love you....im gonna marry
you...i swear im gonna marry you

he said as his grip got tighter as if he was trying to pull her hair off her sculp....that's how painful it is and she continued to scream

Amo: MODIRI STOP....WANKGOBATSA (you're hurting me)

Modiri: ahhh ahhh... ahhh

he said that loudly as his body stiffened

Modiri: iyooooooh.....

he screamed as he shot his load inside of her and he jerked for a bit then he collapsed on top of her

.

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

INSERT.....48

MODIRI'S HOUSE

Modiri: damn you have a delicious nunu sister
Amo

Amo just swallowed hard wiping herself then she got off the bed and she picked her clothes and started getting dressed

Modiri: what are you doing....i thought we will have another round

she ignored him and continued getting dressed fighting back her tears

Modiri: sister Amo?

Amo: i...i have to go

she was disappointed....very disappointed....imagine cheating with a man who didn't even make you cum or enjoy the sex

Modiri: you'll leave tomorrow...please say yes

Amo: I cant

Modiri: come on baby....i swear you won't regret

it

*** "im already regretting sleeping with you" she thought***

Amo: I have a child I need to take care of Modiri
he sighed

Modiri: but her father is there mos

she looked at him with a raised eyebrow

Amo: im a married woman Modiri in case you have forgotten

his face changed

Modiri: you didn't behave like one when you knocked on my door and asking me to fuck you

she swallowed hard

Amo: I was at my lowest ok

Modiri: why are you doing this to yourself
Amogelang....why are you doing this to us

Amo: there's no us Modiri please don't confuse

what just happened to it meaning anything

Modiri: please don't do this

Amo: look I have to go I'll call you

Modiri: I love you..... just let me take care of
you....i'll make you happy

Amo: Modiri please

Modiri: I love you Amogelang.....I've loved you
since the first day you and your family moved
into our neighborhood

she swallowed

Modiri: I always dreamed of us getting married
and living happily with our kids....you don't know
how broken I was when you dated that man and
even married him but here you are with me....i
have been praying for us...for you to come back
to me and here you are.....you even just warmed
my bed....God heard my prayers and made my
dream come true...just give us a chance and I

swear you won't regret it

Amo: I have to go

she quickly walked out and he went after her

Modiri: Amogelang!!!

she quickly grabbed her handbag and phone along with her car keys and rushed out

Modiri: o tlo bowa...owaka wena (you'll come back....you are mine)

****he smiled walking back to the bedroom naked***

SNAKE'S HOUSE

*** The Khumalo senior brothers were in the

lounge looking at the Khumalo junior brothers as they sat on the couches wondering what was going on...why they were summoned like this....they looked innocent sitting there looking at their fathers with innocent looks on their faces.....Snakes took out the phone and their eyes popped out and now they looked scared...they looked at Smiso and he had a serious look on his face and they all swallowed ready to pee on themselves ***

Lwandle: ummm before you say anything baba we can explain....right fozas

Juniors: yes!

they said nodding

Jay: explain what?

Lwandle: ummm we....wait how much do you know

***he made a “ how much do you know frown” on his face and Jase chuckled shaking his

head while Muzi just shook his head***

Snakes: ungazosjwaela kabi
uyangizwa.....ngizokushaya Lwandle! (don't
piss us off you hear me...i'll beat you up
Lwandle)

***he said with a stern voice and the kids
swallowed***

Snakes: since when are you terrorists?

Thula: ini? (what)

Snakes: did I say talk you little midget?

Thula shook his head slowly

Snakes: now answer me nina

***he said pointing at them and Thula raised his
hand slowly***

Snakes: why are you raising your hand

Thula: teacher said we must raise our hands if
we want to ask a question

Muzi chuckled

Snakes: what is it

Thula: what's a tresorit?

Muzi laughed followed by Jase

Snakes: heh?

Thula: tresorit?

Mnqobi: he means terrorist baba

Snakes: did I say talk wena nekhanda elikhulu
(big head)

Mnqobi: sorry

Muzi: its someone or some people who hurt
innocent people

Thula raised his hand again

Snakes: what now

Thula: but that man is not insocent(innocent)
baba....he hurt sisi

seniors raised their eyebrows

Thula: sisi was crying because of him so he is a tresorit not us

Juniors: yes!

they said nodding their heads

Jay: so just because he hurt Tiara you thought is best nimthuse ngokumbulala heh (to scare him with death threats heh)

they kept quiet

Jay: Mnqobi!!

Mnqobi: baba

Jay: im talking

Mnqobi: we....we just wanted to scare him nje

Lwazi: we were just playing with him baba

Lwandile: yes he's old so we just wanted him to leave sisTia alone

Muzi: who came up with this stupid idea

the boys kept quiet

Muzi: don't make me stand up from this seat
cause nizonya if I do....now answer me

***they swallowed looking scared and they
looked at Smiso and swallowed some more***

Lwandle: ummm baba that is not important

Muzi: uthini

Lwandle: the dimage (damage) is done so the is
no need to say the misterminder (mastermind)
right fozas

Juniors: yes!

Muzi: is it?

Lwandle: yebo baba

Muzi: ok

***he got up and took off his belt ***

Thula: HIYIIIIIIIIIIII....

*** Thula started crying***

Muzi: who is the mastermind

Mnqobi: it's me

Lwandle looked at him because he knew it was him

Muzi: mmmmh.....how did you get the phone

Mnqobi: we gave some boy at school our savings and he got us the phone....he said he knew a nyaope boy who sells phones for R100

Seniors shook their head...they couldn't believe what they were hearing....a primary boy who knew how to buy a phone from a drug addict and their sons doing all these

Jase: angazi nokhuthi ngithini.....yho sazesavelelwa (I don't even know what to say...yho we in shit)

he shook his head

Jay: and that boy's numbers

Mnqobi frowned

Mnqobi: boy?

Smiso: the man that hurt your sister

***their eyes popped out...his voice was scary
and they were all scared of him***

Mnqobi: we...we stole the numbers from
sisTia's phone

Smiso stood up

Thula: HIY|||||||||....

he started crying again

Smiso: let's go!

*** they didn't move***

Smiso: I said let's go!!!

***he said sternly and they all quickly got up
they followed after him with Lwandle wiping
Thula's tears off telling him to stop
crying....they got outside at the back***

Smiso: now give me 20 push ups now!

they looked at him

Smiso: I SAID NOW DAMN IT!

they quickly went down looking scared and tried to do them but they fell to the ground after trying one push up

Lwandle: baba we can't do them

he said lying on his stomach on the ground while Thula was crying

Smiso: if you stop of fail to do them I'll whip your little naughty butts so bad you won't be able to sit for a week now

ONE...TWO.....THREE...

the fathers shook their heads...they couldn't believe their sons did all that right under their noses

she parked by the side of the road and cried her eyes out.....she couldn't believe she cheated for that...she didn't even cum or enjoy it and the fool was even talking about another round

Amo: im disappointed in you Amo....really disappointed.....you couldn't even get someone like Heath you had to go to that....that useless man nxa

she said to herself and wiped her tears off then she took out her phone and dialed his numbers

Jabu: yah

she swallowed hard....she will never get used to him answering his phone calls like that

Amo: hi ummm how is Lile

Jabu: she's fine

***she kept quiet....he was soo cold towards

her that it send chills down her spine***

Jabu: ontsamayella dingaka Amo (you're bewitching me Amo)

she froze

Jabu: wena o etsa nna....nna Mjava so (you doing that to me...me Mjava like that)

she swallowed hard shaking

Amo: what...what are you talking about Jabu

Jabu: don't bullshit me Amo.....wena o loya nna (you're bewitching me)....nna Jabu

Amo: that's not true Jabu I would never do that to you....im a church going woman Jabu I can never

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: im not even angry im just disappointed....two wasted years of my life I can never get back.....everything that you're doing that is bad I hope it's worth it....i don't

know who you are anymore....im sure my ancestors are punishing me for something ka wena.....you cant out of the blue turn into this

Amo just dropped the call as tears gushed out her eyes...."it was Ruslan" she thought.....then her heart started pounding hard as she thought about what she just did with Modiri...what if he already knows and he will tell Jabu....he did tell her about her shenanigans so what will stop him

Amo: ohhh God....ohhh God

Voice: you'll always be a disappointment.....i can't believe I thought you'll pull this off

she jumped screaming....she looked around and she couldn't see anyone

Voice: useless nxa

***Amo quickly unlocked the door and she opened it and quickly got out with her phone while her heart beat fast....she went to Jabu's

number but thought against it then she dialed Modiri's numbers***

Modiri: you already miss me

Amo: ple....please come drive me back to your place....please

she said crying and shaking and Modiri got alarmed

Modiri: what's wrong...what happened...is it that thug husband of yours

Amo: no im parking before the first robots mo cashbuild please come

Modiri: ok im coming don't worry

then he dropped the call and she stood there biting her nails....she knows that voice....it was her father's voice....was he haunting her....what did he want from her....She thought

THE FOLLOWING DAY

***Heath and Jabu were on their way to Alphalette's place since he asked to see Heath concerning his son Ike....they parked outside his double story modern house in the hood and they got out, locked the car and went in....they found a guy cleaning carefully Alphalette's Rolls Royce 2020 Ghost car as if it's an egg that might break and they chuckled ***

Jabu/Heath: heita

they greeted him

Guy: sho...sho

Jabu: o teng Phalette (is Phalette in)

Guy: yah o ka mo gare (yeah he'sinside)

Alphalette walked out holding a beer on his hand and he whistled

Alphalette: aow namonhla neya khoma lotto....lgwe ajaratene ra mina (today im gonna win Lotto....lgwe in my yard)

they laughed and walked to him then they bro hugged then a woman walked out of the house

Woman: I thought I heard voices....hi guys

*** She said looking at them in a seductive manner.....they looked at her then at Alpha***

Alphalette: bofebe Palesa!!

***she quickly snapped out of it and she innocently smiled ***

Alphalette: o nyakang montle (what are you doing outside)

Palesa: I heard voices so I thought I should come and see gore ke mang (who it is)

Alphalette: o moeng Palesa so o tlo cheka batho ko ntle byang o le moeng(you are a visitor so why are you coming to check people outside when you're a visitor)

her face fell

Alphalette: wena wira kore o lastag (you're too forward)

Palesa: bathong Alphalette

he gave her a deadly look and she swallowed and slightly smiled at the guys and walked back in

Heath: that was harsh

Alphalette: don't even feel sorry for her....ke sfebe nthwe (this thing is a bitch)...she's being fucked for 12 ya savanna and she thinks I don't know even though I give her an allowance every month end

Heath: fuck nooo

Jabu: why o sa na le yena...o tlo lwala wa nyela
(why are you still with her...you'll get sick)

Alphalette: I make sure she tests every month
and ke mo faka sfotho ka ditlhare every week
go tlosa snyama and on top of that I use
piprekere (I steam her using herbs every week
to get rid of bad luck and on top of that I use a
condom)....for now she's the only one im
fucking....i can't be fucking different women
vokokwane va nga nimanya yixibakela ninya
(my ancestors will hit me with a fist and I'll shit
myself)

they laughed out loud

Alphalette: I would look for another girl to fuck
around with mara kuku ya gae (her pussy)

he whistled

Alphalette: dia bowa daar (she knows her stuff)

laughter

Jabu: o tlo bana wanyella (she's get pregnant and you'll regret it)

Alphalette: nna ko imela ke only one woman....nka bolaya ke Aids mara ngwana yena ko mofa ke one cheri (only one woman will get pregnant for me....i might be killed by Aids but I'll be given a child by one woman)

Alpahalette: Mtshepana e tla le di tilo daar (Mtshepana bring chairs)

the guy busy with his car went to get them chairs and they sat on the porch while Alphalette went to get them beers too

Heath: you trust him with your machine neh

Alphalette: yeah he knows how delicate it is and how expensive it is so he's always careful and plus he needs the money

Heath: give him a job then

Alphalette: let's see if he can handle my baby

for two months first...i like this boy and im teaching him something

Heath: ok

he was nodding

Jabu: so she's still engaged to Stivo?

Heath: so vele Steve is engaged to your chosen one...damn!!!

Alphalette: eish Igwe and to think I had her mfowethu and I let her go it kills me everyday

Heath: you what

Alphalette took a sip of his drink

Alphalette: two years back.... ka mo re phaa phaa one night and the whole night mfowethu...poor girl didn't even rest....the way kuku ya gae ne eleng monate ka teng Mnyamane didn't even want to sleep then the next day ka bo 4 ka mo koba soos mpya and now she hates me (I hit it one night and the

whole night my brother....poor girl didn't even rest.... the way her pussy was delicious Mnyamane "his dick" didn't even want to sleep then the next day around 4 in the morning I kicked her out like a dog and now she hates me)

they whistled

Jabu: o flopile man...why would you do that

Alphalette: I was having a serious bad day, we just met at a bad day and bad time....i didn't even realize that she's the one....gesno ke kgora kuku ka mo koba kgante ke koba wa ka wa badimo (after getting satisfied I kicked her out not knowing im kicking out the one chosen by my ancestors)

Heath: damn

Alphalette looked at Jabu

Alphalette: Iwena o tlo flopa (you'll also regret it) by staying married to that jezebel

Jabu: mos re ova ka wena eseng ka nna mos
(we are talking about you not me)

Alphalette: wena o tlo swa ka aids before nna....
(you'll die of Aids before me)

Jabu: wa nnyela

Heath chuckled

Alphalette: o busy o jela ke bafana ba go thwala
ka di noga....re tlo o boloka wena (boys who did
rituals using snakes are eating your food...we
will bury you)

Jabu kept quiet

Alphalette: tlhala so seo or face the
consequences....o nale badimo ba masepa....ge
ba ka bolela wa ba ignora ba ilo tlogela batho
ba go etsetse masepa gore o utlwe botlhoko
nyana gore o bulege matlho....and botlhoko boo
a se gore go gobala wena

(leave that thing or face the consequences....

you have ancestors that don't take shit....if they talk to you and you ignore them they will leave people to hurt you so you'll hurt a bit so that you'll be aware of what's going on....and you're not the one who's gonna feel physical pain)

.....in our world ancestors let kids get hurt by enemies to make their parents open their eyes and take action...a ke jaje why but it is what it is....ask this one

he pointed at Heath

Alphalette: he had to lose a son to appreciate and protect his chosen one by all means....chosen ones bring happiness and peace in the family and who will accept you the way you are like she did with Igwe here.....another woman would've left cause other people see people with multiple personalities as psychopaths or something..... Remember when there's peace and happiness in the family the ancestors become happy too

and they rest in peace....they support you no matter what and they are loyal to you.....when you in your line of work you need a loyal woman that will stand in the witness podium in court and lie through her teeth to keep you out of jail

Jabu sighed looking down

Alphalette: look at me....i have to live with the fact that my chosen one is being fucked by my brother every night and there's nothing I can do....they don't even want me to bewitch him gore ndokomaboya ya gae (his dick) doesn't get up when he's with her....on top of it all Stivo is my younger brother and obviously me trying to take her from him will divided the family and if I kill him it will hurt maO'lady and you know a ke nyake nex ka yena

he drank his beer as Jabu and Heath did too

Alphalette: and on top of all that they want me

to marry her cause she's the only one to make me a father....only her womb deserve to carry my seed....they are showing me flames man....they are angry and they'll continue to punish me until she's mine...i don't sleep man...every day I have dreams of her getting married to Stivo and him announcing that she's even pregnant and I start running mad

Heath: damn

Alphalette: I have the same dream every night and to think I had her but I treated her like a prostitute and kicked her out like a dog

Jabu: eish

Alphalette: mara a gona flopo....atleast they see the progress im making in softening her heart towards me....i even had to apologize mfowethu...shit....that was the hardest shit I had to do.....eish kuroough

Jabu: kuzo lunga (all will be well)

Heath: yeah don't give up she'll be yours

Alphalette: nawe do the right thing

Jabu sighed and he nodded....he wasn't ready he still loves Amo

Alphalette: now to you Igwe.....about your son....take that boy back to Nigeria.....your father needs to do a ritual that is done in your family back in the village....your ancestors know of him but they haven't accepted him cause your father haven't done what needs to be done to male children in your family

Heath frowned cause this was news to him

Heath: what ritual

Alphalette: your father knows

Heath nodded

Alphalette: if this is not done Heath, you'll bury that boy he needs his ancestors' protection

Heath swallowed hard

Heath: we will go this weekend

Alphalette nodded

Alphalette: I charge R5000 for family go bofa motse... motho fela ke R8000 to R12000 go ya ka gore go boima byang (I charge R5000 for family to strengthen your home....any other person its R8000 to R12000 it depends on how bad it is)

he said looking at Jabu

Jabu: wena wa loya mxwi struu (you are a witch im telling you)

they laughed

Jabu: how did you know

Alphalette: mina vokokwane va mina va nibyela kore ko ta mani na kore o ta ko laveni yini ne etlele....loko nipfoka (my ancestors tell me who's coming and what they want in my

dreams....when I wake up) I already know who's coming to consult

Heath: yah neh

*** Jabu got busy on his phone and Alphalette's phone vibrated in his pocket and he took it out and smirked ***

Alphalette: come back tomorrow so I'll consult na va va kulu namunhla ha dakwa (with the ancestors today we are getting drunk)

they laughed

Jabu: you're crazy Hlebez

Alphalette: ne pengisa he mbangi (weed is what is making me crazy)

laughter

Menzi was sitting in his office lost in thoughts....he couldn't stop thinking about Kazi....he still cant believe that she forgave him....they are trying to mend their broken relationship, they may be taking it slowly but the fact that she now allows him to hold her and even kiss her makes his heart fill with joy....She makes him happy no lie....he cant believe he almost lost her because of Lorraine and the fact that she lusted over some stupid man.....Yes he feels bad for dropping Lorraine like that cause she's a good woman but he loves Kazi, he loved her the first time he saw her and now he almost lost her for stupid shit....He sighed....someone knocked on his door

Menzi: come in

***the door opened and in came Dudu, she's someone he fucked a few weeks back when he was busy searching for Kazi....he needed to

release stress and she was available but as soon as he found Kazi he stopped***

Menzi: and nou

Dudu: I thought I should come and see you....you've been scarce daddy

Menzi: what are you really doing here Dudu

Dudu: I miss you daddy....i miss your deep thrusts and your manly groans

she said giving him a seductive look biting her lower lip....he looked at her thinking about Kazi....he knew that this woman will make Kazi to leave him for good....he knew she's trouble cause it seems like she has caught feelings...he needed to get rid of her cause nothing and no one will come between him and Kazi this time...nobody....he took out his phone and made a call

Menzi: come to my office

***then he dropped the call....after some time
the was a knock on the door and he went to
open for the person***

Menzi: fix her car...a clean job...I'll keep her
busy

***he whispered to the guy and the guy
nodded***

Menzi: tell Veronica I don't want to be disturbed
***he said loudly for Dudu to hear then he
nodded at the guy and the guy smirked and
walked away then Menzi closed the door and
locked it....he turned and started unbuttoning
his shirt***

Menzi: on the desk naked

***he commanded her and she smiled excitedly
then she started taking her clothes off***

his phone rang and he answered

Menzi: yeah

Voice: its done....she burned with the car

Menzi: good job

Voice: sure bozza

***then they ended the call and he smiled then
he made a call to Mkhulu Mahlebezulu ***

Voice: Ngcobo

Menzi: Thokozani mkhulu

Voice: Thokoza Ngcobo

Menzi: ngidinga ukugezwa

Voice: come to my house tomorrow

Menzi: ok ngiyabonga

they ended the call

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

***I have Lupus disease and one of the advises my doctor gave me concerning this disease is to not stress myself cause being too excited is dangerous to me so is being too angry or stressing myself...it triggers my hormones and my immune system will start attacking my own tissues... I might suffer a stoke or a heart attack

or my immune system might attack my organs
and I might drop dead instantly.... so it's not
that I don't care that my work has been stolen
by that admin im just trying to keep
calm....mara I know ya'll have my back and
you'll deal with her....thank you for reporting
that page...i also did....***

.

.

.

INSERT.....49

.

.

.

.

LATER AT NIGHT

***Lorraine came downstairs for a glass of

milk.....she was struggling to fall asleep so a glass of warm milk always helps her when she struggles with sleep....she found Jabu sitting in the lounge lost in thought with the TV off....she went and sat next to him and she put her head of his shoulder***

Lolly: why are you sitting here alone

***he pushed her off rather roughly ***

Lolly: umm ohk

she said with a low tone

Jabu: nchiftele nyana man (go away).... can't you see i wanna be alone

***he said annoyed and she sighed....he has been calling Amo and her phone send him straight to voicemail....Ruu told her she left for a relative's place and the fact that her phone was off pissed him off....he doesn't even know why he's busy calling her cause she tried to bewitch him just the fact that her phone was off

rubbed him the wrong way....he was having many scenarios in his head of why that is and he didn't like what his mind came up with***

Lolly: is she worth you stressing like this Jabu ***she asked concerned***

Jabu: im not like your ex-husband who moved on with your best friend while still married to you...i actually love my fucken wife...so oska mpotsa masepa!!! (don't tell me shit!!!)...you were not worth it so you want her to be just like you!!!

***he snapped at her and she gasped looking at him...she couldn't believe he said that to her ***

Lolly: bathong Jabu

***she said with her painful tone**

Jabu: eeh nkatoge tuu...wanshitela (leave me alone...you're troubling me)

***She swallowed tearfully and she got up and

went back upstairs***

THE FOLLOWING DAY

Menzi and Alphalette just came back from the river for Menzi's cleansing and they were now inside Alphalette's Ndumba (ancestral consulting room) where Alphalette is busy mixing herbs for him to go use at home

Alphalette: do you know that your father has two kids he had outside his marriage

Menzi frowned

Menzi: what?

Alphalette: mmmmh a boy and a girl...well they

are old now....married....the boy is older than you and the girl younger than you

***Menzi swallowed hard....he wasn't shocked cause he knew his father's promiscuous ways but to actually know that he has siblings out there was just..... ***

Menzi: are...are they still alive?

Alphalette nodded

Alphalette: as for the guy you have already meet him but the girl you haven't but you met someone who knows her personally

Menzi swallowed hard

Alphalette: he's closer than you think and don't worry when the time is right you two will meet officially...that's all im supposed to say at this moment

Menzi sighed

Menzi: ok

Alphalette: as for the woman...nc nc nc

****he shook his head***

Alphalette: mara kuzolunga (all will be well)

*** he continued mixing the herbs and Menzi sat there lost in thoughts ***

OUTSIDE

Jabu parked his car behind a BMW X6 and he got out and locked it then he walked inside the yard....he went to the back and found a sangoma trainee sitting there and she quickly got up and came towards him and she knelt in front of him

Trainee: Thokozani

Jabu: thokoza

Trainee: le ka nna hase Mkhulu o sa le busy le

motho (you can sit down Mkhulu is still busy with someone)

Jabu: ok

she got up and Jabu sat down taking out his phone from his pocket and he called Lorraine but it send him straight to voicemail....he sighed....he actually feels bad for talking to her like that last night....this morning he wanted to apologize to her but then he thought he'll do it properly when he comes back by taking her out and sincerely apologize to her....the door opened and out came Menzi....he frowned when his eyes met with Jabu's and he clenched his jaws....he wore his shoes and he walked out ignoring him and Jabu chuckled shaking his head....The trainee went inside the Indumba then she came out and knelt in front of Jabu and told him he may go in....Jabu got up and took off his shoes by the door and he went inside...

Jabu: Thokoza mkhulu Hlebez

Alphalette laughed

Alphalette: nyimpi ya ngeno.... (trouble has entered....)

he sang and Jabu laughed

Jabu: ningenile(I have entered) yowe yowe yoh

more laughter then he sat down on the grass mat

Alphalette: o tlele njani (how did you sleep)

Jabu: ahhh ke robetse ke tswalletse litlho le le one fela (I slept with one eye opened)

***Alphalette chuckled then he became serious.....he took the ancestral bag and he burped a couple of times before he blew inside it and made Jabu to blow inside too....he hit the bag gently on the floor pleading with the ancestors to talk to him and give the right answers to help Jabu then he emptied the bag

on the goat skin mat then...silence.....***

Alphalette: ka bona jarata ya gao e bofilwe mara badimo ba gao ba eme kontle (I see your yard is already protected but your ancestors are standing outside the yard)

Jabu: o mpoditse so le yena (he told me that too) and he said he can lift the spell off if needs be

Alphalette: he does things differently....he's not from this country

Jabu: mmmmh

he said nodding

Alphalette: o strong blaen (he's very powerful)...very powerful....he has a rare gift, its not like mine where I rely on my ancestors and my water spirits

Jabu: yeah he's really powerful and different

Alphalette: he and his brother are....different

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: yeah....very

Alphalette: mmmmh....anyway he needs to lift off the spell so I can do my things

Jabu nodded

Alphalette: about your wife

***Jabu swallowed as Alphalette shook his head ***

Alphalette: don't let her near your kids until a tlhapisiwe (she's cleansed) in fact play far from her until she's cleansed

Jabu frowned

Jabu: cleansed from what Mkhulu

Alphalette: I don't want to be the reason your hands are covered in blood so wena just know she needs cleansing and you better make sure you don't mate with her until she is...wena dlalla far from yena (just play far from her)

Jabu sighed

Alphalette: find out when your friend will lift off the spell and how many days it takes to clear off and I'll come and do my things

Jabu nodded and Alphalette looked at Jabu and he sighed...he felt sorry for him cause he knew what's to come if Jabu doesn't listen to his ancestors...they brought his chosen one years back and he let her go and they brought her again to him and he's still rejecting her...they have been warning him but he refuses to listen

Alphalette: she left

Jabu: who

Alphalette: your chosen one

Jabu frowned

Jabu: you mean Lolly

Alphalette: what did you say to her last night

Jabu sighed looking down

Jabu: I didn't mean it...i was just not in a good mood and she kept nagging me and I lashed out on her

Alphalette shook his head

Alphalette: why are you messing your life up like this Jabu

Jabu: im not messing my life up....its not a crime to still love Amo....everyone expect me to just divorce her and move on as if I never loved her with all my heart....its not easyi still love that woman....she still means a lot to me....no one can just switch off his love for someone it takes time

Alphalette shook his head

Alphalette: na kotwa (I hear you) but don't blame God or your ancestors when things get out of control....they know what will happen in the future hence they warn us nowso when

those things happen don't blame them...they warned you and you didn't listen....you can still leave Amo and stay single until you're completely over her then make your move to your chosen one...all they want is her out of your life Jabu.....that's why they showed you her true colors and how she's been pretending towards you but still you refuse to listen....people are not aware that when you start seeing red flags towards someone, it can be your partner, family member or even a friend or just someone you know that's your guardian angel and your ancestors warning you that you need to leave or stay away from those people before you get hurt but we always ignore them then when things start getting worse and you cant take it anymore you start blaming God and your ancestors for not doing anything to protect you

he sighed

Alphalette: having doubts and letswalo is your guides warning you but we always ignore them then we blame them when we get hurt or almost die....va twelele (listen to them) Jabu its for your own good

he shook his head

Jabu: a ba emenyana (they should chill a bit)...the heart wants what it wants....if I failed to love Lolly back then when it was just her in my life what makes them think now I will when im married....a ba emenyana(they should chill a bit)...why did they let me marry her if they knew she's not the one for me....why did they make me fall for her so hard, they even let her love and treat my son as if he's her and now I must stop loving her and divorce her without even trying to fix things with her....yes she has changed and she did hurt me mara im not perfect myself....i love them but ba rata attention(they love attention)

Alphalette: wa tetwa mfo (are you listening to yourself bro)

Jabu: kahle nje (yeah)

Alphalette: ok

he nodded then he started packing his things

Alphalette: I'll wait for your call

Jabu sighed and he nodded

Jabu: a ke re (im not saying) I wont listen to them...im just saying im not ready...i might even think of polygamy but for now im not sure what I want and I don't wanna make hasty decisions and regret them afterwards

Alphalette: na kotwa mfo (I hear you)....lets hope it wont be too late

He got up after packing his ancestral things

Jabu: that guy that was here

Alphalette: mmmmh

Jabu: is he your regular customer

Alphalette: yeah...i take it you know him

Jabu nodded

Alphalette: have you ever tried to find your father or did you maybe do research about him

Jabu frowned

Jabu: no why

he was surprised by his question

Alphalette: I suggest you do mara since you're not ready to deal with many things in your life... a retse (we don't know)

he shrug and Jabu frowned at him

Alphalette: when you're ready do some research....i know you don't need him in your life mara you might have siblings out there and you need to find them to prevent incest happening

in the future

Jabu swallowed hard and Alphalette walked out and Jabu got up and followed him....Alphalette's ancestors told him Jabu is not ready to do hard decisions in his life and all he can do is advise him and hope for the best....he was just trying his luck with this Amo and Lorraine issue but he's worried cause he sees a dark cloud lurking all over him and his kids and Jabu is the only one who can chase it away but he's not ready

KZN

***Lorraine walked inside her apartment and she put her bags down then she went to open

the curtains and windows then she settled on the couch and she sighed....she couldn't believe Jabu lashed out on her like that....there was no need to talk to her like that cause all she did was ask him if being married to Amo was worth everything he's going through....she asked in an experienced manner cause she's been there...she even lost a child cause she stayed in a toxic marriage....yena she stayed cause she had no one to go back to after the divorce...she had no one to fight for her and to hold her hand and tell her that everything will be fine, her parents died in a car accident when she and her brother were young and her brother was killed by some homophobic serial killer and her grandmother died of heart attack so she's all alone as for jabu he has her family for support.....(she sighed) maybe he can't imagine life without her or he's thinking of his kids growing up with divorced parents or she's just worth it but he shouldn't have said all those

hurtful things to her she was just trying to be a good friend to him (she thought).....her mind went to her ex-husband and what he might do to her since Jabu failed to help her....(she swallowed hard)....maybe its best he just kills her and get it over and done with and she'll go be with her family in heaven and leave this hell hole world...she just have to wait for him to make his move....her phone rang and it was Jabu....she sighed and answered it***

Lolly: Jabu

Jabu: why did you leave without me Lolly....you know you're not safe there!!!

he sounded angry

Lolly: look thanks for accommodating me and all but I think its best we stayed away from each other

Jabu: are you hearing yourself

Lolly: yeah...thanks again for everything

he sighed

Jabu:....look I know I said some hurtful things to you last night and...

Lolly: Jabu shap....please stop calling me

then she dropped the call and swallowed hard as tears filled her eyes....her phone rang again and she dropped the call and blocked his number as tears ran down her cheeks...she needs to call her lawyer and update her will for just in case (she thought as she wiped her tears off).....she picked her phone again and called her lawyer

***Jabu clicked his tongue and he clenched his jaws....he didn't understand why Lolly would gamble with her life like that....Cass is still this

side meaning he hasn't taken care of Bheki and he can't leave cause Ruslan is on his way to come and lift off the spell and Alphalette will come tomorrow to do his things....he tried her again and it didn't even go through....he sighed frustrated and he rested his head on the head rest of the couch....his life was a mess and he didn't know how to let go of some things and some one....he knows what he needs to do but he's just not ready....he feels like he didn't fight enough for his marriage cause he has kids to think of and he cant keep hopping from one woman to another like he has done before he met Amo....his ancestors are not fair (he thought)...he dialed Cass's numbers and he answered***

Cass: sho

Jabu: Cass....zkhiphani (howzit)

Cass: nex uright?

Jabu: eish did you deal with that problem

Cass: you mean that fool that's harassing
ukotiza

Jabu sighed

Jabu: eish yah

Cass chuckled

Cass: she's yours whether you like it or
not...anyway yah its taken care off

Jabu's eyes popped out

Jabu: how...i mean you haven't even left the
province and I know you like doing things
yourself

Cass: I have my ways im not a vamp for nothing
man so ukotiza (sister in law) is safe from that
fucker

Jabu breathed out

Jabu: damn you're good

Cass: I know...trust me I know

Jabu: tsek

they laughed

Jabu: thanks nja yami (my dog)....i owe you one

Cass: don't do that....we're family....anyway
how's kotiza and I mean the real one

Jabu: f'tsek....shap sizokhuluma(we will talk)

***Cass laughed and they ended the call and
Jabu sighed...at least she's safe (he
thought)***

***Lorraine was busy munching on her pizza
catching up on his series when she heard a
knock on the door....she looked at it for some
time and the person knocked again....she slowly

got up and she went to the kitchen area shaking and she took out a knife and went to stand by the door ***

Lolly: who...who is it

Voice: Lolo its me Kenny...Bheki's brother

she frowned

Lolly: what do you want....i have the police on speed dial

Kenny: why would you want to call the police on me....what's going on Lolo

Lolly: what do you want Kenneth

Kenny: please open the door so we can talk

Lolly: no say what you want to say and leave

he sighed

Kenny: Bheki is dead

she froze

Kenny: he was found in his house....it looks like

he was mauled by a wild animal and its impossible cause his guards didn't see anything or hear anything....they found him like that in his bedroom while the woman she was with was found drowned in his bathtub

Lolly: what?

she asked with a low tone then her mind went to Jabu saying Cass will handle it and Cass is a vampire....she swallowed hard with her eyes popped out

Kenny: did you hear me?

Lolly: ummm yeah but ummm why are you here telling me

he sighed

Kenny: you two were once married...i thought you deserve to know

Lolly: who was the girl he was found with

he kept quiet a bit

Lolly: Kenny?

Kenny: it was Lillian

***she gasped...so she was alive....she's been alive all this time...Bheki lied to her ***

Kenny: look I thought they broke up after you caught them together cause she disappeared for quiet some time....i was shocked to find her dead in his bedroom naked

she sighed...she couldn't believe it

Lolly: thank you for coming to tell me

Kenny: sho

then he cleared his throat

Kenny: I don't know why you're scared to open the door but I hope he didn't make life difficult for you even after your divorce....you know I left a couple of months back for the UK and I came back to this....i hope he didn't trouble you

***she swallowed....then she opened the door

and Kenny raised his hands in surrender mode when he saw the knife then he chuckled***

Kenny: please I come in peace

Lolly quickly hid the knife behind her and smiled nervously

Kenny: was that for him or someone else

she bit her lower lip nervously

Lolly: he's been a thorn in my life so I thought it was him

she said looking down and Kenny sighed

Kenny: im sorry

she nodded

Kenny: I know you wont come for the funeral so I guess I'll see you around

Lolly: you don't look sad that he's...dead

he sighed

Kenny: im not happy either....he was my brother

but a shitty one at that....he was so obsessed with being rich and feared that he didn't even care who he hurt in the process

she nodded

Kenny: take care of yourself

she nodded and he bit his lower lip looking at her then he smiled and walked away....Lolly closed her door and she sighed relievedshe couldn't believe that he was gone

MODIRI'S HOUSE

***Amo was sleeping...her pussy was on fire again and she didn't enjoy the sex again....she doesn't understand why its so hard for Modiri to make her cum or at least try to make her enjoy

it....its always about him and his pleasure.....he even smiled proudly when he saw her walking funny and frowning because of the pain between her legs....she begged him to be gentle and he said gentle sex is boring and he tore her pussy up and now she's been sleeping since he left for a meeting with the church elders....her phone rang and she answered with her eyes closed***

Amo: hello

she said with a sleepy voice

Jabu: do you even care gore o nale ncosi (that you have a baby)

she quickly opened her eyes with her heart beating fast and guilt washing over her

Amo: Ja...Jabu

Jabu: or keng since she has my blood running through her veins she ceases to be your daughter?

Amo: how can you even say that Jabu....i love my daughter ok

she said defending herself

Jabu: then where the fuck are you and why haven't you even called to talk to her

She swallowed

Jabu: you know what its fine I'll find out myself....e kare wantebala wena nxa (its like you forgot who I am)

then he dropped the call

Amo: shit!!!

*** she quickly got out of bed and she started getting dressed....she quickly got out of the bedroom and passed by another room that's always closed....she heard a hiss inside by the door and some sounds inside and she stopped....she slowly held the door handle as chills ran down her spine and she slowly turned

it but the door was locked....she knocked on the door and put her ear on it***

Amo: hello??? Is someone in here?

***it was now dead quiet...she shrug thinking what she heard was all in her head...she rushed to the door and she got out and locked it and she put the key under a flower pot and she went to her car ***

his phone rang and he kissed Naledi's lips and he answered it

Heath: talk to me

Voice: she just left his house in a rush

Heath clenched his jaws

Heath: ok continue with the tail and keep me

posted

Voice: sho bozza

then they ended the call and he put his phone away and he got on top of Naledi again

Naledi: restnyana dololo

He kissed her lips and he looked at her

Heath: I love you Obi m

she smiled shyly

Naledi: I love you too

Heath: and thank you for being you and for being mine and mine alone

Naledi: I should be the one thanking you

He shook his head and he pushed himself in her and she gasped

Heath: I love you so damn much

***He whispered to her and he started to move

and she moaned out loud ***

he was looking at his phone without blinking as his anger skyrocketed as he looked at her tracker information....he couldn't believe what he was seeing....he swallowed hard and brushed his face

Jabu: fuck!!!

he said as he swallowed the lump stuck on his throat....he dialed her numbers

Amo: is Lile at home....im on my way

he swallowed

Jabu: yah she is

Amo: ok im on my way

***he dropped the call and swallowed hard

again***

after some time she arrived and her heart beat fast as she parked the car....the events that made her to leave in a hurry played in her head and she swallowed hard....she took a deep breath and she got out of the car and tried by all means to walk properly even though her pussy was painful....she opened the door and she walked in....she found Jabu sitting in the lounge and she smiled faintly

Jabu: you were at his house since yesterday.....did you sleep with him

***silence filled the room as she froze on the spot ***

Jabu: I asked you a fucken question wena sfebe....bari ele e go jele?!!! (did that fool fuck you)

she swallowed hard shaking

Amo: no....after i...i left aunty's house I called

him and asked for him to pray for me....aunty told me horrifying things and I needed prayers immediately....that's why I went to him since he's a pastor

Jabu: ge ontebeletse o bona bari wena? (when you looking at me do you see a fool)

Amo: n...no....but im telling the truth Jabu

she said shaking...the look on his face was scary

Jabu: tlhobola (take off your clothes)

Amo: huh

her heart was beating so fast she thought she was going to drop dead or suffer a heart attack

Jabu: tlhobola and lay on that couch o bule maoto (take off your clothes and lay on that couch and open your legs)

***she slowly went down and hit the floor hard

as she fainted ***

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

.

.

INSERT.....50 (one insert left)

.

.

.

Amo: Jabu listen

Jabu: I said take off your clothes before ko tlhaba ka mpama!!! (before I slap you)

*** he said looking angry and she just stood there crying and shaking***

Amo: I swear Jabu nothing happened.....i even sleep in the spare bedroom...Modiri moved on...he's dating someone and he just accommodated me cause I wasn't in the right state of mind

Jabu: then tlhobola (take off your clothes)

she sniffed and she slowly undid her jeans then she stopped

Amo: i...i think he drugged me

she said

Jabu: Amogelang I don't have time for your shit....TLHOBOLA MAN!!! (take off your clothes man)

he shouted at her

Amo: i...i woke up naked on his bed and my...my pussy was swore....he....he made food for us after the prayer and I don't remember what happened...i swear Jabu

***she cried painfully and Jabu shook his head looking at her then he bend and held his knees as his heart beat faster and his hands shook....he couldn't believe it....he couldn't believe it.... he swallowed looking at her....he couldn't believe that she would do this to him and on top of it lie to his face about something as serious as rape ***

Amo: he...he raped me Jabu I swear.....and I woke up and he wasn't there.....i....i...

***she continued to cry and Jabu stood up straight and slapped her hard on her face and she fell on the floor.... the look on his face was murderous.....he wanted her dead....then he

thought of his kids....if he kills her it would affect them....Lile is still young and she needs her mother....he doesn't wanna take that from her....he doesn't wanna look at Lile and remember that he's the reason her mother is dead in a ditch somewhere***

Jabu: osfebe Amogelang....ge bare motho wa changer ba bolela ka wena (you're a whore Amogelang....when they say a person can change they are talking about you)....i cant believe this is you....i cant believe I married you.... I don't even know what I saw in you

he said as tears ran down his cheeks....he was hurt no lies

Amo: Jabu I swear to God he raped me...i would never lie to you

Jabu: should I call dai moerskond and ask him huh or should I call Ruslan and ask him if you're telling the truth....you know how powerful he is

and he'll tell me the truth

she stopped crying and her eyes popped out but she quickly masked it by looking down and she continued to cry then Jabu chuckled as he wiped his tears off....he knew she's lying...he can see it in her eyes....she's lying

Jabu: I want you to pack your shit and get the hell out of my house and life and expect divorce papers

***then he walked to his bar area and took out a sealed bottle of whiskey and he walked upstairs to the spare bedroom and he locked himself there leaving Amo crying downstairs....he couldn't believe it....they warned him and he didn't wanna believe it....so that's why Alphalette said she needs cleansing cause she slept with him...Tears ran down his cheeks....he was hurt no lies....he opened the bottle and gulped it down his throat with tears running down his cheeks and made a face when it

burned his throat....he wanted to kill her....she deserves to die (he thought) but he couldn't do that to Lile...what if when they are grown up they find out the truth and they hate him....he gulped it down again and he continued to cry....he couldn't believe it....bathi indoda ayikhali (they say a man doesn't cry) but right now he doesn't care that he's crying like a bitch....he loved her so damn much....he worshiped the ground she walked on before she changed....he saw a future with her....he loved that she loved his son****

DOWNSTAIRS

***Amo wiped her tears off and she breathed out, she was still shaking....he looked angry, she even thought he might kill hershe couldn't believe her lie didn't work....its like he could see

right through her even her heart piercing cries didn't even move him....she swallowed..the look of pain she saw on his face will forever haunt her...she has never seen him like that, even that time of the meeting with their family members he was hurt but not like this....she can't believe she hurt him like that....deep down she knows he never slept with Lorraine so she doesn't even know why she acted like that....she cant help it....she has never regretted telling him about how much she despises his lifestyle cause that how she really felt about him living the Kasi life and him talking tsotsitaal but now she regrets cheating on him....she wishes she could go back in time and not do it....she wishes she should've just came here straight or even went to her mother's place....fresh tears gushed out and she cried....why did she cheat on him especially with Modiri who couldn't even make her cum (she thought)....Her phone rang and she dropped the call clicking her tongue....a

message came through and she opened it and it read;

“you’ll be back....we are meant to be together and you know it...i love you”

she clicked her tongue and deleted it then she blocked his numbers and she went upstairs to the main bedroom to see the damage Jabu did on her face

Heath walked in and he found Amo sitting in the lounge watching tv while eating pizza and he clenched his jaws, he saw her swollen cheek when she turned to look at him and he wasn’t even concerned or feeling sorry for her....the hate he feels for Amo was just too much

Heath: sho

Amo: hi....you should knock next time....next time you badge in you might find me naked or better yet busy with Jabu fucking you know

he raised his eyebrow looking at her...."she swears now" he thought

Heath: is Jabu in

he said ignoring what she just said

Amo: sleeping probably in the spare bedroom

She checked im out as he went upstairs.....anyway he found Jabu passed out on the bed with an empty bottle of whiskey next to him....he swallowed hard as tears blurred his vision and he let them fall....he wiped his tears off and he helped him sleep properly and he took off his shoes and jean and he covered him with a throw and he put the empty bottle on the night stand....he took jabu's phone and checked and it was off then he switched it phone on and he put it on the night stand

Heath: you'll leave her and heal and you'll be happy again

he sighed and walked out then he closed the door and he went downstairs....earlier he called him and his phone send him straight to voicemail....he wanted to ask him if he'll pick Lile and Sbu up from Thandi's place to bring them to his place or he should since Sbu asked to come spend some days at his house....when he got downstairs he went straight to the main door

Amo: ummm Heath?

Heath: voetsek!!!

***he walked out and she swallowed hard....what if Jabu told him what she did....she breathed out....her life was spiraling out of control and she can't do anything about....she was once liked by the whole family well except for Castiel cause he avoided her like the plague

but the rest of the family loved her and she ruined it***

Amo: come rain or sunshine im getting my man back....i can't lose Jabu...never

she said to herself then she bit her lower lip as a thought crossed her mind

Thandi: what's wrong baby

she said to Ruu who looked like something is wrong....he was having a bad feeling but he doesn't know why....he tried to meditate and to speak to his crystal balls but nothing

Ruu: I don't know Amori just have a bad feeling....a really bad feeling

Thandi swallowed hard

Thandi: is it another war coming or its something totally different

He sighed

Ruu: I don't know but I see darkness....pain....i hear cries and I see blood

Thandi: ooh God

he pulled her closer and kissed her forehead

Ruu: let me go meditate again maybe I'll be shown what the hell is about to happen

Thandi: ok....I'll go and pray about it

Ruu: ok amor...i love you

Thandi: I love you too

she got up then she stopped and turned to look at Ruu

Thandi: babe

Ruu: amor

Thandi: what ifwhat if Shariah in here is also feeling whatever its about to happen....what if her being unsettled is because of what you are also feeling

Ruu sighed and he got up and he perked her lips

Ruu: it could be....even Carl is meditating as we speak because he can feel it too

Thandi: mmmmh...he's been quiet today and walking like a zombie

Ruu: he gets like that when he's feeling uneasy

Thandi breathed out and she rested her head on Ruu's lower part of his chest...that's how tall he is...he's a true African man Tall, buff and dark and Ruu wrapped his arms around her and kissed the top of her head

AT JABU'S HOUSE

*** Amo went to the kitchen and opened the cupboards and she found some antibiotics pills and she drank three of them at one go and she went back to the lounge and waited for about 30 minutes then she got up and went upstairs to where Jabu is....she knocked for some time and there was no answer so she let herself in...She found him sleeping he was even snoring***

Amo: Jabu???

no answer

Amo: babe???

still nothing

Amo: papa Lile???

***still nothing then she started taking her

clothes off until she was naked then she took the throw off him and she was glad that he was only in his briefs....she slowly pulled his briefs to his knees and she held his flaccid dick in her hand and she gave him a hand job...he groaned a bit and stirred and she froze for some time and she was glad he didn't wake up, she then continued to give him a hand job until his dick got hard and when precum oozed out she stopped and she got on top of the bed and also on top of him and she clenched her jaws as she slowly went down on his dick and she moaned feeling pain and Jabu groaned in his sleep.....she fought against the pain and she put all of it in and she sat there taking in all the pain she was feeling..... she clenched her jaws as she started to move cause damn it was painful..... Jabu opened his eyes a little trying to see what's going on but he was too intoxicated to fully open them so they closed again and Amo continued to ride him***

Amo: I love you Jabu....i love you so much

she said as she felt pleasure mixed with pain now...yes she was swollen and her pussy is painful but all this for her was worth the pain...she'll do anything possible to keep Jabu and to make sure he doesn't go ahead with the divorce

MODIRI'S HOUSE

his phone rang and he picked it up and he cleared his throat then he answered

Modiri: bhabha the great one

the man laughed

Man: it is done....you chose well heeh....the

snake is transferred to her husband everything will happen like we planned....once the baby is dead take the mother to chief Joshua and he will tell her that the husband is the one responsible for that baby's death and we will be on the clear

Modiri swallowed hard

Modiri: she...she slept with him

Man: yes...once he touches his daughter she'll belong to me and that boy's luck, blessings and wealth will be yours you will move up the ranks and money will follow you everywhere....prepare yourself to be rich my boy....you'll have money and the girl so celebrate

***then he dropped the call and Modiri threw his phone across the room looking angry....he couldn't believe that Amo slept with Jabu so soon, few hours after sleeping with him....he's been feeling guilty for what's about to happen

to her and her daughter but now he doesn't care anymore....maybe if that little shit dies then she'll finally leave that bastard...he hates Jabu for the fact that he married his betrothed...the love of his life and even took her virginity and gave her a child***

Alphalette has been in his consulting room since he started having the unsettling feeling....he's been consulting trying and begging his ancestors to show him what is about to happen but they were just quiet

RUSLAN'S HOUSE

Ruu: argggg

he hit the table hard frustrated....he's been doing everything to find out what's happening or what's about to happen and it's like he's blocked

Ruu: shit

he cursed then he dialed Castiel's numbers

Cass: Madou

Ruu: Cass have you been feeling it too

Cass: so you've been feeling it too

Ruu: yeah....i don't know what it is and where it's going to strike

Cass: Phumi thinks it's the Brethren because she can feel it too

Ruu: then we need to be ready....I'll let Ray and

his brothers know....we need to be prepared

Cass: yeah I was even thinking of leaving
tomorrow but we will stay for a couple of days

Ruu: yeah we need to be closer to each other to
defeat whatever its coming

Cass: yeah

***they spoke some more then ended the
call***

THE FOLLOWING DAY

***Jabu woke up with a banging headache and
now he's in the kitchen drinking painkillers....he
doesn't remember what happened from the
moment he gulped the whiskey down his throat

for the fifth time....it knocked him out quickly and he's thankful that he didn't drive out to go drink in some bar or else he would be dead or in hospital or worst his enemies might have kidnapped him once they saw him drunk in some bar with no protection around him but he wonders how he or when he took off his shoes and jeans....maybe he did (he thought)....he took his phone and dialed Heath's numbers since he found his missed calls ***

Heath: thank God you managed to wake up...damn you were maxed out yesterday

Jabu: ne o tlile maabane? (did you come yesterday)

Heath: yeah and you were knocked out

Jabu sighed

Jabu: are you the one who took off my shoes and jean

Heath: yeah....o shap

he sighed

Jabu: I have a terrible headache mara I'll live

Heath sighed

Heath: what happened?

Jabu: she slept with him Mshikaro..... I was in denial and now im hurting

Heath sighed

Heath: so you still gonna stay with her even after that

Jabu sighed

Jabu: ofcourse not.....im done joh....love is not for me so im done mfowethu....im done

Heath sighed

Heath: love didn't do anything to you

Mjava.....Amo did

Jabu: o tsere Sbuda le princess? (did you take Sbu and Princess?)

Heath: yeah she's been asking for you

Jabu: I'll come take her later....maybe being around her will help ease the pain im feeling in my heart

Heath: ok re tla ova later(we will talk later)
when you arrive here

Jabu: sho

they ended the call and Jabu swallowed hard....he couldn't believe Amo did that to him.....even after what she said to him and also did he didn't cheat on her and she did just like that and the worst part is she did with that prick she was supposed to get married to....he got up and went upstairs to search for her in the rooms and she was nowhere to found....he clicked his tongue.....he wanted her dead so bad but he knew he can't hurt his kids like that but he's gonna make her life a living hell (he thought)

*** Menzi's phone rang and he didn't recognize the numbers but he answered anyway ***

Menzi: yah

Female Voice: hi may I please speak to Menzi

Menzi frowned

Menzi: speaking

Woman: great...ummm my name is Samkelo and im Duduzile's sister do you have a few minutes for me I need to ask you something

Menzi's heart started beating fast

Menzi: what do you want to ask

he said with a serious voice

Woman: ummm I don't know if you know but Dudu passed away....she was involved in a car

accident and I pulled out her phone records and you're the last number she called even though you didn't answer her call

Menzi clenched his jaws....he didn't like this one bit

Menzi: still don't understand why you're calling me lady

Woman: im just trying to find out what happened to her....apparently she jumped a red light and she lost control of the car and crashed into another car

Menzi: lady I still don't understand why you're telling me all this

she sighed

Woman: ok...ok... how do you know her

Menzi: we used to fuck...anything else?

Woman: when last did you see her

Menzi: are you a police officer

Woman: no but im a....

Menzi: then stop wasting my time....i have things to do..... and oooh your sister was a whore she slept with different men unless you wanna embarrass yourself and dishonor the little reputation she had left by calling all the men she fucked I suggest you let the police do their job....maybe she was drunk when she jumped the red robot or she messed with one of the Nigerian drug dealers she was also fucking around with or maybe she was busy on the phone and she didn't see that the robot turned red.... either way.....she wasn't a pleasant woman and you don't wanna mess with Nigerian drug dealers...trust me

then he dropped the call and clicked his tongue

Menzi: damn it!!!

he called one of his guys Sunday

Sunday: bozza yami

Menzi: there's a bitch who just called me she says she's Dudu's sister, her name is Samkelo...she's asking questions

Sunday: do you want me to take care of her

Menzi: not yet....just keep an eye on her....i planted a seed in her head that Nigerian drug dealers might be the ones who killed her.... if the police find her death as a homicide she might believe that theory....lets hope she follows that lead or she'll join her stupid sister

Sunday: sho bozza I'll get right on it

then they ended the call and his phone immediately rang and he smiled widely

Menzi: Ntandokazi

Kazi: hey

Menzi: I miss you

Kazi: I miss you too....can I sleep over at your

place today

Menzi: sleep over as in “sleep over” or sleep over as in “naked, kissing and making love” sleep over

Kazi laughed and he smiled...damn he loves her so damn much

Kazi: why?

Menzi: I need to know whether to expect some or tell Ngcobo to behave

she laughed out loud

Kazi: do not tell him to behave....I'll come around 6:30

then she dropped the call leaving him grinning like a fool

Menzi: I swear im getting her pregnant tonight....come rain or sunshine uyomitha (she's falling pregnant) tonight

he said to himself looking happy

AT JABU'S HOUSE

Jabu and his kids were watching an animated movie called Trolls on BoxOffice while eating popcorns....Lile was busy laughing her lungs out enjoying it while Sbu was busy chatting with Mj on his phone....he looked at them and he was happy they are part of his life, he loved them so much and he wouldn't trade them for anything....he needed to fix his life for them, even Sbu can see something is wrong with him, the sooner he divorces Amo the sooner he heals....he took his phone and walked to the kitchen and dialed a number

Voice: Mr Villa

Jabu: Peters...howzit my man?

Peters: im good man and how are you

Jabu: lekker...look here I need you to draft divorce papers for me

****Peters kept quiet a bit***

Peter: ok...we can meet somewhere and we will go through everything

Jabu: ok....tomorrow lunch time same spot

Peter: great...and im sorry man...I've been

Jabu: its life man what can we do

Peter: yeah anyway good night I'll see you tomorrow

Jabu: sure

then he ended the call and breathed out then he went back to the lounge and he kissed Lile's cheek and she smiled shyly and Jabu chuckled

Sbu: ai o yena o rata go blusher thaima (ai this one likes to blush dad)

they laughed

Jabu: ke le lady haw (she's a lady)

Sbu just shook his head

Jabu: askere o le lady wena princess (you're a lady right princess)

he said tickling her and she laughed out loud

Lile: papa wooooh....

she said laughing

AT THANDI'S HOUSE (in the middle of the night)

Ruu: NOOOOOOO!!!

***Ruu woke up screaming his lungs out
startling Thandi in the process***

Thandi: baby what's wrong

She said looking at a terrified looking Ruu

Ruu: Lile....Lile

***he said grabbing his phone calling Jabu
while he quickly got out of bed***

***Jabu woke up sweating profoundly from the
nightmare he just had as his phone rang....he
picked his phone rushing to Lile's room***

Jabu: RUU??

MEANWHILE IN LILE'S ROOM

*** The snake came out of her mouth and it disappeared into thin air leaving her drenched in blood.....blood was coming out of her mouth, nose, ears and eyes where her eyes balls were missing and her pajama pants where drenched with blood on her lower body between her legs.....the door roughly opened***

Jabu: wait....

*** He told Ruu over the phone and he rushed in and he quickly switched on the main light since only one side lamp was on and what he saw will haunt him forever***

Jabu: NOOOOOO!!!

he shouted rushing to Lile as his phone fell to the floor

Jabu: bab....noooo...Lile....nooo nooo nooo...this is....NOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!!

he screamed as his body shook, he didn't even know what to do....Sbu budged in the bedroom and he froze by the door when his eyes fell on Lile.... he then went down and fainted

****Alphalette was driving in high speed then he hit the brakes in the middle of the road as he has a disturbing quick vision and he put his hands on top of his head***

Alphalette: FUCK
NOOOO....NOOO...NOOO.....MY ANCESTORS
TELL ME IT'S NOT TRUE!!!

The dogs barked in the neighborhood as something as fast as lightning passed through....He quickly jumped over the high steel gate and within a blink of an eye he was by the door.... he quickly apparated and he was inside the house.....he quickly went upstairs were someone was screaming painfully and the scene before him shocked him

Cass: no....no...no

Jabu was screaming with tears gushing down his face holding Lile's corpse in his arms....her bed were she was lying was drenched with blood

Cass: fuck!!!

his eyes turned to Sbu who was passed out on the floor and he went to him and picked him up then he walked out the door

****THE NEXT INSERT IS THE LAST ONE THEN

WE ARE DONE WITH MARRIED AGAIN..... A
CONTINUATION WITH NEW ADDED MAIN
CHARACTERS WILL BE ON THE NEW BOOK "TO
DARE IS TO DO" WHERE MORE MAIN
CHARACTERS WILL BE ADDED AND SOME
WHO WERE MAIN CHARACTERS ON MARRIED
AGAIN WILL BECOME SUPPORTING
CHARACTERS OR WONT BE FEATURED AT ALL
SO BRACE YOURSELVES....ITS GONNA BE
LIT!!!!****

.

.

.

#hit-like-pls and comment

#MARRIEDAGAIN

☆☆ MARRIED AGAIN☆☆ 18SLV

.

INSERT.....51 (FINALE)

MODIRI'S HOUSE

***he felt chills run down his spine and the lights went off and he quickly sat up as his heart beat fast....he was close to peeing on himself....he was still awake, ever since he came to bed he has been having a bad feeling like something bad is about to happen...he would close his eyes trying to sleep but sleep wouldn't come....anyway the lights came back on again and his bhabha was standing in the middle of the room with his black snake around

his neck looking angry***

Modiri: bha...bhabha

Bhabha: where is her soul

he asked with a scary voice and Modiri swallowed hard

Modiri: huh

Bhabha: I SAID WHERE IS HER SOUL... DAMN IT!!!

Modiri: I don't...

Bhabha: the snake came back without her soul...where is it!!!

he said sounding angry

Modiri: i...i don't know great one....i swear I don't

Bhabha: I want that child's body by the end of this week...even if you go and dug it up in the graveyard I don't care or you'll bury your family

members one by one!!!

he said looking and sounding angry

Bhabha: busy enjoying the powers I gave you for free....nothing is for free boy....i can strip you off everything you own and make you run mad don't dare me.....i want that body so I can summon her soul!!!

then he disappeared leaving Modiri shaking with fear, he even peed on himself

JABU'S HOUSE

***Jabu is now slightly sedated and Lile is wrapped in a sheet and put on the bed....as late as it is Amo was called and luckily she answered and when she saw her baby girl she

fainted....the guys are sitting in the lounge trying to make sense of what happened***

Ruu: I don't know why I was showed her death while it was happening

he said sounding hurt

Ray: who the fuck would dare us and do this

he said sounding angry....he couldn't get Lile's bloodied body out of his mind....Alphalette cleared his throat and got up

Alphalette: we are not alone in this house

they all looked at him then Alphalette, Ruu and Castiel's faces changed to hard and they got up

Ray: what is it

Ruu: there's a snake...a spiritual snake in the house

Heath: what??

Alphalette: we need to kill them

Ruslan's eyes changed to black

Ruu: shit!!!

Castiel: two heads

Heath: the fuck....how are we gonna kill an invincible thing

***Alphalette started burping nonstop then he screamed loudly in a scary voice holding his head looking up and when he stopped screaming and looking straight ahead his eyes had changed to that of a snake and Heath and Ray got up quickly moving back...they were green in color ***

Alphalette: ssssss

he hissed

Alphalette: take them to Jabu....protect them along with Jabu's wife and daughter's sssss body and son

Ruu: let's go

Heath was shocked to see Alphalette like that....he looked possessed, his eyes were green in color they looked like those of a snake....Ruu quickly went upstairs with Heath and Ray behind him and Ray went and took Lile's body to Jabu's bedroom, then Sbu and Amo and Ruu covered the bedroom with a protection spell and he went back downstairs

Heath: who would do this bros

Ray: I don't know man.....whoever it is must be powerful to blind everyone who could stop this like that

Heath looked at Jabu and his heart broke to a million pieces....he wondered how he'll react when he wakes up

Ray: he's gonna need us more than before when he wakes up along with Sbu

Heath sighed and nodded then they heard a loud noise downstairs and they stood there ready for whatever that might try to penetrate the spell

DOWNSTAIRS

the table was flipped over by the snake as it became aware that it can be seen

Alphalette: ssss sss ssss....sss ssss ssss

***that's what Ruslan and Castiel heard....Ruslan and Cass can see it but they can't understand it ***

Castiel: he can speak snake?

Ruslan looked at him like "really" then he shook his head

Ruslan: the language is called Parseltongue not snake

Castiel: Pastel town or Snakes it's the same...it's a serpent language oksalayo

Ruu just shook his head

Castiel: I thought he's just a traditional healer

Ruslan: he's not just like other traditional healers...it looks like he was initiated by a powerful merman

Castiel: damn...im impressed and im hardly impressed

Ruu: mmmmh

BETWEEN ALPHALETTE AND THE TWO
HEADED SNAKE THEY WERE USING THE
PARSELTONGUE LANGUAGE (or the language
of the serpents) TO COMMUNICATE

Head1: stay out of this human this has got nothing to do with you

Alphalette: you're messing with my brother so it got everything to do with me

Head2: just because you can talk like us you think you can challenge us

Alphalette: leave and I won't have to challenge you

Head1: that's never going to happen....Jabu's wealth belong to us....his blessings and life belong to us....look the other way and let us do what we are here for or suffer the consequences

Alphalette hissed as his face got hard

Alphalette: I'd like to see you try serpent

he said those words in English for Ruslan and Castiel to understand him

Ruslan: do you leave willingly or we have to take you to hell

Bothheads: ssss sssssss ssss (we vacation

there)

Alphalette: they said they vacation there

Ruslan: is it....we shall see if that's true???

then his eyes turned all black and his black veins became swollen and visible all over his body and electric currents became visible on his palms and he slowly moved up floating on air....Castiel went to his vampire mode then Alphalette hissed at the two headed big snake

Head2: I heard about you wizard.....the dark world wants your soul so bad....imagine if we are the ones bringing it to the great one...

Head1: the reward will be huge

Head2: yes yes brother....the reward will be huge....master will be impressed with us....we will never be sent to this useless world to fool and recruit useless humans to do master's work

Alphalette: they want your soul wizard

Ruslan: tell them to join the long line of interested people

Castiel: we have a funeral to plan let's end this shit... this hissing nonsense is boring now

he said with his fangs out looking like something out of the movies

Head1: this one is useless to us....he doesn't have a soul

Head2: but it will be fun killing the cold one ourselves

Head1: yes yes brother

Castiel: I said enough with this hissing shit!!!

Ruslan threw a lightning bolt towards the two headed snake and it hit it....it hissed going down and it fell on the floor

Castiel: that was way too easy!!

AT THANDI'S HOUSE

Carl has locked everyone inside the main bedroom after he saw Lile's dead body....it took a while for him to put the spell of protection around them but he eventually did....the boys are asleep while Thandi is kneeling by the floor praying while he's sitting on the floor with his legs crossed....his eyes have turned black in color and he's watching the fight through his father's eyes

AT JABU'S HOUSE

****it hissed whilst on the floor then it got up as the two heads laughed***

Castiel: thought as much

he sighed shaking his head

Head1: you hit like a bitch old man

that infuriated Ruslan and he started speaking in the forbidden language and the ground started shaking as his voice got loud....the snakes then made gagging gesture then they vomited smaller snakes out of their mouths

Castiel: shit!!!

***Alphalette stood still with his body tensed and a scary frown on his face...out of the blue he changed.....it was like something took over his body...just like La Parca does with Ray.....the thing that he changed into its skin is green

with scales.....he has long red webbed fingers on both hands with long nails and his hair turned to red long dreadlocks, but the thing is it wasn't hair but rolled up thick skin that looked like dreadlocks and also at the end of the "hair" there was sharp edges shaped like tiny spears.....he was dripping water none stop as if someone was drizzling water on top of his head....he looked like an angry merman but with two human legs.... he also had long red webbed toes.... His skin on his shoulders and some parts of his back was attached to a designed real gold artifact, it looked like a tattoo and it was pure gold....he also had a gold emerald permanently attached on the area between his eyebrows.....

Castiel looked at him with his eyes popped out.....he looked like a merman....his long, thin and slick tongue that has a split at the end kept

flicking in and out....the ground continued to shake as Ruslan kept chanting in the forbidden language....the two headed snake looked at each other feeling uneasy then they hissed towards the smaller ones and the smaller ones attacked.....the merman hissed and it screamed out loud in a piercing scream that would completely explode human ear drums and internal organs in a sec since humans are sensitive beings, but luckily the scream can only be heard by the snakes and they stopped moving and laid down to the floor slowly as they couldn't handle the scream....the two headed snake also retreated backing down..... Then Castiel moved like lightening towards the snakes and he picked one and tore it in half and he went to another one and so forth so fast that he moved so fast that within a blink of an eye he was done**

Heads: NOOOO!!!

***The huge snake with two heads made gagging gestures ready to vomit more snakes then the ground split open below it and it hissed trying to get away but the flames from below were too much for it and the merman screams where making it weaker and weaker....flames burned it as it tried to move, the flames were getting stronger and stronger engulfing the whole snake....luckily the house has high ceilings or else it would have caught fire....Anyway it fell inside the open ground filled with flames and Castiel threw the dead small snakes inside the fire and it closed....Ruslan came down from floating from the air and the ground stopped shaking.....They felt a loud noise of splash of water like something or someone fell inside a pool or something right next to them and when they quickly looked Alphalette was on the floor passed out in his human form.....Ruslan searched around with his mind and the house was clear of snakes

then his eyes went back to normal***

Castiel: a merman???

Ruslan: he got initiated by one.....he was taken by one and spent a year under water being initiated by it

Castiel: damn

Ruslan: there's a lot he still needs to learn about it.....he could be one powerful being...it's a pity he limits himself....help me put him on the couch and lets go free them

*** they put Alphalette on the couch then they went upstairs and Ruslan's eyes turned yellow and he chanted a spell with his palms directed to the door and the spell of protection wore off and they opened the door and entered***

Heath: he just passed out...what's wrong with him

Ruslan: La Parca went to make sure the snakes

are really going to hell where they belong

Heath: damn...will he be ok

Ruslan: yeah he goes through this every night...im sure Mbali thinks he's a heavy sleeper where else La Parca is busy doing his job

Heath: so he only works at night

Ruslan shook his head

Ruslan: when he's at home or at the office and La Parca wants to go do his job he locks himself inside his office and passes out

Castiel: damn....but that's what you get for having your soul attached to the angel of death....no peace....i mean look at me I never sleep....the sun is my enemy and I drink blood

Heath: mxm I once saw you eating solid food man

he said getting up from where Ray passed out

Castiel: you saw me eating raw meat....anything that doesn't have blood on it makes me sick....basically what im saying is every bad decisions has consequences....my mother fucked a Dracula and look at me suffering....Ray made a deal with the devil and look at him suffering.....Jabu didn't listen and look at him....your father messed with the wrong people and look at you suffering with DID....sometimes we suffer for our own stupidity and sometimes we suffer for other people stupidity

he shrugged and Heath sighed then he looked at Ray then Jabu and he swallowed hard

Castiel: look at this bitch sleeping peacefully...she doesn't deserve any peace nx

Heath: nx

Ruslan: ok

they looked at him and he took Lile's body which is wrapped by a sheet and took it back to her room and laid it on top of a fluffy mat nicely....Heath walked in followed by Castiel and he swallowed hard as tears blurred his eyes

Ruslan: I need candles....white ones make them four and bring four plates with a glass filled with water and cotton wool

Heath nodded and he walked out...after some time he walked inside with everything and he gave them to Ruu along with a lighter

Ruslan: Cass bring me warm water and pour in salt inside and bring her washing cloth too

Cass did as told

Heath: are you gonna bath her

Ruslan: yeah they need her to be bathed now and not by any of her family members

Heath: ohh ok

Ruslan: she needs to be buried tomorrow in the afternoon and they don't want her to go to the mortuary

Heath: Jabu might not have a problem with all you just said but Amo might and delay everything

Ruslan: then they will deal with her or anyone who disobeys their orders

Heath swallowed hard and he nodded....Castiel walked inside and gave them to Ruu and Heath went to get her washing cloth and gave it to Ruu

Ruslan: go and wake Jabu up....he needs to be here

***Cass nodded and he went to wake him up....they waited for 20 minutes before they walked inside her room with Cass helping Jabu to walk...he was weak....he saw his baby and a sob escaped his mouth as he sank to the

floor***

Ruslan: you need to be strong Jabu....this need to happen

Heath knelt next to Jabu pulled him closer and held him tight as he cried with Heath's own tears streaming down his cheeks....after some time he calmed down....Ruslan explained what he needs to do and everything Jabu's ancestors told him and he just nodded weakly and Castiel helped Ruu to unwrap her body and Jabu just closed his eyes and looked away

after unwrapping her, he took off her bloodied pyjamas and he started cleaning the blood on her body....he cleaned her until there was no traces of blood on her body then he put the cotton wools on her eye sockets bones that are empty and some on the nostrils then he asked for her body lotion and he put it on her

Ruslan: bring her favorite clothes...the ones she

likes to wear

Heath helped Jabu up and they came back with the clothes and he dressed her up....he asked for a huge plastic and he laid it on the floor then Jabu brought her two favorite small blankets and Ruu laid one on top of the plastic and he put the body on top of it then another one he covered her with it

Jabu: wait

he went and took her favorite teddy bear and made her arms to hold it and he kissed her forehead crying then he covered her again

***Then Ruu put the plates with lit candles on all four side of her body North, south, east and west then he put the glass filled with water next to the candle that is next to the top of her head and he knelt there and started chanting some words in a language Heath, Jabu and Castiel can't understand then the candles went off and

he didn't stop chanting in a foreign language
then he stopped***

Ruslan: is she with all of you??

he asked

:.....

*** Castiel and Heath looked around to see who
he's talking to but they didn't see anyone but
they could feel that there is a presence inside the
room as for Jabu he was staring into space not
even aware of what was happening now***

Ruslan: forgive him now....he has learned his
lesson the hard way

:.....

Ruslan: it's good to know...take care of
her....she should visit her father and brother in
their dreams to tell them she is ok and she
didn't feel any pain so they can heal

:.....

Ruslan: thank you....I'll tell him

***then the candle lights lit on their own again
and Ruu sighed then he got up***

Ruslan: call the family and the mortuary people
need to be explained...or even bribed ...they
should bring the empty casket here....the only
time she leaves this room is when she's going
to the cemetery

***Heath nodded then he helped Jabu up and
walked out with him***

Ruslan: they need her body

Castiel: do what you have to do fast....they are
not getting this body

***Ruslan nodded then he sat down again and
his eyes turned black and he put his hands on
top of Lile's body and he chanted some words
in the forbidden language for some time then
they turned back to normal and he got up***

Ruu: it's done

Castiel nodded

Castiel: whoever tries shit with this body will die
a painful death

***they walked out and went downstairs and
they found Alphalette awake drinking tea in the
lounge***

Alphalette: you done

Ruslan: yeah

Alphalette nodded

Ruslan: stop limiting yourself

***he said to Alphalette and Alpha just sighed
and he drank his tea***

IN THE MORNING

they just explained to Amo and her family what needs to be done

Amo: never...my daughter will be buried in a normal way.....no one has even told me what happened to her....why her eyes were removed and why she was covered in so much blood

Heath: listen here Amo if we.....

Amo: I SAID MY DAUGHTER WON'T BE BURIED LIKE WE DIDN'T LOVE HER.....SHE WILL HAVE A PROPER BURIAL WITH A TENT AND EVERYTHING AND MY WORD IS FINAL!!!

Jabu: final ya masepa....FINAL YA MASEPA.....WHERE WERE YOU HUH....MAYBE RIDING MODIRI'S DICK TO EVEN CARE ABOUT HER AND YOU'RE HERE TELLING US SHIT!!!

Amo: she's my daughter Jabu and you wont....

Jabu: SHUT UP YOU FUCKEN WHORE...SHUT

THAT MOUTH JOU FOKON MOERSKONT....
JOU BLEKSEM AMO WANKUTLWA...JOU
BLEKSEM O BOLELA
MASEPA....NYOSO....MOTETE!!!

Gogo: JABULANI!!!!

he looked at Amo with so much hate and Amo looked at him with a straight face...she may have hurt him but she will never bury her daughter like she didn't matter.....then Ruslan got up and he went to Amo and he whispered to her and Amo froze....she slowly looked at Ruu

Ruslan: now what's your decision

she swallowed hard as tears filled her eyes and they ran down her cheeks

Amo: O...ok

***she said with a low voice and Heath looked at Ruu while Jabu's eyes were still fixed on Amo thinking of ways to kill her ***

Amo'smother: AMOGELANG....SALE WAS BONA
KAE NGWANA A BOLOKIWA LATA....SA LE
WAO BONA KAE MOTLHOLO OO HEH (since
when have you ever seen a child buried later in
the day....where have you seen that happen
before)

Amo: let them do what they want ma

Amo'smother: she's your daughter....

Jabu: she's a Vilakazi so your stupid opinion
doesn't matter!!!

he said with so much anger

Mkhulu: Jabulani!!!

***Amo's mother clapped her hands once and
she got up and walked out along with Amo's
brother....he didn't even say a word....since that
day he had an encounter with Jabu and Heath
he fears them***

LATER IN THE AFTERNOON

Jabu's boys dug Lile's grave and Heath went to talk to one of the expensive funeral parlors and they even paid extra for his services and for him to not ask questions

***Lile was laid to rest with only immediate family from both families available in the cemeterywhen the tiny casket went down to the open grave Sbu and Amo cried out loud as for Jabu tears just ran down his cheeks....he closed his eyes and whispered (im sorry my baby...im sorry I failed to protect you....forgive me baby....forgive me and rest in peace)....Heath squeezed his shoulder as a way of comfort.....the wives didn't come to the cemetery they are busy preparing back home and also busy serving people who came for

their condolences since the burial was for immediate family members only***

KZN

*** Lolly was in a restaurant having her breakfast busy on her laptop when someone cleared his throat....she quickly looked up and it was Kenny***

Kenny: hi

he smiled at her

Lolly: hey

Kenny: can I join you

she cleared her throat and nodded and he sat down

Kenny: how have you been?

Lolly: good wena

he chuckled

Kenny: good I guess

she nodded

Kenny: can we stop being awkward towards each other....please

he pleaded and she sighed

Lolly: you're his brother Kenny

Kenny yes his brother and not him.....can I not be punished for his mistakes....me and him we were never close and you know it....i even had to leave the country cause I couldn't stand seeing you love him that much while he treated you like that

she sighed

Kenny: please

she sighed

Lolly: ok

he smiled

Kenny: thank you

*** a waiter came to take Kenny's order and he left then they held a convesation with Kenny asking her questions about her company and how her life had been since the divorce....they got disturbed by Lolly's phone ringing and she answered it***

Amo: Thandi hey

Thandi: hey mntase unjani (how are you)

Amo: ngiright wena (im alright and you)....you sound offish what's wrong mntase

Thandi: its Lile

Amo: what about her

her heart started beating fast

Thandi: she passed on last night Lolly

Lolly closed her eyes

Lolly: no Thandi....tell me you're joking....how....i
mean she was fine the last time I saw
her....oooh my God

tears made their way out

Thandi: she's gone Lolly....it hurts so bad and I
don't even know how to feel.....Jabu is not
coping at all and Sbu is not even talking to
anyone its like he went mute

Lolly: ooh my God...im sorry Thandi

***she sniffed and Kenny moved closer to her
and held her hand looking at her worried***

Lolly: when is the funeral

Thandi: they already buried her I forgot to call
you in the morning my head was all over the
place

she sniffed

Lolly: its ok you don't need to explain I understand....I'll come tomorrow for my condolences....im so sorry mntase please don't stress too much for the baby's sake assomblief

Thandi: I'll try

Lolly: I love you ok...please stay strong I'll see you tomorrow

Thandi: ok mntase I love you too....we will talk

Lolly: ok shap

Thandi: shap

they ended the call and Lolly sighed with her heart heavy

Kenny: what's wrong

Lolly: my friend's daughter passed on last night....she was young Kenny really young

Kenny pulled her closer and kissed the top of her head

Kenny: its ok....im sorry Lolo

Lolly: I cant believe it.... ooh my God Jabu and Sbu....

she said crying

Kenny: shhh its ok...its ok

she calmed down and took off her reading glasses and wiped her tears off....luckily she didn't wear makeup

Lolly: I have to go there tomorrow...they live in Pretoria

Kenny: my friend owns a private jet....let me call him and we can leave early in the morning and you'll be back by lunch time to attend your meeting with your client later

Lolly: you'll do that for me

Kenny: we are friends right....so yeah I will

Lolly: thank you

she sniffed and faintly smiled at him.....her heart was sore for Jabu and Sbu...she was worried about them.....Anyway she was gonna take him with to Jabu's place....maybe if Amo sees her with a man she won't give her attitude or embarrass her like the last time

Lolly: thank you

he just smiled at her and kissed her forehead

THE FOLLOWING DAY

*** Kenny parked his friend's car outside Jabu's place and they got out and walked inside....they greeted people outside and walked inside....she knocked and they walked in and Mbali saw her

and tears filled Lolly's eyes and Mbali got to her and hugged her tight....Kenny couldn't believe the beauty Mbali possessed, he swallowed but then shook the thought off cause he was interested in Lolly....he's been interested in her since the first time his brother introduced her as his girlfriend and now that she left him he won't let anything or anyone come between them....he's gonna treat her like the queen she is.....Anyway they broke the hug and Lolly wiped her tears off***

Mbali: hi bhuti

Kenny: hi

Lolly: ooh sorry

she chuckled lightly

Lolly: this is Kenny and Kenny this is Mbali....her husband is Jabu's brother

Mbali: nice meeting you

Kenny: same here

Mbali: come this way

Lolly: where is Thandi

Mbali: she couldn't come....or should I say gogo said she shouldn't come cause she's pregnant and this place is.....yah

Lolly: ooh ok

*** she said that cause she didn't wanna pry....anyway they walked further in and she greeted everyone and kissed Gogo's lips and Mkhulu's cheek then she hugged Jabu's mother...she introduced Kenny as her friend and they sat down.... Lolly saw Sbu walking upstairs and she excused herself telling Kenny she'll be back and followed him before that she asked where Jabu is and they told her he's in Lile's bedroom so after seeing Sbu she will go see him hopefully he won't be with his wife..... she knocked on Sbu's bedroom door and after a

while he opened....when he saw that its Lolly his eyes got filled with tears and so did Lorraine's...She walked in and pulled him to her and he held on to her dress tight and he started crying with his face buried on her chest....she held him tight as his cry got louder and louder and Lolly kept telling him its ok over and over as he cried his lungs out sinking to the floor and she went down with him.....

He was now calm and he was now laying on the bed with his head on Lolly's lap and he was humming a soothing song for him while brushing his head gently until he fell asleep***

DOWNSTAIRS

*** Anyway Heath walked to where Kenny was sitting where he was chatting to gogo and

mkhulu and he greeted him....he wondered who he is cause it was the first time seeing him***

Gogo: Shaka this is Kenny Lorraine's man

*** Kenny didn't even correct Gogo he just smiled and Heath frowned***

Heath: Lorraine's what?

Gogo: man....and don't play bad big brother on him Lolly deserves some happiness

Heath: but my love you know she....

she cut him

Gogo: stop playing cupid....your brother knows the truth and he's still in denial....Lolly deserves to be happy too and she's not getting any younger busy waiting for an old man with a beard all over his face to grow up and accept his fate

Heath huffed and he got up and walked upstairs

Gogo: don't mind him...he loves attention

*** she said to Kenny and he wondered what they were talking about...it seemed serious and it was concerning Lolo...cupid, his brother and his Lolo in one sentence didn't sit well with him***

UPSTAIRS

Lorraine made him sleep properly and covered him with a throw then she kissed his forehead and walked out going to Lile's room praying that she doesn't find Amo with jabu....even if she found Jabu with anyone else except for Amo she won't mind

INSIDE LILE'S BEDROOM

Heath walked inside Lile's bedroom about two mutes ago and he's sitting on a single couch by the corner looking down....Jabu is laying on the bed facing up with his eyes closed and his arms under the back of his head supporting it...the sheets and waterproof mattress covers where taken off and he was sleeping on her bare bed

Heath: Lolly is here

He said out of the blue and Jabu raised his head to look at him then he sighed

Heath: she just arrived

Jabu: ok

***he laid his head back ***

Heath: she's with some dude named Kenny and he seems smitten by her...gogo said his her man

Jabu: good for them

Heath sighed

Heath: what if she's moving on Mjava

Jabu: I don't care

Heath: you don't care huh....you wanna loose
Sbu too to realize what is what

Jabu: ey brika man (stop right there).....can't i
mourn my daughter in peace....i don't care what
Lorraine is doing now ok...she can fuck each
and every man in South African and I won't give
a shit.....im mourning my damn child I don't care
about her being here....stop forcing her down
my fucken throat...my child is dead cause I
refused to be with her....she can go to hell for
all I care!!!

he said raising his voice

Heath: that's not true and you fucken know
it....why are you shifting the blame to her now
heh!!!

Jabu: leave me alone Heath....please leave me alone

outside the door Lorraine wiped her tears off and she walked away going downstairs....she told Kenny they should leave and everyone was surprised...they tried to ask her what's wrong and she ignored them and walked out followed by Kenny.....Heath came downstairs pissed off

Gogo: what happened...what did you and Jabu do to Lorraine

Heath: eish

Jabu'smother: she came down looking distraught and she left without even saying goodbye...what did you do to her Shaka

she said with a serious tone

Heath: shit....ooh nooo

***he put his hands on top of his head and he

closed his eyes***

Gogo: what is it....what did you do to her?

Heath just walked away

Gogo: khanti kwenzakalani (what's going on)

LATER IN THE AFTERNOON

***The guys were sitting in Jabu's study drinking.....Jabu is sitting with them, he has lost weight within this two days....he looks like a shadow of himself, he has dark circles around his eyes....all he does is smoke and drink....Heath just told him shit about what he said about Lolly and that she might have heard everything and he just didn't care...the was a knock on the door and Naledi walked in with

plates of food followed by Mbali and Thandi (she was now allowed to come) then they walked out....the guys washed their hands but Jabu didn't ***

Heath: Mjava

he said handing him the bowl filled with water but he shook his head

Jabu: ke grand (im good)

Heath: you need to eat man

Jabu: I know mara e seng nou (but not now)

he continued smoking and Heath sighed and he put the bowl down and he sat back on his chair....the other guys started eating then they looked at Heath cause he wasn't eating

Ray: why aren't you eating

Heath: cause he's not eating....we will lose weight together

Castiel: I can see you want Star to skin you live

Heath: she understands that im Jabu and he is me

they laughed except for Jabu

Alphalette: I already feel sorry for her

Ray: you ok man....you've been quiet

he asked Ruslan

Ruu: there's something ya'll need to know

Castiel: Madou now is not the time

Ruslan: and when is it

Heath: what's going on

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: it's about who killed Lile and why

the room became quiet....Jabu stopped smoking and he looked at Ruslan with a serious look on his face while Alphalette pushed his plate of food away and he sighed

Jabu: they showed you who.....who did that to

my baby

Ruslan: yeah

he couldn't tell him the truth that he knew since Lile died

Jabu: who...who is it

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: that fake pastor is into cults and dark rituals....he has a snake and an evil zombie in his house ...his church is doing good because of those things.....the only thing that he wants more than money and power is Amo to be his...he's obsessed with her more especially since Amo's late father promised him her as his wife

Alphalette: to cut the story short your wife fucked him and he inserted a snake in her....the plan was for her to pass it down to you through sexual intercourse and when you touch your daughter it will attach to her and do its job...he

was gonna use her as a sacrifice to become richer than all his fellow fake pastors....

Jabu clenched his jaws

Jabu: I didn't sleep with Amo...i haven't slept with her for a while now

silence

Heath: what

Ray: what is it that you're not telling us

Ruslan got up and went to his bag and took out his crystal and he went to switch off the lights and he chanted some words with his palms around it and it lit up

Alphalette: damn

he was impressed

Ruslan: watch

Jabu did and what he saw made him shake as tears filled his eyes

Heath: THAT BITCH...HOW DARE SHE....HOW DARE SHE FORCE HERSELF ON MY BROTHER....I SWEAR IM GONNA KILL HER...SHE'S DEAD....SHE'S FUCKEN DEAD!!!

he roared

Castiel: dude calm down there's.....

Heath: don't tell me to calm down....don't tell me to calm down.....if she didn't force herself to my drunk brother Lile would still be alive

the next thing Jabu collapsed on the floor and they rushed to him

OUTSIDE THE DOOR OF JABU'S STUDY ROOM

***Sbu rushed to his bedroom with his whole body shaking from anger....tears were running down his cheeks as all he heard played in his mind....he couldn't believe the pain they are all

going through is because of Amo, he couldn't believe Lile is dead because of her.....he couldn't believe that she raped his father***

Jabu's Mother: papa are you ok

Sbu passed her as if she wasn't even there

Jabu's Mother: Sbusiso???

*** she sighed and he got inside his bedroom and slamming the door shaking.....then he locked it and went to his bed and picked the pillow and put it on his face and he screamed his lungs out crying***

OUTSIDE IN THE PORCH

Jabu's mother sat down and she sighed

Gogo: yini? (what is it)

Jabu'sMother: im worried about uSbusiso

gogo sighed

Gogo: me too....he doesn't say anything to anyone all he does is greet nje

Jabu'sMother: he just passed me like he didn't see me and he was shaking and crying

Mkhulu: he saw her in that state...he needs help before we lose him

Gogo: mmmmh....one of the boys need to talk to him and they need to get him help fast

Mkhulu: I'll talk to uShaka

Jabu's mother sighed and she shook her head

Jabu'smother: awu mzukulu wam died in a painful manner bakithi (awu my granddaughter died in a painful manner)

she said as tears ran down her cheeks and she wiped them with her scarf

Gogo: she didn't feel pain.....bamthathe (they took her) before anything could happen to her

****she said staring into space and they looked at her***

Mkhulu: mkami??? (my wife)

she smiled faintly looking at her husband then she looked at her daughter

Gogo: go and make us tea sthandwa sam....since ngiphuza inkomishi ekseni (I since drank a cup in the morning)

Jabu's mother looked at her father then she sighed and got up then she walked inside

Mkhulu: ukahle sthandwa sam (are you ok my love)

she smiled at him

Gogo: mmmmh

Mkhulu: ngiyakuthanda yezwa (I love you, you hear)

she blushed

Gogo: nami ngiyakuthanda myeni wam (I love you too my husband)

he smiled at her

INSIDE THE STUDY

Jabu finally woke up....he looked around and found his brothers looking at him with worried faces...Heath helped him to sit up properly and he held his head as it ached....Ray handed him his plate of food

Ray: eat up so you'll drink painkillers

Jabu: im not hungry

Ray: I wasn't asking you now eat up

he said with a stern voice and Jabu looked at him with a frown

Jabu: why ong gapeletsa go ja ka nkane (why are you forcing me to eat by force)

Ray: you no dey hear abi so I'll force it down your throat.... now chop or I dey help you

Jabu: mxm....a ke ngwana big

Ray...samphaphela (im not a child Big Ray)

Ray scooped some potion of pap and gravy and chakalaka with a spoon and he pushed it towards Jabu's mouth and Jabu pushed the spoon away

Jabu: ey shap...shap ke tla ijesa man nx (ey fine....fine I'll eat by myself man nx)

he snatched the plate form him and started eating slowly

Ray: cho cho cho cho cho mxm....rubbish!!!

he said making speaking gestures with his hand speaking in a Nigerian accent and Castiel chuckled and Alphalette just shook his head

Ray:i know how to deal with stubborn people....if you wanna die go hang yourself in the forest where no one will see you or stop you....not this rubbish of trying to kill yourself with starvation in front of us

Jabu looked at him and he looked angry

Jabu: and then wena.... wa kwata so keng (and you...why are you this angry)

Ray: fotsek nx (fuck off nx)

he got up and walked to pour himself some hot drink then the door opened roughly and Naledi stood there looking scared

Naledi: you need to come in the lounge....Sbu has a gun

the guys quickly got up and ran out

IN THE LOUNGE

SHOUTING!!!

Thandi: SBU PUT THE GUN DOWN PLEASE!!!

Sbu: YOU KILLED HER....YOU FUCKEN KILLED
HER.....WHAT DID WE EVER DO TO YOU
HUH.....WHY WOULD YOU HURT US LIKE THIS!!!

*** He said looking angry with tears gushing
out....his hand was shaking as he pointed the
gun at a scared looking Amo***

Mkhulu: mfana wam yehlisa umoya.... (my boy
calm down)

Sbu: no mhkhulu.....she needs to tell me why she
killed Lile

Amo: I didn't Sbu I swear

Sbu: LIAR!!!!....YOU SLEPT WITH SOME CULT
MAN AND HE TRANSFERRED THE SNAKE TO
YOU THAT KILLED MY SISTER...IT ATE HER
UP...SHE WAS BLEEDING EVEN ON HER
PRIVATESS!!!

Amo closed her eyes as more tears gushed out...she was shakingGogo closed her eyes and she turned and walked out going to where they were sitting in the back porch.....she sat down and closed her eyes as tears ran down her cheeks

INSIDE

Sbu: you killed her before that you raped my father!!!

the whole room became quiet and Jabu closed his eyes as tears threatened to come out....his head pounded hard and he held it

Amo: how did you....

Sbu: SHUT UP...SHUT THE FUCK UP.....SO ITS TRUE.....YOU DID IT....YOU DID IT....

***the ladies put their hands on their mouth

shocked.....Sbu wasn't even aware that his father and uncles were standing behind him....he was so angry that nothing else matter other than to revenge for Lile***

Ruslan: Sbu don't do this

he quickly turned and when he saw them he moved and stood far from them as more tears gushed out

Sbu: she killed her uncle.....she killed her and hurt my dad....she doesn't deserve to live

Jabu: boy...

he said with a breaking voice and more tears gushed out of Sbu's eyes and he shook his head continuously

Sbu: don't baba....don't....she.....she

***Amo saw this as a chance and she ran towards the main door and all everyone heard was four gunshots going off towards her and

she fell on the groundthen screams filled the house.....then Sbu put the gun barrel inside his mouth about to pull the trigger as he cried***

Jabu: NOOOOO!!!!

within a blink of an eye Castiel had already snatched it from him....the next thing Jabu was on the floor passed out

.

.

.

THE END.....

***SEE YOU ON “ TO DARE IS TO DO” GROUP.....
SEE IT AS SEASON 2 OF MARRIED AGAIN BUT
WITH A DIFFERENT NAME AND NEW ADDED
CHARACTERS....THANK YOU ALL FOR YOUR
SUPPORT, PATIENCE AND

UNDERSTANDING....FORWARD WE GO**